







**THE TEMPORAL  
AND SPIRITUAL  
CONQUEST OF  
CEYLON**



# **THE TEMPORAL AND SPIRITUAL CONQUEST OF CEYLON**

**FERNAÓ DE QUEYROZ**

**TRANSLATED BY  
S.G. PERERA**

**IN THREE VOLUMES**

**Vol. III Book 5-6**



**ASIAN EDUCATIONAL SERVICES  
NEW DELHI ★ MADRAS ★ 1992**

**ASIAN EDUCATIONAL SERVICES.**

• C-2/15, S.D.A. NEW DELHI-110016

• 5 SRIPURAM FIRST STREET, MADRAS-600014.

954.93

Q 5t

V.3

pt. 5 & 6

**THE ASIATIC SOCIETY**

KOLKATA-700 016

ACC. No. 62867 DATE 30.3.2002



Price: (Set)

First Published: Colombo, 1930

AES Reprint: New Delhi, 1992

ISBN: 81-206-0764-3

81-206-0767-8

SL NO- 017956

Published by J. Jetley

for ASIAN EDUCATIONAL SERVICES

C-2/15, SDA New Delhi-110016

Processed by APEX PUBLICATION SERVICES

New Delhi-110016

Printed at Gayatri Offset Press,

A-66, S. No. 2 Noida, Distt. Ghaziabad (U.P.)

**COMPUTERISED**

BOOK 5  
OF THE  
**CONQUEST OF CEYLON**

---

CHAPTER 1.

P 666 BEGINNINGS OF THE HOLLANDER CONQUEST IN CEYLON, P 369  
THE LOSS OF BATECALOU, THE ATTEMPT ON GALE,  
THE RECOVERY OF MALVANA, AND THE FLIGHT OF  
THE KING OF CANDEA FROM RUANELA

---

If hitherto we have had in Ceylon a long and internal war with the variety of successes we have related, which lasted a whole century to the destruction and ruin of both the Portuguese and Chingalâ nations, though with very unequal conditions, because the Portuguese were few in number and because our reinforcements had to come from Portugal which is at a great distance and was almost always distracted by other wars and expeditions, from this time forth up to the time when this Island was completely lost, there was seen nothing but bloodshed among the three nations that combatted therein, the Portuguese, the Hollander, and the Chingalâ nations ; and though our forces were insufficient at the time we are treating of to overcome the native enemy, we were compelled to divide these [forces] against the Chingalâz and the Hollander who had gained such ascendancy and power in these seas that he was able at one and the same time to make war on us in Goa, Ceylon, Malâca, and in all other parts wherein he could do us injury, with a hatred as deadly as if this conquest had been his by right, or as if the Portuguese nation had ever invaded his home, for this is the nation from which we received most injury outside Portugal, in the other three parts of the world, for no other reason than that of might and self-interest,

P 686 and merely to see themselves lords of the seas and lands  
which we had discovered and of a conquest | which  
our sword had rendered easy for them. For when they  
came into these seas, there were no pirates in them to make  
any considerable opposition, and the Kings, who formerly  
dominated them, were almost all so worn out and consumed  
by our arms that they were only able to, use them to wreak  
their Vengeance by giving them favour and protection in  
all the wars they waged against us; in which matter they  
left no stone unturned to prejudic<sup>a</sup> the Catholic Faith and  
the Portuguese dominion under the shadow of which it was  
successfully spread in those distant regions, divided into  
such a large number of Kingdoms and Monarchies. They  
persuaded these nations by means of the misleading examples  
of the new world and by showing them in the maps, that  
we first entered [a country] with the Faith in order to get  
possession of it afterwards by means of arms, an expedient  
whereby they did more harm to the Catholic Church than  
to Portugal, | not only because of what they wrested from P 589  
her and perverted, but much more because of what they  
diverted, and which was the complement of the persecution  
in Japan and the extinction of Portuguese trade from its  
ports, as they admitted in the reply which they gave to the  
Ambassador of D. João IV., King of Portugal, the principal  
author of these deceptions being Francisco Caron, a double  
traitor, to God and to his nation, who came by his end on  
the rocks of the bar of Lisbon and, as they say with good  
reason, lost as a heretic the one and the other life within sight  
of the crown which he most perfidiously insulted.

And whoever considers that this war against the Batavians  
was at the cost of Portuguese blood only, and that in the  
field encounters the loss was never in keeping with the forces  
with which we combatted, but was ever to their or our total  
destruction and ruin, will see that to the soldiers this was  
the most terrific war which human gallantry ever sustained;  
and if the force with which Holland contended with the  
Portuguese had not been so large and overwhelming, and  
if she had had justice and reason on her side, she could have  
made a greater display of the victories which her rebellion,  
industry, discipline, power, and valour had achieved. In  
Europe we have often seen royal armies defeated with the  
loss of four or five thousand men, and often with less, but  
in the encounters of Ceylon the number of the vanquished  
who outlived the battle was very small, and on account of  
the inequality of forces, they became so desperate in their  
resolution that valour exceeded the bounds of discretion

and degenerated into rash precipitancy, heedless of any saner doctrine than that of desperate cases [viz.], to 'Kill and Die ; thus staking everything in one bold resolve for lack of forces and often of discipline, for the hand accustomed to strike Asiatics never learnt to adopt the right methods of fighting with the Europeans, and relying on offensive methods P 687 for victory, our | militia never became accustomed in this war to use defensive arms which the Flemings ever made use of against the rigour of our sword.

At this time D. António Mascarenhas received intelligence that the Hollander had come on the invitation of the Chingalá and was in Batecalou, for at the end of the Spring of this year of [16]38 three ships set out from this bar of Goa and, reaching that port, sent word to the King of Candea, who, finding himself victorious, at once hastened to come down in person on that praça erected to keep off the natives from that port rather than to sustain European batteries. Then came five other ships, and that small garrison found itself besieged by the two nations without any hope of reinforcement. The Hollander mounted batteries on land, and though the praça was not capable of resistance, the captain Manoel Pinto, a casado of Columbo, resisted for many days till driven by the destruction and damage he had received, he surrendered | conditionally and was landed at Negapatao F 300 along with those who survived.

To impede reinforcements and to divert the Portuguese, the Candiot King ordered 4000 archers of Talampetim to harass the garrison of Manicravare. The Portuguese General, already a prey to greater anxieties, ordered the Captain-Major, who resided in Manicravare, and the Dissâvas to come down to Columbo, for the security of Gále, Columbo and Nigumbo (for of other places they now cared little). And those of Manicravare did so, and were pursued by the enemy, though without receiving any loss. They dismantled the stockades and demolished the fort of Malvâna; and the forces being divided into two bodies, one garrisoned the coast of Columbo, the other that of Nigumbo.

There arrived very opportunely Francisco de Mendonça Manoel, Captain-Major of six Galliots which he was bringing from Goa to relieve that Island, with more than 300 soldiers, and put into port in Nigumbo. The Captain-General was thus able to reinforce the veteran companies and to form eight new ones consisting of the number usual in that warfare, wherein each company did not exceed 30 men and often did not number even that, as we have already remarked.

And as he had received information that the enemy intended to carry Gâle by surprise, he ordered the Captain-Major of the Field, Domingos Ferreira Beliagô, to march to Gâle with the arrayal along the coast of the Island, it being now the month of December.

But before they reached Gâle, the Hollander came in sight of that bar with eight ships, two pinnaçes and a *chuvriao*,<sup>1</sup> while in the praça there were not 100 men capable of bearing arms. Coming to anchor one afternoon, they got into the launches, but as a shower came down on them, they returned to the ships. At daybreak the ships gave sail and entered that Bay in war array, where they moored within range of the battery of the praça which fired and was fired upon the *pass* whole day with little loss | to us and some loss to them, for we had little artillery, though we replied to them from three places. The Commander Costra<sup>2</sup> got into a launch to take soundings of the bay, the better to reconnoitre the fortifications and a place for landing. He went around it and found it manned by the men of Francisco Antunes, and as he passed the entrance to the bay, where the Captain Vicente da Silva was, a shot killed three Hollander musketeers and wounded another, and seeing that Vicente da Silva received them with bagpipes, which he had brought from Columbo for the novena of Our Lady in the Church of the Fathers of the Society of Jesus, he thought that there were greater forces in the praça and an equal resolution, and he betook himself to the ships and held a council; and as his | Domine and councillors said that it was not a fit *pass* occasion to take, Gâle he desisted from the undertaking and sailed out, and our people attributed this success to a particular favour of Our Lady.

After this the Captain-Major of the Field arrived and provided that praça with the necessaries, and returning to Calaturê, he went inland to subdue the newly revolted lands, for the Chingalâz had occupied the stockades and the fort of Malvâna, and the King had fortified himself in Ruanâla. The Portuguese first attacked Malvâna, in which was a garrison of 5000 men, and carried it without any loss to us and with much loss to the enemy. Leaving a fresh garrison thore, he marched to the Pagode of Atanagala with various encounters on the way, but all successful. The King had

<sup>1</sup> *Chuvriao*. Wherry—a word occurring here and on p. 78<sup>o</sup>, which is not given in any dictionary.

<sup>2</sup> Willem Jacobez Coster.

40,000 men at Ruanâla in a place which was almost triangular<sup>1</sup> in shape and was protected on two sides by two rivers which joined there and formed a plain more than six fathoms higher than the river, with two openings through which they descend to the water and which the Chingalâz call *tolas*.<sup>2</sup> On the other side, this platform was crossed by a deep channel of water, from river to river, and at the two entrances were built two large stockades with watch towers to defend them. There the King had built a city, already considering himself Lord of the lowlands of the Island and intending to abandon Candea for this place; to attack which it was necessary to descend to the river from the opposite bank, to cross it neck deep in water, to reach the foot of the stockades and to attack them in spite of the many thousands of the enemy who defended them.

None of these difficulties was able to thwart the determination of the Captain-Major, and everyone in that small army was anxious to face the Enemy, both because the King was there, from whom they wanted to take revenge, and because they understood that they would find good booty. It was Holy Saturday, and the Captain-Major ordered all to confess and communicate. They began the march in good order at Sunset, and after marching the whole night, they were near the fortifications of | the enemy at day dawn. But when they were about to attack, on Easter Day, they learnt that the King, after midday of the preceding Saturday, had retired in all haste to Candea, knowing from spies the determination of the Portuguese. For he questioned a renegade who was with him, named Raja Passa Modeliar: What the Portuguese meant by going to confession before giving him battle; and he replied that they did so when they attacked with the determination to conquer or to die; whereupon the King resolved to flee, because it seems that Heaven gave him strength against us only within the central highlands. | The Captain-Major then ordered the Captain Domingos da Cunha with 10 companies and with the Dissâvas of the Seven-and Four-Corlas to follow the enemy; and

<sup>1</sup> At the confluence of the Gurugal-oya and the Kelany river. See photograph in *Cave's Book of Ceylon*, I., p. 196, No. 285. On 24 March, 1800, Macdonald and his party halted there, and the place is described in the Journal of the Embassy (Percival 387-389) and called "Resue Orti Palangomby watty" or the "King's Royal Garden (Palangomuwa Uyana)." It is now a coconut Estate belonging to the Hon. Sir James Parris.

<sup>2</sup> Sin. *tola*, ford, ferry.

marching with all haste, they came upon his rearguard and the victuals of the arrayal ; and when our men fell upon them, the enemy fled, leaving in our hands all the baggage and two aleás laden with the equipage of the King, with which they returned to the Captain-Major ; and together they entered Ruanélâ, where on the feast of Easter they lodged, the Captain-Major lodging in the Palace of the King, whence on the following days he sent by rafts down the river to Columbo many of the fabrics which could be useful there.

---

## CHAPTER 2.

### HOW FRANCISCO DE MENDONÇA MANOEL WAS ELECTED CAPTAIN-MAJOR, HOW THE HOLLANDER AND THE CEINGALÀ TOOK TRINQUILEMALÀ AND CAME UPON NIGUMBO

---

From this post of Ruanélâ the Captain-Major despatched the Dissâva of Sofragaô to guard his district from his station, and he himself marched with the arrayal to Alaua where for the same purpose he left the Dissâva of the Seven-Corlas with two companies ; and passing to Manicrauarê, he garrisoned that post with the Portuguese companies and ordered the Dissâva of the Four-Corlas to occupy that of Petigaldenim, one league from Manicrauarê. Thence he sent word to the Captain-General that it was time to give pay to the soldiers, which he did in person, thanking the officers and soldiers by word and deed for the work they had done in the service of His Majesty ; and by the end of the month he returned to Columbo. A few days afterwards the Captain-Major fell ill, and entrusting the arrayal to the Sergeant-Major Lazaro de Faria, he retired to Columbo for treatment. Domingos Fereira Beliago was a native of Cochim of well known valour and great services, but by this time unfit for the marches of Ceylon, being broken down by years and worn out by labours, and he resigned his post, representing to the Captain-General that, considering the reasons for his retirement, he should be satisfied, seeing that he had twice subjugated the lowlands of Ceylon, for he found himself so aged and broken down that only on board a galleon or from the forecastle of a ship could he maintain the honourable

career he had followed. The Captain-General recognizing well his merits and the good reason he had for resigning the office, named as Captain-Major of the Field, Francisco de Mendonça Manoel, who in other wars had given good proof of being equal in valour to the blood he had inherited from a father and ancestors, [who were] Lords of the House of Mourão ; and in the following | May he took charge of the ~~F 361.~~<sup>arrayal at Manicrauarê.</sup>

From there he made two incursions into the lands of Candea, from which he returned with success. But from June onwards the soldiers began to reap the fruit of the labours they had undergone in those marches and conquests, for the pestilential disease of *beriberi*<sup>1</sup> attacked them from which, died more than 300 and many of them so rapidly, that they did not even have time to make their confession. Thus everything was preparing for the great ruin. For this reason the arrayal moved from that post and passed to that of Alauua. The Captain-General feared that the Hollander would fall upon the small praça of Triquilemalê in the course of his cruise in May from the bar of Goa which he was besieging all these years. To forestall this danger, he sent Luis de Carvalho in the preceding March with some foists to reinforce but he, proceeding on his voyage, found news in Jafanapataô that that praça had been lost. For the Belga, contrary to the plan he had followed in other years of the siege, on the 16th February of this year [16]39 gave sail for Ceylon and doubling the point of Gâle fell upon the fort of Triquilemalê and being joined by the Chingalaz, after 40 days of bombardment, forced it to surrender, for very small was the force with which Francisco Deça, a casado of Columbo, tried to defend it, who however exacted the condition that each should go out with what he had, and that they should be taken to the coast of Choromandel.

The Viceroys of India never thought that it behoved them to dismantle a praça, even when they saw it exposed to the utmost danger without any remedy, as all considered this to be, which is not only contrary to the practice of great Captains but also contrary to the wisdom of King D. Manoel, who, merely for the convenience of the state and before other European nations dreamt of passing to India, in the last year of his reign ordéred the three prácas of Calicut, Columbo and Pacem to be dismantled ; and he was of opinion

<sup>1</sup> The word is said to be Sinhalese, Ribeiro. *Fat. His.* 56, Cf. *Heb-Job.*, s. v..

that the Governor Afonso de Albuquerque should abandon Goa for certain political reasons and especially because it was very unhealthy, foreseeing, it would seem, with a prophetic spirit, that this place would be the greatest enemy of the state of India and of the lives of the Portuguese whom he valued more than any other human consideration. And <sup>P 671</sup> though the experience of almost two centuries <sup>F 362</sup> has shown that there is not the same inconvenience in other inland places near these bars, up to this day we see no attempt to remedy this great evil, though every reason, Christian and political, efficaciously demands it. Nor do I declare here the place which I most approve, for as there are three that can come in question, it does not seem easy to many to decide which should be preferred, and though in my judgment in one of these are found greater conveniences, military men always want their own choice to be preferred, as it seems to them (as in other things) that they alone are able to give an opinion in these matters, but as it is a subject which calls for so great circumspection, it is best to thrash it out in council, and it is high time to begin to do so before Goa puts an end to India. But of this we shall speak again with better reasons.

On the 24th of October of this year of [16]39 two Hollander ships were sighted from Columbo following a galliot which was making for land. They had sallied out from Triquilemale to come between Gâle and Columbo to impede the relief of those pracas, under the command of Captain Arpâ ; and a little off Gâle they pillaged a *champana* laden with areca which had gone out from that port, and then set fire to her. Near Nigumbo they took two others which were bringing provisions for Columbo, in sight of which [Columbo] they passed both to and fro when they sighted the galliot. The Captain-General sent word to her that, considering the peril, she had better make for land on the coast of Columbo or Nigumbo, where they would find defenders. On board her was Gaspar Pereyra dos Reys going on his way to Malice, but the wind had driven him to that Coast, and as he was a good pilot and a man of valour and experience he replied : 'That he saw the enemy quite well but hoped in God not to fall into his hands.' And in that hurry, to explain his intention better, he sent by that bark Antonio Rebelo, one of his soldiers. They all struggled for Columbo but one of the ships being lighter, turned her bow forcing Gaspar Pereyra dos Reys to turn to Gâle. Off Panature the wind fell and the ships despatched against her three launches well manned, but being repelled with loss of men, they reinforced and

returned to a second attack with the same result. The enemy must have lost some men of importance on this occasion, for giving it up he left the galliot, which without receiving any injury made for Gâle, and afterwards returned to Goa with the news of the fate of Caymel and Nigumbo, which we shall now relate.

The Batavians, continuing the war in Ceylon, prepared in Batavia six large ships, three pinnaces, and a shallop with 1600 picked musketeers and 400 Malays, Bandanees, and other nations, with another 400 seamen, besides all the apparatus of war necessary for scaling praças. There came as General the Governor, Philip Lucas; as Admiral, Commodore Costra; as Master of the Field, the Captain-Major of Batavia, <sup>P 672</sup> Adrián Cornelio, | reputed among them for a man of great valour, with other Captains of renown who were accompanied by their chief Domine a man of letters and a counsellor. This squadron set out on 15th August 1639 making its way to the strait of Sincapura to take from Maláca more soldiers and other ships which were in | those ports; and as the winds were <sup>P 682</sup> not favourable, three months and a half were spent before arriving at Batecalou with many dead and sick. There they took refreshment and landed 200 men under the command of Captain Marte, to join the forces of the King in Candea and to come down in a body against our arrayal, so that when the ships arrived in Columbo, they might find it defeated and the coasts undefended; and doubling the point of Gâle, he moored off Morro, two leagues from Columbo, [the fleet] now consisting of 21 powerful ships and other smaller barks with nearly 3000 Europeans. There they remained eight days at anchor on account of the North wind which blew, firing many volleys on the land, both to inform the Candiots as well as to intimidate the native lieges. Afterwards they moored near Columbo in the afternoon, greeting the City with many shots but little damage, being well answered from land. At nightfall they went to Nigumbo and their flagship, trying to enter into the inner bank, ran aground between some rocks, but was refloated with great trouble after unloading. The same diligence did not avail them in the case of another large ship which being laden with spice for Môca went to pieces on another bank. They passed on to the village of Caymel and there lost two large ships which went to pieces there. When he heard of the coming of the enemy, the General D. Antonio Mascarenhas put to the council: 'Whether it was advisable to bring down the arrayal to impede the landing of the Hollanders.' It was decided that it was not wise to take the troops away

from the lands, but that the arrayal should impede the conjunction of the two enemies, and that the train bands that were in Columbo should go to Caymel with a new company of the youths born in that City under the command of a Captain of experience, and there was one who boasted that with his fishermen of that port he was able to impede the landing of the Hollander. Antonio Barboza Pinheyro<sup>1</sup>, set out with the company of the youths of Columbo and the Sergeant-Major, Lazaro de Faria, with some soldiers and some militia. The company went to the other side of Madampē and the Sergeant-Major remained on the side of Nigumbo. And when the intention of the Hollander was quite clear, the General also hastened to the assistance of Caymel with the black troops of his guard and with those of Nigumbo, which together formed a squadron of 1000 Lascarins.

On the 10th of December the Belga showed signs of wishing to land under cover of his artillery, and there was much musketry fire on both sides. On the following morning (it is not known why or how they so quickly thought themselves safe) <sup>P 673</sup> the General sent all the black troops who were there to the lands of Chilao <sup>F 363</sup> to punish some villages. The Sergeant-Major, Luis Correa, and Antonio Teyxeira de Sepulveda, with some Portuguese of Columbo, remained under cover of a rampart of sand to shelter themselves from the many balls with which the ships were sweeping the shore, and Antonio Barboza Pinheyro remained with the students of Cokumbo in another trench at the point of Madampē on the other side of the river. And though it stood to reason that the enemy would land on the side of Nigumbo, on hearing from the Patangatim of Caymel about the absence of the Lascarins and of the little resistance there was in Madampē, as they only wanted to place foot on land, after the dawn watch the flagship gave a signal with a gun and a lanthorn at the mast. All armed themselves and at dawn of day the Hollander landed in four smacks and launches on that beach under cover of his artillery, at a distance from the trench of the students who were unable to prevent it. Antonio Teyxeyra de Sepulveda and Modeliar Antonio Afonso with their men came on the scene from the other side, but they found 800 men already on land, divided into six bands, armed with breastplate and morion, who marched along the beach while the launches full of men accompanied them in the water; and though they gave and received volleys,

---

<sup>1</sup> One of the Author's informants. See Introduction.

the Portuguese seeing the odds and that the Lascarins jumped into the river when some of their comrades were cut down, before the Modeliar could intervene, retired to the bar, and on this occasion a shot carried off one arm of Antonia Botelho Gazeo, a soldier of great merit, who had already been a Captain, and who died of it. The rest waded the river, but 13 were intercepted by the launches which had entered it, and among them Antonio Barboza Pinheyro and António Teyxeyra de Sepulveda, who, being brought to the flagship, the Governor told them : 'That the island was already his, as they had so successfully effected a landing ; That the King of Candea would not tarry, but would be there with all his might and with the 200 Hollanders who were with him.' This event took place on the 12th of December [16]39, and the Hollander at once erected a stockade and two trenches, and mounted artillery on that side of Madampé commanding the bar, and taking water and refreshment, he also provided himself with the cattle that were in that village.

Our arrayal was at this time in Arandurê, one league from Manicrauárê, awaiting the King of Candea, with 350 Portuguese soldiers and with the men of three Dissâvas and of Râna, because the Dissâva of Maturê was in Anguratôtâ with three companies, when the Captain-Major received advice to march at once to the coast of Caymel, and should he meet with an occasion of attacking the enemy in his fortifications or of dislodging them therefrom or from the country, to do so because it was very convenient not to suffer a palm of land on that side which might prejudice the F 363.  
P 674 two neighbouring prâças and the reinforcements which might come along that coast ; and that the General was awaiting him in Nigumbo to arrange the necessary things ; and this he did. The Portuguese in India cannot now reconcile this haste in attacking any superior force and the remissness in forestalling it. The enemy led nearly 3,000 Europeans besides the Asiatics ; he was awaiting the forces of the Chingalâ encouraged and led by 200 Hollanders ; and such being the state of the war, I leave it to those who profess it to consider whether it was right to risk so small a forge in a field battle, and whether it was not better to secure the prâças therewith and the approaches to Colombo, which the Portuguese called the Pârres, and to defend our fortune either under the protection of the former or within the latter. The enemy meanwhile sacked some villages of that district and killed some Christians of the country, and fortifying himself at the mouth of the river, prepared leisurely and cautiously to attack by sea and land the little

fort of Nigumbo, while at the same time he reconnoitred our dispositions and awaited the news of the defeat of the arrayal, for he had people to inform him of everything, and if the arrayal were destroyed or did not come down, there was no force sufficient to impede him, and on the other hand if the arrayal came down, he would also have the forces of the Chingalâ to help him. But even in this he was partly mistaken, for the Chingalâ did not call the Hollander at this time to make him Master of Ceylon, but only to check the invasions of the Portuguese and to get possession of the lowlands by counterpoising the forces of the two European nations so that the mutual opposition of the two might enable him to enjoy the fruits of the Island.

---

### CHAPTER 3.

#### OF THE ENCOUNTER OF CAYMEL, AND THE FALL OF NIGUMBO

---

Francisco de Mendonça Manoel, who was a gentleman with hopes equal to his gallant disposition and valour, was intent on making the Hollanders embark, and marched day and night with such haste, like one going to his doom, that no cooking was done during the three days he spent on the road ; but realizing the inequality of his forces, he attempted to gain, before he was perceived by the enemy, a narrow pass in which he thought there was some advantage, and meanwhile he tried to obtain fuller information about the fortifications and the force and intentions of the enemy. In the advance guard came Jorge Coelho de Castro, and when <sup>P 324</sup> he came within a league of Caymel, he met two Ternatezes and a Hollander who had wandered away from their camp in search of *swa* (for so they call the liquor distilled from the palm tree). He seized them and ordered their heads to be cut off and stuck on spears, and without further ado, without waiting for orders or heeding the fatigue of the men or reforming them, for they were walking in disorder, or minding the inequality of the forces or the intentions of the Captain-Major, like one more accustomed to war with the Chingalâ than with Europeans, he simply sent word to the Captain-Major about what

he was doing and gave the signal to attack. This reckless decision gave rise to great disasters. The enemy heard the instruments of war and various musket shots fired at some, whom our men came across and killed, as they were found out of their quarters, and at once he took up arms, and formed into a half moon within the quarters. The Portuguese marched, or rather ran, without keeping ranks and without any order save that in which each found himself ; and they were so worn out that they were scarcely able to breathe, and they came up few at a time against an enemy formed in battle array, from whom they received notable loss.

The Captain-Major, being unable to prevent this disorder and thinking that the advance guard was already engaged with the main body of the enemy, advanced with the vanguard in better order, though with as much fatigue, for the Belgas did not show themselves except within their ramparts. There he attacked them with grim determination and succeeded in capturing the first rampart, causing such dread and perturbation to the Hollanders that many threw themselves into the river. But when they found out how small the Portuguese force was, and how slack they were through fatigue, being ashamed to flee from so few men, they returned to form themselves in the second rampart, where they defended themselves with greater pertinacity and valour. When [the strength of] the fortifications, the force and resistance were perceived, all experienced men realized that there was evident danger of a complete defeat, and after much persuasion they prevailed upon the Captain-Major to retire to the pass from which he had decided to attack, though the enemy with his artillery commanded the three passes that were there. Before they could gain it the enemy pressed with all his force and with loss on both sides, and as the demands of his men increased with the danger to which they were exposed, the Captain-Major, seeing his destruction clearly before his eyes, ordered the retreat to be sounded, and marching to Nigumbo, he crossed the river a little above Caymel. In this encounter died the Dissâva of the Four-Corlas, Manoel Vas Barreto, and of the captains of companies, Antonio Godinho, Antonio Valente and 13 Portuguese soldiers. Others mention more, but I follow an eye-witness who had the curiosity to take note of these events. The wounded were the Dissâva, | Jorge <sup>xxiv.</sup> Coelho de Castro, who by the valour with which he fought tried to undo the disorder of the attack, the Sergeant-Major, Antonio Diniz, Antonio de Amaral de Menezes, Nicolas Fernandez, Miguel de Serra, Francisco Deça, Manoel Martins and other soldiers. Four were captured.

P 678 | When our advance guard sounded the retreat, there attacked from the other side of the river some of our men, whom the General had sent from Nigumbo under the command of Antonio de Almeyda de Carvalho, and falling upon the launches, they set fire to three of them, but only two burnt. The enemy lost in this encounter 74 Hollanders, and 30 were badly wounded; and while the King came, they thought it safer to maintain the post than to follow the Portuguese. On the 28th of December the rebels, D. Baltezar and D. Cosme, arrived with a good number of lascarins. They at once constructed a bridge over the river to pass to Nigumbo, and all moved on, the King who had arrived [moving] along the interior, the Hollanders along the shore, and the ships along the coast. Reaching the palm groves of Nigumbo, they opened trenches around the fortalice, and on that very night they landed seven cannon of 18 to 30 pounds, and meanwhile on the 3rd of January the King joined the Hollander.

Nigumbo was rather a fortified house than a regular fort, with a few guns not one of which exceeded six pounds. Its Captain was Jorge Fernandez de Abreu, the Lord of the neighbouring islet. The General, D. Antonio Mascarenhas, ordered the arrayal to march to the other side of the estuary which the river forms there at a falcon-shot from the fortalice so that it might be easier for him to reinforce Columbo, which it was more important to defend, and he placed in Nigumbo 45 of the most sick men incapacitated from work, under the charge of Captains Pedro Coelho de Mirando and Bernardo da Costa with some Canarese. In the Island of Jorge Fernandez de Abreu, which was at a musket shot from the fortalice, he left three companies, and at their head Diogo de Souza de Castelbranco, entrusting the Captain Antonio Jorge with the defence of the bridge, by which those of the Island and of the fort communicated, and with the relief of the fortalice should it be necessary, with a force of black troops for the defence of the bar and to protect the people of the country who were gathered there; and leaving everything prepared in this way, before the enemies arrived, he left for Columbo.

The sixth of the month dawned with three batteries mounted, intended to cause terror rather than for use, and each day the enemy continued to advance the approaches always plying their artillery, whereby they razed the parapets, walls, and bastions on the land side. Those of the praça replied with the few and small artillery they had, repairing the damage with palm trees and earth. But as the whole wall was weak and [meant] only against the enemies of the country, and the

praça was greatly reduced, these industries of the beleagured availed little, and the batteries dislodged the guns and broke the mounts.

The Captain-Major went several times to the fortalice in company with the other Captains to see the state in which it was, and he animated those who were defending it, and supplied it with what was necessary and sent information of everything to the Captain-General. On the ninth of February

P 677 D. | Antonio Mascarenhas sent him a sealed order, which was understood to be an order to withdraw the garrison of the fort and to blow it up. He received the letter at four in the afternoon, and when he was about to read it to the Captains, the enemy fired simultaneously with seyen mortars from the batteries, and forthwith were heard repeated volleys of musketry. Thereupon the Captain-Major in all haste ordered all to return to their posts, and as he embarked for the fortalice, he saw from the middle of the creek that the enemy already master of it, was hauling down our banters and flying his own.

For at the appointed hour, when their flagship gave the signal from two gans simultaneously and by a square flag, the enemy assaulted the praça, and with him the King's men laying ladders to the walls where they made good resistance. Within it was Antonio Jorge O Buchia [who had come] to ascertain the designs of the enemy, and remembering that he had been entrusted with the bridge, with order to destroy it, in case the Belga scaled the fortalice, he came down with one of his soldiers, and together they opened the door, but he trusting, it seems, that the soldier would close it, went in search of his company to the appointed place, where he did not now find it, and the enemy who was surrounding the fortalice from all sides, seeing the door open, entered by it without resistance. Was there ever in human history a similar case ! Can it be denied to be a chastisement when in war such a thing cannot even have the appearance of neglect ? The enemy found an open door to our ruin, because what appeared to be the negligence of this Captain was a thing fully decreed by God ; and well could the Hollanders say that in Nigumbo they were received as friends, since they were received with open doors. Captain Jorge Fernandez de Abreu tried to undo this disorder, but he found the enemy within the praça, where he was wounded and remained a captive with the rest. The Island was at the same time attacked by the Chingalás, and many died there, and others were drowned, and some were taken prisoner ; and those who were able to escape, swam the river, but the Captain-Major

was unable to assist them because of the hurry and because the pass of the bridge was taken. But seeing everything lost, he collected those who had escaped from the one and the other encounter, and went to lodge in Matuâl, a quarter league from the inner pass of Columbo. The General ordered the arrayal to be reformed with Captains and soldiers, and he was able to muster 19 | companies, none of which exceeded 30, according <sup>P 255.</sup> to the style of Ceylon, as we have remarked. He also manned a galliot and six *manchus* to protect the river of Matuâl, in case the enemy should seek to enter by it.

The disposition of this war gave rise to much discussion in India. For seeing that the Captain-Major was ordered to come down [to the lowcountry] it seemed most convenient even before the encounter of Caynel, and much more after it, to reinforce Nigumbo with a good garrison and artillery, to construct stockades and trenches around that praca and in <sup>P 278</sup> that Island | in which the arrayal could lodge ; and under cover of them to await the attack of the enemy in the fortification, and to deliver such assaults as circumstances might show to be convenient ; and if they should be obliged to abandon the praca, to make a second resistance in the Island which was always judged to be more defensible, as small boats were ever at hand in which the men, in case of final disaster, could retire to the Island by the draw bridge, because at the last moment there is no time to break down a strong bridge. They were persuaded that both the one and the other enemy would sooner have been lost there than have driven us from our fortification after giving us time to repair them, because the river was ever free, and refreshment and munitions which Columbo could send would never fail us. But owing to these doings, though lesser numbers excuse whatever misfortune, since there was no lack of valour, the disorder can only be attributed to a chastisement [of God].

After this last event, which did not cost him more than two men, the Belga repaired the damage done to the fortalice and supplied it with artillery, munitions, provisions, and 120 soldiers, under the command of a valiant Captain, as it was not at all capable of a larger garrison. They had agreed to give up the praca to the King of Candea, who aggrieved at this and the other injustices, went two leagues away with his army. The Commander Costra went to compose these differences as best he could, and after his return, Governor Philipe Lucas<sup>1</sup> gave over two ships and a pinnace, which alone were at this time kept there, as the rest had gone to different parts either

---

<sup>1</sup> Philip Lucason Vol. 119.

for their trade or to seek reinforcements. As Philipe Lucas was ill, he set out for Batavia in a pinnace with 30 Portuguese prisoners, but on the way he and his Domine<sup>1</sup> died. The army went on getting fresh reinforcements from the south, from Batecalou and Paleacate, and two ships that were going to Persia left two companies there. But as he was not resolved to attack Columbo with this force, he treated with the Chingala King about the conquest of Gâle [asking him] to come in person on that expedition or to send his Captains against that praca, or at least to hold the passes against our arrayal so that we might not reinforce it. The King who was already dissatisfied, owing to the scanty fidelity <sup>r 366</sup> experienced in them, and who did not want them to be lords, but only to set them against the Portuguese in that Island, only made a diversion against our troops, for it was all to his profit; and as he was lord of the lands within sight of Columbo and as the Hollander was going to Gâle, it became necessary for us to divide the little force we had, for this is the advantage of those who make war by sea that it calls for equal opposition wherever they attack, and this it was that ever favoured the Hollander arms against us, for they profitted by the division of our pracas and the diversions of our foes.

## CHAPTER 4.

**P 670 HOW THE HOLLANDER CAME UPON GÂLE AND THE CAPTAIN-MAJOR IN PURSUIT OF THEM**

The Commander Costra despatched five ships which on the 1st of March came to anchor before Columbo, and while he remained in Nigumbo, making the necessary preparations for the expedition to Gâle, there came to him another of the ships which were upon the bar of Goa, and getting all his force in twelve ships, he carried therein more than 3,000 Europeans. On the 5th of March he left Columbo for Gâle, where he arrived at dawn on the 8th of the month, and that same morning there arrived a pinnace with reinforcements from Batecalou. Afterwards while the field battle was going on, there arrived four other ships from the bar of Goa, and two others at the time of the seige, [all of which together formed] a force more than sufficient even for a far greater enterprise, but in the affairs of Ceylon they always acted [in a way to

<sup>1</sup> Nicolas Molinae W. L. R. II. 118, 332.

make things] more than sure. As soon as General D. Antonio Mascarenhas saw the enemy set out, he understood his purpose and despatched the Captain-Major of the Field, Francisco de Mendonça Manoel, by land to Gâle, 18 leagues beyond Columbo, wherein there are three rivers to cross by boat besides others which cannot often be waded ; and though it was thought that they would encounter the forces of the Chingalâ, they found the way altogether unobstructed ; and he marched in such haste that some soldiers remained on the way and returned to Columbo, as they were not able to endure the march. This array had 323 Portuguese soldiers divided into 12 Companies which were now more numerous than was customary against the Chingalâz. The Sergeant-major was Joaõ de Sepulueda, the Ensign-major Valentim Pinheyro. There went also the four Dissâvas with 1,600 Lascârins of the country and Râna with 200 Canarese firelockmen and 100 Caffirs, armed with bows and arrows. This black troop, already intimidated by the preceding events, was of little use in the battle that was fought in Gâle, except the Canarese who fought like valiant comrades.

The fortalice of Gâle, erected against the Chingalâz, and against Asiatic pirates rather than against European batteries, stood on the North side of the bay, where the ground rises to a high point so steep by nature that it admits of no ascent on the side of the sea, | and thence the land slopes to the interior <sup>P 366</sup> of the Island. Within there was an expanse large enough for a city. From the open coast to the water of the bay, the high land was crossed by a stretch of wall which might be 300 fathoms long, and at the two extremities, where the wall had a greater slope towards the open sea and towards the bay, there were two watch towers upon rock, for on the northern point of the open coast a man could pass outside the wall with water up to the breast, and on the southern point in the bay <sup>P 680</sup> one could do so with greater ease, wherefore | there was built there another stockade with a wooden watch tower. This stretch of wall had three bastions on the land side of the fortalice, and from the watch tower of the bay to the bastion of Sant-Iago, the wall was of stone and clay, three palms thick, and on this occasion it was overlaid with palm trees. From the bastion of Sant-Iago to the bastion of the Conception, which was in the centre, and by its position formed a cavalier to the first, there was a mud wall lined on the inside and outside with curtains three palms high, built of stone and mortar, and at the level of the ground it had a thickness of 14 palms. The third portion of this wall, [stretching] as far as the bastion of Santo-Antonio, was also of mud and was

lined, only on the outside, with a similar wall of stone and mortar. From thence to the watch tower of the open coast the wall was of stone and mortar, only four palms thick, and it was hot 18 palms up to the parapet. The Bastion Santo Antonio was recently built with sufficient height and a regular platform. The Conception had a large platform but low, with a weak *cantiza*. The Sant-Iago was much smaller, low, and its walls were weak. From this bastion up to the fortalice, which was called the Retreat, there ran, along the bay, a wall altogether of mud, four palms thick and one fathom high, which scarcely deserved the name of parapet. Within, in the retreat, were the houses of the captain and a good esplanade and 20 pieces could play therein. The praça had also a bastion cavalier over the gate, a work of little use, as the walls were too thin and because there was a rising ground within firelock shot, where was built the first praça, which contrary to the opinion of many was dismantled in the time of Constantino de Sá de Noronha. Upon the bay was a breastwork, which, though strong on the water side, was unprotected on the land side, and was only 7 palms high. At the extremity of the town and commanding the bar, there was a bastion on a rock with wretched parapets and without any guns, because in the whole praça there were only 14, including two stone mortars, two pieces of 20 pounds, one of 18, one of 16, another of 14, and four of 12, and the others of 6, besides seven other falcons, each with only one chamber, which being scattered about at such a great distance, were all abandoned, and many were the places where the enemy was able to disembark. There were no guns in the three creeks [which are] around the bay which is a large one and beyond reach of the batteries of the fortalice, nor anywhere in the whole compass, F 367 or within it, where with good weather one can land on the ridge of rocks. These walls were built by Pero Velozo who was the first captain appointed by a despatch of the King to that praça with the title of captain-major of the corla of Gále, a post which was afterwards held by Fernão de Mendonça, when his uncle Diogo de Melo de Castro was General, who added stone angles to the bastions; for with such delays were these works carried out in India, while fate was preparing its ruin.

*P 681* As Captain of that praça, there was Lourenço Ferreyra de Brito, a casado of that place, selected 28 days previously by the council of Ceylon after they had realized the intentions of the enemy. It had a garrison of 80 Portuguese casados, including the sick, the aged and the hale, and 30 country-born soldiers of the train bands and Topazes with three companies

which had gone as a reinforcement, and 300 Chingalâ Lascarins. With the help of this force [the captain] after taking charge of the place, laboured at the fortification without any rest day or night, making the most urgent repairs and fortifications. There was little powder, few balls, many of a calibre different from that of the guns. There were not 20 muskets and arquebuses, a few more spears, and so of other things. There was not a *vinlem*<sup>1</sup> of public money or money of the King, and the work that was done was done at the cost of the inhabitants, though the place was so well suited for a magnificent fortification (such as the Hollanders afterwards built), though the material lay at hand and labour abundant and so cheap, that it did not cost the King more than a measure of rice, and though there were so many advantages in maintaining that praça that it was discussed by statesmen whether it was not good to establish the headquarters of the government of India there. I desire to give details of everything in order that Portugal may know the how and the why we were ruined in the East; even after it became so infested by European nations, for if we pass to the other pracas, we shall find similar negligence.

Much as the captain-major of the Field hurried, the enemy, who came by sea, arrived before him, and foreseeing this from Alcaô, which was half way, he sent ahead the Dissâva of the country troops of the corla of Gâle, Francisco Antunes, with his Lascarins, who were able to reach Gâle on the morning of the eighth of the month on which the enemy reached that bar. Without mooring, the enemy entered by midday and saluted the praça in battle array and continued bombarding from six ships, two pinnaces, a shallop and 17 launches, and when it had been answered from the praça, and this diversion was over, he entered by the Channel, hugging the hill of Unavato beyond reach of the guns of the fortalice. The pinnaces and shallops, moored at the end of the bay, continued to sweep the shores and the neighbouring woods, and under cover of their artillery, the launches landed the men they had brought, beyond Magâle and behind the Islets, and returned a second time to bring more men.

| The Captain of the praça sent the Dissâva, Francisco <sup>P 367.</sup> Antunes, with his men to open trenches at the place where the enemy landed, and when he saw the forces they were bringing, he also sent the three companies of the garrison to reinforce the Dissâva and to obstruct the landing. But as the circuit of the bay was large and the enemy made no delay,

---

<sup>1</sup> A coin worth 20 reis, but in Goa, 12 reis.—H. W. C.

*Poss* when they arrived at the spot, they found already on land more than 700 European musketeers and 400 Malays and Bandanese in good array and with field artillery | in the vanguard, who seeing how small our force was, came to meet it. The Portuguese, realizing the odds, retired fighting with the enemy, with deaths and wounds on both sides, and there was such confusion on certain occasions that some were taken prisoner. The Hollander kept on advancing, accompanied by the launches along the water's edge, till they arrived at Pitigâle, where the launches landed the artillery; and the Belga took up his quarters in the bazaar ; and a shot from the cavalier, in which Vicente Paez de Mendonça was, sent to the bottom a launch laden with artillery. In the course of the ensuing night, the enemy at all risk laboured at a stockade and rampart near the shore of the bay, on which he planted two pieces of 30 pounds, directed against the bastion Sant-Iago and five of lesser calibre to guard the fortifications. At night-fall a pinnace approached the breastwork to see if there was any resistance and whether the ships could do so also, but on receiving some shot and losing the mizen mast, she retired and the ships did not approach.

The Dissâva Francisco Antunes at once returned to join the Captain-Major of the Field whom he encountered in Gindurê, two leagues from the praça, and exchanging letters that night with Lourenço Ferreyra de Brito, they agreed to attack the enemy at daybreak at the signal from a gun from the fortalice, and that those who were able to sally out from the praça would do so and attack them in the form which we shall presently see. Gallant resolutions indeed ! As if it were the same thing for one Portuguese to cross swords with four or six Hellanders in a street and to attack them with the same odds in their trenches ! The captain-major halted two musket shots from the quarters and spent the rest of the night preparing the things necessary for the assault, for fortune makes no delay when she is making for destruction. The enemy was already on land with all his forces quartered, with ramparts of sand and thorns, and our force was so inferior that a little reflection would have made them abandon this resolution (of which up to to-day I do not know who the author was) and it would have made them dispose the warfare in a different way, had Heaven not decreed this loss as a chastisement. He found the captains and soldiers very courageous, and as this could not have been due to despair, it can only be attributed to the gallantry which the Portuguese nation ever maintained in India. But to declare his opinion and to show that this was most convenient, he made them this short address.

| " You all know that, by the same action and valour, we ~~posses~~  
 serve two very different masters [viz.] God, by fighting for the  
 Faith against heretics, and the King, through loyalty to whom,  
 we battle with his enemies. I cannot deny that they are more  
 in number, that they are Europeans, and well billeted,  
 dexterous in arms, with picked leaders ; but it is no novelty  
~~possess~~ forces, | and in India especially we have not yet lost that  
 distinction. We do not generally use European discipline  
 in Asia against the natives, but with Europeans we must  
 needs observe it, and by fighting in good order this day, we  
 shall find support for victory, a refuge for rest, and whatever  
 be our fortune in battle, a sure shelter, so that we may try  
 the advantage which a pitched battle can give us if we fight  
 wisely and it is in our power to follow up the victory which we  
 hope from God, or to forestall the destruction, if our fate be  
 different. Faith, love, blood, gallantry and honour, unite us  
 all, for we are of the same belief, of the same nation ; while  
 they have only fear and self-interest, being of diverse nations.  
 Few are the victories due to numbers, but many are those  
 achieved by valour, and as the latter is fully acknowledged  
 in the Portuguese, we can doubt of it only if we forget what we  
 are. Let not India say that we avoided an enemy, for arms  
 accustomed to victory look at the heart rather than at the face ;  
 and he who does not know the colour of fear, does not distin-  
 guish Europeans from Asiatics. And they cannot yet boast  
 that they have vanquished us in fair battle ; and the present  
 inequality can be made up for by our Faith and the justice  
 which we defend, and the strength which all recognize in the  
 Portuguese. It is not my purpose to add courage to a nation  
 which has ever been in need rather of the curb, but only to  
 represent to you all that we must fight like those who consider  
 the victory assured, and keep proper discipline like those who  
 have an enemy to fear. It is well known that none of those  
 here present will refuse to fight with sword and spear against  
 five or six of them in a street, and the inequality does not  
 become greater, if we come to vie hand to hand ; and if on the  
 strength of their good fortune they show themselves cavaliers,  
 their defiance will stop here. In the Portuguese fashion let us  
 attack them face to face ; let us meet them breast to breast,  
 and always in good order, and I shall be answerable for the  
 victory." The address being over, our arrayal came within  
 musket shot of the enemy, and there, in perfect silence, they  
 awaited the signal from the praça. But as the natives had  
 been bought, they found the enemy as prepared as the  
 Portuguese who attacked.

## CHAPTER 5.

P 684      OF THE BATTLE WHICH FRANCISCO DE MENDONÇA      P 685  
 MANOEL FOUGHT WITH THE HOLLANDERS  
 AT GÁLÉ

---

The signal being given from the praça at peep of dawn, they assaulted jointly at the same time. Three companies with some casados, 80 Caffirs and 300 Lascarins, who with their Captain, Manoel Braz, had arrived that night from Maturé, and at the head of all Vicente da Silva, sallied out from the fortalice and attacked with all resolution; but when the enemy fired a volley of artillery, the lascarins and almost all the Caffirs ran away. The Portuguese, however, advanced and gaining the rampart, in spite of Captain Marte and 200 Hollanders and 100 Bandanese, they captured the artillery; and here the Belga losing by death his Marte, the rest gave up the post and took to the water, and three launches which were there were sent adrift to oblige them to conquer or die. In this conflict, the enemy further reinforced his squadron, and after a long resistance and many deaths on both sides, there dying on our side the Captains, Francisco da Silva and Francisco Valadas, two Ensigns and not a few soldiers, (considering the few there were), and others being wounded, the enemy regained the post at the cost of much blood and many lives. The Captain of the praça, seeing that the remnants of the three companies were retiring and that on all other sides the battle was raging with full fury, sallied out, appointed as head of that force Bertolameu Deça, and making them turn upon the enemy, returned to the fortalice with the wounded, and they sustained the fight on that side with valour.

The middle wing was under the command of Captain Jorge Fernandes, who was captain of one company, and there were three other Captains, Joaõ de Siqueyra, Afonso Vaz Gago, and Inocencio Mendez, besides the Dissavâs of the Four-corlas and of Sofragaõ, Antonio da Fonseca Pereyra and Francisco de Faria. The enemy had in those ramparts three companies of Hollanders and 100 Bandanese, which made 400 men, under the command of Captain Friz, a man of great renown among them. Here they fought with fierce resolution on both sides,

the whole brunt falling on the Portuguese, because of the lascarins few were those who fought ; and we lost the Dissâva of Sofragaõ. The Commander Jorge Fernandez was wounded and taken prisoner along with Captain Joao de Siqueyra and four soldiers, as they were wounded in the field and rendered incapable of retiring, when the arrayal retreated to the fortalice.

The Captain-Major attacked with the remainder of the arrayal, taking with him the Dissâva of Maturé, Francisco Antunes and [the Dissâva] of the Seven-corlas, Francisco da Silva, and Râna with 200 Canarese, relying | especially on his eight companies, of which the Captains were, Andre Monteyro, captain of the advance guard, who was an intrepid cavalier and died in battle before the captain-major, Antonio Jorge, Antonio Rodriguez de Andrade, Valentim Pinheyro, | F 385 Lourenço Velozo, Manoel Correa, Manoel Fernandez Madeya and D. Francisco de Menezes. The enemy had in those trenches 800 European soldiers in eight companies, with companies of Topazes and Bandanese under the command of Commander Costra and of the Master of the Field, Andriaõ Cornelio, and other leading captains. The night spies found them divided into two bodies, but as our men were drawn up in three at the time of the attack, they received them in the same manner, which shows that nothing was hidden from them. Our men advanced with a valour corresponding to that of their brave Captain, and as the fight began on all sides at the same time, there was fought on both sides one of the most sanguinary battles that were ever fought in India, for the Batavian brought on this occasion great leaders, picked and well-armed men, while our men never used merely defensive weapons in India ; and from the main body of their arrayal they sent the necessary reinforcements, whenever the danger was seen to be great. This first fury lasted on all sides for more than an hour and a half [the men fighting] face to face and breast exposed, and the enemy had the advantage in numbers and in position, being in their own trenches. Those of the praça who measured the damage from the time, from the successive charges, and from the play of other arms, seeing the pertinacity of the one in defending themselves and of the other in driving them from the trenches and from the bazaar where they were quartered, thought that few would be left alive on either side, and the reason why it was not so, though the soldiers were dexterous in the use of arms, is ascribed to the thick smoke of the musketry which in the stillness of the morning prevented the soldiers from taking good aim.

The Captain-Major finally drove the enemy from his lodgements, capturing his artillery and two cannon which they had there ; and had he been content with this victory, Gále would never have been lost. Once outside his trenches, the enemy reformed into a large squadron, and the Portuguese met them in a palmgrove and kept up the battle to the great loss of the Hollander. To clinch the victory, Francisco de Mendonça Manoel ordered the Ensign-major to attack the enemy from the rear with four companies of the garrison, while he invested them in front ; and the Hollander, unable to stand the fury of the Portuguese, made for the water, fleeing rather than retiring, leaving on the field more than 900 killed and taking with him a proportionate number of wounded. The Portuguese continued to press them, till many threw themselves into the sea, whence the ships and 35 small barks were giving courage to their men and wounding ours by continuous volleys of artillery and musketry, the whole resembling a hell. The shallops brought officers and munitions ~~Pass~~ and not only reinforced those on land, but even prevented them from throwing themselves into the sea, and gave continuous volleys of the one and the other balls to our men.

Gallantly strode the Captain-major like a god of war ~~Pass~~ with sword and shield, up and down the shore amidst the Portuguese companies, ordering the soldiers to fire even on the shallops of the enemy, so that they might not relieve their men, whom he already considered beheaded and captured, [and it would have been so] had the arm of God not been stretched against us on this occasion also, because in the midst of so many bullets, a random shot from one of the shallops hit him on the head with such force, that giving a horrible leap, he fell dead on the spot, at the time when the enemy was already hoisting the white flag. Francisco de Mendonça Manoel was a gentleman greatly beloved by all, and as he fell within sight of the greater part of the arrayal, a page of his, a Fleming, whom fate had brought thither, (God knows whether it was to spare the lives of his country-men), went clamouring through the ranks of our companies in a funereal voice that the Captain-major was dead, and there was no one in that perturbation to close his mouth. Afflicted by this event and intent on what they saw and felt, they all in confusion ceased to use their arms against a twice conquered enemy, giving him time to reform and land fresh reinforcements. Many of those who were badly wounded retired, and as some captains were killed, even some of the hale did the same, and the cries of the others did not succeed in making them hold on. And finally, without direction and without order, in scattered groups, they retired

to the fortalice, and with them came the others, as they were few, giving up so great a success and a victory so certain, if only the sergeant-major, whose duty it was, had the authority and the promptitude to supply the place of the Captain-major, and had carried it out with the same ardour, because the enemy was so despondent that he did not profit by this disorder, and so many were their dead, that [stretched] one upon another they obstructed the path of our soldiers, that short space being covered with more than 800 dead bodies; and the number of the wounded was in proportion.

When the Portuguese retired, the enemy reoccupied his quarters, for they did not even halt there. We lost in this encounter 70 of the best soldiers, including some gentlemen, Ensigns and sergeants, and the captains already named. The wounded were Sebastião D'orta, Captain of Calaturé, D. Francisco de Menczes and Manoel Fernandez Madevra, Captains of companies, who died prisoners from sickness and ill-treatment along with more than 60 soldiers, Ensigns and sergeants. Though in this encounter the Portuguese fought with great gallantry, in spite of the odds being against them, and their having to vie with an enemy who was entrenched, as that arrayal had only gone to reinforce Gâle, which they could have entered without difficulty and whence under better conditions they could have made repeated and powerful <sup>r 637</sup> sallies, delivering gallant assaults on the enemy, | as there was then no reason to believe that the King | of Candea would again involve the whole of his force, which was engaged and scattered in maintaining the lands, because he saw the ill requital [of his benefits] by the Hollanders, though matters had not reached such a pass as to enable him to decide whether it would be more convenient for him to have to do with the Hollander alone than with both nations, a decision to which he came later, in other parts of India this resolution was considered to be precipitate, whoever it be that decided upon it. For to add to these reasons, the burning of the galleons in this bar of Murmugaô was already known in Ceylon, and that the enemy was slackening this siege and diversion, and was more free for the enterprise of Ceylon and of Malâca which he kept up together. [These are] considerations which called for greater hesitation in exposing Portuguese forces. On the other hand it was known that a reinforcement of two fleets of rowing boats was already on the way, and it was more convenient to await better conditions in the increase of that arrayal. Finally if that force with which we fought, had only gone to Gâle, it would have been impossible for the Hollander to take that praça.

But to show the niceties of honour which the soldiers of India ever maintained, I will here describe the end of Antonio Jorge o Buchia, of whom we have already said that he opened the gate of Nigumbo. This captain was sentenced in Columbo to run the gauntlet in the arrayal with points on his feet and a distaff at the waist. This sentence was carried out in spite of the fact that he had acquitted himself well on other occasions. He behaved afterwards as if he were a mad man, and as such he went about the camp, dazed, and without speaking a word to any one, ill-clad, without arms and hatless, up to the time when the Hollander, dislodged from his quarters, reformed for the first time outside the bazaar of Gâle. Then was seen Antonio Jorge in spick and span attire, as if he were again in his right mind, which made them wonder at him and made Captain Manoel Correa say to him, "Ah! Master Antonio Jorge: what is this? A very fine gentleman you are!" To which he replied; "Antonio Jorge lives disgraced in the world. He must either die with honour or recover the loss." And without waiting for the others to attack, he levelled the spear which he carried in his hand and rushed furiously into the thick of the squadron of the enemy, causing them such havoc and creating so great an uproar, that when they were attacked by our men, they had no composure, so long as he was alive, to fire their volleys upon us, and at last he fell in the midst of that large squadron and ended his life, after having wrought notable slaughter. To such things does honour lead those who esteem it.

## CHAPTER 6.

P 688 CONCERNING THE SIEGE OF GALE BY THE HOLLANDER  
AND OF HOW THAT PRAIA WAS STORMED

The Belga set against the three bastions, six cannon and other pieces of lesser calibre, <sup>F 370</sup> battering with much fury and persistence the bastions of Sant-Iago and the Conception. From these [bastions] they replied with much damage to themselves, for most of the shot killed men and destroyed the gun carriages, while the soldiers of the galleons aimed well, because the four black gunners knew little, and the best [of them] died on the spot, the rest in the scaling. Of those who

were able to take up arms, the chief was the Sergeant-Major, Joāo de Sepulveda, whom the Captain of the praça invited to the council along with the others who could give counsel, and he laid before them all the state of that fortalice, the weakness of its fortifications, the loss they had sustained and could receive from the batteries of the enemy, [pointing out] that he thought it best to try their land a second time in the field with the Hollanders, before they fortified themselves further and received further reinforcements ; for if they were not able to force them to embark, when the arrayal was in a more flourishing state, the principal reason was the death of the Captain-Major which gave rise to the retreat at the time when, though worn out and crippled, they were victorious, and as he knew that the enemy had received greater loss, though less in comparison with their larger forces, they could hope that God would give them success this time, for as they were so near the walls, even if they should not achieve all they intended, they could not be altogether defeated ; and even if the enemy remained in the field, they could at least leave their artillery spiked, for which he had given the necessary order.

This resolution seemed greatly out of keeping with the time and occasion, considering that there were few Portuguese to sally out from the praça ; and though the council consisted of more than 15, only three were for this opinion. The rest maintained : ' That what was not effected the first time could not be done the second time, since the enemy was victorious and elated and our men intimidated and exhausted ; that our best soldiers were gone, being either killed or wounded in the battle ; that there were few casados wherewith to reform the arrayal ; that the black troops must not be reckoned upon, for though a few of them fought the first time, none would fight a second time ; that since that arrayal had come to reinforce the praça which was so greatly in need of a garrison, considering the large circuit it occupied, the men should be posted in the different posts and the damage done to the walls should be repaired, because meanwhile reinforcements might arrive, which they said would be large and [they said also] that the Governor Antonio Telles de Menezes<sup>1</sup> was coming in person, and if they kept up till then, which would be no small thing, victory would be assured ; that the siege could not be carried on for many months, as the winter was approaching and that, with such scarcity of soldiers, it would be a great thing to be able to defend themselves, but that victory in the field was impossible.' It was therefore settled by a majority of votes

that it was not convenient to sally out a second time against the enemy. Of all this the Captain of the praça sent word to the General who was in Columbo, in a light vessel in which went Sebastião D'orta da Guerra, Captain of Calaturé, as he was wounded and because he was a practical person, who could give an account of everything and negotiate the necessary reinforcement<sup>t</sup> of money and shot, of which the four pieces of 12 pounds and the one of 14 and another of 16 had soon run short ; and the blacksmiths were again busy making them.

The best proof of the scarcity of men for service is clearly seen from this following distribution. In the watch tower in the open coast, was Francisco Frazaõ, a casado of Gâle, with eight companions. In the bastion Santo-Antonio, Antonio Lourenço Forte, also a casado of that praça, with 14, and Captain Bartolameu D'eca with 28 soldiers ; and in the watch tower between this bastion and the Conception, Captain Antonio Jorge with 21 soldiers, and behind that rampart<sup>t</sup>, the Dissáva of the Seven-Corlas with four soldiers and his lascarins ; in the bastion of the Conception, the Captain Lourenço da Costa, a casado of the place, with 16 companions of the train band and the Captain Francisco Goncalvez Velho with 26 soldiers ; and because Lourenço da Costa was badly wounded on the second day of bombardment, his place was taken by another casado, Simão de Campos. In the curtain which leads to the bastion of Sant-Iago there were three watch towers, and in the first was Captain Antonio Rodriguez de Andrade, with 28 soldiers, in the second Captain Lourenço Veloso with 27, in the third Captain Afonso Vaz Gago with 26, of which numbers their companies consisted. The inner side of this wall was garrisoned by the Dissáva, Francisco Antunes, with six companions and with his lascarins. In the bastion of Sant-Iago, a post of greater danger, there was Captain Pedro Carvalho, a casado of Gâle, with 16 companions, and Captain Valentim Pinheyro with his company of 29 soldiers. At the foot of this bastion, in the main guard, there was Bernardo Goncalvez, a casado of that country, with four companions, and in his charge there was a stone mortar and a falcon, which swept the field and commanded the rampart. There was also near this bastion, Domingos da Silva, a casado of the fortalice, with two companies consisting of 80 Caffirs<sup>t</sup> to help where there was need. In the watch tower of the wall, which runs along the bay, there were 25 soldiers under the command of Antonio Rodriguez, the Ensign of D. Francisco de Menezes, as the latter was wounded. In the inner Stockade there was Antonio da Fonseca Pereyra, Dissáva of the Four-Corlas, with six

companions and the men of his Dissâva, and Captain Domingos Soares de Misquita with a company of 27 soldiers. Sebastião Rebelo, a casado of the place, with the men of the Gále-Corla was on the rocks of the bay near the retreat with <sup>P 690</sup> some muskets on supports. | In the retreat was the Factor, Joaõ de Melo de Azevedo, and his clerk ; and in its main guard, and as a watch over the powder, was Captain Antonio Pereyra, a casado of the praça, with 10 very old companions. In the cavalier of the retreat was Vicente Paes de Mendonça, a casado of Gále, who had only six companions. In the breast-work Rosario, was Manoel da Fonseca Monis, with 12 pieces, who had also in his charge the neighbouring creek. In the bastion of Santa Cruz, upon the bar, was Captain Vicente Mendez with a company of 24 soldiers and Rana with his Canarese. And as on the sea side of that bastion, at the extremity of the town, the enemy could land, | the Captain <sup>F 371.</sup> Bartolameu Fereyra de Abreu, a casado of that praça, was placed there with 12 companions and muskets on supports, because there was no artillery, and the Dissâva of Sofragão, Afonso Carvalho, with his men. And there was not a man in the praça who could serve but was occupied. There were also three patrols, one of Captain Manoel Rodriguez, also a casado, who had 10 companions ; another of the Sergeant-Major [consisting] of 25 soldiers under the command of Estevão de Souza, because its Captain Manoel Fernandez Madeyra was wounded ; and the third of the Captain of the praça, which consisted of 20 Portuguese of whom the Captain was Diogo de Silveyra Leão, a casado of the place. They all had orders that in cases of greater danger each should assist his neighbour, and that the patrols should assist all according to need. Totalling all this force, including casados, old and young, hale and ill, who could bear arms, merchants and visitors who happened to be there and had not come with the arrayal, it made 210 persons who had Portuguese blood, for the majority of those who were stationed were Topazes, and when the enemy scaled the praça, ten of them were already in bed. The men who came from Columbo numbered 323, excluding those killed in the battle, and of this number more than 70 were in hospital wounded, and though some give a larger number to the arrayal, we Portuguese were ever less than we reckoned ourselves. The black troops were of little use for this work, while all the whites who were there were not enough to garrison a city round which the Belga had set a cordon by sea and land, and which could be attacked on all sides ; and as he knew this disadvantage, he attempted to carry it at a time when it was not easy for the neighbours to reinforce, and there

was no place free from danger from which to withdraw the garrison ; and he assaulted the bastion of Sant-Iago most of all, as it had no terrace for more than 12 men to fight together, and as it was very low, besides being easy to scale, it was more exposed to grenades and other devices for setting fire.

The men of the praça, therefore, began to cut down the palm trees in the gardens of the town, and on the second night of the siege they lined, on the outside, the bastion of Sant-Iago which was already greatly damaged. On the following night, in the same way, they repaired the bastion of the Conception, and P 691 the other | damaged ones in turn, though the enemy did not cease his fire or alarms upon those thus engaged ; and as the walls were very weak and there were shots near the gate of the fortalice, which passed from one side of them to the other, the labour of rebuilding was intense, and, in order to drive the enemy away, they directed towards the land the artillery which was mounted on the posts of the sea. On the second day of the bombardment, the enemy also began to throw grenades of 60 pounds and various artifices into the praça, whereby they greatly intimidated the black troops. | as it was F 572 a contrivance they had never seen. And they did other damage, even succeeding in setting alight the handsome houses of Lopo da Gama, where they raised a great fire. At the same time a body of Hollanders attacked the bastion of Sant-Iago, and the men who were working there wounded some with flint-locks, so as not to betray themselves with matches by night, but receiving another valiant charge, they retired.

Lourenço Ferreyra de Brito sent some lascarins to deliver assaults by night, by dint of gifts and promises, but they only served to disquiet the enemy with some sallies and to betray what they were doing. It was seen from the praça that natives were coming to put themselves under the obedience of the Hollanders, and that some men-at-arms went over to them, as for instance the rebel Dissanaca Modeliar and others, and before the scaling, the Dissâva of Maturé [placed] by the King of Candea. On the third day of the bombardment, the 11th of March, there arrived three more of those powerful ships which were blockading Goa by sea, which again landed 600 musketeers on the same spot of Magâle. On the 12th of the month, at noon, there came a Hollander with a drum and a white flag making his way from the trenches to the wall, and with him the Captain of Batecalou, João Festa, with a letter. Lourenço Ferreyra de Brito well understood what it might be, and lest there should be some disturbance, he directed them to be ordered to return to their quarters. But either because

they remained longer than was necessary, or because all do not know the courtesies of war, one of the Captains of the bastion of Sant-Iago ordered [his men] to fire muskets on them, and he was reprimanded for it, though he had not been fully obeyed, because those who fired did not want to kill them ; and being called by their companions they returned.

The enemy, who found himself strong enough for anything, took occasion by this insult to refuse quarter thenceforth, and he resolved to storm the praca when only the bastion of Sant-Iago had been razed, and all the battered walls without parapets and very low. After ten days of bombardment and after approaching nearer on the 11th and 12th, he brought from the ships many ladders and sailors to plant them. At the beginning of the dawn watch the Captain received information that launches from the ships were making towards the town, and two spies told him that the Belga was busy in his quarters and was serving out ladders. He at once ordered the signal of alarm to be sounded and it was reported that in the bastion of Santa Cruz they were fighting with the launches which attacked on that side. He well understood that this was a diversion and a feint to get the men to hasten thither, and he only ordered Manoel Braz to tell them not to abandon the coast but to assist each other if the danger required it. After this alarm the enemy came attacking the walls with 1,100 Hollander musketeers and 300 Bandanese and Malays, and with great gallantry and resolution, though wounded by many shot, they laid ladders to the two bastions of the Conception and Sant-Iago, and on the rest of the wall up to the beach of the bay. Commander Costra led the right wing, and the left, on the side of the bay, was led by the master of the field, and all the officers did the work both of Captains and soldiers. After receiving the first volley of artillery from afar, they fired on them with swivel guns, and a stone mortar of the main guard which commanded [that part] up to the bay, carried off almost the whole squadron of 500 men who attacked on the beach, but at the second shot it burst and carried away a part of the curtain through which the Batavian was finally able to advance easily after pressing on that part with all his might. In the curtains and bastions there began a cruel and sanguinary battle, with sword and fire, of which the enemy had many devices being determined not to turn back, while their officers threatened them with death, and for those encounters instead of bhang, which the Asiatics use, they gave them wine to drink with powder, thus supplying by loss of sense the lack of courage to those who have no courage by birth ; and these are the men whom God used for our scourge !

The Captain of the praça, thinking that the enemy under cover of his ships might attack along the beach with rowing boates, visited those posts, but seeing that there was no danger there, he ordered those on guard over the bay to go to the walls, which they did ; and all fought wit<sup>h</sup> reckless courage, so that the Hollander officers cried out to their men "Conquer or die." In this confi<sup>t</sup>t Captain Manoel Barbosa was killed by a shot on the breast while he was hurling the ladders of the enemy ; and whenever one lost his life on one side or on the other, another took his place. And as the bastion of Santo-Antonio was not attacked, it valiantly assailed [those who attacked] the Conception which it commanded, and the same was done by those of the neighbouring watch tower with artillery and musketry. All the others were occupied in defending their posts, as it was always dangerous, especially at night, to quit them, and the Dissávas were busy animating their men, but the latter gradually abandoned them in the darkness. Antonio Fernandez da Cunha, an o'd resident of Gále and a whilom keeper of the Castle of that praça, went with the patrols of his brother-in-law, Manoel Rodriguez, to aid the bastion of the Conception, but his hand was pierced by a spear. Simão de Campos with his companions and Francisco Goncalves Velho with his soldiers, fought with such valour with sword and spear and muskets and pots of powder, P 693 | that the enemy could not enter through that place, for as the bastion had a terrace, they were able to attack and defend themselves.

Knowing this weakness as well as the others already pointed out, the Hollander assaulted the bastion of Sant-Iago more than the others, and there the struggle was kept up most fiercely, and many of the enemy fell, and others who were burnt went to the water and fell dead, | but as it had but a F 373 small terrace, the fire darts as well as the many grenades which the enemy hurled did much damage, and the greatest of all was that the grenades set fire to the barrels and cartridges and pots of powder which we had there, and burnt many Portuguese. The Sergeant-Major at once sent the Dissáva of Matr<sup>e</sup>-Corla to bring powder, munition and pots of fire, for that bastion, and the Captain of the praça, seeing that the scorched and the wounded men were retiring and that there were few men in it, at once hurried thither with the men of his patrol, and as it could contain only a few, he reinforced it thrice, because being scorched by the many grenades which the enemy hurled with great facility, because it was open and low, they were obliged to retire, and on the third occasion when he relieved it, he was wounded by four bullets, frong which he fell

almost dead with his right arm almost broken and himself rendered incapable of directing any longer. As the storming continued, some casados and soldiers were killed over and above those scorched, and one can scarcely believe what is related to have been done by a young Portuguese boy of Gále. Here the Captain and the Ensign-Major, Valentim Pinheyro, fought with great courage, and though it was first thought that he died there, it was afterwards found out that he rallied out of Gále badly wounded with others, as we shall describe, and that on the way to Columbo he was taken by the natives and led to Candea where on the order of the King, and because he refused to apostatize or to worship idols, he was ordered to be impaled and lived three days in that torture praising God with great courage and inveighing against idolatry. But as there was no one at hand to defend it, the bastion was entered by the enemy, who making use of our artillery dislodged the men who garrisoned the curtains of the wall.

The Hollander at once pressed on that place and on the wreck with great forces which he had reserved for this purpose ; but when he sought to come down from the bastion to the main guard he was stoutly opposed by the Dissáva, António de Fonseca Pereyra, with those whom he was able to get together from the garrison of the bastion, from the patrol of the Captain, and others who were succouring. Here Captain Bernardo Gonçalves was so badly wounded that he soon died ; the Captain of the Caffirs Domingos da Silva died also. Francisco Gonçalves, a merchant of Negapatao, there received seven wounds, till at last after a long and doubtful conflict, the one who had the greater forces got the upper hand ; and as the Belga now had large forces within the walls and had become master of the main guard, the survivors withdrew to <sup>P 66</sup> the retreat. Here the Sergeant-Major was badly wanted | with his patrol, but he must have been occupied elsewhere, and as there was no one to give information to the other posts there was no one to help either, for as all this happened before it was fully day, and as the danger was not clearly realized, and as the enemy did not desist from any of the neighbouring ones, there was none | even from the most remote to give any <sup>P 570</sup> assistance. It is no small misfortune to have to command in similar conflicts, and it was no small misfortune that this cavalier lacked presence of mind on two occasions of such importance, namely on the field and in the praça, because the enemy could never have been better overcome if only there had been some one to play the part of a furious Mars.

## CHAPTER 7.

**OF HOW GALE FELL AND OF THE DISTRIBUTION WHICH  
THE BELGA MADE OF THE PORTUGUESE**

In this way the enemy entered the little bastion of Sant-Iago. Though our men had previously repelled him twice, being reinforced, he attacked it a third time, and when they carried the bastion, the retreat was already being scunned, so that it might clearly appear that another arm<sup>1</sup> was against us, for all admit that had the resistance lasted a little longer, they would have retired and embarked in disappointment, and that the storming had cost them, at the foot of the walls before they entered, more than 450 Europeans, including in the number more than 15 Captains and nearly all the Malays and Bandane, and that they lost there nearly 700 men, and that more than 500 Hollanders came off wounded, of whom the greater part died. Our men were ever persuaded that had Captain Lourenço Ferreyra de Brito not risked his life so much, or had he been alive for half a watch longer, till the light of day made the enemy realize his loss, and our men the danger which most needed attention, the enemy would not have gained his object.

Having captured the main guard, the Hollander opened the gate of the fortalice, and those who were outside entered by it, and they again formed into two squadrons : one under the master of the field advanced to the Misericordia, and the other hugged the ramparts which the soldiers, being driven by the artillery of the surrounded bastion, had abandoned after the death of the two captains, Lourenço Velozo and Antonio Rodriguez de Andrade, and many of their soldiers. This squadron arrived at the bastion of the Conception and the Portuguese, sallying out, halted at the entrance to the street, where the battle was renewed with many deaths of the enemy, there falling on our side many casados and soldiers. Here Phelipe Ferro das Neves, a veteran casado of the fortalice, did deeds worthy of praise, for rekindling the valour of his

*Poss* better days, he sold his life at the price of many lives. There fell also Domingos da Cunha, pierced through the breast by a chain bullet shot after fighting with the utmost valour. Owing to the loss of these cavaliers and others, the enemy was able to become master of this bastion in which he left a *P. 374* garrison, as he had done at that of Sant-Iago.

---

<sup>1</sup> I.e., God's arm.

Thence he advanced to the bastion of Santo-Antonio, to which some of our men had retired, and from which the Sergeant-major had sallied with some Portuguese, and encountering the enemy and seeing his plan, had retired, but not to the bastion. The enemy seeing that it might cost him blood, sent for the wife of Antonio Lourenço Forte, and when she was brought to his presence, he asked her: 'Who will be responsible for these lives?' But she did not reprove the decision of her husband, nor would he have admitted any other than death. Francisco da Silva, Dissâva of the Seven-Corlas, being abandoned by his lascarins, fell at his post at the foot of the bastion. They arrived at the gate, where one of our falcons with small shot killed many Hollanders, but they paid for it with more than 30 men; and captain Antonio Lourenço Forte, who, with some companions, fought bravely, and captain Bertolameu D'ea, fell in this conflict, as the enemy did not spare the lives of those who surrendered. Leaving a garrison there, the Hollander continued the storming.

When the Dissâva of Maturê was returning with the munitions he had gone to fetch for the bastion of Sant-Iago, and had arrived at the Misericordia, he came upon the detachment of the Master of the field and also some black troops and those of Rana whom the Captain of the praça, before he fell mortally wounded, had summoned from the beach to reinforce the bastion of Sant-Iago; and he tried to form them in order to attack that detachment, but he was not able to hinder them, because the artillery of the bastion and the musketry of the advancing detachment swept the whole street, and seeing himself alone, he went towards the bastion of the Conception and encountered the Sergeant-major, who told him that the two land bastions were already taken. Together they returned to the Retreat, and meeting various parties of the enemy, they escaped towards the open coast with 15 Portuguese, and there they were taken. From the church-yard of the Misericordia the squadron of the Master of the field descended to S. Domingos, where the Portuguese and the Caffirs, who had been able to retire from the captured posts, were assembled, and though the captain of the breast-work and the Dissâva of the Four-Corlas attempted to attack that party along with these and fired their muskets at the enemy who were descending, yet seeing that the majority withdrew in order not to throw away their lives uselessly, since it was a hopeless enterprise, they went up to the retreat, where at last 60 men surrendered on terms, seeing the little use of so few men making a stand.

*P 696* The enemy meanwhile was storming the town in various parties, killing some Portuguese in cold blood, though they were ill in their beds ; and sending a detachment to the mouth of the bar, he fell on the rear of those who were still fighting with the launches and shallops ; and the latter seeing themselves attacked afresh, retired to the bastion of Santa Cruz | *F 3740* in which there was no artillery, and there they defended themselves from the one and the other enemy with deaths on both sides, till they were overpowered by a large force of Hollanders ; whereupon seeing that they could not escape, when all the rest of the praça was taken, they also surrendered with the rest. The launches came to land and soon disembarked all the men, and the whole praça fell into their hands ; because besides the dead already mentioned, they killed captain Lorenzo da Costa who, wounded as he was, hurried to the bastion of the Conception at the time of the storming and many Ensigns and Sergeants ; and on account of the loss of so many officers, the enemy was more free to storm the praça ; and if they had had the good sense to gather all the men in the retreat and under its shelter, the enemy was so broken up and hurt, that it is believed that he would have been the conqueror after having been the conqueror.

When they attacked the fortalice, they had order from Commander Costra not to give quarter to the besieged on the score of the insult done to his envoy, but when the Commander came within the walls, considering, it seems, the valour with which they defended, and the changes which fortune is wont to give in war, he ordered proclamation to be made by beat of drum not to kill any person in cold blood, which they interpreted in the manner we described. When everything was already in the hands of the Hollanders, he ordered the Portuguese soldiers to be embarked, because, as soon as the enemy entered the bastion of Sant-Iago, the black troops went to the watch tower on the open sea, and some by swimming and others wading, escaped to their villages or to Columbo and with them went a few Portuguese, after they had lost all hope, so as not to be killed in cold blood, and on the road to Columbo they were either killed by the natives or taken prisoner to the King of Candea, only one escaping who succeeded in getting into one of the dhoneyes which General D. Antonio Mascarenhas had sent with munitions to Gâle ; and returning with this information, gave him this sad news.

The Hollanders turned out of the praça all the natives of the country who were there with their families, and some Portuguese women mixing with them went also with their

little children, fleeing death, and many *amas*<sup>1</sup> carried the children whom they were nursing when they saw the Mothers and the Fathers in the power of the enemy. The enemy gathered the rest of the Portuguese in the Church of the Misericordia and in the church of the Mother of God, of the Fathers of the Society of Jesus, placing a guard on both. The clerics, religious, vicars and inmates of convents of the fortalice were in all 19, and on the following day they were | embarked. The Father Luis Pinto, Superior of the Society [of Jesus], and Father Antonio de Pedrosa, Chaplain of the arrayal, showed on this occasion that valour could give a good account of itself in any state; in which also the Franciscan Father, Friar Antonio de Nossa Senhora, distinguished himself; and neither they nor the others failed in the piety proper to their profession, in confession and other succours of the body and soul. | The Portuguese casados were embarked next with their families, and among them Captain Lourenço Ferreyra de Brito who, as all admitted, would have died, were it not for the good care which the Hollander Commander ordered to be given to him, himself visiting him and treating him and all his folk with all honour.

This praça was assaulted at the dawn watch on the 13th of March 1640; the battle at the ramparts lasted two hours and the storming till 10 o'clock. There died at their posts, or at those to which they were afterwards called and where they assisted, the Captains, Manoel Barboza, Bernardo Goncalves, Domingos da Silua, Lourenço Velozo, Antonio Rodriguez de Andrade, Antonio Lourenço Forte, Bertolameu D'ea, Francisco da Silua [and] Lourenço da Costa. In the defence of the ramparts died 24 casados. They killed in cold blood Joaõ Rodriguez Leyatõ, the former captain of that praça, who was ill in his house, with two or three others. Nine Portuguese lads of Gále were killed also. Such was the mortality of the enemy that it is certain they did not celebrate the victory and they used to say: "In Malaca much gold, in Gále much shot." And in order that this victory might cause greater stir in India, in revenge for the many men they had lost, they distributed those who survived in 13 sail which they had there along with 27 shallops and launches. Of these ships three went to Batavia, some to Maláca, one to Achem, another to Maçulopataõ; two [went] to take elephants in Batecalou in return for which they dismantled the fortalice of Triquinimale and afterwards that of Batecalou to appease the King; but after taking Columbo and falling out with him, they again

<sup>1</sup> Ama, wet nurse, a word which survives in Sinhalese, *ama*.

seized them. And on account of these delays, and with no small suspicion of their being given *chunambo*<sup>1</sup> or oyster [shell] lime with the rice, many prisoners died.

These miseries extended to all, because in the ship 'Travér' alone, which went from port to port as far as Batavia and which being the last to set out, carried the sick of the hospital, there died 63 Portuguese; and in another which went to Malâca, and which carried more than 100 wounded Hollanders, only three escaped with their lives, some dying of their wounds, others of *berebere*; and of the 30 Portuguese, 20 succumbed, and in the same proportion in the other ships. And as of all the Hollanders who attacked the praça, not 50 remained unscathed, (because though our bullets, being generally of arquebuses, do not do as much damage as theirs from muskets, yet on account of the greater expedition with which our men wielded them, they made up for the greater damage of musketry,) and besides those who died within the praça in great number, so great was the mortality in these voyages that nearly all the infantry of the enemy perished. The wives of the Portuguese who died on the voyage and in Batavia in the space of one year (for after that died many others) were 25, children 35, the captains killed in the storming<sup>11</sup>, wounded<sup>1</sup> and captured five, of whom two died in captivity. <sup>F 275.</sup> The casados of Gâle wounded in the storming 11, of whom three died prisoners. The soldiers born in Gâle wounded in the scaling were 4, of whom 2 died. Stranger casados wounded in the scaling, three. Captains captured on the same occasion 18, of whom three died. Soldiers captured in battle and in the storming who died in the voyage and in Batavia, 95.

Such was the end of the fortalice of Gâle, a terrible spectacle to those who beheld it or think of it, and ever lamentable to the state of India. For, besides other political considerations, who is there that does not feel for the affliction of so many women at the sight of their husbands, sons, brothers and relations, killed in these streets, or others who gave up their souls to God and were killed under their own eyes, which made some offer their own throats, either to deliver them or to escape from the affronts which they already experienced and dreaded? The Chingalá rebels, who also entered the praça, did not spare even the innocent, and at the sight of this carnage the white ladies D. Thomazia Countinha and Joana do Couto died of grief. The streets were littered with the dead Portuguese and Hollanders, some scorched to death by fire, others torn to pieces by shot, and others riddled with bullets; and

<sup>1</sup> Tam. *shunambu*, Anglice 'chunam,' prepared lime.

the Caffirs had to spend three days in burying them, 10 or 12 in each pit. There was no one there who did not wish to die where so many had fallen, especially honourable ladies, in order to escape being outraged and affronted by heretics, as happened to them in Batavia, where clad in poor clothes, going about barefooted in the streets and thrown among slaves in poor huts, they were put to Auction day after day, being often ordered to assemble, at one time to be counted, at another to receive a mat, again to receive a plate or a porringer, and sometimes a cloth of the most miserable slaves, without any other clothing to cover themselves with. For the measure of rice, wretched and rotten, and the *bazaruco* for curry these ladies who had been wealthy had even to go to the house of the one who distributed it, and bear insulting words and not a few blows. For want of medicine and nursing not a single pregnant woman escaped, and the same fate befell nearly all the children, and persons of the weak sex and delicate breeding died without any wound.

P 699 | The religious and the soldiers were put in the jail between Javanese ; and the soldiers chained two by two laboured at the walls with plenty of blows. The casados in the same way, in workmen's breeches, had to find shelter in stables where their wives shared with them the poverty and the alms given them. The sick were placed in a hospital which among F 376 them is misery itself. The council ordered that all the orphan boys and girls and the widows be taken to the orphanage and instructed in the sect of Calvin. The execution of this order raised a desolate wailing in the street of the slaves among those Catholic women, and such that it moved the very heathen to pity. They were drawn up in lines and by dint of blows made to go to their kirk (*querca*) to hear their sermons and to assist at their prayers. They forbade them beads and images, believing that by these means they were able to make them remain in Batavia, but through the exertions of Father Luis Pinto and others, after nine months of prison, they gave the children leave to quit the orphanage and exempted them from attendance at the kirk. They afterwards allowed ransom to those who could pay, but not to the soldiers, though some obtained their liberty under the name of merchants, and after a long period of imprisonment, they allowed it also to the religious. A few days after their arrival in Batavia, they told the soldiers that there would be no ransom [but that] they might serve the company on the pay given to the others; and that otherwise they would be sent to Holland, and in order to bring them to accept this, they gave them worse treatment and greater punishments. About 20 were prevailed

upon, as they were not able to bear the troub'les of the prison, the reproaches of captain Lourenço Fereyra de Brito having no effect on them nor the warnings of the religious, who however kept others back ; and though they offered ransom, about 80 were sent to Holland, making use of their services on the voyage as well as of those who accepted pay for want of men for the 10 large sh.ps which alone returned out of the 24 which had come that yea. ; for no less was the expense with which they kept up this war.

I wished to give this information about the treatment of the Hollanders once for all, so as not to have to repeat it at other times ; because though even among them there are men of honour and of good nature, the knaves and common people are insufferable, and in the case of their greater folk, we always found greater hatred in the Zeelanders whom the people call Pichelingres, and so great are the insults which the Portuguese nation<sup>1</sup> has received from the United Provinces in all the four quarters of the world, that we shall not come up<sup>2</sup> to what the world expects of us, if by all means that are lawful and suitable, we do not endeavcur to recuperate and recover what we have lost in India. They fought on these occasions like Hollanders  
I.700 of this century ; but whoever measures our forces | and expects more from constancy and human valour expects impossibilities. I cannot deny that good counsel was partly wanting in the resolutions which they took, and that good sense was wanting in one person in the conflicts of greater importance, but one who expects more from casados and train-band men and from so few soldiers, does not know what the Hollanders are, nor does he consider the esteem due to the Portuguese nation.

| This defeat was manifested by God, on the very day that <sup>F 376.</sup> Gále was taken, to his servant Pedro de Basto<sup>1</sup> in the bleeding and woeful figure of an ' Ecce homo '<sup>2</sup> as we have shown in his life, and whoever considers well all the blood that was shed there, the scourge of the State of Ceylon and of Portuguese honour on that field and in that praça, and how much our reputation was exposed to shame in the East, seeing the sceptre and Crown of Ceylon turned to a mockery of fate, and a disgrace to the Faith among heretics and infidels who do not know it, will find that this misfortune cannot be represented by a better or more appropriate figure than an Ecce Homo ; for God thereby showed clearly that if on the one

<sup>1</sup> Vida 385.

<sup>2</sup> A representation of Christ after the scourging. ' Ecce homo ' 'Behold the man.' John. XIX., 5.

hand He chastised us with three spears<sup>1</sup> as was also declared by Him, on the other hand He felt it no less as is here represented ; and that the wounds inflicted on His feelings were no less than the scourges of our punishment, for as He cannot fail in Himself, He felt compassion for what his justice punished, and the more justly He afflicted us, the greater was the grief He represented Himself at suffering. We can be quite sure that if we cure these wounds like Christians, we shall cure those of the State also, for He was pleased to represent this latter and the former in His own person as if they were the same and had been His, and that if we are disposed to mend, we shall find a man to favour us and brandish in our favour the spears that were drawn against us. They also say that some time before this disaster a figure was seen to pass through the streets of Gâle crying out : 'Woe to thee O Gâle.' And it was but right that the grief and regret over so great a loss should be represented by sighs, to show that though there was the privilege of Sanctuary for the guilty, there is none for sin save sighs of repentance.

---

## CHAPTER 8.

### P 701 OF HOW COLUMBO WAS REINFORCED AND OF THE OTHER THINGS WHICH TOOK PLACE THERE AND IN GÂLE TILL THE ARRIVAL OF A NEW GENERAL IN COLUMBO

With the Chingalâ enemy in sight, General D. Antonio Mascarenhas made a muster of the soldiers who had remained in Columbo to cure themselves of the wounds received at Caymel, who together with the others who were there, excluding the officers, made up . . .<sup>2</sup> Whereupon he ordered the residents of Columbo to enlist themselves, and he found 800 men able to bear arms, though some were so despondent of the preservation of Columbo that, considering the puissance of the Hollander, they 'bought of going over with their families to the opposite coast, which the General prevented.

<sup>1</sup> Vida 382. One day when [the Brother] was praying to God for the welfare of the State and the Christianity of India, Christ Our Lord appeared to him with three spears in his hand saying 'All these three spears have to be broken in Ceylon.'

<sup>2</sup> Blank in Ms. Word illegible.

With the soldiers he formed four companies, manned four *manchusas* and a galliot to protect the river, from the pass of Nacolegaō to the bar of Matuāl, and sent information to Goa of the state in which Columbo | and Ceylon were. He also <sup>F 377</sup> attended to the fortification of the City and the defence of the most essential posts, digging trenches with all the diligence which the time and the structure permitted.

If the reinforcements which came from Goa on this occasion had had a different fate, neither Gâle nor the lands which were usually obedient would have been lost, and the Hollander would have met with a different chastisement. For early in February there set out from Goa, Manoel Mascarenhas Homem with 15 rowing ships, with the title of General of Jafanapataō and with order to assist Ceylon in person and with the necessary reinforcement. In Cochim he was joined by a large galliot with 500 St. Thomas Christians, whose Captain was a valiant Topaz, named Christovaō Teles, whom His Majesty had honoured with the habit of the Order of Christ in reward for his services. There also embarked in it, under the influence of his zeal, D. Friey Miguel Rangel, Bishop of Cochim ; and they reached Tutudorim in the beginning of March, whence the galliot at once set out for Manâr. While Manoel Muscarenhas Homem was preparing the relief of Ceylon, he received the news of the loss of Nigumbo and that the Hollander was moored in Columbo ; and as he was getting ready to go in person to relieve that praça, there arrived D. Braz de Castro with eight ships, being appointed to the post of General of Ceylon, because the disposition of the war in that Island was not approved in Goa. These two Generals, cousins and Captains of fleets, at once set out to relieve Columbo, and whilst crossing that gulf of 35 leagues, they were overtaken, in the middle of it, by such a furious storm that they were only able to make for Manâr, where some ships ran aground with <sup>P 702</sup> the loss of some men, and there they remained to winter. | The galliot also, after a great deal of hunger and thirst, landed the men in Manâr, and on the very day on which the storm burst upon the fleets, she reached Tutucorim under great danger, and being supplied with provisions on the 12th of April, she entered the bar of Columbo, the prophesies that he was going to his doom not sufficing to prevent [the Captain] from undertaking that voyage ; and this little reinforcement was a great relief to that City which at this time was in great confusion owing to the delay of the two Generals, for the state of the garrison and of provisions was such, that it would have been in great peril, had the Hollander turned upon it with fresh forces and together with the Chingalâ laid siege to it.

D. Antonio Mascarenhas sent the galliot to Tuticôrim, asking her captain to inform all along that coast in what state he had left him, and that that praça was short of all necessary things, that he had nothing more to write about himself or of it, because, though he had done so several times, his letters had had no effect ; that by ending his life in it, he would fulfil the obligations of his office | and the homage which he had given <sup>P 377</sup> for the whole of that Island, the state of which was well known to him, so that he was able to tell it to those who took pity on Ceylon, so much recommended by His Majesty, as all knew.' On the seventh of May the galliot arrived in Tutucorim and her captain wrote with all details to the Ouvidor of Cochim, Agostinho de Almeyda, the owner of the galliot, about the state of affairs in Ceylon. When this news reached Goa, it appeared to the Governor, Antonio Teles de Menezes,<sup>1</sup> that the two Generals had begun to winter too soon, and that they might have done more to try to get to Columbo ; and by a courier he ordered them to hand over the fleets to the captain of Jafanapataõ, Antonio de Mota Galvaõ, and come to Goa to give an account of themselves. Referring to the same shortcoming, the Bishop, D. Friey Miguel Range<sup>1</sup>, said to D. Antonio Mascarenhas on disembarking in Columbo that D. Braz had built a sepulchre over himself. While this relief delayed and there were fears that the enemy would arrive before it, they only held what was within the passes of Columbo, and there was scarcity of everything in the city. But God helped them with two ships of provisions from Bengala and Trangabar ; and D. Diogo Coutinho who had come from Malâca to Negapatam, there loaded four *besteyros* at his cost, wherewith he relieved Columbo ; and the city celebrated it as if it were a great relief, the news of which soon resounded throughout the Island.

It was known also that the Hollander Captain of Gâle had gone to Candea, accompanied by 10 or 12 Hollanders, to urge the Chingalâ King to descend upon Columbo, and as the insolence of that nation was already great, and the King did not approve what he proposed, he, without minding the place where he was, fell out in such a manner with the King and with those of his Council that on quitting his presence, the latter ordered [his men] to spear him and the rest of his company. He had left in his place in Gâle a French Catholic named Miguel Santamen ; and there was still | in that praça, along with other women, a Portuguese lady, a widow, born in Gâle, with two young daughters. Between the Frenchman <sup>P 703</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Governor, 1639-1640.

and this woman there was an honourable affection and she invited him to surrender the fortalice to His Majesty [saying] that he would be sure to receive great rewards for it. The Lieutenant wished to effect the business, but when he revealed it to some of his own nation, he found they were of a different opinion, and as it was a matter of so grave consequence, being unable to do what he wanted, he climbed over the walls one night with two or three others who joined him, and went to Columbo taking with him some Caffirs and Topazes ; and the fears greatly abated on the information which he gave of Gâle, where he had left the garrison without a captain, disunited and exposed to the invasion of the first arrayal that should come there, and though so it promised to be, yet he added that, if they did not believe him, they might take him prisoner in chains. | D. Antonio deferred the decision to time <sup>F 378</sup> and to a reinforcement, and the winter passed up to the fifth of September, and Santaman always behaved faithfully which the Portuguese knew how to reward with house, honour, and profit, till he fell in Mascate, though we owe little thanks in this conquest to his countrymen, for it was especially they who in the service of the Hollander Company made war on us, as we have related.

As soon as winter permitted it, Antonio da Mota set out with the whole fleet and with four galliots, leaving Joaõ Alvares Bretãõ in his place, who going from Cochim in the beginning of April with provisions for Columbo, had also been driven leeward and had reached Jafanapataõ by way of the outside of the Island, after getting rid of a part of the cargo on account of the storm. This fleet consisted altogether of 24 foists in which he <sup>2</sup> carried more than 600 men, and passing the Channel of Utiâr, he reached Tutucorim where there was awaiting him the Bishop of Cochim, D. Friey Miguel Rangel, with some men and a great supply of provisions which he had got ready at his own cost. They set out thence with a good wind, and with similar good fortune on the fifth of September, they reached Columbo, which was again relieved, seeing so goodly a reinforcement, and great were the demonstrations of joy of that people afflicted by repeated misfortune. The soldiery was immediately distributed into companies, and the captains exercised them in the militia. The Prelate who on account of the intimate dealings he had with the Venerable Brother Pedro de Basto knew what God had revealed to him not only about the chastisements of India but especially about those of Ceylon, led by the great trust he reposed in him and by his knowledge of his spirit, sought to placate the wrath of God, and

---

<sup>\*</sup> Antonio da Mota.

as soon as he arrived, he ordered a penitential procession consisting of all kinds of people of that city, in which he himself walked barefoot with a rope round his neck and a Cross on his shoulders, along with many other penitents. Beginning from the Mother Church, the procession made its way in this manner through the whole city, and on its return to the same Church, he mounted the pulpit and moved both by zeal and P 704 grief, | sentiments ever powerful on similar occasions, made a long sermon to reprove sin and move to repentance and amendment of manners and to persuade confidence in the divine mercy.

. The effects of these pious demonstrations were seen in the success which followed. For two days after this procession and the confessions which all the people made, God disposed that a ship of Meca should approach that port on the 11th of September, and the General thinking she was a Hollander ship wanted to go in person to meet her, but the captain Antonio da Mota who considered that the enterprise belonged to him, told him in a kindly way : ' That so small an occasion was not for his person and office ; that he was going | on board and <sup>P 378</sup> that he hoped in God to conquer, if she were an enemy ship.' He sailed out with 12 ships, while the others were getting ready, and though the ship tried to defend herself, she was boarded, and he found that she was bound for Musulapatao and had come from Meca with much gold and silver, wherewith they forthwith gave double pay to the arrayal. There also arrived in Columbo Jeronimo da Silva with two galliots of reinforcements from Goa, with provisions and money and men ; and if they rejoiced at the reinforcement, they rejoiced not less at the person of the Captain, because of the qualities he possessed. And we can affirm that in the four following years they were masters of Ceylon to such an extent that they considered the opposition of both the enemies a jest.

The General found himself with more than 800 men ; and in order not to let the enemy remain at the door, as well as because he knew that Gâle was already reinforced, as that promontory enjoys two winters and two summers and ships can enter and leave it all the year round, he at once began to think of recovering Nigumbo. With all diligence he provided the arrayal with what was necessary, ordered the artillery and the rest of the train and munitions to be put on barks and *manchus* with a crew under the command of Miguel Santaman, so that they might set out for Nigumbo from the side of Matuâl, while Antonio da Mota Galvao entered the territories through the pass of Betal and expelled the Chingala enemy till he came to a halt within sight of Nigumbo, as was decided in council.

Meanwhile there arrived in Goa as Viceroy of India Joāo da Silua Telo, Conde de Aveyras<sup>1</sup>; and either because the disposition of the war of Ceylon was enshrouded in reports from a distance, or because in truth there was need of better counsels, it came to pass that the Conde obliged D. Phelipe Mascarenhas, the elder brother of D. Antônio, to undertake the Government of that Island at a time of such great risk to reputation, for none doubted that the wisdom of D. Phelipe was great and that he was the person who in those times deserved to be entrusted with that undertaking, which he could greatly help with the riches he possessed, making up by his ability and knowledge for any lack of military training. He set out from <sup>P 705</sup> Goa with four galliots and 200 Reynols<sup>2</sup> who had arrived | that monsoon, and as he arrived at the bar of Cochim in a thunderstorm, such as is wont to take place there, a bolt struck his galliot. There he had a meeting alone with the holy man, Pedro de Basto, and as he was pretty anxious about that war, the latter comforted him and told him,<sup>3</sup> among other things, that he would have in one day two victories, and afterwards [he said] to Francisco de Brito de Almeyda: 'That if D. Phelipe kept the good resolutions he had, he would be the most fortunate Portuguese that ever set foot in Ceylon.'<sup>4</sup> Such is the power which the good dispositions of men have with God, and these two warnings of Heaven did not fail to be of some effect.

<sup>1</sup> Twenty-fifth Viceroy, 1640–1646.

<sup>2</sup> Reinol, 'one from the Kingdom,' a term applied to new comers from Portugal. It was also used to distinguish the European Portuguese from the country born.

<sup>3</sup> Vida, 139–140.—"When Dom Phelipe Mascarenhas set out from Goa as General of Ceylon, he arrived at the bar of Coohir, and sent a message asking the Prelate to send Brother Pedro de Basto on board, and in order to give him that pleasure and because it was not easy to refuse, the Superiors ordered the Brother to go to have speech with him. When he came near the Flagship, the General took the Brother into a bæsi in order to speak with him intimately, 1640 & 1641, because as at that time the Hollander was master of Gâle and Nigumbo, and as war was raging in all its fury in that Island, the General was pretty anxious about how he shoul'd succeed there. The Brother encouraged him as well as he was able, and among other things, which remained in the memory of Dom Phelipe, we know that he told him that he would have two victories in one day; and that he would return from thence with greater honour from His Majesty, because he saw him between two gilt columns

"On the very day on which he recovered Nigumbo he had also another victory over the Chingals rebels; and he was the second General of Ceylon who came from thence as Viceroy of India, a post which (as he himself somewhat delicately gave us to understand) was not due to him, and what else could the detail about gilded columns mean except that afterwards he was, along with the other Viceroys, represented in the Royal hall between such columns."

<sup>4</sup> Vida 388.

## CHAPTER 9.

OF THE RECOVERY OF NIGUMBO, THE VICTORY OVER THE P<sup>379</sup>  
 REBEL D. BALTEZAR, THE FLIGHT OF THE KING OF CANDEA  
 AND THE SLOW SIEGE OF GÂLE WITH THE ENCOUNTER  
 OF VACUÉLA

---

D. Phelipe Mascarenhas put into the port of Columbo when the [artillery] train was already embarked and the arrayal had already begun to cross to the other bank ; and as the new General had the same intention [as his predecessor] there was no delay, and with his brother, some gentlemen, and the reinforcement he had brought, he marched along the beach and joined the others at Nigumbo. There were there 31 companies, in which were 1185 men, of whom, the sergeant-major was Izáro de Faria, and in addition the Dissávas of all the corlas and the one of Nigumbo, with less men than were usually put in the field, because the lands were in revolt, as had already happened in Gâle. On the way they drove from Urugampola the rebel D. Baltezar, who had joined the Hollander and who fled before the Portuguese arrived. When they were already in sight of Nigumbo, the Captain-major, Antonio da Mota, informed the General and Miguel Santaman of his arrival, and he sent a letter to the captain of the praça in which he said : 'That he had arrived there, and that the General was coming along the beach without delay, and another Officer with the artillery and provisions by river to restore that praça to its legitimate Lord the King of Portugal ; and that he informed him of all this so that before experiencing the rigour of arms he might deliver the fortalice in the state in which it was, for which he would give him all good passage according to the commission he had from the General of Ceylon D. Phelipe Mascarenhas.' The reply of the Hollander captain, they say, was : 'That he found himself well fortified and well garrisoned, and that it was not right for him to surrender a praça for which he had given homage to the Company at sight of mere threats, since he was free from damage, had a good force and plenty of arms, munitions and provisions ; and if he had the order he spoke of, he might set to work, and the battle would show to whose side fortune was inclined.' As soon as he despatched the envoy, he ordered three volleys of artillery and musketry to be fired, the third one with shot ; and at once he turned out more than 400 useless persons who had retired to the

praça on the news of our arrayal. The captain-major gave them passage into the interior, and as he knew that the rebel D. Baltezar was in Galeluá, two leagues from Nigumbo, he ordered the Dissávas to be on the watch.

He at once began the work of trenches and ramparts which was done in one night, and the morning found the artillery placed therein in spite of the many volleys of artillery and musketry which the enemy fired; and on the third day there arrived the General who left Captain Luis Goncalvez de Souza with the Reynols in the Island of Jorge Fernandez de Abreu to protect it and to disturb the enemy therefrom with musketry. Then he came to the arrayal and formed of it four other bodies, to which he appointed the captains Domingos Ferreyra Beliago, Jeronimo da Silva, Joao Alvares Bretão and Antonio de Amaral de Menezes, which with that of Luis Goncalvez de Souza made five; and he hemmed the fortalice in such sort that no message could come to it during the siege by land or sea. Four cannon were mounted where-with they went on battering the fortalice so stoutly and with such damage that, though the Hollander replied with the same energy, on the fourth day at midnight, the sentries on the forlorn hope saw the factor sally out with a tambour and a lanthorn to treat of surrender. The captain ordered his commissaries to say that he was willing to surrender the praça. The General summoned the officers of the arrayal, his Brother also assisting at it, and they settled the military conditions which were best for reputation. D. Antonio Mascarenhas was of opinion that the fortalice should be carried by storm and without quarter, in revenge for what they did in Nigumbo and Gále and of those killed in cold blood. But the General persisted in saying that he would rather lose a deal of treasure than risk a single soldier, and that if it were necessary to buy the praça with all he had he would do so for that reason. The Commissaries returned and delayed no longer than was necessary to take the arms and knapsacks. Meanwhile the arrayal formed outside the batteries at a distance from them, and its gallantry and elegance could have caused envy to the most florid April. (What an opportunity our confidence was to a treacherous enemy!) Captain Paulo Rebelo had order to enter the praça with the Ensign-Major and his company, as soon as the Hollander sallied out, and to plant the banner of Christ, and the Belga (had order) to give up his banners along with his arms within our trenches. Everything was carried out accordingly and the arrayal fired three volleys when the banner was hoisted. There sallied out 214 Hollanders, and

P 707 the General entered the praca to give thanks to God in the Hermitage which was in it. This recapture took place in the November of [16]40, and it was the first praca which we took from the hands of the Hollanders in the Eastern State.

The General immediately received tidings that D. Baltezar was marching with his army, because it had been agreed that he should fall upon the arrayal while it was engaged in the assault, but as no further tidings had reached him, he thought that the volleys fired as a salute were given in the assault we were delivering on the praca, from which also it may be seen how wise it was to receive their surrender. D. Phelipe Mascarenhas, who well remembered what was told in the bar of Cochim by his Prophet, Pedro de Basto, when he promised him two victories in one day, with great joy and confidence at once ordered Captains Pedro de Souza, Rodrigo Matozo, Antonio da Mota de Oliueyra and Manoel de Souza Falcão with their companies and the Dissâvas of Nigumbo and P 330 of the Seven-Corlas with the black troops, to sally out to meet the enemy. 'He does not come at a bad time,' said Pedro de Souza. They set out in all haste, and soon sighted and gave battle to that large host of Chingalas with such fury that they broke and fled. D. Baltezar was killed (and therein lies all the success) at the hands of a Lascarin fisherman who cut off his head, and to whom was given the honour which belonged to the former. In him the King of Candea lost the best captain he had, and we, our greatest enemy. The General who was sure of success awaited the news with joy, and as soon as he heard it, he thanked all for the good service they had rendered to His Majesty saying to the Hollander Captain: 'Such is the fate of those who confederate with the Hollander Company against the Lieges of the King my Lord.' During this time the Most Holy Sacrament was exposed in the Mother Church of Columbo and [in the other churches] of the Religious; and thus both in the city and in the arrayal they gave thanks to Our Lord for these repeated successes with double satisfaction and three volleys of artillery were fired; and in Nigumbo the soldiers rested during the following days.

Afterwards the General divided that army into two detachments, one under the command of Joao Alvares Bretao with 10 companies and the Dissâva of Maturé to reduce those lands to obedience as far as Aliceão, the other with 21 companies and the Dissâvas of the Seven and Four-Corlas and of Sofragão commanded by Antonio da Mota Galvão, Captain-Major of the field, who penetrating into the Seven-Corlas and the other districts of his jurisdiction kept clearing

them of the Candiots and subjecting them all successfully, in which were spent the last days of November and the whole of December of that year of [16]40 when the Restoration<sup>1</sup> of Portugal took place. The General retired to Columbo with the exempted troops who accompanied him, after garrisoning the fortalice of Nigumbo and beginning his government with as much good fortune as was experienced in Portugal at the same season.

P 708

The King of Candea was waiting with a powerful arrayal in Ruanêla where he had again rebuilt a city, and thither the Captain-Major went with his arrayal to meet him, but the latter withdrew to Candea before they sighted him, so as not to try conclusions with the victors, as the principal object of his league with the Hollander was frustrated for the while. [The Captain-Major] remained there for some days, while the country rendered obedience, and, as he came to know that in the Seven-Corlas and in the country of Gâle the natives had kept in the woods a large quantity of cinnamon in the storehouses for which the Belga had spent large sums of money, he ordered it to be brought with no further expense than that of the transport; and it was so plenteous that a part of it was consigned to the fire. While it was being brought, he went to Matiagâma and thence to Alauva. Joaô Alvares Bretaõ halted at Calaturê where he captured a Hollander launch and routed some captains of the King of | x 300. Candea who were making fresh incursion into those lands.

The General, to whom the Hollander enemy gave more concern, was preparing for the siege of Gâle, and he ordered the Captain-Major to leave 10 companies in Alauva with the Dissâvas of the Seven and Four-Corlas and to approach Gâle with the 11 companies that remained and the Dissâvas of Sepragaõ and Maturê, together with the men of Joaô Alvares Bretaõ, laying to it a slow siege and blockading it until there should be a time and opportunity to carry that praça. D. Antonio Mascarenhas, because he was greatly feared by the Natives, went to remain in Alauva, and that garrison thought itself safe because of his presence, though he was displeased that the war with the Hollander was entrusted to another. His brother did not grudge him posts and honour, but he feared the effects of his precipitate valour, more adapted for Chingalâ than for European warfare, wherein dexterity and

---

<sup>1</sup> After the sixty years' subjection to Spain a daring and successful revolution in Portugal placed John, Eighth Duke of Braganza on the throne. On 19 Jany., 1641, a convention assembled at Lisbon declared him rightful heir to the Crown, which he assumed under the name of John IV.

constancy are wont to prevail over might. The Captain-Major traversed the Island through its most rugged parts near the Peak of Adam, without penetrating to the centre or to the summit of that mountain, and at the end of a march of nine days, towards the beginning of March, near Alicaõ he encountered Joaõ Aluares Bretaõ. Afterwards passing within view of Gále, with banners flying and drums and tambours beating, they halted near the point of Unavâtao where the enemy [once] disembarke<sup>1</sup>, more than half a league from the praça. There they remained for some days, often provoking the Belga to take the field without his resolving to do so. When the month of June was past, in order to supply himself with victuals, he marched to Accouraça<sup>1</sup> and in a few days returned upon Gále, but seeing the wariness of the enemy, in a short time he went to lodge in Maturé. There he received order from the General to leav<sup>2</sup> eight companies there with the men of its<sup>2</sup> Dissâva in charge of Antonio de Amaral de Menezes, and to go to Sofragaõ with the rest of the army to secure that frontier and to get the precious stones in that country. Now it was already December of [16]41, and in the meantime the lands were kept in P 70<sup>2</sup> obedience, the Dissâva | of Nigumbo clearing them as far as Chilaõ and Calapetim, D. Antonio Mascarenhas [clearing] the frontiers of the Seven-Corlas and Antonio de Mota those of Sofragaõ and Antonio de Amaral de Menezes those of Gále; whereupon the King of Candea, though back in his highlands, considered himself insecure. Scarcely a Hollander sallied from Gále but was instantly beheaded, and such was the treatment, honours and rewards, which the General D Felipe gave to the captives of Nigumbo, that the majority remained in the service of His Majesty and about 70 embarked in a foist<sup>3</sup> for Paleacate or Batavia giving their pledge and word not to go to Gále, which they did not observe, but soon they paid for it.

In March [16]41 there arrived in Columbo D. Alvaro de Ataide as Captain-Major | of a fleet of rowing vessels, and F 221 on the orders of the General he was engaged in convoying the flotilla of provisions from Tutucorim and Negapataõ up to the December of that year, when he set out for Goa with his fleet taking in his company the galliots of cinnamon of the King and the Prince Vijapâla, the elder brother of the King of Candea, who, leaving his Kingdom, treasures, wife, and children, crossed over to our territory through those

<sup>1</sup> The text has 'a Couraça', a mistake for Accouraça, i.e., Akuresa.

<sup>2</sup> Matara Dissâva.

<sup>3</sup> The Dag Register speaks of these vessels as *fusten* which has been translated "tubs"!—O. L. R. II., 358.

of Sofragão with 500 men of his guard, having previously sent tidings of his arrival to Antonio da Mota. When he was in Sofragão, he ordered some of his men to be speared for being traitors to him in not keeping their promise to accompany him. Thence he was led to Columbo by two companies of Portuguese, and the General ordered him to be lodged outside the city, in the parish of S. Sebastião,<sup>1</sup> in a suitable house till he embarked for Goa with D. Alvaro de Ataide. And as D. Felipe had little confidence in his constancy, and as the affairs of Ceylon did not make progress with the Hollander, he was never reinstated in his Kingdom, but becoming a Christian here, as we have already said, and being maintained by the King, he died in this city<sup>2</sup> after having kept up the authority of a King, for he did not lack the valour to be such, if only he had the sagacity of his brother.

The year [16]42 began and everything continued in the same prosperity. In the month of July when our arrayal was encamped six leagues from Gále, the Hollander made some sallies to procure some refreshment. Antonio de Amaral de Menezes, hearing of this, marched with seven companies to the village of Vacuélia<sup>3</sup> in the neighbourhood of the praça, with the captains Miguel Godinho Touro, Joaõ Rodriguez Carvalinho, Manoel Marquez, Manoel de Souza Falcaõ, Marcos da Costa, Fernão dos Santos Ribeyro, Antonio Cardozo, a company of Topazes, and about 100 lascarins under the command of Joaõ Cardozo, Captain of the advance guard of the Dissawa of Maturé, who with some companies and some Lascarins remained in guard of the camp. Of all this the enemy had tidings from spies. He sallied out of the praça on the Second of August with 300 men, the Portuguese being 180, and attacked them unexpectedly. But

*P 710* they received him in such good order that they made a gallant resistance battling for some hours with musketery, until Manoel de Souza Falcaõ, breaking through seven or eight lines with a dart, ran it through the eye of the Leader Revira<sup>4</sup> who was in command, and returning to his men cried out saying: 'Sant-Iago, Cavaliers, the Captain Major of the enemy is killed.' They all charged the enemy with such fury that they drove him from the field, routing him

<sup>1</sup> A name which still survives in 'San Sebastian ward' of the Colombo Municipality.

<sup>2</sup> Where the Author saw him, p. 17.

<sup>3</sup> Wakwella.

<sup>4</sup> Captain Walraven de Rivire. In the Galle Dutch records there is no mention of this engagement, but there is mention of "our last expedition to Racquelle," J. XVII. 250; and "the disaster of the 9th of August last," J. XVII. 264.

in such manner that almost all were killed or captured, and they followed them right up to the walls of the praça upon which they fired three volleys of musketry.

There we lost 30 Portuguese and some were wounded, who being taken to Columbo were assisted with all necessaries *r ssr.* by the General, who wrote his thanks and promised rewards to the soldiers who took part in this action. In it our lascarins remained neutral, giving us to understand that had the victory gone to the Hollander, they also would have been against us. In any other warfare the action of Manoel de Souza Falcao would have been found fault with, but there is no persuading another course to the captains and soldiers of India, because they persist in saying: 'That when forces are unequal, only reckless daring can gain the victory, that as the European enemy is equally dextrous in fire arms, though inferior in hand weapons, if the war has to be carried on with muskets and arquebuses, those who are less in number must necessarily fall first.' There is, however, one argument against them, for when the proportion was the same, a few against many, in the lighter encounters and in the battles of importance, which we fought with the Belga, we always obtained the victory in the former, but were overcome in the latter, which proves to me conclusively that it could only be due to lack of European discipline against more numerous enemies, for we must not always look for miracles, and for a chastisement of Heaven it is enough to let the natural causes and dispositions act.

## CHAPTER 10.

ANTONIO DE AMARAL DESTROYS THE MOORS OF MATURE,  
D. FELIPE MASCARENHAS SATISFIES THE VÍCEROY ABOUT  
THE DESIGNS ON GÂLE, THE HOLLANDER AMBASSA-  
DOR DOES NOT CONFIRM THE TRUCE, FRAN-  
CISCO CARON COMES UPON NIGUMBO, AND  
THE HOLLANDER SEEKS OUT ANTONIO-  
DA MOTA

To give some rest to the soldiers who suffered incredible hardships in this method of siege, Antonio de Amaral set out for Maturé leaving the Hollander anxious to take satisfaction for the defeat he had received, for which purpose the latter leagued with 200 to 300 Moors who were settled in Maturé and

¶ of whom there were some also in the ports of Aliciaō and Calatûrē, after Constantino de Sā had driven them out of Ceylon, having come thither from the Maldives on occasion of the submersion of some of those Islands. The Hollander promised them plenty of money, favour, and shelter within the fortalice of Gâle, where there were some already, and supplied them with the necessary arms in order that on a certain day, when the arrayal was hearing Mass and disarmed, they might attack and behead them. God did not permit that plot to remain unknown, because one of the Mcors disclosed it ; and the truth of it being ascertained, the Captain ordered all to take up arms and surround the bazaar in which they dwelt, and they were all slain | and their property <sup>F 332</sup> captured and confiscated, and the women and young children sent to Cōlumbo. The Hollanders in Gâle also suffered great privation on account of the slow siege laid to them, and not a few of them fled to us. D. Felipe Mascarenhas tried all manner of means to recover Gâle, not sparing promises out of his own as well as of royal property. But as those of Gâle did not accept these terms, he repeatedly put before the Council and those most experienced in the Island, the war, and the manner of surrounding that fortalice ; and the majority were of opinion : ' That it was not convenient to abandon the posts of Manicaravârē and Sofragaō, because the Chingalâ might at once cause a revolution in those lands and reinforce the Hollander with whom he was in league ; that the fortalice of Gâle was strong by position, and now that it was reinforced by the Belga, it was much more difficult to carry it by assault, and not less difficult to besiege, as the train of artillery had to be carried for 18 leagues over large sandy plains and many rivers and we had no fleet to secure the artillery by sea ; that it was not convenient to undertake this ineffectual expedition both because of the reputation that would be lost and because of the inconstancy of the Natives ; that for a slow siege by land the small light arrayal that was in that Province was enough, as there was no power in Ceylon to impede its being reinforced by sea as often as they liked.'

There was one, however, who wrote to the Viceroy, the Conde de Aveyras, that the fortalice of Gâle was destitute of troops and the greater part of them infirm ; ' that it could be recovered with little trouble and less cost, if we attacked it with any force at all ; that D. Felipe delayed the war without reason, being more interested in private affairs than in those of the service of His Majesty.' These zealous persons often receive credit because of the want of knowledge or experience [of the Government], and this complaint was far

removed from truth, because on account of the liberality with which he spent his own, and because of the plenty he had, the Chingalas and the Hollanders used to call him the 'King of Gold.' The zeal which characterized the Conde, kindled by these informations, made him write about this matter a letter which could have given rise to a result similar to the death of Constantino de Sá de Noronho, had D. Felipe not acted with P 712 greater self confidence | though not with less grief. The Count had assisted Ceylon as well as he was able and he promised again not to fail in reinforcing the Island, as he always did, with the earnestness which the possibilities of the State permitted, and after this promise he added 'that he regretted much to hear that the expedition to Gále had not been carried out owing to the opinions of those who were consulted, from whom it would be good to ask on what occasion and at what time that praça could be better recovered than when it was so afflicted and in need of men as it was represented to be, and when the few it had were sick, while our arrayal was so well provided ? And if they replied that they were of this opinion | because of the truce made with Holland, F 322 he would like to know, besides that the conclusion of such a truce had not yet been proclaimed in Goa, save the news of it from Portugal, how a truce could well be observed with the Hollanders if they were masters of Gále. And if it appeared to the Councillors that to begin the siege was to aggravate the war, contrary to the wishes of His Majesty, he considered it a manifest error, since we only recovered what they took from us and only did what was our duty ; would to God that the State of India had been in a position to recover Malaca, which was again lost and the rest of the Archipelago, for he would never consider what the Councillors represented as an obstacle, if he thought it was not what was conducive to the service of His Majesty.' And he concluded after other arguments. "I ask you again and repeatedly to carry out the enterprise of Gále till you wrest from the hands of the Hollander that fortalice of His Majesty, and this it is that is conducive to his royal service."

D. Felipe Mascarenhas replied to this letter with expressions of just resentment and dignity, further declarling the reasons which moved him thereto, which were based principally on those pointed out. And though there was one who advised him to place the battering artillery in three galliots and set sail for the Cape of Comorim and turning back make for the point of Gále at a place where the artillery could be landed, and he showed himself pleased with this project, he did not agree with the opinion of the Count, and continued the slow

siege till January, when the enemy again assembled his force at the bar of Columbo and the lands began to revolt in the absence of our garrisons ; because neither did the words of His Majesty cease to compel, nor the warning that the ship of the voyage from the Kingdom came with Hollander passports, nor did the enemy cease to detain ships in the bar of Gâle in winter and in summer from the beginning of December onwards, nor did Francisco de Seyxas Cabreyra, who was expected in August, arrive earlier than the 13th of October with fresh reinforcements at a time when there were already four ships in Gâle awaiting another ten and those which were coming from the bar of Goa, five of which were already in the bar of Columbo. To add to this there were no provisions for the arrayal in the District of Gâle, and it was necessary to send them from Columbo, to the companies of Antonio de Amaral. He ended by saying : " I tell Your Lordship all I think—So long as there are ships in the bar to prevent us from carrying artillery thither by ships, Gâle cannot be taken ; and I think that even those who were of the contrary opinion already realize that had we gone to Gâle, we should already have lost this Island as matters stand, for the enemy squadrons arrived at the time we could have done it, and even if we had escaped, we should have lost the artillery and the ships, and the retreat would have been very risky and laborious, because the black people would have failed us <sup>P 713</sup> in everything, as they did on other occasions, while those of the country are enough to destroy us in a journey of 18 leagues with many broad rivers over many of which there is only a log for a bridge. Nor is Gâle in the straits which they have represented, for there were always above 400 men, and I wish I had been spared from having to say that I could never set 800 men against that praça, even if I abandoned all the rest of the Island, leaving Columbo surrounded up to the gates by the Natives, who already consider themselves lords of the lands and free from the Christian yoke." And after giving a full account of all that had been done, he gave thanks to Our Lord that he had not precipitated matters as those of the opposite opinion desired.

In the preceding September, on the Feast of Our Lady's Nativity, news from Portugal reached Goa that D. Joao IV. the Restorer had been acclaimed King ; how he had at once sent an Ambassador to Holland and had settled a truce and suspension of arms for 10 years, while the conditions of peace were being adjusted ; and that each party should meanwhile retain what it held. The Count Viceroy at once ordered this truce to be published in the other prações of the State. But

the Hollanders, who still continued the seige of this bar, determined to await order from Batavia, whither the Count sent Diogo Mendez de Brito and Friar Gonçalo de S. Joseph, who in the time of the Conde de Linhares had exchanged the Deanery of the See of Goa for the habit of the Observance, to settle the confirmation of the truce. But they returned without concluding the business, and this siege continuing, there anchored in this bar seven of their ships on 18th September [16]42, and on 28th February of [16]43 they published the truce with the State on the advice which they received from Pedro Borael who had been in Gâle and had come as Ambassador to Goa, where he arrived on the fifth of April with four other ships with order to confirm it, but with some conditions, unreasonable and discreditable to the Portuguese nation. For being a Legist, he held the law of Turkey and that of might and said : ' That as they were Masters of the fortalice of Gâle, they had a right to the whole Province which he called the Kingdom of Gâle, profitting by what he had read in Barbuda, one of our ill-informed Authors, and that according to the terms we should put them in possession of that Kingdom in accordance with Calvinistic reasoning.' By this they sought nothing less than the supply of cinnamon which is made in that Province as far as Sofragaô.

To this proposal they made reply according to the agreement : ' That if outside the fortalice of Gâle they had a palm of land they might keep it ; but that they could not give them what they did not conquer and did not possess.' The Belga, who knew that we were again engaged in Portugal against the powers of the House of Austria, while he was bettering himself in Ceylon by alliance with the Chingalâ and in the whole of India, which he enjoyed by means of the force introduced into it, on this specious pretext left the truce unconfirmed, reducing like a good Field Jurist the right of law to that of arms ; and the arrogance therewith this Braggart behaved is incredible, for as he had experienced little trepidation, he already thought it very easy to master in a short time the whole of India, but this presumption of his was not enough to prevent him from showing his meanness by taking away with him all the ornaments of the house in which he was lodged.

While these things were taking place here in Goa and in Batavia, D. Felipe Mascarenhas had information in Colombo in the last days of December [16]41, that there were sailing along the coast of Baticalou and Gâle, 13 Hollander ships with other smaller craft with the news that they were making for Colombo and Nigumbo. He at once ordered D. Antonio

Mascarenhas to come down from the post of Alauva to Nigumbo, and Antonio de Amaral, who was near Gâle, as well as Antonio de Mota who was in Sofragaõ, to come to Columbo, and these captains arrived and halted between the City and Matuã. The Belga arrived on the first of January [16]42, and after saluting the city and making a short delay, made for Nigumbo followed by the arrayal under Antonio da Mota Galvão who joined Antonio Mascarenhas in Nigumbo. The latter seeing the enemy enter the shallows to land men on the following morning, ordered the Infantry to guard the shore and to open trenches that would withstand cannon, as all agreed to give battle to the enemy there. Those of the country gave the enemy information of all this, and it appearing to him that he could not gain his purpose, he set sail for Gâle, and then pursued the course indicated in his orders without minding the trouble or the cost, because it is their wont to act over cautiously; and as he did not set foot on land, our (lands) remained obedient. By order of the General, Antonio da Mota returned to Gâle with the Dissâvas of Sofragaõ and Matuã to continue the slow siege of that praça and to keep possession of the country. The Dissâvas of the Seven and Four Corlas set out with 10 companies to Alauva which D. Antonio Mascarenhas governed a second time at the request of his Brother. From Gâle Antonio da Mota despatched the Dissâva of Sofragaõ with his men and four companies to secure those frontiers and to recover the precious stones; and thus they went on till the end of January [16]43, when, on the information of Pedro Boroel, there began the cessation of arms, and the dealings of the Hollanders of Gâle with the Portuguese who were residing in Acomivana, about a league and a half from that praça. They were engaged | on <sup>F 384</sup> the orders of the General in transporting provisions and preventing the incursions which the rebel Enquenda Modeliar and his Brother were making into these lands, each with more than 500 men. Antonio da Mota set traps for them in diverse places, and falling upon them on the same day and at the same time with the soldiers and with the lascarins divided into two bodies, with little trouble he cut off the heads of both the Brothers and of the rest who could not escape, and peace was restored to the lands and that frontier cleared. Afterwards he passed to the place of Couraça,<sup>1</sup> whence he sent some companies of black troops to remain in Matuã, Acumena and Beralapanatota, where lived Gaspar Figueira da Sarpa with 500 Lascarins and 50 Portuguese soldiers.

---

<sup>1</sup> Akuressa. da Couraça in the text.

In the early days of May, there came information to Joaõ Matheus,<sup>1</sup> Captain of Gâle from their Ambassador that the truce was not confirmed in Goa, and immediately there arrived also the 11 ships with which he had set out. Before declaring war, however, he selected 500 soldiers (others say 700, which is more likely, for he had as many) of the garrison and of the fleet, with the black troop who were in the praga under the command of Joaõ Vanderlas,<sup>2</sup> better known by the name of Joaõ Flaz, and two other leaders called Duncala<sup>3</sup> and Camoti,<sup>4</sup> and as soon as the information [that the truce was not confirmed] was given to Francisco Antunes, Dissáva of Maturé, he [the Hollander] despatched this detachment by sea and by land to Beligaõ with the intention of taking the Portuguese unawares in the village of Couraça.<sup>5</sup> On this occasion there was in Gâle Ignacio Sarmento de Carvalho, who suspecting these designs, in spite of all that Joaõ Matheus did to divert him, came in all haste to give information and help to the Captain-Major in the encounter; with whom there was also Lourenço Ferreyra de Brito and the arms, advice, and experience of both played a great part in the victory which was obtained as follows.

## CHAPTER 11.

### OF THE BATTLE OF [A]COURAÇA; LOCATION OF THE ARRAYAL IN ACOMIÚANA AND OF THE FRESH MOVEMENTS OF THE KING OF CANDEA

This Hollander detachment set out from Gâle by sea and land and reached Beligaõ in one night, where they formed and took the road to [A]couraça, the camp of the Portuguese arrayal, as it was better and more used. It was the 11th of May [1]643 when the enemy sighted our arrayal, which consisted of 200 soldiers, many of them young, natives of Columbo and Gâle, though skilled in arms; and though they heard volleys of musketry which they were firing on

<sup>1</sup> Jan Thysen.

<sup>2</sup> Jan vander Laen.

<sup>3</sup> Capt. Paulus Doncq.—J. XVII., 413.

<sup>4</sup> Lieut. Lambert Camholz.

<sup>5</sup> Akuressa. da Couraça in the text.

the jungles to elude ambuscades, they continued the Mass <sup>P 334</sup> they were hearing. That being over, they took their breakfast, and on the orders of the Captain-Major the Captain of Infantry, Pedro de Souza, went ahead to reconnoitre the passes and the intention of the Hollander enemy.

The arrayal marched also and halted on the plain of [A]couraca, which on one side is flanked by the river which flows to the bar of Maturá and is surrounded on all other sides by jungle. It was about a quarter of a league in length, and much less in breadth. At one point it has an eminence of somewhat high ground, full of fruit-bearing trees, near which the road turns into a narrow passage or *mocalâna* in the language of the Natives, and because on this spot was a kind of mound made by white ants which could conceal our army, the Captain-Major selected this to secure two objects [namely] to hide his men and to fight with the enemy massed together and with double ranks with a small front and great depth on which the shot which have no effect on the first lines could do greater execution; and this disposition contributed greatly to the victory. At the entrance to this *mocalâna* Pedro de Souza encountered Joao Vanderlaes and after drinking to each other's health, (for even on these occasions of war they want to introduce among us these misplaced courtesies and Flemish salutations) and other courtesies on both sides, the enemy commander fired on Pedro de Souza with a carbine which shot hit him badly on the temple. Pedro de Souza hurled a javelin hitting him on his left breast from which the defensive armour he was wearing saved him. But in the first volleys of our musketry he was badly wounded in the leg and fell to the ground and was taken by his men to Beligaõ. His place was taken by Captain Camoti, and the battle lasted with great fury from nine to two in the afternoon.

Our men did not fight in a body, but from the spot on which they were drawn up, between the hill and the outlet of the path, and under cover of the ant hill, the companies sallied, one after the other, as the Captain-Major appointed, and when one was wounded and tired, another took its place. At first the company of Pedro de Souza fought, but because the captain was wounded and the Ensign killed, the company of Captain Manoel Marquez took its place, and when he was pierced in the left cheek bone by a bullet, and the Ensign and some soldiers killed, the Captain Manoel de Souza Falcao took his place, who wishing to repeat a feat similar to that of Vaovela broke through the enemy squadron <sup>P 335</sup> intending to capture the standard, but as they were so close packed,

the resistance was greater. He satisfied himself with carrying off a piece of it<sup>1</sup> and giving and receiving wounds from spear and sword, and when his Ensign was also killed, he was ordered to retire. Joaõ Gomez de Lemos then went in, but was forthwith wounded by a shot which passed through his right shoulder. The other captains then followed in the following order : Pedro de Faria, Marcos da Costa, Francisco Fajardo, who, before he began to exchange fire, was wounded by a shot through the breast from which he died, Luis A'vres de Azevedo, Antonio da Mota de Oliveyra, Fernao dos Santos Ribeyro, Antonio Cardozo and Andre Veloso, all of whom fought with emulation and with all valour and resolution. The enemy several times attempted to advance seeing the damage received by this method of war, often shouting out : " Make for the open field ; make for the open field " ; and once he attacked with such force that he drove our men from the position in which they fought without however [making them] turn their face. The Captain-Major who fully realized the advantage of this mode of fighting, not only did not take notice of the words of the enemy, but pressed upon him thereupon with all his force till he drove him back and captured the lost position without ever giving it up again ; and as the wind was calm and they fought under the shade of trees, the smoke of the muskets was at times so thick that on firing a volley the muskets of the one encountered the faces of the other. So great was the carnage among the Hollander that the dead bodies covered the living. He persisted, however, both because of the advantage of numbers and because they were persuaded by Joaõ Matheus that the Portuguese would give up the field in the middle of the fight.

Antonio da Mota considering the state of the enemy and his own, that all were already worn out from so hard fought and continued a battle, and finding that the others agreed with his opinion, ordered them to give ' Saint-Iago ' which all did with one voice, and after firing a volley of musketry they charged with the sword with such dash, order, and courage that they at once felt the Portuguese arm, and driving them from the position they put them into a disordered flight, our men giving them chase cutting off the heads of those who resisted and capturing those who surrendered till there being none left to conquer, the Captain-Major ordered them

---

<sup>1</sup> According to the Galle Records (J. XVII., 425) Tyger Ja appointed Corporal "seeing that at Acuiras he bravely acquitted himself against the enemy and brought off and carried into their town one of our flags which otherwise might easily have fallen into the enemy's hands."

to halt and celebrate the victory with salvos of musketry. There was there a still beardless soldier, named Pedro de Queyroz, who took three Hollanders prisoner and thought he had done little because they did not resist him ! There remained in our hands 50 wounded men, 19 escaped through those jungles and went in search of the pinnace<sup>1</sup> which had brought them to Beligao and wherein they took the news to Joa<sup>3</sup> Matheus. The Portuguese, dead and wounded, numbered about 90<sup>2</sup>; the others gathered the banners, arms, and other | spoil of the enemy, and after burying *F 336*  
*P 7.11.* their | comrades returned to [A]jocoura ; and if on other occasions they had fought with like order, the result would ever have been the same, but from this is manifest the courage of the Belga in this conquest, and the confidence of the Portuguese in the mettle of their swords. On receiving this news, the Ambassador Pedro Boreel set out from Gâle for Paleacate, and he allowed his presumption to be so affected by this loss that on the night on which he arrived there he died suddenly. But he was not unattended in his journey to the other life, for when the Captain of the praça and the other captains of the place went to fetch the body to give him burial, there arose such a tempest that the brigantine was overwhelmed and all were lost.

The Captain Major had tidings that the Captain of Gâle sought to avenge this loss and disgrace ; and as there were now a little more than 150 men worn out and enfeebled by the recent warfare, they agreed that it was not convenient to abandon the post, and they entrenched themselves on that very spot to receive the enemy with greater advantage. But as there then came to him some companies that had been dispersed over those frontiers and others that came from Columbo, and as the enemy had information of all this, he did not make up his mind to seek us out, but awaited the squadron from Batavia with which he hoped to take revenge. Meanwhile the two Captains, Portuguese and Hollander, met and declared in some symbols and enigmas, the one his pleasure at the victory and the other his grief and desire for revenge. The wounded were all taken to Columbo and cared for by the Captain-General. The arrayal fled from the corruption of the air due to the dead bodies and went to pitch fresh quarters in Acomivana where there took place some encounters of lesser moment with success ever on the side of the Portuguese. Thence he despatched

<sup>1</sup> Kleyn-Zutphen.

<sup>2</sup> The Dutch losses were nearly a hundred men.

the Dissâva of Maturé with four companies to the frontier of Acumena, nine leagues from Gâle, and the arrayal kept up this slow siege from June to the Christmas of the same year, when there arrived in Gâle the General<sup>1</sup> Francisco Caron with 12 ships reinforced besides with many other smaller vessels in which he brought 3000 European troops.

Meanwhile D. Antonio Mascarenhas fell ill, and the Portuguese thought that it was from grief, because the General, his brother, removed him from the opportunities of encountering the European enemy. He came to Columbo to be treated, where he was in a dangerous condition and when he became better, he retired to Betal. The General sent in his place Joaô Aluares Bretão, and because of this change it was rumoured throughout the island that D. Antonio was dead and that the arrayal was attacked with smallpox, adding moreover that Antonio da Mota also fell in the encounter of [A]courâça. This news reached Candeia with such assurance that the King determined to come down upon the lowlands and to make himself master thereof with all his forces. Joaô Alvres Bretão heard | of this move

<sup>P 719</sup> F 336 and he discussed in Council | what should be done, for in truth the force stationed there was limited and there was no lack of sickness. Many were of opinion that they should retire to Columbo. After listening to them the Captain-Major gave his opinion, repeating the Portuguese proverb : 'From the Chingaláz one does not ask how many they are ; but where they are !' 'Wherefore,' he said, 'I am of opinion that we should go to meet the King, marching half a league each day till the reinforcement which I have asked from Senhor D. Felipe Mascarenhas arrives, because so long as it is known that we seek out the enemy, everything will be in suspense, but if they see that we retire, they will all rise up against us, as has happened in past wars.' They agreed with his view, and spread the news and spent that day in getting ready, the next in distributing munitions having also ordered the natives to clear the roads ; and afterwards they marched along the hill of Dinavâca and halted at its foot.

D. Felipe Mascarenhas continued to send fantastic reinforcements, four or five drums with as many banners and 20 or 30 men ; then others in the same way, thus succouring by reputation and not with men, because of the scarcity, for these demonstrations were enough to make the natives give out that there were large reinforcements. Afterwards he asked his brother to go to the arrayal both to belie the

---

<sup>1</sup> O Geral in Ms., omitted in printed copy.

rumour of his death, and because of the fear the Chingalaz had of his person ; and as he excused himself on the score of his health and present weakness, D. Felipe insisted saying : " Brother, the service and credit of the King is at stake. Either you or I." " If that is so," replied D. Antonio, " it behoves me to go," and without further delay he put himself on the march ; which was greatly praised in him, and rumour not only proclaimed his arrival, but also that the reinforcement would be of 20 companies. This industry was enough for the King to retire, and thus matters went on till the arrival of the Hollander squadron.

## CHAPTER 12.

OF THE SQUADRON OF FRANCISCO CARON WHICH  
CAME UPON NIGUMBO AND HOW D. ANTONIO  
MASCARENHAS RESOLVED TO GIVE  
HIM BATTLE

As soon as this Hollander force reached Gâle, the Captain of the praça, Joaõ Matheus, desiring to avenge the past ill success, persuaded the Commander Francisco Caron to land 2,000 men to hold the road against the arrayal, but | Antonio da Mota Galvão marched the whole night of the 27th December and stealing a march over the enemy, arrived at daybreak far beyond the post of Guinduré where he awaited him. The Belga re-embarked and made sail for Columbo, | and our men who were marching along the coast, coming upon the shallops and launches, and when the depth admitted even upon the ships, fought along the way as far as Calaturé where they met D. Alvaro de Ataide whom General D. Felipe Mascarenhas had sent with some reinforcement as soon as he had news of the enemy, foreseeing the danger there might be in this journey ; and from there they marched without delay as far as the Morro<sup>1</sup> where the Captain-General awaited them, and the arrayal remained there three days, awaiting the companies which had remained in Acúmena and the baggage, which marched more slowly. At last they arrived without loosing a single man, though they had to make their way through

<sup>1</sup> The Mound of Mapana, i.e., Mount Lavinia. Moratuwa was also called Morro.

rough and unused roads to avoid any of the two enemies, and the Captain-Major for this purpose had recourse to the intercession of the souls in Purgatory and had some Masses said for that intention. The arrayal arrived in Columbo, and on the order of the General halted on the other side of the city in the Tanque Salgado.<sup>1</sup> The General also ordered his brother D. Antonio Mascarenhas to come down from Alauva with all haste to Nigumbo and fortify himself in the Island of Jorge Fernandez, which D. Antonio did with great pleasure in order to have an opportunity of facing the European enemy, because as the licence of India spared no one, though the valour of this gentleman was well known, he was not a little disheartened because it was said that in the recent events in the time of his government he was not present at any of the encounters with the Belga, and that after his brother began to govern, he was found fit only to oppose the Chingala, though D. Felipe did not seek anything else save his credit, and dispassionate judges cannot reasonably condemn his valour, although, as we already pointed out, his disposition was not approved.

The Hollander also was compelled by the wind to make a halt off the Morro, and arriving afterwards in the bar of Columbo, he gave and received from the city some volleys of artillery, and after a little delay he made for Nigumbo, whither the General at once sent three companies of the arrayal of Antonio de Mota to reinforce D. Antonio. The enemy dropped anchor between Nigumbo and Caymel, and D. Antonio informed the General of all his doings, till one Friday, the 8th of January, 1644, he informed him for certain that the enemy sought to land there and not in any other place nearer Columbo, as could also have been feared. Antonio da Mota was of opinion, as soon as he communicated with the General, that Nigumbo should be dismantled, and D. Felipe Mascarenhas also thought that it was the best thing to do, but as there was an order to the contrary from Goa he did not make up his mind to do so. On receiving the last P 181 news, he sent the Captain-Major, Antonio da Mota, with four companies to Nigumbo to help D. Antonio with his counsel, experience, and valour, and to secure the Island and the praga P 181 till he, with the 800 to 900 men whom he had with him, could arrive, and he greatly recommended the Captain-Major to hold the Island of Jorge Fernandez de Abreu from which there was not only a bridge to the fortalice but they had also made a new one to the larger island called Municaré which

<sup>1</sup> The Salty-tank, Sin. *kumu-pokuna*, a part of northern Colombo now included in the Graving Docks.

runs from Matuâl to the bar of Nigumbo. Antonio da Mota who knew the dissatisfaction of D. Antonio Mascarenhas, they say, showed a desire not to be the first to appear in Nigumbo, but to go along with the General, but D. Felipe Mascarenhas who was already on the way, and knew that any delay might be prejudicial, to obviate this danger, made him march at nightfall, and he reached Nigumbo by daybreak, at the time when the General also marched from Matuâl following the same route. The two captains met on the field of the Island of Jorge Fernandez, and exchanged many courtesies, while the enemy was beginning to land men beyond gun shot of the praça, near the palmgrove which is called [the grove] of Teyxeyra.

D. Antonio had with him 10 companies of his arrayal of which the captains were Agustinho Ferreyra, Manoel Lourenço da Silua, Joao de Sequeyra Cortez, Francisco Ferreyra, Ruy Lopez Coutinho, Jeronimo Vieyra, Gil Vasquez da Cunha, Gregorio Carualho, Bento Francisco, Thomas Antunes and Gaspar Moreyra who was captain of a jalea, and of the company of his guard the captain was Simao de Azevedo, and Miguel Santamar was sergeant-major. The companies of Antonio da Mota Galvaõ were seven, and the captains Francisco Ferreyra da Silua, Antonio Cardozo, Manoel de Mesquita, Francisco de Melo de S. m Payo, Antonio Jorge the Manicar, Francisco Henriquez the Catâna, and Manoel Delgado. Of the company of his guard the Ensign and Corporal was Ignacio de Souza. The captain of the fortalice was Diogo de Mesquita, and his brother-in-law, Antonio Gomez, was captain of the garrison which consisted of 50 soldiers. All this force together did not exceed 550 men. D. Antonio placed before these captains of the arrayal : 'That the General had ordered by letter, which was produced, that the arrayal should not go out of that Island, though the Hollander should disembark in another place ; that at the time D. Felipe was marching to Nigumbo with the rest of the forces ; that they should say frankly what they thought should be done, seeing that the enemy was landing men, and that the opinion of all should be taken in writing signed by those present.' Here, they say, Mota said : " Shall we let them disembark ? " and that D. Antonio replied : ' That he who lets them land will make them embark,' and if the quarrel was excusable, so also was the resentment | that it was not assigned to him by the orders. # 3870

Agustinho Ferreyra proposed that, since the enemy was disembarking, they should put more men in the fortalice and everything necessary for its defence, so that if they should seek to carry it by storm, before setting their batteries against it,

P 788 there might be people to defend it, and that the arrayal could minister the necessary reinforcements from the Island till | the General, who could not be long, arrived to direct that war as it might seem best to him for the service of His Majesty. All agreed with this proposal as it was the only wise thing, and among others the two captains D. Antonio and Antonio da Mota ; and when it was written and signed by all, D. Antonio put it in his pocket. Then Captain Mota ordered four of his companies to garrison the stockade outside the fortalice which served as a barbican to it for its greater safety ; and the rest of the force remained in the Island, and he entered the praça to see its state. From there he saw the advance of the enemy and after visiting his companies, he emerged to the field with three soldiers and stood at a little distance from the stockade noting the passes and dispositions from which he saw clearly that their intention was to storm the fortalice. Here they gave him a message from D. Antonio ordering him to set fire to all the thatched houses which were in the bazaar lest the enemy should take cover under them. Antonio da Mota replied that the enemy was marching towards the fortalice and that it was not convenient at that time to set fire to the thatched huts, because the smoke might hide them. Afterwards, they say, when another message was sent that the enemy was making for the praça, D. Antonio who was with his Confessor Friar Basilio, a Religious of the Observance, at once sallied out of the barracks where he was conferring and said : " I must go to meet the enemy. The enemy is marching upon the fortalice. Let the arrayal pass at once to the other bank " ; and he was the first to take the road to the bridge leaving in the Island the captains Jeronimo Vieyra and Thomas Antunes with their companies to protect it and Gaspar Moreyra with the *jalea* to guard the bridge, and there was no one to prevent so rash a determination, for so unreasonable and presumptuous are the points of honour in India in this matter that, though all knew the mistake, they preferred to pay for it with death and disaster rather than be wanting in it ; and without making any further attempt to know the force or the dispositions of the enemy as good discipline demanded, they rushed headlong to death as if they had been in a desperate situation and they had awaited for this as the only means of victory. Had they kept the order of D. Felipe Mascarenhas, on the admission of the Hollanders themselves, the result would have been different, for finding it afterwards in the pocket of D. Antonio, Francisco Caron said, holding it in his hand after the victory, to certain Religious of ours (who while going to China in an English ship had been taken in the Strait of Singapore) : " This captain of

yours must have been | pig headed, for if he had obeyed the <sup>F 388</sup> order of his General, contained in his resolution, the force of Holland would have fallen here this time." ; and such also was the opinion of practical men in Ceylon, that we should either have defended the praça, after fortifying the Island with trenches and redoubts or have overtaken the enemy in his march or have worn him down by various assaults, for the <sup>P 123</sup> King of Candea did not move, and 1,400 Portuguese in the open field would not consider it a great feat to vanquish by musket and sword and spear the 2,300 Europeans whom the enemy placed on the field on this occasion, for it was only a few even of the sailors who remained in the ships. But the failures of his time, the desire of revenge, and the desire to make it his affair, seduced D. Antonio and his intrepid valour to such an extent that it blinded him to reason and the predicted fall of Ceylon.

The Batavian advanced in three battalions of gallant well armed men with steel weapons of defence, one from the bazaar and another from the shore with the field artillery between them and the third from behind the houses. In one of them were 800 carbineers and the other two consisted of 1,000 musketeers each, besides Officers, and 300 pikes who were soon cut down. He sent a party ahead to reconnoitre our forces, but on discovering the Portuguese, they turned back in all haste to their men.

D. Antonio drew up his men in eight companies (we have already said that those of Ceylon did not exceed more than 30 men each), on the side of the beach with the pikes and halberd in the centre, and on the inner side of the river. Antonio da Mota [drew up] his seven companies with greater front than depth with the intention of fighting with halberd and sword. But they did not maintain this order in battle, because each of the Leaders kept following the divided and disordered Enemy, according to the dispositions of the field, pressing those who gave up the field or charged obstinately. Who can withstand the decrees of God ! Here everyone followed the decision of a single man, as if there had been no other order, or as if a different plan had not been agreed upon, and as if the inequality of so few men, with only defensive arms, against so many equally dexterous in the use of fire arms and altogether well armed, had not been clearly foreseen. And though they were acting contrary to what they knew to be best, all acted with the utmost human valour, showing clearly that if God had decreed that they should be beaten, it could not humanly speaking be otherwise than by errors. All were equally valiant, but the captain and soldiers of Antonio da Mota had

more experience in the warfare against the Hollanders. Both the Leaders inspired courage to the boldest, disposing and ordering matters with all wisdom under the supposition of giving battle. The two met | and either to do him honour or ~~to make him realize the danger and to see whether it could still be averted, it is related, that Antonio da Mota asked D. Antonio : "What have we to do, Sir?" ; and that he replied : "At the enemy" ; and as he still received the respect of a General over and above what was due to his person, this was the final sentence of his ruin.~~ There is a striking similarity to what happened on the field of Alcazar Quibir<sup>1</sup> when D. Duarte de Menezes, Master General of the Field, seeing the great inequality of the Mahometan forces, sent to ask the King D. | Sebastian : ' What was to be done,' and the King spurring his horse answered : ' At them' ; and to D. Duarte : ' Do what I have ordered.'

P 724 What happened in this battle is so differently related that it cost me not a little labour to verify not only the truth, but even the probabilities ; for as this resolution was generally reprobated and as the witnesses are the very persons who carried it out, each of the parties tries to lighten the fault of its Chief so that the information is so conflicting that we can only relate what is constantly related, and what concords best with eye witnesses worthy of all credit.

## CHAPTER 13.

### OF THE BATTLE OF NIGUMBO AND THE FALL OF THAT PRACA

As soon as the Enemy came within musketshot and the first volley was received, D. Antonio attacked the 800 carbineers and drove them from the field at the first charge and even captured their artillery, which was no great loss, as owing to the confusion they themselves masked it. D. Antonio kept up the battle with sword and spear rather than with musket, because he relied greatly on the 60 halberds who were led by their Corporal Simão de Azevedo and who worked wonders that day ; and they went so far forward in pursuit of the

<sup>1</sup> Don Sebastian and his army were defeated and slain by the Moors in Morocco near the little town of Alcacer Quibir (El-Ksar el-Kebir) 4 August, 1578.

Enemy squadron that, owing to the bushes and trees of the field that intervened, our two squadrons lost them from view. Meanwhile the Belga retired along the beach sustaining as well as he could the charge of the Portuguese, more in the hope of sparing the few that were left, because 700 men were already killed, than in any attempt to face those who were pressing on them without mercy, for it was only when the squadron was covered behind the village houses that they reinforced it, because it was from it that they hoped for salvation in this last plight.

Antonio da Mota, after capturing with like resolution and equal success the artillery of the enemy, and after cutting down the pikesmen who protected it, fought with constant good order, broke and routed the first 500 who opposed him, and then, falling upon the last squadron in which was Commander Francisco Caron, he pressed him in such wise that he succeeded in driving him to the beach surrounded by his launches and shallopps and the ships which had brought him and the artillery, and even forced Commander Caron into the water, along with the few who still accompanied him, because the greater part of that squadron was either killed, or mainied, or completely scattered and put to disorder. This made some soldiers cry victory, notwithstanding the fact that it had cost them so dear that now there were not more than about a 100 together, the rest being either killed or badly wounded.

The Enemy had brought great Leaders, and with all diligence and despatch they formed, out of those who were going about the field, a squadron of 600 men; and with this force he again attacked D. Antonio who continued to fight the Enemy, now formed into a body, with great slaughter both on the one side and the other, but the great pity was that he placed his life in such manifest danger that after firing on many he fought with sword and shield and finally fell of nine musket shots, for just so many were found on his body, besides five which were parried by his buckler, because there was none in those two squadrons to measure sword and spear with him, and when one bolder than the rest dared to approach him as he lay on the ground, he gave him such a blow on the thigh that he died of it. Then they gave him a last carbine shot in the breast, upon which there died one of the most valiant gentlemen that Portugal and India ever bred, [a man] worthy of a better fate, if only he had been capable of better counsels and had realized that he would have been more dreaded, had he been more timid, because in his case in order to be great, it was necessary to diminish what

others might conveniently increase in order to be equal to him. Any one who saw him court death, as others try to spare their own lives, would easily have foretold his death. Nor was this the first time that the judgment of one single man ruined us by measuring the general effects from one's own personal valour, and if this is a fatality in the Portuguese, it is no little proof of their fidelity. He obtained for us in this war, in his measure, what Portugal obtained in that with the Afroan Xerifes and what Christianity did in the first centuries in that with the Asiatic Turks, because for the greater part they were overcome by those whom they despised or they were reduced to the fatal extremes of destruction, though the terms of defence were not uncertain, because as war depends as much on courage as on experience and discipline, it is of no small importance for its success to be able to realize the dangers fully. Even after his death, D. Antonio killed nine <sup>P 339v</sup> Hollanders, because seeing a ring on his finger they struggled so much to take it that, without noticing the pointed steel which was on the shield nine were pierced by it as they struggled as to who should have it. There died also Simão de Azevedo, and many of those who had accompanied D. Antonio Mascarenhas in this last encounter even after they saw that retreat was not discreditable, for the fact that they did not seek to save their lives gave spurs to courage. Some made a way for themselves by the might of their arms through the Enemies and among them Miguel Santaman, as he did not expect quarter from them ; some were taken prisoner.

<sup>P 728</sup> This same squadron led by Joaõ Matheus<sup>1</sup> and by the Master of the Field Tigre<sup>2</sup> gathered all their men who were fighting, and forming afresh, they made for the small body of men who were with Antonio da Mota, who imagining himself victorious on the beach and wishing to join D. Antonio again asked in a loud voice : " What about Antonio Mascarenhas ? " But when he saw the enemy who were making for him in the form of a large half moon, like one who has an overwhelming force, he realized the ill success of the other squadron, and knowing well the time and the danger, for there was no means of retiring, he turned to his comrades saying ; " Come on my boys, let us go to the rescue of the fortalice of the King." Then they tried to break through the midst of the

<sup>1</sup> Jan Thysen, now President of the Political Council of Galle, and acting as second in command to the General Francisco Corrof. Galle Records, J. XVII., 455.

<sup>2</sup> William Van de Beeq., Captain-Major.

Batavians and delivering and receiving charges, with slaughter on both sides in spite of the unequal proportion, he lost more than a moiety of his soldiers. And he himself was pierced in the breast by two shot, of which he ended his life at the age of 73 years, the fortunes of that day being so powerful as to deprive us of two principal captains, and this valiant old man, who from his boyhood had fought in India with great reputation and in Ceylon with greater renown, came by his end in this enterprise because he had not the authority to oppose a resolution ruinous in the opinion of all. Antonio da Mota Galvão died indeed, but his fame will live for ever, which is the greatest temporal reward of valour, for thereby feats of courage are eternalised, and from his boyhood he knew how to gain it, for in the expedition of D. Martin Afonso de Castro to Dachem he was with D. Nuno Alvares Pereyra and handed to him the musket with which he put a ball into the eye of an elephant of war which was coming to crush him.

Of those who were still on their feet, some were able to escape along the beach breaking through the thick of arms, and in spite of all resistance about 20 reached the stockade, thinking it was still ours, and going in, they found it occupied by the Batavian who again fired upon them, and only | João Botado, Luis Taveyra, Amaro Simões Pereyra, Francisco de Avelar, and Manoel de Souza escaped with their lives, whom the enemy for greater security, though they were badly wounded, bound to the same stockade while they stormed the praça. For that small garrison seeing that the squadron of D. Antonio was defeated, and that it would be the same with the other—for in war there is nothing which disheartens more than a general distrust of the plans of the one who commands, and such was already the opinion of all—and thinking it impossible to hold out the praça with 50 of the most disabled soldiers, such as are wont to be left in garrisons, without further ado or consideration, were led out by captain Antonio Gomes who did not even reflect whether it was not better to get into it the two companies of the neighbouring Island, or if the Island were judged more secure, to pass over to it. They crossed the river | leaving in the praça its captain, Diogo de Misquita, a man of great bravery and honour, though Antonio Gomez forgot on this occasion that he was his brother-in-law. And in this forlorn state it was only the captains Ruy Lopez Coutinho, João de Sequeyra and Manoel Lourenço who were able to go to his aid with 13 other soldiers, almost all of them wounded men, who went because Mesquita had represented to them the abandoned state of the praça.

These few men made a gallant resistance to the Belga, who dreading the arrival of the General, though badly wounded and undone, yet animated by victory and the knowledge that the garrison had withdrawn, tried to capture it with all possible haste. He offered terms to Diogo de Mesquita, but he did not accept any save that of death. Whereupon seeing the danger done by these few men, he mounted the battering pieces he had brought and the field pieces at the gate of the fortalice. With them he carried it, but Diogo de Mesquita replied to him with a large mortar charged with small shot, which did great havoc among those who were there ready to enter. Furious at this loss, the offeers shouted that no quarter would be given, and when they attacked the gate, they were again burnt by barrels of powder which the captain flung on them ; and as there remained nothing else for him to do, he died sword in hand while some of his companions were killed in cold blood, and others were taken prisoner, when the enemy's ire had been appeased by seeing the complete victory he had gained. The loss which the enemy had sustained and which he tried very much to hide, can be seen with great clearness from the men he led to Matuál. There never was so great a change of fortune in war than was seen on that day, but precipitate decisions never led to any other result. One advantage the Hollander had over us in these encounters, that he attacked us with such overwhelming odds that even if he lost double the number of men, and three doubles of what we had, he was still able to gain the victory with those that remained, because as the blood of strangers bought with money does not give him pain, he does not mind the loss which greater gains cost him, and profiting by our disorders and temerities he obtained by this pertinacity what could not be hoped for from constancy ; and their officers do not spare their men when they flee, but first offer these as sacrifices for the victories which they obtain by their means. I do not excuse our actions nor can I condemn courage nor fail to praise fidelity, but since God has decreed our downfall, it was no small honour that out of the many means that could have led to our ruin He chose those that bring honour and repudiated those of infamy. The world will say that the Portuguese were ruined because they were few, and because of their mismanagement, but it will not say truthfully that it was because of lack of valour.

The news of this defeat reached D. Felipe Mascarenhas in the middle of the beach of the Island of Menicaré, when he was marching for Nigumbo with all haste with all the forces of Columbo, and thither there went to meet him the two

companies which D. Antonio had left on the Island, and, Gaspar Moreyra after burning the bridge—which was also a great obstacle to those who were retiring and still more to those who were wounded—and sending the latter to Columbo, he assembled those who were fit for fighting and ordered the word to be passed that they should march in all haste and turn back all they met, either because he did not yet know of the final loss of the praça or because he believed that, the Enemy being so reduced, he could, by means of the fresh forces he was bringing, at once improve the position and settle with the Belga half vanquished. But as he was a gentleman of sound judgment and saw the danger in which he was placing himself, especially after he had found out that the praça was taken, he yielded to the opinion of the gentlemen and cavaliers who accompanied him, and after gathering the wounded men, he put them in the rearguard and made them cross to the other bank of Matuâl, nominating João Alvares Bretao captain-major of the arrayal and ordering all to be prepared for any eventuality, foreseeing like a prudent man, that after reinforcing, healing the wounded, and disposing the affairs of Nigumbo, the Belga would not fail to try his hand on Columbo also.

He betook himself to the city, and indoors, in his house, alone and retired, he gave scope to the full grief of this tragedy, bewailing the death of his brother as well as of its cause, for he alone was responsible for this disaster and the danger to Ceylon. | At the same time the whole city kept him company with general lamentations for the Fathers, Brothers, husbands, relatives, and friends who were killed. I do not doubt but that D. Felipe Mascarenhas after recalling to mind the conditional promises<sup>1</sup> of Brother Pedro de Basto, and considering that so far he had been favoured with prosperous success and that this was the first of the losses that befell him in Ceylon, among the hidden causes attributed to himself some part thereof, because the express condition which the Brother made known to Father Marçal de Leyva, as we have said in his life,<sup>2</sup> and we are sure was not unknown to the

<sup>1</sup> Vida 386. The Brother declared that many of the successes which he had promised to D. Philippe Mascarenhas were partly or totally conditional, for he said to Father Marçal de Leyva : that if D. Philippe Mascarenhas carried out the resolutions he had made when he was going as general of Ceylon, he would be the most fortunate Portuguese that ever set foot in that Island.

<sup>2</sup> Vida 140. The General, while leaving Cochin for Ceylon, left orders that a Mass should be offered daily for the Brother's intentions and Francisco de Brito de Almeyda regularly communicated to Don Philippe whatever the Brother said or did about Ceylon.

General himself, when purified by these evidences could not take for granted sufficient faults without there being<sup>1</sup> the knowledge of them, and since he was so sensible and tried a gentleman, [without] their acknowledgment. But he did not escape public recriminations on this occasion in that he put the two captains together, knowing the dissatisfaction of D. Antonio, when it seemed much better to send him his squadron only till the General arrived. But who could have thought that in a matter of such importance a despondency so ill founded was able to lead to such results.

---

## CHAPTER 14.

**P 729 THE BATAVIAN ATTACKS MATUÂL AND RETIRES; THE GENERAL BESIEGES NIGUMBO WITH LOSS TO US, AND A TRUCE BEING DECLARED WITH HOLLAND HE COMES AS VICEROY AND IS WRECKED.**

---

On the following morning the 10th of January, after he had given to grief what was its due, D. Phelipe came out, decked in a gala attire and rich jewels, so as not to fail in his duty as a Captain, and he mastered his grief, as if no misfortune had happened, and as if he had not lost a Brother of such hopes or an expedition from which he hoped to gain so much glory. He marched to Matuâl and ordered some artillery to be mounted upon the pass of the river, fortifying it with trenches and batteries for mounting cannon from the garden of Antonio da Mota as far as S. Joaô. Commander Caron after fortifying Nigumbo and curing the sick, left the other ships in Nigumbo and came with 800 men<sup>2</sup> who were with him, under the command of Joaô Matheus and the Fiscal<sup>3</sup> of the ships, along the coast of the Island as far as the mouth of the river of Mutual, where they came to moorings either out of bravado, because that force was not enough to carry Colunbo, or because he was really persuaded that he

<sup>1</sup> This sentence is obscure. I suppose it means that Dom Philip must have realized that the loss of Nagombo was a punishment, and that he must have known what the fault was that was thus punished, for there is no guilt without knowledge, and the conditional nature<sup>4</sup> of the Brother's promises implied guilt.

<sup>2</sup> 1000.—Dutch Records, J. XVII., 490.

<sup>3</sup> The Constable-Major, Christiaen Paulus, Jb. 488.

was able to have better results by passing to Columbo and carrying that praca this time. Our artillery did great damage to the Enemy in their very quarters, and once when they were in Council a shot carried off three of the members, and every night launches were carrying away | the maimed and wounded. *F 391.*  
 And as Caron had won to his side a large body of Chingalaz, a person of confidence and of great authority assured us that the General went one night to his house taking in the hollow of his hat a large quantity of gold, which sufficed to make the Chingalaz retire. The Belga seeing at break of dawn that the Natives did not respond and that he had not a sufficient force to attempt anything without total defeat, on the following night, in all haste, ordered the train of artillery and men who were on land to be withdrawn, and when the prisoner asked the reason, though they knew it well, they replied : ' Within Columbo is Senhor D. Phelipe Mascarenhas, and it is not possible for us to take that praca.'

This was the last encounter of any consequence which the Hollander had in India in field battle with the Portuguese, and it was considered by them to be of such consequence that it appeared to Francisco Caron that by this expedition he had deserved the Generalate of Batavia on the death of Antonio Vindima who vindemiated this vineyard for many years and pruned the Portuguese state in many places, but when that post was given to Joan Maetsuicher, better known among us by the name of Massucar, he took offence and passed over with much capital to the service of the most *F 750.* Christian King and paved | the way to the final resolution which that Prince took of flying his banner in the Orient, of the justice and result of which posterity will be the judges. The Portuguese felt this loss, as was natural, both because these losses which we sustained in India were at all times a matter for great regret, especially because they were all at the cost of our blood, a grief which does not affect other nations so much and Holland least of all, for they take men from different Realms and States, as well as because our state was exhausted of soldiers and other things and there was no better opportunity for us to get the better of the European Enemy.

Caron sent word to the General to offer the body of his brother D. Antonio Mascarenhas, and he replied to him : ' That he would come in good time to Nigumbo to disinter with military honours his bones as well as those of the Captain Antohio da Mota Galvao where the Hollanders had buried them.' Through Lourenco Ferreyra de Brito<sup>1</sup> the General

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Dutch Records, J. XVII., 504.

sent to inquire whether he was willing to liberate the prisoners of that encounter, offering to pay the price they demanded. The Commander excused himself on the ground that he had no orders from his superiors and D. Phelipe then recommended him to treat them well and to take good care of them and to give them any money needed for their expenses, that he would direct it to be repaid in any part of India where they presented the bill for it. To the Captains and soldiers imprisoned he wrote a letter which was read to them by the Fiscal in the presence of all the prisoners on board the <sup>P 732</sup> flagship and it said this : "My comrades and friends, I do not regret the ill-success of the arrayal, the loss of the fortalice and the deaths of my Brother and of Antonio da Mota as much as I regret that I was not able to be their companion in the battle, for had it been so, it would either have fared better, or I should have ended my life with them. With the General of the fleet I treated about your ransom, and he replied that it was not possible, and so long as it cannot be so, I have asked him to assist your need<sup>s</sup> with all that may be necessary, to be paid out of my purse whenever they like. To the courage with which you fought, the death of the 800 Hollanders, which they acknowledge to have lost in Nigumbo, bears witness. Now I hope in God that you will show more valour in patiently bearing your imprisonment from which I hope you will soon come out ; and I promise you to do this clear duty to His Majesty Our Lord, &c. Columbo 14th February 1844. D. Phelipe Mascarenhas." This letter gave fresh spirit and great satisfaction to the prisoners and admonition to the Hollanders ; and for these and other doings foreign nations as well as Orientals know him by no other name than that of Senhor D. Phelipe. How little is the benevolence wherewith great men can win esteem, especially in the case of the Portuguese nation, and of people who are of lesser account, considering the little consistency which they show in complaining that men of lesser quality are not esteemed among us, while they themselves do not know how to obey any except persons of higher quality.

<sup>P 732</sup> | The Belga again fortified Nigumbo and the neighbouring Island, and left nearly 600 men and a pinnace with a good crew in that bar ; and before setting sail in the last days of February, he despatched two ships and one smack to this coast<sup>1</sup> in which he embarked 45 Portuguese, the most maimed in the recent conflict and some casados of Cochim and the 18

---

<sup>1</sup> West Coast of India.

Religious of the Society of Jesus who being in an English ship with Luis de Carvalho, General of Macao, were taken by another Hollander ship at the entrance to the strait of Sincapura. In Coulaō they set the casados free, in Goa the Religious and the soldiers in exchange for the Hollanders of the ship Pavāō, which, on the feast of St. John the Baptist of the preceding year, was driven by the fury of the Winter to put into Mormugaō. And Caron abandoned Columbo and provided Gāle and returned to Batavia, taking with him the other prisoners of Nigumbo.

The news of these events reached Goa, and without further delay the Count Viceroy sent fresh reinforcements of men, money, provisions | and munitions and other necessaries of war for Ceylon under the command of Fernāo de Mendonça de Furtado in five rowing ships ; and it is very certain that the preservation of Columbo, so long as the truce was not settled, was due to the zeal of the Conde de Aveyras. Fernāo de Mendonça who went as Captain-Major combired valour with resolution ; and for this reason all of us who knew him dreaded the end which we then foresaw, because as naval warfare, in which he had good experience, gave more room to repress the effects of a choleric tempèr, those who knew his mettle and desired the welfare of India thought that he should rather have been employed in naval than in field warfare. While the Count was arranging another relief, he sent order to Bernardo Moniz, Captain-Major of the fleet of the Cape or of Malavar, to cross at once to Columbo, but he had already done so on the first information from the General of Ceylon. In Columbo D. Phelipe ordered him to go with his foists and those which Fernāo de Mendonça had brought to capture and burn the pinnace which the Hollander had left to guard the port of Nigumbo. The design becoming known to the enemy, he put 300 men on board, with all kinds of arms and came within gun shot of the fortalice ; and they acted in such a manner in its defence that the fleet returned to Columbo, having burnt their Flagship, which was a galliot and which attacked them. The General severly censured the captains of the foists for the evil way in which they behaved on this occasion, and as personal considerations enter into these appointments, as has often happened in these fleets, these are the usual results. He re-formed them (to use a highly improper term of modern warfare) and appointed new captains, and while he prepared to recover Nigumbo, he entrusted to Joaō Aluvares Bretāo the task of visiting the frontiers, which he did with credit to our arms up to the following May, when he returned to Columbo. |

Afterwards the Viceroy despatched the Captain-Major Jeronimo de Silua with fresh reinforcements, and he set out from this bar in the early days of May and successfully came into port at Coluribo in the same month. Whereupon D. Phelipe Mascarenhas was able to muster an arrayal of 1,300 men besides officers and black troops, and with the necessary equipment he set out for Nigumbo in the middle of June of this year [16]44. He sent by river pontoons of artillery, *manchusas* and other barks laden with all provisions, victuals, and munitions and the fabrics necessary for that war, and all went and lodged within sight of the fortalice. The enemy had built a redoubt in the neighbouring Island, upon the river, with artillery and a garrison, whence they not only molested the men of the arrayal but even made it difficult for the reinforcements to come up the river. As it was ~~was~~ therefore necessary to dislodge them from that place, on the eve of the feast of St. John the Baptist, the Captain-Major crossed the river, and at dawn assaulted the Hollanders, who though they defended themselves, were taken without loss to us ; and some died in resisting, others were drowned and some saved themselves by swimming. Trenches being opened and eight cannon mounted, he began to bombard the praga which the Enemy had fortified all around, from the river to the sea, with a rampart, a fathom and a half broad, and with redoubts provided with artillery, and two cavaletes, at the two ends, one on the sea beach and the other on the bank of the river. In the first days of the bombardment the fortalice was razed, but it did not have the same effect on the rampart because it was of earth ; and because though these were winter months on that side of the Island there was no rain at all, they attacked with all those engines loose on the ground.

The Captain-Major Fernão de Mendonça Furtado finding that he had lusty men, and carried away by the easy victory he had in the island, was of opinion that the fortalice should be carried by storm ; and he succeeded so much by his reasonings, for he never lacked arguments and words, that he won some over to his opinion, and what is more, they came to speak so freely, that they proceeded to say that it was cowardice to wait so long ; and finally they made the General forget the saying of the great Captain, Gonçalo Fernão of Cordous, ' That the greatest victory of a captain consisted in overcoming mistrust.' And as God prepared everything for the punishment of India, as had been so clearly prophesied, as we

said in another work<sup>1</sup> and will point out in this, although it was much safer to carry that praça by a leisurely siege at a time when it could not be reinforced by sea, and there was no fear of this by land, and by getting near with approaches that irreparable invention of ancient warfare and modern, till a convenient breach was made, or by making the Enemy despair of holding out in it, a course recommended by the recent losses, by the lack of men in the State and by the scanty hope of any great reinforcement from Portugal, so long as the war with Castille lasted, not to speak of the reputation P 733 so often lost, which were sufficient reasons to persuade one not to risk a single soldier without need, D. Phelipe M ascarenhas, against his own judgment and that of all the most experienced men, resolved to risk the flower of India in this assault, seeing that the difference of opinion had almost the appearance of a mutiny.

Having given the necessary orders at high noon, when the Sun burnt hottest and the Enemy was most forewarned by the signal of a gun, and the noise of our tambours and clarinets, they faced the shot and the trenches and walls, and all attacked desparately. But the Enemy, who were apprised fired P 333 their artillery in good time with small shot, and by repeated volleys, [fired] crossways upon those who were mounting the ramparts, they wrought lamentable havoc on the Portuguese, killing some and maiming others, leaving but a few survivors free from wounds. Then quite at their ease they fell upon those who had climbed the ramparts and made the victory so dear and the continuation of the assault so risky, that the General, seeing the disaster so clearly, found himself obliged to order the retreat to be sounded; and he also was struck by a musket shot which by the mercy of God fell dead between the skin and the shirt. He ordered D. Alvaro de Ataide to collect the men who remained, and he did it so skilfully that the enemy did not dare to sally outside the fortifications in pursuit of those who were retiring. In this encounter died the Captain-Major Fernão de Mendonça Furtado whose rashness destined him for this misfortune, though his valour gave hope of better successes. There died Jeronimo da Silva, a gentleman whose courage, prudence, and Christianity made all consider him a suitable person for high posts in peace and war. There died Francisco de Mendonça, brother of the Conde de Val de Rey, in whom the estimation of India recognized the same qualities. There died other gentlemen and cavaliers of great hope; and

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vida do Ven. Ir. Pedro de Basto.*

there fell also Joaō Alures Bretaō, who, besides other posts which he had deserved by his courage in the use of arms, had risen to occupy the Captaincy of Columbo which he then held. Finally the dead exceeded 900, and the wounded were so numerous that they had to raise the siege and return empty handed to Columbo so as not to leave that praça exposed to the last peril, if more men should fall in other encounters in Nigumbo. And D. Alvaro de Athaide who was now Captain-Major of the Field withdrew all with good order.

In Columbo the General ordered the arrayal to be reformed with Captains and soldiers, and when the wounded were healed, D. Alvaro toured the obedient lands and reduced the revolted ones. He overran the Seven and Four-corias as far as Atapitim on the borders of Candea, whereby he assured the obedience of many lands and the profit of cinnamon. The Chingalā King during this time remained neutral, because he had already discovered the little reliability of the treaties with the Hollanders and feared that we should take satisfaction for the wrongs received. There passed between him and D. Alvaro on some occasions political courtesies, and it is considered certain that he desired to use this gentleman as an intermediary for peace with the King of Portugal, but the time and circumstances disposed things otherwise, and D. Alvaro returned to Columbo being summoned for other enterprises. The news of the failure of the storming of Nigumbo reached Goa | and the Count Viceroy at once treated, as he always did, about reinforcing D. Phelipe for the purpose of a fresh siege. He sent D. Antonio Lobo with seven galliots, men, arms, and money in the beginning of September, and he soon reached Columbo. The General at once planned the recovery of Nigumbo which he, being now more cautious, would have achieved, had he not received news of the truce which was effected in Goa between the two nations. And though peace is at all times much to be desired, D. Phelipe and his soldiers did not fail to regret that so good an opportunity was lost.

For when the relief had set out for Columbo on the 27th of September, there arrived in the bar of Goa the Hollander Ambassador Joan Maet Suycher who disembarked on 13th October with all ceremony. From the first visits to the Count in the Palace of Pangim till the 10th of November, the conditions were adjusted, and they were at once published in Goa ; and the Ambassador left full of honour and well rewarded, for the Count was very happy to have to hand over the State in peace to his successor, D. Phelipe Mascarenhas,

after having sustained it in so bitter a warfare, as may be gathered from these writings. The Ambassador soon reached Columbo where he was well treated, and the truce published, and he went his way to Gâle and Batavia, and the Count informed D. Phelipe of the election which His Majesty had made of his person,<sup>1</sup> while he negotiated a fleet to fetch him. Everything was speedily done and D. Manoel Pereyra came as Captain-Major, with many gentlemen, and cavaliers as captains of rowing ships with a goodly soldiery and they reached Columbo in safety. The new Viceroy embarked in it, and when he set sail in foul weather against the advice of many, there broke out such a tempest, that it wrecked him with all his fleet off the coast of Calapiti : where some gentlemen and soldiers perished, and very considerable was the loss of wealth on that occasion, and the peril to the Viceroy, who saved himself in a *batûl*.<sup>2</sup> This misfortune obliged him to winter in Jafanapataô, whither the Count sent another fleet, in which he embarked with better fortune and after providing for the fortalices of Jafanapataô and Manâr he crossed to Tuucorim and thence to Cochim where he disembarked and remained some days and found that the servant of God, Pedro de Basto, was already dead, at whose grave he made the demonstrations of love and piety which we described in his life.<sup>3</sup> Thence he went to Goa, taking in his company another fleet of Jafanapataô and that of the Cape, *P 735* of which the Captain-Major was | D. Martim Afonso Mancel with the fleets of Ceylon and of the coast of Choromandel. Providing necessaries for the fortalices of Cananôr, Mangalôr, Barcelôr, Cambolim and Onôr, he ordered visits to the Kings of the country | and with the addition to his following of the *P 394* fleet and flotilla of Canara he entered Goa with more than 600 sail of rowing ships on Christmas day [1]645 and made his solemn entry on the 1st of January [1]646.

Such were the good and ill successes which Ceylon experienced in the war with Holland from the year [16]38 to that of [16]45, not taking into account some circumstances of lesser import. Such were the successes with the Hollanders during the life time of the venerable brother Pedro de Basto, which he prophesied in the manner which we have related in another work.<sup>3</sup> Such the truce which was settled with him for 10 years. For realizing that it was not so easy to

<sup>1</sup> Viceroy, 1646-1651.

<sup>2</sup> This word is not found in any dictionary. There is a Bengali word *bawla*, which means a kind of boat. Anglice 'Boilah.'

<sup>3</sup> *Vide* 141.

carry Columbo as they thought in the beginning, and understanding that the more they straitened the Portuguese into fewer praças the greater was the resistance they found in them, and that as King D. Joaõ the Restorer was engaged only with the slow warfare which Castille waged against Portugal in the first years after his acclamation and the apprehension of his great dispositions, he would not fail to aid India with sufficient reinforcements to sustain what he held there; and finally seeing that though fortune favoured them in the enterprises already mentioned, it was always at the cost of much blood and of great expense; and that the introduction into India of the European warfare which was already being practised in Portugal was a foregone conclusion, since the reinforcements came to us from that Kingdom, and that by making use of that warfare we should g've them greater ado with lesser forces, and seeing that there was in Ceylon the cinnamon which they desired, though in those times they were at peace, and that their maritime power had become formidable throughout all the known world, they came to these terms, which their policy approved, and which was not less convenient to us, because at this very time we had to deal with other enemies, who profiting by the distractions caused by Hollander arms in diverse parts, occupied our lands, because among these nations there never existed any friendship other than present convenience.

---

## CHAPTER 15.

### THE EARLY SUCCESSES OF THE GOVERNMENT OF GENERAL MASCARENHAS HOMEM

The Viceroy, D. Phelipe Mascarenhas, was succeeded in the Government of Ceylon by Manoel Mascarenhas Homem, and though the truce with the Hollander was in vigour, he ever considered it good State policy to maintain peace with the <sup>P 736</sup> Chingalà King without any | | quarrel of importance which <sup>P 735</sup> has come to our notice. On the contrary knowing that he was at enmity with the Hollanders, because they did not fulfil the compacts which they had made about the conquest of Gále, for which purpose he had assisted them with his army from without, at the time when that praga was surrounded and scaled, and that he had already vindicated himself by killing Commander Costra with ten or twelve Hollanders, who after the

capture of Gâle had gone as Ambassador to Candea, seeing that one who did not keep faith in treaties would not observe the law of nations ; and on the advice of the Councillors of Columbo approved in the Council of the State of Goa, the General sent as Ambassadors to Candea, with a good present D. Jeronimo de Azevedo and Father Sebastião de Fonseca, Rector of the College of the Fathers of the Society of Jesus in Columbo, to make peace anew and to prevent a league with the Hollander. But the King moved by a different policy without giving them audience, informed the Batavians of the terms which the Portuguese offered him, it appearing to him that by means of this rivalry he would get better terms for himself ; and after keeping them three years and having received a fresh embassy from the Hollanders, he sent back the Portuguese Ambassadors without any good result.

In this manner our General went on up to the year 1650, when six Hollanders were sent by the Captain of Gâle to Columbo to announce that the truce was over and that from the fourth of October onwards there would be bitter war between the two nations. While all expected that, at least in outward manifestations, the General would show himself pleased and glad and would order the news to be celebrated with salvos of artillery, he showed so broken and crestfallen a spirit, that he surprised all and the Hollanders not the least ; and as they were insolent, on their way to Gâle they did not fail to show it to the Portuguese. The rumour soon spread that the Enemy intended to occupy Calaturê, and by dint of warning and importunities the General was made to send 120 soldiers, but by a strange and unheard of military disposition, without any distribution of captains and companies, and Andre Velho Pereyra, Dissâva of Maturê, with some black troops ; and with order to retire if the enemy should seek them out, on the ground that it was not a time for loosing a single man. The river of Aliciaô was the boundary which separated us, and our men occupied those lands as far as Columbo. On the first news of the march of the Hollander, he sent a fresh order to the Portuguese to retire to the other side of the river of Calaturê, and that the Chingalâ troops alone should remain, which seemed so strange to the Portuguese and so unexpected to the Hollander, that for three days he suspended the march keeping a sharp look out, thinking that the movement of our men was for the purpose of falling upon them ; and in order to secure themselves from any strategem, they sent spies who assured them of the retreat. Then making a bridge over the river they crossed it without opposition, and without a shot they mastered the lands and fortified

P 777 sent spies who assured them of the retreat. Then making a bridge over the river they crossed it without opposition, and without a shot they mastered the lands and fortified

Calaturâ with artillery, a ditch, and trenches, letting some of our Chingalâz remain with them. The Portuguese were lodged in front of the eminence of Calaturâ, and [the enemy] swept them with one and the other shot, while our men had no permission to fire a single musket, nor to fortify themselves with a trench, and the soldiers [thereupon] taxed themselves to erect a rampart to protect them. Again they had order that if two other ships appeared on the sea they should again retire. And though little by little this body of men was increased in order to escape complaints in Columbo, they always brought orders not to provoke the Enemy, a decision which made the men wonder.

And as in a few days there appeared three or four Enemy sail, they crossed the river of Panaturâ and lodged near the Morro, two leagues from Columbo, and this was done in such haste that the knapsacks of the soldiers and many *candis* of rice were left behind for the use of the Belga, who seeing such disorders, sent their black troops to reduce to obedience the abandoned lands, sending the Cattle, women, and children, to Gâle. And when the Natives saw that the Portuguese did not attempt to defend them, they themselves abandoned the lands. The same fate had the garrison of Anguratôta, which defended the lands of Malvâna, and owing to the hurry with which they were ordered to retire, there also they left a quantity of rice. On the same orders the garrison of Sofragão retired leaving the *pâlayas*<sup>1</sup> (or penthouses) provided and the belongings of the soldiers, which those of Candea seized when they reduced those lands to obedience. And all this at a time when the City was short of provisions, the bar blockaded by four ships and the lands lost; and had some ships of Goa and Tucicorim not enter'd that bar three or four days before those ships appeared, that City would soon have perished. The captain of the black troops was a Moor, one who spoke Portuguese it is true, but without hands and feet and nose and ears, who afterwards passed over to the Enemy and as he had experience of the country and knew our plans, he did us great harm by his advice, though many excused him because of the many occasions on which he sent to ask reinforcements from the General.

Seeing this coldness (for I do not wish to say more now) the military men in Columbo were surprised and astounded, and some in the streets, others in the house of the General, reproached him for these proceedings, saying ' That by these retreats he added effrontery to the foe and that the preservation

---

<sup>1</sup> Sin. *pattayama*, granary.

of Columbo was rendered impossible by the loss of the lands. That the Hollander had not such large forces that we could not destroy them or make them retire to the walls of Gâle, for they had 950 soldiers and the enemy in the two pracas and in the field only 900. That to let him come within view of Columbo | F 396

<sup>P 738</sup> hastened the ruin of Ceylon | and consequently of India. That to shut themselves up in the praca was a thing that should be done only in case the Hollander placed all his forces in Ceylon. That the residents of Ceylon had nothing left to them save their gardens, and that in those of Calaturê alone the King had lost more than 200 bahars of cinnamon, which were made and were in the hands of the Enemy.' To these and other remarks he only answered by saying that he had a letter from His Majesty to defend the city, as if there were no Captain and he had not the appointment of General of the Island.

This came upon other forebodings, because during the whole time of the truce, he proceeded in such a manner in the disposition of war that zealous men began to say that he did great harm to all by appointing boys as Captains, leaving aside veteran soldiers scarred by shot and wounds who had shown great valour in the conquest, and that he obliged them to obey those who did not know how to command them, but withdrew from them a part of their ordinary sustance to spend it in gala attire, walking about in the streets of Columbo ; and that from lack of necessities many had died in quarters and in the hospital ; and the worst of all was that these things were said to have been done on his orders. To these the General gave no reply but only said that he had other Captains for the time of war. This was now going on, and there was seen no change to the great shame of the Portuguese name. Nor did he think of repairing the walls of the City, which in many places required parapets, nor was there any other preparation for war. The Preachers clamoured from the Pulpits out of zeal for the faith and for the service of His Majesty, the former out a sense of duty, the latter of blood, which does not boil less under religious habits than under uniforms. The casados and soldiers openly distrusted this government, thinking it inevitable that these dispositions would cause the final ruin of Columbo and Ceylon, and they were already half mutinous. Then the rumour spread that the arrayal of Manioravare had risen against the Captain-Major, Lopo Barriga, son-in-law of General Manoel Mascarenhas Homem on this ground ; ' That the General was a traitor and had sold the City of Columbo. That they wished to depose him, not only to secure that praca of His Majesty but also the Island.'

In this sense they wrote to the City [calling upon it] to depose the General as a traitor, and that they proclaimed it and called upon them in the name of the King whose loyal Lieges they were, and that they resorted to this means out of zeal for his service.' They wrote the same to the Superiors of the Religious [crdcrs].

But this was not done so peacefully as to be without bloodshed. For having passed the word to keep their arms ready at the relieving of the day break watch, the mutineers went with muskets and matches ready to the quarters of the Captain-Major, and placing a dagger to his breast, they warned him not to stir or he would be killed, and thus they dragged <sup>P 735</sup> him from the arrayal | in deshabille and sent him to Columbo. | He was a good natured gentleman who had served <sup>P 736</sup> many years in India but was unfortunate in his kinship. Some captains who were not trusted with the secret attempted to rescue him, but his nephew, Luis Alvares de Azevedo, was killed by spears and Jacinto de Madureyra with four musket shot, and two others were wounded.

The City was all in perturbation over this news. The relatives and the few friends of the General condemned the soldiers; the others said that they were quite right, and that an open Enemy of the Crown could not have done worse. The General acted by sending a Capuchin religious to the arrayal offering pardon for the deed, provided they would settle down peaceably, but as they did not consider themselves guilty, after listening to him, they refused the pardon, saying that the General was a traitor, and that while they were quite enough to defend the territories of the King, he was infamously betraying them to the Enemy; that they knew he intended to betray the City,' and all clamoured aloud: 'We do not want such a General. Long live the Faith of Christ. Let traitors die. Long live King D. Jcaô.' After this religious, he sent others, with fresh offers, but they received the same answer.

The Candiot King profiting by this mutiny, at once sent to offer them posts and lands or passage to any place they liked, but they answered like Portuguese. At this time Joaô Botado, Dissâva of the Four Corias, retired, and soon afterwards the Dissâva of the Seven. The soldiers thought it was manoeuvred by the General to remove the Natives from them so as to let them be killed, for in the marches of the arrayal they were ever the beaters who spied out the camp and cleared the ways. Seeing, therefore, that those of Candeia were assaulting and knowing that Gaspar Figueyra de Serpa was in the neighbourhood in one of his villages, they sent a band of soldiers to fetch

m to be their commander, and as he refused, they brought him in fetters. Great was the esteem they had for Figueyra as a valorous, experienced, cunning, and liberal person. To add to his experience he was a Columbo born man, being the son of Bertholameu Figueyra whom D. Jeronimo de Azevedo dubbed a knight in Candea for the valour with which he fought at the crossing of the river. He began services as a soldier, and afterwards as Ensign under D. Phelipe Mascarenhas in the recovery of Nigumbo and was with him in Matuâl. On his order he went to defend the passage of Calaturê against the Hollanders and held the post of the Captain-Major Joaô Pereyra de Sousa to the satisfaction which all expected from him. He was Commander of a separate detachment of Chingalâz and some Portuguese in the arrayal of Maturê and had redued some rebellious Corlas in that country and in those of Sofragaô ; | and he was victorious in various encounters, though he had P 397 lesser forces, and killed and captured many even of the Chingalâ leaders. In the assault of Vâlavê he was captain of the advance guard with two companies, and after cutting off P 740 many heads, he made them abandon the place, | took many prizes and recovered ours. By ambuscades he killed many of those who sallied from Gâle. He was with Antonio de Amaral de Menezes in the victory over the Hollander at Vacuêla. And as he had risen through the ranks of soldier, Captain, Head of a detached band and Captain-Major in the course of thirteen years, always giving great proof of his worth, he was here preferred by the soldiers also who pretended to justify their intention of standing up for the honour and credit of Portuguese arms.

He led them to Columbo taking charge of the advance guard which covered the baggage [train] of alias and oxen laden with provisions, and consisted of 1,000 souls, and as the Enemy had occupied the other roads, he marched by the hills of Duravaca. The Chingalâ came in great haste, and [Serpa] being attacked saved the advance guard and the baggage and assisted the rear guard, where they fought for a long time; and as there came a great shower of rain, the dash of the enemy was greater, but he gained the approaches of the roads and having animated the soldiers by word and example, beat them back with such constancy that after three hours of battle they fled in disorder, with no small loss; and on our side one was wounded. All of which was attributed to the good management of the Captain-Major.

Meanwhile in the City, in diverse meetings of all the states, they were discussing some means for pacifying them, and though these were placed before [the soldiers], they continued

to be of the same opinion, as they had taken on oath to c for the Faith of Christ and not to recognize the General. In the centre of the squadron one of them carried a large crucifix which they called their Captain-Major and General ; and when any one came to treat with them, they told him, that to be heard he must first pray to the Holy Crucifix. They elected ten as a council of war, but they decided nothing without the approval of the majority. A proclamation was issued that neither prostitute women nor wine should be allowed in the arrayal ; and crimes were punished with rigour.

The General persisted in telling them, ‘ That he had given homage for that praca which he must not and could not give up without the order of His Majesty, and that if they attempted to [make him] do so by force, he was resolved to resist.’ Various Religious and secular persons pointed out to him the danger in which he placed himself and his household ; that it was not for His Majesty’s service to lose Ceylon by losing Columbo, that if there should be an outbreak, whether he got the victory or was vanquished, all would be lost ; that if he had good reason to think that it was not a time to risk a single man, which is the plea which he alleged for abandoning the lands, how could he then make up his mind to lose so many and everything ? That the arrayal consisted of about 1,000 Portuguese, and that with the Chingalaz pioneers, and Caffirs slaves of the King | there would be about 2,000 ; and if with P 207e these men and the rest who were in the city he thought he could not take the field against the Hollander, how could he expect that he would overcome them, or defend the praca without them. But to vent his passion, | he looked upon all who said this as his enemies, and branded them as traitors, and trusted his life to a few relatives and to some others whom he had gained over, the lands meanwhile being like a house without a master, and the majority going over to the Enemy for greater security, for few were those who came to Columbo with some cattle.

Then there increased the despondency of the Citizens who had sons and relatives in the arrayal who were thought to be the cause of this revolt, because they saw in Ceylon what they had never experienced. The General to show some courage and to instil terror, made his confession showing his determination to die in the attempt. He went to the College of the Society of Jesus to receive communion, and from there he went to the Mother Church ordering a proclamation to be made, that whoever would not repair thither would be considered a traitor. When all were gathered, in wild, angry, words he said : ‘ That whoever would not come and throw himself at

his feet, of whatever state he was, would be killed and consumed and his house razed.' He ordered the Prior to expose the most Holy Sacrament and imposed an oath on all present, that is all who were in the City, and first of all on the Prelates of the Religious orders, and on some other religious. And while his intention was to make them swear to defend him, many of those who did so, swore to defend the Faith of Christ and the honour of the King and the common weal. After this act the cleric Pero da Costa mounted the pulpit and recommended peace and concord with the head. Afterwards he left the Mother Church, distributed the men-at-arms to the posts of greater danger, and got the artillery ready and distributed powder and shot freely.

---

## CHAPTER 16.

### THE SAME MATTER CONTINUED

Lo ! the news arrived that the arrayal had crossed the river at Calane. The General resolved to take the field with the men he had ; and as such rash deeds were never noted in him, it was supposed that he must have relied on the respect due to his office ; but it was too late and he had few on his side. The Religious, who were the most disinterested, seeing that he was going to his doom, went in large numbers with Crucifixes begging him not to risk his person, that they would go to pacify the soldiers, more in order to give time to cool his passion than because they hoped to succeed ; and in fact they returned with the same disappointment as the earlier [envoys]. The confusion in the City could scarcely be imagined. The majority said that they did not want to fight against Christians and Portuguese, the cautious folk retired ; the soldiers of the City blamed these disorders, because though they received *n<sup>o</sup>s* no food, they had to watch day and night in the troublesome *P 742* time of the monsoon, | and many fled to the arrayal and others wished to do the same, but were prevented from doing so, because the gates were closed and there were many sentinels because when the rumour got about that the casados sought to give entry to the arrayal, the General trusted only his own relatives, and not a slave could one send out to fetch some sustenance for life ; and the General was beginning to hate every one, thinking that they all favoured the rebels, and

whatever counsel they gave him in this matter was for him a species of treason, and he looked upon those of the arrayal as a pack of scoundrels and mongrels.

They then sent to ask provisions of which there was great scarcity. He showed himself stern, and to one who represented to him that, driven to desperation by hunger, they might do something mad, either by marching upon the City or by going over to the Enemy, he replied that it would be merely losing the crew of a Galleon. But when the Prelates and members of the Chamber and chief citizens insisted, he allowed them to give a small quantity as an alms. They began to think that the General being ruined, sought to ruin all others with him ; and that now there was no question of the service of God or of the King; but they could not make up their mind, seeing that everything was preparing for greater disasters, as the soldiers had sworn afresh to die one for all and all for one, and that if there should be one death, they would make the streets run with blood and not cease till they had killed the General with all his household for getting ready to give them battle, imputing to them the crime of which they accused him. They had kept with them some religious who had gone to pacify them, whom they begged to remain to hear their confessions ; and with great zeal they remained in patience, hoping to reap good fruit by their presence, and so in truth they did, by deterring them several times when they wished to storm the City and in other outbreaks, and even of these Religious the General began to think and speak ill. The arrayal finally came within sight of the City and halted in a palmgrove within gun shot, captained by Gaspar Figueyra de Serpa, who, he always believed, was the one who got up this mutiny in order to become Captain-Major of the field ; and it was because he and the others knew that in similar cases he would have to pay for it with his head that they took the precautions above-mentioned ; and the shortage of provisions being added to this, they resolved to approach Columbo. It is known, however, that Gaspar Figueyra justified himself by his deeds, and that the General Francisco de Melo de Castro had issued most honourable certificates about them, and his successor employed him in a greater conflict, as we shall see. Nor is his cause less justified by a certificate of the Father Commissary and Visitor. Friar Francisco de Madre de Deos of the Seraphic order, in which he states that when the praga of Columbo was taken, he spoke to the Hollander Generallodging in his Convent | to give him audience and that when he had received it and he asked to let him go to Goa, he replied, that ~~was~~ about this Gaspar | Figueyra had spoken to him ; but that he

counselled him the contrary, because Manoel Mascarenha Homem, his declared Enemy, was at [the head of the] government. And when the Father related this reply to Gaspar Figueyra, he replied. 'The Governor says that : I say and ask Your Paternity, to tell him in my name that the greatest kindness that he can do me is to order me to be put in fetters and in that state to be handed to Senhor Manoel Mascarenhas Homem at the bar of Goa.' So confident was he in his proceedings, though he was mistaken, because even after the death of the Governor, according to what a Viceroy related to us, he sent one of his relatives to kill him with poison, because he did not dare to kill him with the sword, and that in India he never did a more noble deed than that of a careful merchant, though there was occasion and obligation to do so.

The General, considering that now it was not only his honour that was in danger, but even his life, disclosed greater regret over this proceeding, which, if it were the greatest, was not the first in Ceylon, nor will it be so in India, so long as military discipline is wanting, though the Portuguese rarely went to these extremes without great cause being given for it, and in the case of Manoel Mascarenhas Homem, presumption and cunning had the better of his judgment, and he did not hide some personal grievance about a Benefice which was in his family and was given to another. And though it was a most futile cause, his mind was affected by the approval of these novelties in Portugal, though there is nothing which is more reprehensible, and which can be one of the justest causes for the punishment of that Kingdom, than that Benefices had become hereditary, and that the goods of the Church were not distributed according to the intentions of the Pontiffs. Of this, however, History gives other proofs. Thence the arrayal again called upon the City to depose the General, because he was a traitor ; and when they again asked for provisions, with his permission they sent them in small quantities by women, because the men joined them ; but as soon as they saw them, they ordered them to turn back with their loads, because they did not beg charity, but what the King had ordered to be given to them as to his soldiers and lieges, and that they would soon come to the City to get their supplies.

Without further delay, on the last day of November, they formed in the field of S. Thome<sup>1</sup> and marched to the city. Every thing was in arms, by order of the General three pieces

<sup>1</sup> So called from the Catholic Church of St. Thomas that stood there, the precursor of the present St. Thomas Church. The Raj. 91 states that in lower Boralugoda lies Santumpitiya. Santumpitiya is now corrupted into Gintupitiya.

were fired from the bastion of S. Joao, by which Columbo was afterwards entered by the Enemy, and they were levelling an *espalhafato* [gun]. One shot fell in the midst of the squadron, and though it did no hurt, the rumour ran at once that many infantry were killed. The City suddenly mutinied, in which all was one outcry of men in the streets, women | at the F 399 windows, shouting to take steps before more Christian blood was shed. They came to the Chamber of the City and by a prompt decision, they entered the neighbouring Church of the College of the Society of Jesus, calling upon the Fathers to P 744 come out with the most Holy Sacrament | so that all might go in a body to ask the Captain-General to stop the war. Confused voices resounded : ' Is it possible to kill so many Christian men ? Because of one man, must so many die ? Is Ceylon to be ruined by the passion of one ? Let us all die before we let them kill our children, our brothers, relatives and friends, on whose lives the King depends to be Lord of Ceylon, and let us not allow the Hollander to triumph over Portuguese blood.' It is not an easy matter to adjust politics in such a pass nor to judge rightly about what ought to prevail on this point. The Fathers moved by zeal for the Common weal, which should always be preferred, and foreseeing what might ensue from such disorders came out with the most Holy Sacrament, accompanied by the Officials of the City, with its guard and many people and many tears of all that people at sight of the manifest peril to all. When they reached the door of the General's house and he appeared at a window, the clerk of the Chamber said to him : ' Senhor Captain-General, the Sacramental Lord comes with the City and people to ask you to stop the artillery and warfare and not to let so many Portuguese be killed.' The Father who was carrying the Lord, took up the supplication imploring him by the Sacramental Lord, whom all acknowledged and adored to avert the dangers which prudence foresaw would result from the resolution he took. He interrupted him in a loud voice, calling upon him to retire, and rebuked him for this action. Such is the fate of all demands which are not to the taste of the powerful, though they be moderate and pious like this one. He added that the people must not mutiny (as if they had not done so already), that otherwise he would consider them traitors, and at once he ordered an *espalhafato* piece to be directed upon those who accompanied the Lord, and he encouraged his men to fight and defend his person. From his room a firelock was fired which caused a slight wound, and as an Ensign prevented the piece from being fired saying : ' That those people had not come to fight, but to beg for public tranquility,' he was instantly

ordered to be arrested. But soon Mascareñas realized that with greater credit to his piety he should have heeded this request, which he was soon obliged to do through fear.

For when the people saw that there was no hope of remedy, that the Lord was exposed to fresh insults, and they were in peril of losing their lives, they turned back shouting 'Long live the Faith, and death to traitors.' They met another crowd of men with the Religious of St. Francis who, with a crucifix reared aloft, were coming to make the same petition, and when they heard of what had happened, his action F 399v caused such resentment (for it was not the first of this kind from that gentleman) that many of his partisans joined the people, and asked the Religious not to retire with the Lord lest the City be lost. A voice exclaimed: 'Hasten to the Queen's Gate to save the infantry'; and the Religious of St. Francis were also of opinion that the Lord should go, so that His presence P 765 might avert deaths. Already the companies raised by the General had abandoned their posts to join the arrayal, and those of the guard went away from the gate which was opened by the people. The Religious and the clerics held the gate and warned everyone not to do any hurt or kill anybody, and they did not let any one enter till he had first promised before the Lord not to attack the General nor anything belonging to him nor any body in the City. They kept their word and entered peacefully without any bloodshed. The General seeing the infantry and the City against him, sent word by Diogo de Souza da Cunha to ask them not to make further commotion saying that he would retire to the Convent of St. Dominic, because he now thought it wiser to seek a shelter for his life, since he was not able to maintain his authority. The citizens and soldiers were satisfied with this decision, and the General found better welcome from the Fathers of St. Dominic than he had given to one of their Religious whom he ordered to be arrested in the Convent, because he was thought to have some dealings with the Pagan King for no better reason than that he was in a parish near Candea.

Gaspar Figueyra at once garrisoned the City, and on the following day, the people, the Prelates and the officers of the Chamber, having assembled in the Mother Church, after a long conference it was settled not to open the *vias*<sup>1</sup> of the General,

---

<sup>1</sup> Letters of Succession. The Royal despatches were called *vias* because they were sent in duplicate or rather in quadruplicate. The *vias* of succession were sealed letters containing the names of those who were nominated to succeed a Governor or Viceroy in case of the death of the actual holders of the office. Three names were given.

but to elect three men to conduct the war, till a new General should come from Goa ; and by a unanimous vote were elected Gaspar de Araujo Pereyra, D. Francisco Rolim de Mours, casados, and Francisco de Barros, a soldier. The reasons they had for not opening the *vias* of the General have not come to my knowledge, and in similar cases the wisdom of such a course is doubtful, as unanimous consent when genuine always has a great value. When the Viceroy Conde de Obidos was deposed in Goa<sup>1</sup> they found the *vias* unsigned and consequently the names of the substitutes were missing, which the King was wont to write with his own hand ; which if the people had been able to foresee, it would have been wiser not to open them, but who could have thought that there would be such carelessness in a matter which should have been the first care of a minister. When the Conde de Sarzedas died, they found there were no *vias*<sup>2</sup> and who would have imagined that a similar forgetfulness would be repeated. They proceeded to the election and through the tricks of the Secretary it was at night, with very few members, and was approved only by them, a circumstance which was enough to show that there was a lack of the light of judgment in it, as we shall see. Princes cannot see to everything | nor can accidents always secure wisdom ; and as the *F 400* danger was greater in these places so far from Portugal, the precaution should be great and greater also the need of true reports.

The Eleitos confirmed Gaspar Figueyra as Captain-Major of the field and Joaõ Botado de Seyxas in the Four-Corlas, *P 748* Antonio Mendes Aranha in Sofragão and Manoel Gil in the Corla of Alicur ; as Dissâva and Captain-Major of Maturé Francisco Antunes, and Manoel Guerreiro Neves for the Seven Corlas. The Eleitos swore that the person of the General and his family and relatives would be detained in a bastion set apart for the purpose with a guard awaiting the order of the Viceroy, to whom they wrote the things they had done. The captains of the infantry took oath, while the Lord was exposed to obey the Eleitos and not to do any hurt in matters relating to the General.

<sup>1</sup> 22nd October, 1653.

<sup>2</sup> 3rd January, 1656. In the absence of *vias* they elected Manoel Mascarenhas Homem, the deposed Governor of Ceylon. In the following May the letters of successors arrived and the three nominated were the three successive Captains General of Ceylon, Manoel Mascarenhas Homem, Francisco de Melo de Castro and Antonio de Souza Coutinho. The two last were in Ceylon at the time.

## CHAPTER 17.

## THE SUCCESSES OF THE GOVERNMENT OF THE ELEITOS

There were then found without miracle more than 950 soldiers, while it was known that the Hollander had not more than 600 in Gâle and 300 in Nigumbo; which increased afresh the wrath against the General. These arrangements being made in the course of four days, they placed in the City 40 soldiers in guard over the Captain-General who was detained in the bastion of S. Estevão, with his son Estevão Homem da Silva, his son-in-law Lopo Barriga, and his nephew Luis de Miranda Henriquez. The soldiers were distributed into thirty-three companies, one remained in Malvâna and the rest left the City. And as the lands had revolted as soon as the arrayal descended to Columbo, and as the majority of the lascarins in our service had absented themselves, Manoel Guerreyna went to the Seven-Corlas with four companies and 100 Lascarinis; Joaõ Botado to the Four [Corlas] with as many companies and about 200 lascarins. The rest of the force, divided into 23 companies with little more than 100 lascarins, marched to Nigumbo and the advance guard found the bridge at Tutugurê broken. They asked from the other bank who was coming; our men replied: 'Men of Candeia': they replied that they could not pass, as there were Hollander forces there. Immediately Figueyra ordered Captain Antonio Jorge to seize the roads to Nigumbo and to lie in ambush and to wait in silence to catch them in the middle, and he passed on further sending two lascarins to Antonio Mendez Aranha [asking him] to come with his men, as he did not know what forces the Batavian had, and to secure better success. The Indian lack of good discipline frustrated this wise plan, for Captain Antonio Jorge beat his drums and the Hollander fled to Nigumbo leaving in Ambolaõ, where they were lodged, about thirty-three Hollanders, arms and baggage. | This disorder caused great <sup>P 747</sup> <sup>F 400</sup> regret, and in spite of all the haste which Figueyra made he was not able to overtake more than an Ensign whose head was cut off, because he would not surrender, and a Frenchman and a Hollander Sergeant.

In Columbo they owned how many men they had, which [is the number] we have already given; 'that the ships had only the sailors and gunners: That the news that they had lost twenty ships in Amboyno was true; that even in Nigumbo they did not know of the deposition [of the General], that had they known it, they would not have sallied out from Nigumbo with only 60 men'; which news rejoiced the City for the time. The rest escaped to the jungle and our men went in pursuit of them till within musket-shot of the praga of Nigumbo, devastating its vicinity, but they did not stir out of the fortalice. Those lands returned to obedience with the corla of Alicur; and some cinnamon which we had made there was saved. Afterwards they decided to desist from that slow siege, and leaving the Dissava of the Corlas with seven companies at the pass of the bridge of Tutuguré, the Captain-Major set out with seventeen in search of the Enemy arrayal on the first of January [16]53. The Belga had information of it and retired into the stockade of Anguratôta which they had built to protect the cinnamon in which that place abounds. It was garrisoned by 114 Europeans, 90 Bandanese and 300 Chingalâs. Our men crossed the river with great difficulty, dividing the men into three bodies under Gaspar Figueyra, Antonio Mendez and Francisco Antunes, so that the enemy might not escape nor be reinforced. The first to arrive was Antunes who, at the cost of one killed and four wounded, gained a redoubt made for a passage to the river, and as the second was immediately taken by the others, they were altogether surrounded. Then with approaches they placed the stockade in great peril, but as the fortifications were of thick wood and received little damage, Figueyra ordered gun platforms to be erected whence he attacked them without loss to us. The siege began on the 6th of January, and the Captain-Major fearing that the Enemy might combine all his forces, ordered a piece to be brought from the City which was mounted on the ninth day. Knowing, however, that the Batavian had already 800 Europeans and 1,000 Chingalâs in the village of Tibuna, less than a league from the stockade, he ordered the besieged to be called upon to surrender, under pain of receiving no quarter. They at once gave in, only on the verbal promise of their lives, and they were handed over to Francisco de Barros who had come with the piece and a company of casados from Columbo. Besides the dead there were one hundred and five Hollander prisoners, 24 Bandanese and 300 lascarins, all brave and picked men. Our men awaited the enemy, but he, who is wont to act with caution, retreated to Calaturé with little

credit, though he had the advantage of numbers, and he was so intimidated | that in that campaign he did not place his ~~F 401~~  
arrayal in the field, giving room to the Portuguese to seek out the Chingalâs who with a numerous army were taking possession of our lands.

P 748 | On seeing this good success, the soldiers asked for their pay, complaining principally of the two Eleitos, Francisco de Barros and D. Francisco Rolim. For this purpose the Captain-Major returned to Columbo. They [the two Eleitos] withdrew into two convents, but the third Eleito, Gaspar de Araujo, settled the matter, and as there was no Public money, the casados contributed and paid two [instalments of] quarterage. Francisco Antunes meanwhile with only 25 soldiers and 60 Chingalâs remained in the lands of Reygaô and Salpiti relying on the promise of Figueyra that he would send six companies as soon as pay was given; but the promise was not fulfilled. Thence he had sent some men to roam about and destroy the Enemy lands, and remaining there for more than three months, he extricated himself seven times from the ambushes which they laid for him by means of the great experience he had of the country, and he delivered several surprise attacks on the rear guards and did all the harm he could in narrow passes with the death of some Enemies. The Batavian, seeing that he could not drive him away, made the lascarins cross the river and by a sudden sally succeeded in taking prizes unopposed in the outskirts of the City, as the arrayal was absent.

Joaô Botado de Seyxas, who was in the Four-Cor'as with only four companies and 200 lascarins, was attacked by the Dissâva Comdûme with 3,000 men of the Candiot, and when the Chingalâ measured spears with Joaô Botado, the latter with sword and shield beat him back several times and finally killed him with a valiant stroke, and they were all routed, leaving many dead and a great many arms, and taking away many wounded men. Some of our men died also, among them Antonio Cortes who fought valiantly; and the Captain Joaô Botado went to the City to be healed of a wound, while his place was taken by Joaô de Gouvea.

At the end of January of [16]55 Gaspar Figueyra de Serpa again took the field to recover the two Provinces of the Four and Seven-Corlas and to gather the large crops in the fields. Arriving at Malvâna, by his industry, he enlisted 900 lascarins in two days, ordered Antonio Mendez Aranha to maintain the lands of Gurubêble with four companies and united the

four of Manoel Guerreyro with the four of Joao de Gouveia, which made up 27 and consisted of 790 soldiers, besides Manoel Gil with more than 50 lascarins. With this force he went in search of the Chingalâ in the village of Arandurê, marching by Ruanêla and Bulatégâma and sending out bands of lascarins and soldiers who by sudden attacks cut off many heads and brought many prizes. When the Enemy received tidings of this march, he betook himself into a well-fortified hill in the village Vedabâ garrisoned by 6000 musketeers and firelockmen, spearmen and bowmen, with such fear and terror that, as our men were pursuing them, all the baggage fell into our hands, and many were killed or captured.

P 748 Thereupon the whole of Bolatégâma and four other corlas of the Province of the Four-Corlas, which for ten years past had been under the Chingalâs, made their submission. Then leaving the lands under their Dissava, he went with seven companies in search of the Enemy to Vedabâ, a place so well protected and strong by position that our men thought it impossible to take it. Figueyra sent Manoel Gil with his Chingalâs and some Portuguese to fall upon the enemy in the rear, while he did so in front. But as Manoel Gil had a longer distance to travel over rougher roads, Gaspar Figueyra attacked before he could arrive and was received by the Enemy with such resolution that after some deaths and wounds our advance guard began to retreat. At this juncture Antonio Madeyra Cabral lifted up a crucifix, which the arrayal always carried, and called upon all to follow it and to fight for the Faith of Christ whom they worshipped. The advance guard turned back at the time when Manoel Gil attacked in the flank and the stockade was carried, with the death of more than 100 Chingalâs. The rest fled leaving all the spoils, some prisoners and a Royal standard. We lost six soldiers, among them Antonio de Babilaõ, a retired captain, and an Arache, 12 Portuguese and two lascarins were wounded.

Many lands of the Seven and Four-Corlas surrendered forthwith, and so great was the fear, that from many leagues they came to surrender with unheard-of obedience, among others those of Talampetim who had been in revolt for ten years past. In that place was collected by order of the King a large quantity of provisions wherewith the arrayal sustained itself for four months. Leaving the Dissava of the Seven-Corlas there with six companies, the Captain-Major went in pursuit of the Enemy along the borders of the four-Corlas, receiving obedience from the lands as far as the frontiers of Candea. In various assaults he cut off many

heads and finally he halted in Arandurê, whence by continuous inroads he disquieted the encampments and lands of the Enemy, and in the four encounters our men always came out victorious. Thence he sent men to conquer the Port of Putalaô and Talepetim [a matter] of great service to the King, for thereby he hindered the trade of Candeä and gave free communication to our men with Jafanapataô and Manâr, and enabled the residents of Columbo to resume possession of their lands, and the King to resume the dominion and profit. He ordered Manoel Gil to cross over to the lands of the Enemy with six companies and 400 lascarins to gather the harvest of Parnacûr. There he was attacked by 10,000 Chingalâs, and the Enemy, seeing that he was not able to defeat the Portuguese, ordered a detachment of infantry to obstruct a narrow pass in the hill of Nosnacabe through which they had to return. But the Captain-Major with great foresight had ordered the pass to be occupied by four companies, and when our men were retiring and fighting, they found the four battling with the Enemy. They all joined and with the death of more than 300, they put them to a disgraceful <sup>F 402</sup> flight and returned to Arandurê carrying a great deal of <sup>P 710</sup> provisions | for the arrayal and for the City without any loss, though the battle lasted nine hours. Thence Manoel Guerreyro went to Alâva with six companies, Joaô de Gouvea to Pitigaldinê in the Four-Corlas with three, and as the lands were obedient, each had 60 lascarins more and about a thousand remained with Figueyra, but the Portuguese arrayal was not a little reduced by sickness and the famine they suffered, over and above such continual hardships, for these perpetual disturbances prevented the cultivation of the lands, and the blockade of the Hollander by sea impeded the necessary succours from Columbo..

Meanwhile Francisco Antunes had retired to the City and in place of Antonio Mendez Aranha, Diogo de Souza remained in Gurubê with four companies and 150 lascarins. Here a Dissâva of the King of Candeä sought him out with 3,000 men ; but he was routed with not a few deaths, while of our men only three were wounded. Diogo de Souza also fell ill and Andre de Seyxas was nominated Dissâva and Captain-Major of Sofragaô. He joined Francisco Antunes with another company formed of some discharged men and some soldiers who were in Malvâna besides 150 Lascarins. They went to the village Candagaô in the country of Safragaô where there were 8,000 men of Candeä who let our arrayal pass, because at Batugâdera, a little further on, was the King himself with 18,000 men. Our men made inquiries and

learnt of the arrival of the King which was confirmed by the fact that the Enemy gave them passage. The road by which they entered was already taken, and they returned by that of Toponavala to go down to Ruanēla and thence to the stockade of Canasturē. By ten o'clock the Chingalās seeing the route of the Portuguese, attacked the rear guard in which was Francisco Antunes. Our men fought and marched to secure the path of the Hill of Toponavāla which was so narrow that it admitted of only one man. They were immediately surrounded on the flanks, but they acted with such good order that the enemy could not break their line. The Enemy sent 2,000 men by the hill to occupy the pass, but the Portuguese forestalled his design by sending two companies under the command of Andre de Seyxas who arrived first and held the post against the 2,000, till the arrival of Francisco Autunes, when, forming into a body, about six in the evening, they drove the enemy with not a few deaths, while on our side only two were killed and four wounded. The arrayal sallied out into a small Field and a storm burst with heavy showers drenching the lunt and the soldiers were unable to prevent the greater part of the matches from getting wet. Antunes who foresaw that the Enemy would not loose this opportunity, put in the rear guard those who had their matches still lighting, and lit those they could. Then, at seven in the night, when all were tired out with hunger and fatigue, | the Enemy <sup>P 402.</sup> attacked them again, but he turned back at the first volley <sup>P 751</sup> he received, and our men | pursued them killing those they overtook. By nine in the night they halted in the fields of Jatiantōta, and the Chingalās obliged them to remain in arms the whole night, till on the following day at five in the evening they went to rest in Ruanēla.

After five days Andre de Seyxas returned with four companies to Gurubēble and remained there till he was succeeded by Antonio Mendez Aranha. Joaō de Gouea remained in Pitigaldīni, Manoel Guerreiro in Alāua, Gaspar Figueyra in Arandure, while Francisco Antunes remained without any settled post because the lands of Maturē under his charge were subject to the Hollander. Amidst these continual labours the Portuguese held the field at this time in Ceylon against two enemies, the Natives and European, while struggling with internal disunion besides the famine and sickness which followed from them, which would never have brought about the loss of Ceylon, had the power of the European Enemy not gone on increasing by sea and land while ours was diminishing.

## CHAPTER 18.

SUCCESSES OF CEYLON UNDER THE GOVERNMENT OF  
GENERAL FRANCISCO DE MELO DE CASTRO

In May 1653 there arrived from Goa General Francisco de Melo de Castro sent by the Viceroy D. Vasco Mascarenhas Conde de Obidos<sup>1</sup>, though he was too old for so grave a charge, and as Captain-Major of the Field, D. Alvaro de Ataide, who was little pleased with his post, with 12 foists in which were 250 soldiers. On landing he ordered his predecessor Manoel Mascarenhas Homem to be released forthwith along with those who were imprisoned with him, without any other demonstration over the recent mutiny, because, as the causes and effects were notorious, it must have appeared to the Council that the whole thing should be passed over in silence, the only remedy when matters come to such a pass as to be wholly beyond cure and the danger is not prevented by the fear of mutual chastisement. D. Alvaro remained more than a month in Columbo with this reinforcement, giving an opportunity to Gaspar Figueyra who was in Aranduré on the frontier of the Four-Corlas, and to the other detachment on the borders of the Seven [Corlas] to decide to seek out the Chingalâ who, it was said, was fortified in the impenetrable hill of Miegala ; but as the intention of it and the preparation were enough to make him come to know of it, so it was also enough to make him abandon the hill and the stockade. Afterwards D. Alvaro went with the fresh soldiers and with Antonio de Melo, nephew of the General, to Malvâna. .

<sup>P 758</sup> | From Aranduré the new Captain-Major sent Pedro de Souza with six companies to the lands of Nigumbo | accom- <sup>F 403</sup> panied by Manoel Gil with 150 Lascarins, to make some cinnamon in opposition to the Hollander who held that praça. The Captain-Major remained four months in the same place, and when he returned to the city, the arrayal was left under the command of Antonio de Melo de Castro who lacked not courage but experience ; but in India kinship ever made up for both the one and the other. In a short time he came to know that the King of Candea was in Batugâra with 24,000 men. He sent for the two Dissâvas, Manoel Guerreiro and Joaô de Gouvea, and getting together 20 companies made up of about 600 soldiers and more than 14,000 lascarins, he marched to our stockade in Canasture, where Joaô de Abreu

Ferrao was stationed with a company ; and he approached the royal army with the intention of giving him battle. In Canasturē he received a letter from a Dissāva of the King of Candea in which he asked permission to conduct through our lands the baggage of the King who wanted to go back to Candea. Antonio de Melo hastily informed the General and those of the Council of Columbo were of opinion that what was asked should be given, and that we should not only do him the service which we were unable to prevent, but that, in order not to endanger the arrayal, we should under the pretext of giving him freer passage retire to Malvâna and there he arrived in the beginning of September. There were added to him in that place the companies which were with Pedro de Souza under the command of Joaō Alonço de Aguilhar, and those of Antonio Mendez Aranha who was in Gurubêble. In the course of this march of the arrayal, a Dissāva of the Candiot King fought with our rearguard, but because he did so without order, he was punished by the King.

In Malvâna D. Alvaro reformed some companies ; and knowing that the King had returned to Candea and dissembled with us, Manoel Guerreiro, Dissâva of the Seven-Corlas, set out with six companies and Joaō de Gouva Dissâva of the Four [Corlas] with four companies, which consisted of little less than 300 soldiers and 800 lascarins ; and as the lands readily submitted, they divided the lascarins equally and Guerreiro went to Alâua, and Gouvea to Piti-galdini, and from their posts they kept the lands in obedience up to December 1654. D. Alvaro left a company in Malvâna and sent three with Manoel Gil and his lascarins to Tareoflî, placed another in Mutual under the command of Antonio de Melo de Castro. In December [16]53 there set out from Columbo Francisco Antunes and Antonio Mendez with 350 soldiers in 12 companies and about 60 lascarins ; and when they were two leagues from Columbo, in the post of Morro, Francisco Antunes went ahead with four companies to the lands of Salpiti-Corle which had been devastated by P 763 Hollanders from Calaturê. He halted at Deltota and after collecting with great trouble some dhoneyas and double cannoes which are the boats of that river, he went to Diagão where Antonio Mendez Aranha joined him. They halted within sight of a Hollander stockade which was on the other side of the river with 10 Hollanders and 200 Chingalâs, who received them with goodly volleys of musketry. Our men pretended to pass by the post they were defending, and quickly crossed over to the other side. The Belga then took to flight, and only some of their lascarins lost their lives. The rest betook

themselves to Calaturê where the Hollander had in that garrison 500 Europeans and as many lascarins. Our men remained encamped in the stockade which they had abandoned, leaving two companies on the side of the river, while they received the submission of the lands of Passadum-corla, which up to that time had been subject to the Hollanders, and peopled Raygare-corla and Salpiti-corla. Francisco Antunes moreover enlisted about 200 lascarins and Nuno de Melo da Silva arrived from Columbo with a reinforcement of two companies. With this force they passed Calaturê without being attacked by the Belga, and halted in Aliaô where they killed some Lascarins, sentinels of the Enemy, and made prizes of men and cattle, and then returned to Diagaô ; and because it was convenient to remain divided on the two banks of the river, which is there deep and furious, Francisco Antunes erected a bridge of wood 90 fathoms long to join hands, in case the Enemy came thither, with the rest of the force which he was mustering in Calaturê, but seeing that they did not do so and because famine pressed them, they abandoned the post and passing within sight of Calaturê halted in Mâcûne, three-quarters of a league from that garrison.

On the following night there came a Hollander Captain on his way from Gâle to Calaturê with 100 Europeans and 100 lascarins. On seeing the lights of our arrayal, he thought it was theirs and, coming to reconnoitrc, he asked our lascarins whose arrayal it was. The sentinel having given the alarm, they fired a volley on the Hollander detachment which replied and, abandoning the provisions they were carrying, fled at full speed to Calaturê. Their Captain who had come into our camp, seeing himself surrounded, in the confusion of the night, tried to cut a way with his sword and before they realized the danger, he stabbed six soldiers, two of whom were maimed, as the obscurity of the night gave him the opportunity for anything, for they could not see who it was that attacked them nor whether they were few or many, but finally he ran into the spear of a new captain and there lost his life. When the day dawned, the arrayal went to the post in Aliaô where also they made prizes of men and cattle and afterwards marched to the lands of Passadum-corla.

Meanwhile the Hollander mustered in Calaturê 800 Europeans and 1,000 Chingalas, while our arrayal consisted of 370 soldiers and 200 lascarins. | Joaô Vanderlan sallied out with <sup>700</sup> this force in pursuit of it and Francisco Antunes changed his camp from day to day, because he realized the inequality and also in order to seek victuals; (for they only found jak,

P 784

oranges, coconuts and yams, and when he found a defensible site and provisions, he rested some time), and without quitting the obedient lands, he went up along the river, a league and a half above Calaturé, in order to get news of the reinforcement expected from Goa. In his pursuit the enemy haited at Tibûne half a league's distance from the Portuguese arrayal. When Francisco Antunes received tidings of this, he at once informed Antonio Mendez Aranha, so that he might abstain from firing the usual salute, lest the enemy should come to know where they were ; but Antonio Méndes did not heed this advice, as was his wont, which was a blemish on his valour. At dawn of day Francisco Antunes sent 15 lascarins to search for something to eat, as there was scarcity of everything, and Antonio Mendez, when he saw them pass, thought that Francisco Antunes wanted to be the first to come in conflict with the Enemy, and in his displeasure he ordered the arrayal to take up arms and march against the Belgas without heeding the inequality of the forces ; and though there were signs that the Enemy had sent to reconnoitre by night the place in which our men were, the arrayal marched, and Francisco Antunes took the advance guard, and after crossing four bridges of one single plank,<sup>1</sup> they found a good site and halted, waiting till the others formed because there was a similar bridge in front and near it the water of the hill formed a hollow and made a pool near the grove of the hill, which stood on the left side, all of which made the site defensible. And as our black troops went ahead to discover the camp, they came upon the Enemy and turned back, and though some of the foes had crossed the bridge, they were driven back by our musketry, and captain Manoel de Souza with his company secured the pass of the bridge. Both sides now formed themselves and began to ply their muskets, the Belga having also a field piece, and on this occasion as in others the Portuguese showed that neither the fatigues of the march nor those of hunger diminished their bravery. In the attempt to gain the bridge there died some on both sides, and the enemy seeing he could not get it, made for the Pool, and if the Portuguese had let them get stuck in it, they would all have remained there, as happened to those who entered it, but as they had not properly sounded the pass, they attacked the Enemy in such manner, themselves getting into it, that they made them retire, and as the woods impeded one from seeing the other, it was only when they discerned each other that the two parties

---

<sup>1</sup> Sin. & danda, lit. bridge-beam, plank or tree laid for a bridge.

plied | their musketry, and though they tried to pass several times, from seven in the morning to three in the afternoon, they were each time beaten back with great valour. At this time Francisco Antunes heard the voice of a Chingalà who was crying out from the top of the hill saying : 'The enemy is fleeing, leaving the field piece.' He at once rushed to the bridge, but Captain Baltezar Fernandez who did not know the reason for this novelty, held him back thinking it was some mistake and saying that it was not right to risk his person and the men under his command. While they were struggling, the noise of arms ceased and they clearly heard the same Chingalà say that the enemy was returning for the piece, and that leaving an ambush there, they were retiring in good order ; and as it was rather late, Francisco Antunes desisted from crossing the bridge. Antonio Mendez, however, sent two Chingalà spies with a company to discover the camp, and from the ambush they fired a musket-shot on one of the spies, whereupon the company retired, and the Portuguese did not continue this enterprise, because they had lost 50 men, killed and wounded, and because the force of the Hollander was much larger. In this encounter we lost 19 soldiers, among them the captains Manoel de Souza, Joaõ de Lafetar, Manoel Soares Mascarenhas, who died on the following day of two bullets, and Jozeph Sarmento de Carvalho had his leg carried off by a shot and died four days later. Five other Sergeants died also, and others of whose names we have no information. The Captain Antonio da Cunha of Lago fell wounded with five gashes, Jane Mendez de Vasconcelos speared a Bandanese who falling upon him plunged his cris into his left shoulder, and the Enemy died, but he escaped with his life. On the field were found 18 dead on the side of the Hollanders, and about 20 other Europeans were killed besides the wounded, and there remained also some arms. The Batavian retired, because he received tidings of the reinforcement which had come from Goa, presuming that we should march forthwith upon Gâle, but as he had so many advantages and was vying with the Portuguese, this excuse seemed frivolous.

Our men, who did not yet know of the arrival of the Galleons, returned to the post they had left, and Antonio Mendez wished to cross over to the other side of the river, but Francisco Antunes did not approve this course, because on the other side also there were no provisions and we should be obliged to evade the Enemy, as we sometimes did, if we were attacked a second time, while it was necessary for the credit of our arms to maintain the post. But Antonio Mendez

did not listen to these reasons and crossing the river he received news from Columbo that five galleons and five masted galliots had come. Francisco Antunes insisted again | that it was necessary to recross the river, because the Enemy <sup>P 466</sup> would doubtless abandon Calaturé in order to reinforce Gále and Nigumbo and that they could have a good encounter either in the passage of the river or during the retreat they would make, and that the artillery and the stores of Calaturé which in their haste they could not carry would come into their hands ; but even this time he was not listened to, and the arrayal passed to Vidagâma. It is a great pity that valour is not accompanied by prudence and that vanity is thought to be good sense. There they learnt that the <sup>P 156</sup> Enemy had retired from Calaturé taking by sea 12 pieces, | much powder and shot, with the provisions they had there. Then Antonio Mendez realized his mistake, and marching at once to Calaturé, he found only some burnt provisions and everything else destroyed so that the Portuguese might not profit by what remained. On the following day, it being now the end of March [16]54, Francisco Antunes went to Alicaõ with eight companies, Domingos Sarmento de Carvalho going as captain of the advance guard. After five or six days General Francisco de Melo sent Gaspar de Araujo Pereyra to take over the arrayal and to remain in Calaturé.

Now we must describe the doings of the galleons. In the beginning of March of this year, [16]54, there set out from Goa five galleons, none of them of great account, to relieve Ceylon. As Captain-Major went Antonio Barreto Pereyra in the galleon ' Nasareth ', which carried 34 pieces, as Admiral Alvaro de Navaez in the galleon ' S. Joao ' with 32. In ' Stº Antonio ' there was as Captain D. Antonio Soto-Mayor with 18, and she was rather a transport ship than a war ship ; in ' S. Joseph ', Francisco Machado D'eca with 30 ; and in the galliot ' S. Phelipe Sant-Iago ' with 18, Antonio de Abreu de Freytas. In the bar of Columbo they found three Hollander sail, and two avoiding an encounter, the Flagship, a frigate of 52 pieces, opened fire on us and trusting in her speed, she came windward of our Flagship, but seeing that Antonio de Abreu took the wind and that the Captain-Major went in pursuit of the others, she fell, without intending it upon her bows. Antonio Barreto grappled the Enemy frigate and Antonio de Abreu gave her some volleys from a distance. The Belga realized the danger, and after standing the first charge with great loss of men, gathered what remained under the deck ; and as the artillery of our Flagship played too high, it broke down her upper deck and killed many of her infantry.

On the poop of the enemy ship appeared one of his captains showing his gallantry and pride, and our Captain-Major, carried away by his well-known valour rather than by caution or prudence, jumped on the ship and killed him. As he returned, a raw recruit cried out to him by the name of his office, and being recognized by the Enemy, he was wounded in the thigh by a pike, and retiring to the gallery, he ended his life in a short time, though the high spirit which characterised him was worthy of a better fate. In this confusion, usual among raw recruits, a cry arose that the bow was set on fire by a chain shot, and in the meantime the Hollander had opportunity to cut the grapping, and being very light, she fled to Nigumbo, where, through negligence, she ran aground on the sandbanks, from which she was afterwards dragged and moored.

A similar fate befell the Admiral Alvaro de Navars with the second ship of the enemy after giving her brave broadsides, for none of the other galleons carried such heavy artillery. He grappled her also and, boarding her, he captured the forecastle, and the soldiers were so sure that they had captured her, that when D. Antonio Soto-Mayor came, they cried out to him to follow the other as this was secure. On board there were some Portuguese in the service of the Belga, who seeing that the [Hollanders] begged quarter, opposed the proposal as they were sure the Portuguese would not give it to them. At this time our Admiral was already wounded in the forearm from which, as it was badly dressed, he died in Columbo, and while they were assisting him and some were thinking that the Enemy was given quarter, and others were continuing to cut the cables, the Portuguese mixed with the Hollanders were able to cut the grappings, and a raw recruit of our galleon, without noticing which cable he cut, cut off our own, whereupon the Enemy profited by the opportunity to get away, taking some of our soldiers who were not able to jump into the galleon in time. D. Antonio went in chase of the third ship which had already escaped Francisco Machado, but after receiving several broadsides both from the one and the other galleon, she escaped to the shoals of Nigumbo. In fine all the three ships though badly damaged found a refuge there, whither our men did not want to go, as some of the galleons required greater depth (a well known inconvenience in our ship building) and because the pilots were not experienced in those seas. These events showed clearly how much skill is able to do against valour so long as good sense is not altogether wanting. When the Hollanders retired to Nigumbo and our men to Columbo, where they

anded the reinforcements they brought, so great was the fear of the Hollander garrison of Calaturé, that immediately n the manner described it retired to Gâle, leaving Antonio Mendez Aranha master of the praga. General Francisco de Melo de Castro appointed to the captaincies of the two galleons, Urbano Fialho Ferreyra to 'Nazareth', and Nuno de Melo to 'S. Joao', and as chief of all, Antonio de Abreu, because he was the senior Captain ; and on the ground that | the galleons had no port wherein to winter in safety, and <sup>P 766</sup> that it was now too late to detain them longer or to undertake at least the siege of Nigumbo, which could not be relieved by land nor by sea with two ships, because the Enemy feared the galleons which were moored at the mouth of the bay of Columbo, besides other reasons given for this course, he determined to send them to Goa.

On their return voyage they came without mishap as far as mount Delf.<sup>1</sup> though there were dissensions owing to questions of precedence, and seeing that owing to the proximity of the winter of this coast there might be danger in delay, each one tried to arrive as quickly as possible, but with that lack of order which in India was severely punished, and with the north-east wind on the bow they coasted along making for <sup>P 768</sup> this bar ; and when Antonio de Abreu | and Francisco Machado D'eca had negotiated the Capo da Rama, they descried 11 sail towards the North, and though they could easily have known that they were Hollanders and could have lowered sail and waited for the other galleons to come up and unite with them, and if they thought they had no chance, they could have stolen a march over the Enemy by night, or if they thought they had they could have fought in good order and in unison, for it is known from various sources that not all Hollander ships were ships of war, but that some were laden with horses, our Chief without heeding any better counsel, in this emergency, on the 2nd of May ran the galleon against the rocks near the Rio ae Sal, while Francisco Machado D'eca after receiving and giving broadsides to the Enemy, who having the wind in his favour, with all his squadron went to windward of him, and being deflected ran aground a little seaward of the galliot St. Phelipe, and both were burnt. In Goa they had tidings that the Hollander had come to his factory at Vinguralá, and that he had dispersed a Flotilla which was going northward with the loss of some slow ships of burden, and though they informed the galleons, it was too late, I believe owing to the fault of some inferior minister to whom the matter was entrusted.

The Enemy coasted along, and off Ancolâ and Mirzio espied two other galleons also separated, and dividing into two squadrons seaward of them, he fought with them the whole afternoon, and all the following night with the galleon Stº Antonio. When it was broad day, the enemy flagship came to attack, but being well answered, she went away, and the whole day both sides were refitting, though our galion was now unable to run sail, for the Hollander knowing that victory lay in this, fired very persistently on her masts and rigging. On the following night the enemy flagship gave signal and at dawn the Belga was not to be seen. The squadron which fought with Nuno de Melo who had goodly artillery, slackened on the first night, and the following morning Mello | put into Mirzeo, but because he knew little <sup>F 400v</sup> of the bar, he ran aground and the men made for the shore. A ship followed her, but receiving a shot she blew up, and it is thought that they had hit the magazine.

By twelve o'clock on the third day of battle, after he had carried out repairs, the Belga returned with eight ships upon the galleon Stº Antonio, which in this last extremity, being already aground, not far from the shore, had no other help but to be burnt, and though the others threw themselves into the sea, D. Antonio wished to be the last and to set fire to the galleon with his own hands, but as the train took fire sooner than he thought, when he was still on board ready to jump into the sea, the galleon blew up, and he ended his life with the Master Gunner, having shown in this encounter that the valour with which he acted deserved a better fate.

<sup>P 759</sup> | The last galleon of Urbano Fialho Ferreyra had taken a pinnace of the Moors, into which he put some soldiers, and when he sighted the enemy about nightfall, he sailed off into the deep where the pinnace escaped, and afterwards he arrived at this bar. But as everything was preparing for the chastisement [decreed by] Heaven, the Captain changing his mind, again made for land by night and went towards the islet of Onôr, where the Enemy spied her and fought with her a day and half, and after losing many men, the Captain refused to surrender and scuttled her, whereupon, as she was also riddled by shot, she sank. Such was the end of so disorderly a battle, for even if they had been more numerous, so long as they were disunited, they would all have been lost because of their unwillingness to turn back and because the enemy ships were lighter. In all the ships many died of shot or were drowned, and this disorder led to the beginning of the loss of Ceylon, for had these galleons been saved, the fate of Columbo could have been averted

P 761 them away, and gained the beach, | where the Belga was fighting with the rearguard, and our men were defending themselves with valour with the help of a piece which they directed upon them. They came upon the second detachment which received them with a discharge from the piece and with musketry, but Domingos Sarmento, Marcelo Fialho, Alvaro Rodríguez Borralho and the others, after some volleys of musketry, broke through the Enemy with sword and spear, whereupon the enemy joined his comrades, and Domingos Sarmento passed to the rearguard. The Hollander kept pursuing them with two field pieces and musketry, but as our piece was larger and charged with small shot, these did greater damage among them. Finally they came upon the third detachment which was in ambush, and as it broke suddenly into the midst of our little army, its captain lost his Ensign with the banner who was killed by Domingos Vidal the Portuguese Sergeant, who afterwards carried it lowered, and those who escaped from this attack went to join the others. Then our men determined to charge the Enemy once more with sword and spear, and fought with fierce determination, and though they could not make him return, because of the force he had, they drove him back with such effect that he did not dare to follow them again, and as they were now out of his reach, they blew up the piece because it was not necessary. They found the road blocked at Macâne, but they did not find the Chingalâs, who, seeing that our men were coming unscathed, gave them passage, and at five o'clock in the evening of the 16th of December, worn out and dying of hunger, they reached Calatûrê.

In this encounter we lost 19 soldiers, because the Enemy did not give quarter to the wounded, and our men engaged in fighting were unable to carry them. In this way died D. Alvaro de Castro, who had given good proof of valour on many occasions, and some officers whose names did not come to my knowledge. There came to Calatûrê over 30 wounded. The Hollander lost about 70 men including officers, and more than 50 were wounded, and he remained master of the lands of Alicâm, Passadun-corla and Pitigâli. This retreat became celebrated, and on the admission of the enemies, the Portuguese fought with desperate valour. Up to this time Manoel Guerreiro and João de Gamboa | P 762 remained undisturbed in their posts, but as soon as the King heard of the retreat of Antonio Mendez, he came down upon the frontiers of the Four and Seven-corlas and sent Panique Dissâva with 6,000 men against our men. João de Gouves, hearing of this intention, went from Pitigaldini to join Manoel

Guerreyro in Alâva where were 250 soldiers and 800 lascarins. There they were attacked and driven to retire towards Columbo, as far as the pass of Nacolegão, where they arrived on Christmas Day [16]54, with the enemy behind them as far as Malvâna burning the neighbourhood and the Church and trying to lay waste, by capturing men and cattle, the three neighbouring corlas, because they were friendly to the Portuguese. | The General had written a letter to the King of Candea, and because they did not know the reason why no answer was received, when Gaspar de Araujo Pereyra, about whom we have already spoken, went to take charge of the arrayal, he was ordered to write another letter to the King, in which he said : ' That the General had in Columbo a letter of the King of Portugal and another of the Viceroy of India, but that he did not send them, because he [the King] had not replied to the other, and that he was marching to Gâle with the reinforcement that came from Goa.' The King at once replied to the letter saying : ' That he did not reply to the General, because the letter contained a petition which a black of low caste had made to him ' (such carelessness does not seem credible unless it were a treachery of the one who wrote the letter in the characters and language of the country ), and asking to send him the letter of the King and of the Viceroy, because if they were good, the reply would also be good, but that he would tell him that his Hollanders were very good soldiers ! The General knowing that his letter was ambiguous like the mind of the King decided not to send him the letter, and this confirmed him in the trust he reposed in the Hollanders.

The General chose Gaspar Figueyra de Serpe as Captain-Major of the Four and Seven-corlaç, realizing that God had given him strength against the Chingalâ, and increasing that arrayal with the 150 lascarins of Manoel Gil, and leaving the baggage, on the 1st of January [16]55 he despatched the two Dissâvas from Malvâna with two companies and 800 lascarins, and Manoel Gil with his men to seek Panique in Canapêle, whither he had retired with 3,000 men. They fell upon him at the dawn watch and defeated and put him to flight with the loss of men, arms, and all the baggage ; and our prisoners were liberated. The Enemy halted in Aranduré, and Figueyra went in pursuit of him so rapidly that our lascarins were able to cut off some heads, but he, who was the foremost warrior of Candea fled to the frontier without awaiting the combat. Figueyra then began by assaults to subdue the lands as far as Alâva and Bolatégâma and those of Sofragão subject to Ruanêla. Panique with

another Dissâva of the Seven-corlas and with 8,000 men again fortified the Hill of Arandepola, in the heart of the Seven-corlas, on the provisions of which depended the sustenance of Columbo in those times. Our Captain <sup>P 405.</sup> resolved to seek him out, and taking six companies, and in them 190 soldiers, with the men of Joaõ de Gouvea, he gave three to Manoel Gil besides his own men, and there he enlisted more than 200 lascarins, and to Joaõ Coelho who was the Dissâva of the Seven-corlas he gave a company and more than 200 lascarins; and he ordered them to attack on all sides at the same time on hearing three different signals. The Captain-Major arrived first, as he had a lesser distance to travel, and for a space of two hours he was well entertained by the Enemy musketry, but he took cover as well as he could till he heard the other signals, and when these were given, they all attacked at the same time. Manoel Gil met with no resistance, as the Enemy was charged on the other sides, and so great was his fear that many reduced themselves to bits in the precipices of the hill, and about 20 were killed by our men and the rest fled, abandoning arms, banners, and spoils. Figueyra then marched along the frontiers of the Seven-corlas and continued assaulting the frontiers of Tumpâni against some rebels in other places; and having scared Panique from Balané, he reduced the whole of the Seven-corlas as far as the ancient limits of the frontiers of Candeia which had been in revolt, some for 12 and others for 17 years, sustaining the arrayal for three months without any expense to the royal treasury, which was greatly increased by the supplies of cinnamon, areca and other things. But as the Enemy escaped to Vebora, when he was in Talampitim, he despatched from there the two Dissâvas with 600 lascarins, but the Chingalá made a sally and obliged them to turn by falling upon their rear-guard. But when he came to know that the Captain-Major was making for him, he gave up the field and the hill of Balané for a second time. Figueyra punished the Natives, and all the Seven-corlas remained obedient. He remained some days in Randinivela and went to Arandure to rest, where he named Diogo de Souza de Castro Dissâva and Captain-Major of the Four Corlas, and received a reinforcement of 50 soldiers.

The King decided to seek him out with 26,000 men, and informed his ally the Hollander to surround Calature at the same time. Gaspar Figueyra who never turned his back on a Chingalá force, finding himself with 300 soldiers and 1,700 lascarins spread a report that he was coming down upon

the Batavian and meanwhile made ready for this expedition. On the 10th of April [16]55 with all dexterity and secrecy he went in search of the King to the highlands and on the third day's march, there fled before him a Dissâva who had come to spy the movement of the Portuguese. Then he learnt that the Dissâva of Uva was in Cuticapale with 8,000 men, and that a quartor of a league further there was the Dissâva of Matale with 6,000, and that the King was following with the rest of his troops and all his Court, and had ordered encampments to be erected for 30 elephants, horses, tigers, and for two companies of Hollanders who were coming with him bringing also six field pieces. Without further delay the Captain-Major sent Joaõ Coelho de Castro with five companies and 8,000 lascarins against the Dissâva of Matale, and with the rest he went to meet | the force of P 109 the Kingdom of Uva with the order that, after defeating them, they should all unite and attack the force of the King. At one o'clock in the noon the Captain-Major came upon the Enemy, as he was going in the advance guard with 20 retired soldiers and the lascarins, who being driven back by the foe were retreating, but they were quickly repelled by the 20 Portuguese in so heated an engagement that a Chingalâ succeeded in driving his spear into the one who P 110 was carrying the white shield of Gaspar | Figueyra, which was, as we said, the insignia of the Dissâvas and the Captain-Majors according to Chingalâ usage. Seeing this Chingalâ carry away the shield, Manoel Fernandez de Oliveyra, a raptired captain, ran after him amidst spears and arrows and bullete and gave him such a blow on the head that he fell dead. As he was bringing back the shield, a bullet passed through his leg, but though he fell, he defended himself with valour till the advance guard came up and with a goodly volley dispersed the Enemy who were terrified to see the gallantry of a few men, and inferred therefrom the danger of measuring with the rest. Our men pursued them, killing, wounding, and capturing them, and gathering arms, banners, and spoil, till they reached Cutilapâlê, where they found the encampments prepared for the King, and killed some of those who were guarding them.

Joaõ Coelho found the Enemy in a fortified camp, and after exchanging a first volley, he at once charged them with spear and sword, whereupon they took to flight throwing away many arms, and as they fled towards Gaspar Figueyra, he fell upon them and did fresh havoc. By four in the evening there appeared in the offing a gallant band of more than 10,000 men, and the Captain-Major, thinking that

they were those who had already been defeated, sent Manoel Gil with 650 lascarins and Captain Manoel Correa Castanho with his company, against them. They then went away till the Captain-Major lost them from view, but upon hearing continuous firing, he sent six other companies and 300 lascarins under the command of Joao Coelho de Castro, who found Manoel Gil surrounded by the Enemy and fighting them with spears, and Manoel Correa Castanho wounded by two arrows and with only the 150 lascarins of Alicur, because the other 500 of the Seven-corlas seeing a crowned Lion painted on a banner, which is the insignia of the King, had forthwith abandoned the field. These men were the advance party of the army of the King, and with them were the Hollanders who also fired their volleys and sustained the field till the King put himself in safety. They first abandoned the field, but returned to the charge with great fury, but were repulsed with such resolution that they were put to flight, and our men returned to join the Captain-Major as the night was falling. During the drowsy watch voices were heard in the neighbouring hills which in the name of the King called upon our lascarins to run away from the Portuguese, and that otherwise neither the one nor the other would be left alive. Gaspar Figueyra like a Columbo born man, ordered the Caffirs to reply by mocking them, and as they fired some musket-shots, the trumpets were sounded, whereupon they withdrew thinking that <sup>P 409</sup> they were being pursued. In the morning they collected the heads that were cut off and found 700, more than 320 prisoners, 300 muskets on supports many of them with the arms of Constantino de Sá do Noronha taken at the rout of Uva, 9 banners and other spoils. Of the Portuguese five were wounded, four lascarins killed, and more than 20 wounded.

## CHAPTER 20.

### <sup>P 765</sup> THE LAST AND THE FIRST ACTIONS IN THE TIME OF THE GENERALS FRANCISCO DE MELO AND ANTONIO DE SOUZA

They soon learnt from a Caffir, a fugitive from the arrayal of the King, and afterwards with greater certainty, that the King had put on mourning with all his Court, saying that it must not be put off till he had taken vengeance from the

Portuguese, who if they had crossed over near the rivulet, as soon as they ceased pursuing the enemy, would have come in conflict with the King who was there with all his forces together; and when this was known, there were different opinions in the arrayal, though after so many hours of fighting and with so small a force it would have been not a little dangerous to attack a royal army. Gaspar Figueyra wrote a letter in the Chingalá language and in the name of the Modeliares of his camp, to the Grandees of the Court of the King, with such cunning that it was handed to the Banâ Tarrala, Séneschal (Ayo) of the King and by him to the King himself, because in it they were accused of mismanaging the war and of endangering the Royal person. Thereupon he ordered four of his greatest captains to be hacked to pieces with axes, which did not trouble Figueyra. For full eight days the Captain-Major remained in those parts and then he made a tour through the ancient frontiers and halted in Motapali on the borders of the Four-corlas.

The King again despatched against him three, Dissávas by different routes, each with 6,000 men, to attack our men together from different sides. They all came within half a league of our arrayal and it happened that they were in arms and fired three salutes because that morning the Captain-Major gave the title of Modeliar to some Araches who had done their part well in the preceding battles, and each of the Chingalá Dissávas, thinking that the other was fighting and because the firing ceased, that he was defeated, they all retired disgracefully. Upon this final disillusion, the King returned to Candea to celebrate their famous procession called *Pereera*<sup>1</sup> as he had arrogated to himself the title of Emperor like the ancient Kings of Cota, and for this procession there assembles the best and greatest part of the people of the Kingdom. The Captain-Major knew the day on which it is celebrated, and he penetrated into the rugged lands of Tumpâne, two leagues from Candea, and after doing all the damage he could, he at once returned, as he foresaw the danger of his audacity. The King who had tidings hastily sent the Dissáva Peridine who divided his forces into two detachments | and with one he hampered the rearguard <sup>F 410</sup> and with the other he attempted to occupy a perilous *mocalana*<sup>2</sup> in the hills through which alone our men could

<sup>1</sup> I suppose this is a clerical error for *Banaca rala* (*cf. p. 756*), a Bandigarâla. (587). Ayo is the masculine form of *ayo*, Anglice *ayah*.

<sup>2</sup> *Perahera*, see p. 32.

<sup>3</sup> See ante p. 497

retreat, but he found it held by the Portuguese. Then  
*r/r/s* getting into the jungle for the space of one hour he fired somewhat, while our men went through that dangerous pass and wounded two soldiers and five lascarins. Figueyra halted in Vebora, and two days later in Aranduré, where in a new stockade he left 25 soldiers who were not able to march and 200 lascarins to protect them and the obedient lands. When he was in Mutapalf he came to know that the Chingalá was making incursions into our lands and sent six companies and 500 lascarins to the borders of Tumpâne, and though the Enemy tried to recover the prizes they had made, he had to retire with loss leaving five of our lascarins wounded.

The King seeing that he was not able to drive the Portuguese from his territories, with the intention either of cutting off reinforcements from Calaturé or of obliging the Captain-Major to reinforce it, wrote to the Hollander to lay a close siege to that garrison, and then he promptly descended from Candea with 26,000 men without passing through the rugged country of Tumpâne. Gaspar Figueyra did not reinforce Calaturé, because he knew that the Hollander had no larger force than the one with which he recently fought Antonio Mendez Aranha, and the King was obliged to resort to another trick and send him two envoys. The Captain-Major received them with courtesy and caution, multiplying truncheons and banners and arranging the army in such a manner as to make the number of our infantry appear greater than it was; and when three salutes had been fired to the health of the Chingalá King, the envoys proposed: 'That the Emperor, their Lord, had ordered them to ask him to withdraw the arrayal to the low-country, because in that way they would gain his good will and bring him to make peace with the King of Portugal.' But the Captain-Major, seeing that they had not been empowered for anything beyond this, on the following day, sent the Sergeant-Major of the arrayal Manoel Cabreyra, along with the two envoys, with instructions, and a letter to the King in which he said: 'That he was highly pleased to find that His Imperial Majesty (the Hollanders had given him this presumption) was desirous of making peace with the King of Portugal, his Lord, and that he had powers to arrange and to keep such a peace, but that, if he pleased, he would inform the Captain-General, and the King should send an Ambassador for the purpose, and he would at once retire to the low-country.' Manoel Cabreyra found the King and all his Court in mourning, who despatched him the next day giving him an elephant and another for Gaspar

Figueyra in return for what the Captain-Major had given the envoys. But to show the pride of this heathen, his patent bore the following : "I, Rajá Singa Rajú, most mighty god, Emperor of Ceylon, grant to Gaspar Figueyra de Serpa, Captain-Major of the Portuguese ~~army~~, a large tusked elephant to be disposed of as he pleases | without ~~any~~ hindrance from the Ministers of the King of Portugal."

However, as the reply of the King was similar to the proposal of the envoys and did not disclose his intention, P 767 the Captain-Major did not wish | to quit the conquered lands and the incursions of the one and the other party were kept up with such persistence and excessive toil that many of the soldiers of his scanty force fell ill and died ; and as this was not unknown to the King, when six months were passed, he gradually approached Mavela, a distance of one league from our camp, in which there were only 220 half-dead Portuguese with 200 lascarins. From that place he threatened war, but from the delay the Captain-Major concluded that his purpose was not firm, and by arms and by sagacity he countermined the King's attempt to rouse the obedient lands ; and held that post against the opinion and fears of all, but with great credit to our arms and utility to the common weal. However when he saw the King so near, he informed the General and asked for reinforcements. It did not seem good to withdraw any from Calaturé, as the Hollander was at Alicam a distance of only two leagues, and in Columbo it was decided that he should retire. Figueyra replied : 'That it was impossible to do so without complete destruction, as had happened on other occasions, and that it was much better to remain in that position with whatever shadow of reinforcement that could be sent to him,' and he pointed out where and how it should come. This proposal seemed good to the General ; such is the value of a good decision in war ! He reinforced him with a company of young casados and students and 100 lascarins who entered the camp with a great din of arms. He erected a stockade to protect the victuals and the rest of the baggage, as if he intended to 'give battle. On the following day he ordered powder and shot to be served out, and though he knew it well, he minutely questioned the Natives about the force and position and the directions in which the army of the King could be attacked, recommending great secrecy which was what he least wanted. The same day the King had information of everything and placed a greater distance between them by returning to Candea, which was considered by his people as a great victory over the Portuguese. When the

Captain-Major heard of it the next day, he pretended great regret over a thing which was what he most desired, because in all things he acted with such sagacity that he took timely measures, often bringing provisions for the army from the frontiers of the enemy, giving him no means to prevent it.

He left the disabled men there, and on the third day he pretended to be going in pursuit of the King and routed a Dissâva who was in Quelpanala with 1,000 men and killed 30 Chingalâs. Then through Ganietâne he passed to Matapiti, and receiving obedience from the lands, he sent a message to the King that he was going to reduce the revolted lands of Sofragaô with 40 Portuguese and 1,000 Chingalâs, and that he would await him in those rugged parts, since he refused battle in that place. From there he sent Joaô Coelho de Castro with the rest of the arrayal to Matapili and with 40 soldiers and 1,000 lascarins he passed to Sofragaô whence <sup>F 411</sup> he sent the lascarins against a Dissâva who was in Batugêdra with 1000 men. They defeated him and cut off 15 heads.

<sup>P 788</sup> | The King ordered the Dissâva of Sofragaô to take prizes in the subject lands of Atulugaô. To prevent the consequences which might result from dissembling this, Figueyra sent two detachments of lascarins to the lands of Tumpâne where they captured many men and a leading rebel and returned unscathed. Two Dissâvas then came upon them, and he went to meet them in Alpitivêla, and marching in haste, he was there at dawn, but when he reached the gravets, he heard that they had retired the day before. He entered into the enemy lands with banners flying and drums beating, and came out by the gravets of Galabâba. The Enemy harrassed the rearguard in the difficult passes at the cost of many deaths, and we retired with only one man wounded. Then he passed to Mutâpati opening up the frontiers of Vila-corla, the inhabitants of which lived in the jungle, because they were nearest to the Enemies, and after 18 years the Portuguese were again able to enter those hills in spite of the opposition of the Hollander. Afterwards the Dissâva Condâme came upon Guelpanela, the last frontier in the side of Parnacûr, relying on the inaccessibility of the Hills and therefrom he disquieted the neighbouring inhabitants. Gasper Figueyra went to seek him out with 140 Portuguese and the troops of the Four-corlas, and after marching a day and night without rest, he came upon him at dawn. The enemy fired the first volley from muskets on supports and firelocks, but soon fled and made for the lofty hills of Dolos-bâgue. Our men pursued them, but were only able to kill one and wound another of the most daring, and after making

many prizes of men in those hills the Captain-Major went to lodge in Talpitim, whence he again reduced those frontiers to obedience ; and from there he facilitated the journey of the Captain-General, Antonio de Souza Coutinho, by preventing the Enemy from coming down to intercept his march by land from Jafanapatao to Columbo, as we shall see presently. Gaspar Figueyra in this way spent seven months in these glorious exploits.

Here, however, ended the successes of this Captain born for the terror of the Chingalás, for he acted with great valour and experience and industry and such skill as the warfare with the Chingalá requires ; and because he knew what money could do with them, he did not hesitate to spend what he had, and he had not a little, without sparing even the jewels and furniture of his house, to reward, bribe, and find out the designs of the enemy ; and because there was no King's money, and even if there had been, they would not easily have given it him, he did it on his own account, for such was formerly in India the recipe for honour, and so did D. Antaô de Noronha keep accounts, so long as the victuals of the soldiers did not become the perquisite of the Captains. What happened to him with the Hollander is certainly not through his fault. He afterwards took part in the siege of Columbo, and here<sup>1</sup> with General Luis de Mendonça Furtado <sup>F 411v</sup>  
<sup>P 769</sup> de Albuquerque in the battle of Arli<sup>2</sup> in Salcete, which was remarkable for its consequences and because of the inequality, and finally he died in Goa, as we said, amidst poverty and ingratitude.

The advanced age of the General, Francisco de Melo de Castro, called for a successor from Goa, and Antonio de Souza Coutinho was elected for the post and set out from here with five galliots, but the weather or a mistake of the pilot brought him to the point of Gâle, whence two Hollander baxeys sallied out to meet him, and on seeing them, our people turned, some to Columbo, others to the opposite coast of the Island. The General reefed sail with his bow towards the Hollander ships so that those of his convoy might follow him to the attack or defeat, but being scattered, and with the enemy upon them, the others continued their voyage, and the Hollander made a foist run aground in the corla of Gâle and captured another off the coast of Aliciaô, and another being pursued by an enemy store ship (charrúa) which came on the scene, and not having a piece wherewith to defend herself, killed many men with musketry, but being riddled

<sup>1</sup> In Goa.

<sup>2</sup> With Adil Khan in 1650.

with shot, was wrecked off the lands of the King of Candea, and the General, Antonio de Souza, with an enemy ship after him, put into Jafanapatao. Thence he sent information to Columbo, and the Captain-Major of those lands, Antonio de Amaral de Menezes, accompanied him with some troops as far as Putalaõ where there was awaiting him Antonio Mendez Aranha with six companies and some casados of Columbo, and Diogo de Souza de Castro, Dissava of the Four-corlas, with two companies and 500 lascarins, through whom Gaspar Figueyra wrote to the Captain-General about the dispositions of the King of Candea and how effective it would be if he passed through Mutápali and the other things that had happened, meanwhile ordering the roads to be cleared and taking measures to ensure the obedience of the Natives and even making a tour through thore frontiers to show the King that he was now quite near. It is believed that the casados of Columbo dissuaded the General from this journey, because they were displeased with Figueyra for not allowing them the enjoyment of the recently conquered lands [on the ground] that it was many years since they were lost and that it was convenient to save the revenues for public expenses and the lands for the new conquerors. From there Antonio de Amaral returned to Jafanapatao and Diogo de Souza to Mutápali and afterwards to Columbo, his place being taken by Andre de Seyxas da Silva, and the General with Antonio Mendez Aranha arrived in Columbo on the 15th of August 1655; and Antonio Mendez went to Calature with the men of the General's galliot.

The new General had no time for rest; because although there was kept up a ten years' truce in the East between the Portuguese and the Hollander nations, which was ever badly received and worse observed by the latter, since they robbed Tutucorim at a time when the truce still lasted, when its term was over, the Chingalá King determined to drive the Portuguese altogether out of Ceylon, and again leagued with the Belga, who, in fulfilment of this <sup>P 770</sup> <sup>X 411</sup>

treaty, landed on the coast of Ceylon between Maravia and Chilao on the 15th of September 1655, with 26 warships, of which 18 were men-of-war, besides other smaller vessels, under the command of Gersert Hulig who had come from Holland during the preceding monsoon with the lordly title of Director-General of the whole of India and with order to reside in Batavia as Governor of the East [India] Company, a post which he put off till he should have conquered Columbo. He was a valiant soldier, a bold captain, rich and liberal, and so determined a person that when the Council did not

fall in with his opinion, on the ground that it was risky, he took the consequence on himself, undertaking to make good any damage that might ensue. He had 3,000 Europeans, experienced and dexterous in arms, and with the various reinforcements which were added, the Hollanders employed in the siege of Columbo 4,800 Europeans, besides Bandanese and Malays and about 16,000 Chingalâs and over and above what fell into their hands, with a great abundance of all things necessary for a long siege, though he hoped to carry it by storm.

Besides the warfare which was kept up against the Chingalâ and afterwards against the Hollander, Columbo suffered in those years not a few misfortunes, because as everything was making for its ruin, there came a pestilence on the cattle of the villages so often destroyed, and as cultivation ceased on account of this and because of the disturbance of war, provisions ran short and their price was very high ; and large sums were consumed in their purchase and transport, for the flotillas from the mainland and from Jafanapataô and the succours from Goa were insufficient, especially after the Enemy began to lay a slow siege to that bar, and Columbo was often on the point of perishing of famine. Such were the straits when the Belga came upon that Island, because only three rowing ships had come since the Winter ; but on the 22nd of the same September, when the enemy was away from that bay, the Flotilla of Tutucorin reached it. However even though the praça seemed relieved in the matter of provisions, there was great lack of all other things, for there was little powder, little lead, very few matches, the mountings [of the guns] old, and not one planked for action, little iron and nothing at all of the other things necessary for a siege. There were a little more than 800 soldiers, of whom 300 were in Calature under the command of Antonio Mendez Aranha, and Gaspar Figueyra de Serpa was in Mutapali with 350, and the best part of the infantry was outside the praça. There were very few lascarins, and the majority of them were little reliable. There were only 20 Portuguese artillermen and ten Asiatics, nearly all of whom were little skilled in the work, though it was a function of which great account should have been made. The posts were many and far from each other, in which there were 150 pieces of heavy artillery, besides many smaller ones belonging to ships and to private persons.

*P 772* | The walls were better adapted for the sieges of the Natives with whom we were at war, than against European batteries, for they were altogether weak. The hillock | of S. Sebastião, *P 115.*

though outside the regular battery, was too close. The city was spread out over a large area around the bay, and though it could have been reduced as formerly to the plain, which lay where the lake opens into the sea, and to the hillock of S. Lourenço, as was always considered convenient, and as the Hollanders subsequently did, the residents never agreed to the plan. The bay which forms its bar does not exceed three fathoms' depth where it is deepest, and it was so small that it only admitted of a dozen and a half of rowing vessels. On the West side it had no other refuge in time of storm than the houses of the City, nearly all of which were low on that side. The Portuguese selected this site because it was near the ancient capital of Cota, with the King of which they contracted friendship, and because in those days there was much cinnamon in that district, and nearly all [the cinnamon] that grew in Ceylon was on that coast of the Island. The praca could be attacked from many sides, so distant from each other that the artillery of Mapâne could scarcely be heard in S. Joaõ in rough weather, and it needed more than 3,000 soldiers to garrison it according to the requirements of war. In the whole of that rampart there was no modern work save the *diamante* of the bastion of S. Estavaõ, one of those facing the enemy batteries, and they say that it cost the Belga more than 30,000 shot to dismantle it. The four others which the enemy pounded most, were that of S. Joaõ, the Couraça Xavier, the bastian S. Sebastiaõ and that of Madre de Deos. And as it was ever understood that it was the one of S. Joaõ which the Enemy had chosen for the storming of the City, it was again strengthened with large beams, and the platform filled with fascines and earth, and the same was done in the other three, there being fourteen in all.

---

## CHAPTER 21.

### THE HOLLANDER TAKES CALATURE<sup>^</sup> AND DESTROYS THE RELIEFS.

The fortified place of Calature gave great concern, and General Antonio de Souza Coutinho went in person to see it. He gave pay to the soldiers and sent by land to the pass of Anguratôta all the provisions he could, but so little

of it was able to enter, that they were able to sustain themselves only for a short time. The Araches and lascarins of Nigumbq having already experienced the treatment of the Hollanders chose even in these straits to come over to the service of the King of Portugal, and the Captain-Major Gaspar Figueyra took them from that fortalice, and the Belga was unable to prevent it, though he sallied out in pursuit. These mén gave the news that 3,000 Europeans had disembarked P 772 on | the beach of Maravia ; and upon these tidings our General held a Council and laid before them : the concern caused by the arrival of the Enemy with so great a force of ships | an 1 men, and so early that it was clear they intended F 413 to besiege that City which was without a garrison, as the soldiers were partly in Calaturē and partly in Mutapali, and the rest in Malvāna, Matual, and in hospital ; and [he asked them] to give freely their opinion as to what should be done. After a lengthy conference the General again proposed : ' That for the security of Columbo it seemed necessary to recall the garrison of Calaturē,' giving the reasons which made him think so. But this matter of abandoning praças, even those of lesser importance and for a greater purpose, is not a method of warfare which the Portuguese had hitherto practised in India, nor is it my business to dispute the point. though I might give many instances of great Captains who did so, when they had no forces to divide, and experience has shown that Calaturē lost Columbo and that Cranganor lost Cochim. It was decided that for the nonce it was not convenient to withdraw that garrison, but only that the Captain-Major should be directed to get rid of the unnecessary men, and to keep vessels in readiness in the river to cross it on a second notice. They based this resolution on the words of a letter of the Viceroy Conde de Sarzedas<sup>1</sup> who had reached Goa in the preceding August, in which he said as follows : " Now that we are masters of Calaturē, your Honour must try to preserve it very carefully, and the Captain o. the praça must be a very satisfactory person." They decided further that the Captain Gaspar Figueyra should come down to the lowlands [to a place] from which he would be able to help on short notice, so as not to have to consume the provisions in the City. The speed of the Hollander, who was master of the sea, did not approve these delays, and counsels of war are ever tardy when matters have not been foreseen, because

<sup>1</sup> Dom Rodrigo Lobo de Silveyre, Conde de Sarzedas, 28th Viceroy 1655-1660.

the chances of war cannot be settled by counsels from a distance and the general principles of its theory do not embrace all the circumstances of its practice.

Nothing of this was unknown to the Enemy, and knowing of the dispersion of our troops, this seemed to him a good opportunity to carry out his main object and to carry Columbo by storm. But the Heavens diverted him with such showers, that the meadows became flooded and he was obliged to desist from his purpose, leaving many traces of the hurry with which he retired, nor was this the first time that the passes of Matuâl and Betal, though badly garrisoned, caused him these fears, since it was the general opinion of India that on their defence depended that of Columbo. He re-embarked and without coming in sight of Columbo made for the deep sea and went to the shores of Alicão and Berverim, and disembarking in all haste, he marched to the Hillock of Macfune, one league from Calature, where the Governor of Gále, Adriano P 773 Vandermet, was awaiting him with the usual army, of that Island, wherewith he again reinforced his might. Our Captain-General had tidings of all this, and even then he ordered Antonio Mendez Aranha to fortify <sup>P 413</sup> the post of Our Lady of Health opposite Calature,<sup>1</sup> on the other bank of the river, to secure the retreat.

In fulfilment of this order and for the purpose of protecting that garrison, he sent Joaõ Banha Cardoso, Dissâva of Maturé, with some soldiers and the lascarins under his command; but after he had arrived at that post owing to the ill-will of the Natives who had already revolted, and for lack of the information which he expected from them, he was taken unawares by the Enemy and lost the post and some men, because the Belga with the intention of preventing reinforcements and intercepting that detachment of troops, as could easily have been foreseen, had disembarked on the side of Panituré. A remedy was attempted with still greater loss, as could have been foreseen by the meanest intelligence. The General sent Nicolaõ de Moura Brito, Captain-Major of the foists and some others who joined him, with the Dissâva of Nigumbo, Manoel Gil Crespo, and the men under his command, to hold that place and to collect provisions and other necessary things to provision Calature. But impossible ventures and tardy remedies never succeed, and so it befell this time also, because when they approached the river of

---

<sup>1</sup> Church, situated on the north bank of the Kalu-ganga.

Paniture, the Enemy fell upon the advanceguard making it retire with the loss of some out of the 250 soldiers there were, and of some lascarins. The others did the same in such disorder that they left the warlike provisions on the beach. The General realizing the impossibility of reinforcing Calatûrê, held a fuller Council inviting to it the deputies, the corporation of the City, the prelates of the Religious Orders and other gentlemen and cavaliers who had more experience of war with the Chingalâs than with Europeans, when a single Captain who had experience of it would have been enough for a more moderate and wiser decision.

It was unanimously resolved to succour the post with all the forces that could be mustered, thus risking in one uneven encounter [the forces that were] the last refuge of Ceylon. The Captain-Major Gaspar Figueyra de Serpa was summoned to reinforce Calatûrê, but though he excused himself the first time, supposing it was a trick of the King of Candea to make him abandon the newly conquered lands, on further information from the General he was obliged to give them up. And without giving out what he intended, he spent a day in reforming the *estancias* and gathering people to carry the baggage, and while they were thinking that he meant to remain in that place, he left it in good order at midnight, and in five days, [that is] on the 8th of October, 1655, he arrived in Colombo. On his way he was told by a Chingalâ woman: 'That she knew that he was sent for to undertake an expedition, and that he should not do it, because it would turn out badly, but that he should leave it to some other person who might fare better.' Gaspar Figueyra took little notice of it, but time showed the truth of her declaration. Meanwhile the Captain-General sent Francisco Antunes to the pass of the Morro, two leagues from Columbo, with the title of Dissâva and Captain-Major of the lands of Maturê, and there went as Captain of the advance guard, Domingos | Sarmento de Carvalho, taking <sup>F 114</sup> with him the same men who had been with Nicolao de Moura, to secure that pass and to find out the designs of the Enemy. While Gaspar Figueyra was preparing, there arrived from Goa on the 15th of the month, Captain Manoel Salgado with four galliots, a little rice, as there was none in this City, and other victuals of little value which had remained over in the ships in which the Viceroy had come from Portugal, and with 200 raw soldiers. With that special good luck which ever accompanied that Captain, they came into that port which was blockaded by seven enemy ships, but the

darkness was such that the Enemy did not see the galliots till they were beyond reach of harm. By a fresh decision of the Council these soldiers were listed to this arrayal already doomed to the sword.

Others assert that at the very hour when these new comers landed, there came a message from Francisco Antunes that the force of the Enemy was great, for their General was in front of Calaturé on the other bank of the river with a large squadron, another [force] two leagues further at the pass of the river of Diagaõ, through which the reinforcement might have gone, and another over against Calaturé ; that they were so far away that they were not able to reinforce in case of attack ; that a cunning and faithful spy, who had made his way into the camp of the Enemy General, had seen a soldier sally out from Calaturé with a white flag and that it was said in the camp that on the next day they would surrender.. And in spite of this news the General, on the following morning, the 16th of the month, without further [consultation] with the Council despatched the Captain-Major, to whom at the Morro Francisco Antunes repeated what he had already written ; but though he already knew it, in order at least to undeceive the General, he ordered a hasty muster of the one and the other soldiers and found there were 650 men, divided into 22 companies, and nearly 1,000 lascarins ; and at three o'clock in the afternoon he ordered Francisco Antunes to march with six companies, and Domingos Sarmento, Captain of the advance guard, in which he also placed Manoel Gil with 200 lascarins, to Panituré, and collect boats for the relief to cross. When it was beginning to be dark they encountered the Enemy just near the banks of the river of Panituré, on the side of Columbo and fought valiantly with him ; but the latter on account of the darkness and because he did not know the strength of the force he had to deal with, did not wish to get out of his quarters, and the Portuguese were so eager that more than 30 remained there, killed and captured. But Francisco Antunes retired as far as the lake of Lunâva, which could easily have been opened to the sea in order to cut off the Enemy.

There, between nine and ten in the night, he was joined by Gaspar Figueyra, who, without full consideration of the danger in which he placed the arrayal and the praca of Columbo and still thinking of relieving Calaturé, which by that time was already surrendered, drew up his arrayal in three divisions giving each line a depth of eight men, and

placing the greater part of the lascarins in the advance guard along with the Portuguese. In this manner he began the march as soon as the day dawned, and at the point of Paniturē <sup>N 414v</sup> he descried the enemy who were marching in three squadrons consisting of 3,000 men, the central one a little in advance, and each with three field pieces besides 1,500 lascarins. Gaspar Figueyra on realizing this could well have retired to the Morro along the beach, which was narrow and suited to his scanty force, or even to Colombo without any discredit, as an encounter with so unequal a force could not but end in defeat. However he went ahead ordering Sarmento not to attack with the advance guard till he arrived, but forgetting this order, the latter involved everyone; and by nine o'clock in the morning the advance guard began the charge with a volley from 200 muskets and the arquebuses he had. The first squadron of the enemy replied with a volley of a thousand carbines, and the two side squadrons with the field pieces, whereby they straightway killed and wounded more than 40 men; and while our men followed up with other volleys, they received two others from the enemy squadrons. Thereupon Gaspar Figueyra perceiving the inequality of the game, charged the first squadron with sword and spear. The Hollander dexterously opened ranks and let the field piece play on them and kill others and then closed up again, and few of those who entered escaped. Those who were outside were surrounded by the three squadrons helped by the Asiatics, and they sold their lives as dearly as they could, killing and wounding many of the Enemy, and when they found that they were completely routed, and that the Belga gave no quarter, they took to flight, some through the jungles and others along the beach.

In these two encounters we lost about 400 men. The Captain Francisco Antunes was found three days afterwards mortally wounded, and being recognized by the enemy, in whose hands he expired, was by him buried in the Church of Our Lady of Miracles.<sup>1</sup> He was a man of valour and prudence and sagacity and served well in war. There died also Domingos Sarmento de Carvalho, who thus kept company with his brother, both being killed in this conquest, the Captains Antonio de Valadares, Antonio da Costa, Antonio Correa, and other captains, Ensigns and Sergeants, whose names did not come down to our notice, besides those who were wounded. Gaspar Figueyra, with a little more than

---

<sup>1</sup> Now Milageriya (Miracles), Wellawatte.

250 soldiers, reached Columbo that evening, and with those who were in good health he tried to fortify the post of S. Sebastião and Our Lady of Life,<sup>1</sup> with a rampart from one Church to the other ; but [it was done] in so short a time and with so few men that it only became a fresh disappointment. The General now fully alive to the danger ordered F 411  
*r 174* the garrisons | of Malvâna and Matuá, to retire, and as he happened to be in the field along with the old General, Francisco de Melo de Castro, they learnt from the spies the news of the arrival of the Enemy and were obliged to retire in haste. On the morning of the 18th October the Enemy attacked that hillock, and of the few who attempted to defend it nine or ten were killed, and Captain Manoel | F 411  
 da Veyga escaped by cutting his way through the Enemy, who had occupied the plain of Our Lady of Life, and his good fortune was equal to the desperate valour which made him prefer to die killing and wounding many than to be killed in cold blood like the rest by the Enemy, who was proud of such good fortune, because in five days Calaturá surrendered for want of provisions, though that garrison had acted with great valour and with no little bloodshed on the one side and the other, and afterwards in various encounters he always succeeded, and if after this recent retreat he had at once attacked the City, before they had decided on the manner of its defence, the danger would have been great.

Such were the sad vespers of the ultimate ruin of Columbo and of Ceylon, for that praça was given up for lost before it was invested ; and all on account of mismanagement in consequence of the chastisement, for in that respect there is nothing greater than that valour should be frustrated by lack of counsel and that one should try to set one mistake right by another. But to show what difference there is between a warfare well conducted and the same mismanaged, though hitherto there was an appearance of weakness because blunders deprived them of success, henceforth there will be given greater proof of Portuguese valor, more wary because it was less rash, and as many heroic deeds [will be performed] in the defence of this City as can be expected from human endurance and valour, so that that Enemy will consider it sheer pertinacity and rashness ; for Columbo which was given up for lost held out during a siege of seven months, and were it not for famine and pestilence and its other consequences, it might have lasted seven years, and had it been relieved, it would have shown itself to be delayer of the power of the Hollander in the East.

---

<sup>1</sup> Now Hulftsdorp, because Hulft fixed his quarters there.

## CHAPTER 22.

THE HOLLANDERS AND THE CHINGALAS ATTACK THE  
CITY OF COLUMBO.

When our people retired into the City, the General mustered 18 companies of soldiers, each consisting of 20 to 25 men, including in this number more than 120 Topaz Christians of the country. The casados, including the old and the sick, may have been 250, and out of them were taken some captains for various posts, and the rest were formed into three companies. These were all the force with which P 777 Columbo resisted the hosts of Holland. | There were named as captains the following :—to the bastion of S. Joao, Manoel Correa de Barros, a casado of Columbo ; to S. Estevaõ, Lourenço Ferreyra de Brito, a citizen of the place ; to that of S. Sebastiaõ, the citizen Francisco Gurjaõ Fialho ; to that of the Madre de Deos, Jeronimo de Lucena Tavares, who was retired a few days later on account F 415 of his infirmities, and another citizen, Luis Taveyra da Cunha, appointed in his place ; to the bastion of the Conception, Domingos Peyxoto ; to that of S. Jeronimo, Afonso Carvalho de Souza ; to that of S. Antonio, which is called 'of the Torraõ,' Manoel Carvalho de Anhaya ; to that of Saint-Iago, at the gate of Mapâne, Manoel Nunes ; to that of S. Agustinho, the Ouvidor Luis do Quintal de Payva ; to the post of Galboca,<sup>1</sup> D. Francisco Rolim de Moura, with the title of Captain-Major ; to that of S. Lourenço, Antonio da Silva, a citizen of Columbo ; to that of S. Cruz, Gaspar de Araujo Pereyra ; to the bastion of the Alfandega, the officers of the fazenda, to the redoubt of the Mother Church, Manoel Caldeyra, to the Couraça of S. Francisco Xavier, Manoel Caldeyra de Brito.

Andre de Seyxas da Silva, Dissâva of the Four-Corlas, and Manoel Gil Crespo with the men of Nigumbo, stood at the gate of the bastion of S. Joao ; Joao Coelho de Castro, Dissâva of the seven-corlas at Queen's Gate ; Joao Bainha Cardoso, Dissâva of Maturé, on guard over the wall which ran from the bastion of S. Jeronimo to that of S. Antonio ; Gaspar Figueyra de Serpa, with one company and Antonio de Mello de Castro with another, were at the foot of the bastion of S. Joao ; the Captain-Major of the fleet, Nicolas de Mouro de

---

<sup>1</sup> Sin. Galbokka, Anglice 'Galle Buck'.

Brito, with another company, helped in various posts, and after the first assault in the Couraça till he was taken prisoner ; at the redoubt of the gate of S. Joao, at the foot of that bastion, on the outer side, stood D. Diogo de Vasconcelos, Manoel Guerreiro Neves and Manoel Gomez da Costa, with their companies in the casemate of the same bastion ; Manoel da Veyga Ferreyra with another [company] in S. Estevao ; Antonio da Mota de Oliveyra with his company in S. Sebastiao ; at the Queen's gate, Alvaro Rodriguez Borralho with a company as Captain-Major of that post as far as the magazine ; in the bastion of the Madre de Deos, Manoel Cabreyra da Ponte with another company, in the houses of D. Jeronymo de Azevedo, Joao da Costa Giada ; and as guard of that post three *manchus* which were launched on the lake from the side of the moat under the charge of captain Domingos Coelho de Ayala.

The captains of the companies of casados were Antonio Coelho, Afonso Correa and Francisco Lobo da Silva ; and many of the aforesnamed had held posts in the army, for they were all men of valour and wisdom and experience. Francisco Lobo da Silva stood with his company in the magazine, Antonio de Magalahaes de Araujo with his company was deputed to relieve the bastions of S. Antonio and S. Jeronimo

*P 778* or wherever they were needed. Manoel de Abreu Godinho, | Admiral of the foists, remained in the bastion S. Cruz. Domingos Pirez, a cassado of Negapatao, with a party of outsiders and Antonio Coelho with his company of casados and another of Topazes | of Delantota had charge of the post of Galboca. *F 411* Manoel Rodriguez Franco, Captain of the General's guard, was kept in reserve with another company to assist where, need was greatest. The Sergeant-Major was Antonio Leao, the Adjutant Thome Ferreyra Fialho, Tristao Ribeyro, Joao Cardozo, Antonio de Abreu, Braz das Neues, Manoel de Souza, Antonio Madeyra Cabral, the citizen Antonio Barboza Pinheyro was captain of artillery. They were all picked men, and in this siege they showed the mettle of their courage and constancy, though they were too few considering the extent of their charge and the diversity of posts.

The defence of the City being disposed in this manner on the side of the Portuguese, the Hollanders on their part informed the King of Candea of their good fortune so that he might assist them with all his force. The King at once sent 12,000 men, the best he had, and many pioneers, by means of whom they were able to fortify themselves well, since, on the testimony of all, they knew and are accustomed to do it well. The King himself promised to come in person

in a short time, whereupon they became very proud and conceited. Some Portuguese were persuaded that this last resolution of the Candiot King sprang from the indignation which Gaspar Figueyra provoked when he made him wear mourning with all his Court ; and that he really ever desired peace, and they blamed General Diogo de Melo de Castro for violating it, since [the King] had given him to understand in various ways that he wished for peace, but that like a King, and a high minded one, he had waited till they came to ask for it ; and that it was to insinuate this desire that he had sent a present of mulberries to General Manoel Mascarenhas Homem saying that he must not mind their value, but note what the mulberries (amoras) signified, namely the love (amor:s) he had towards the Portuguese. This however is not in keeping with the reply he sent to Gaspar de Araujo Pereyra, which was the reason why the letter of the King of Portugal and that of the Viceroy, Conde de Ob'dos, were not sent to him. Nor does it square with the circumstances, which is the soul of true History, for there was no time after the success of Gaspar Figucyra to ally himself with the Batavian or to prepare that fleet, nor [does it square] with the desire he always had to be Lord of the lowlands on the one and the other side of the Island ; nor with the haste with which he approached Columbo in the time of Manoel Mascarenhas Homem, as soon as he saw the field abandoned to the Hollander. The truth is that, after the outbreak of the war begun by Diogo de Melo de Castro, he sent two Modeliares by way of Paliacâte as ambassadors to Jacatrâ, or Batavia and thence to Holland, and it was agreed between them : That the King should be Lord of the lands and Holland of all the praças which we held all round the Island, dismantling only Batecalou and Triquilimalê, each of the parties thus securing what he wished, the Hollander driving us out | of Ceylon, the King remaining complete Lord of the products of the Island, and with harbours for his | trade. For although his Father on his death had recommended him to suffer the Portuguese rather than any other European nation, yet when he saw that Diogo de Melo in spite of the treaty, again sought him out in his own house, while it seemed to him that he had given no cause for open war, he followed a different course. And though the Hollander conquest was delayed by the truce they made for ten years, this fire was rekindled by the conquest of Brazil, and with the men who escaped our sword they increased their forces in India to such an extent that they were able to carry out this undertaking and to continue the blockade of the bar of Goa.

The fortifications of the Hollanders began on the 18th of October, as their *aliados* do not fear the fury of the *vara* of Choromandel ; and on the 28th of the same month [our men] desoried five batteries of 20 cannon of 18, 24, and 30 pounds, against the five bastions facing them. Before they began to open fire, while our men were lining the bastions of S. Joaõ and S. Sebastiaõ, five companies sallied out daily to the field, under cover of our musketry to facilitate the work. The batteries opened fire with such fury that they soon dismantled the five bastions, smashed some pieces, disabled others, demolishing the parapets and ramparts. The greatest damage was done to the bastion of S. Joaõ, upon which the batteries played hardest, and for this reason they built a strong redoubt on which they mounted two cannon. The other bastions, now ruined on many sides, were also repaired, but the shot destroyed everything, and deaths and wounds delayed the work more than was good, for the Hollander daily threw into the walls and the city more than 800 shot, besides many grenades of unusual size and other contrivances of fire, whereby they killed men, destroyed buildings, and terrorized the majority of the ordinary people and even the most valorous who were not safe at any time of the day or night.

At this time there went over to the Enemy Joaõ da Rosa, a Hollander by birth, who was married and had children in Columbo, whither he had fled from Galé, and shortly afterwards there fled also a soldier, a Native of Jafanapataõ. And though the one and the other flight caused concern, they served to call attention to the fact that the wall which ran from the bastion of S. Sebastiaõ by the Queen's Gate to that of the Madre de Deos, was weak and low, and that it should be lined with palm trees, fascines and earth, at which there laboured the captains of the merchant galliots, digging a closed way so as to attack the Enemy with greater security, and planting two mortars at the Queen's gate with low port holes opened in the wall, all of which was of great use on the day of the assault. On the 18th of October, when the siege P 47 began, our General sent Manoel Sarayva de Albuquerque; P 48 and on the 28th, when the battering began, | Antonio de Abreu, a casado of Negapataõ, both valiant and trusty men, in two light dhoneys to make their way between the vessels of the Enemy to Manâr, thence to send information by land to the Viceroy of India about the siege which the Hollander had laid to Columbo, the batteries which were opened, the scarcity of men for the defence of the praça, the shortage

of powder, munitions, and provisions, and to ask him earnestly to reinforce that city with what there was in India and if possible in person.

The same message was sent to Antonio de Amaral de Menezes, Captain-Major of Jafanapatao, to have a Flotilla of provisions ready, and to Manoel de Magalhaes Coutinho, Captain-Major of Malavar, whom the General begged, demanded, and ordered in the name of His Majesty, to cross over to Manar to convey to Columbo the succour of victuals and money which was ready there. The Captain-Major did not go and alleged in Goa as excuse that the winds were contrary and that at the cape of Comuri he lost some anchors, which was not accepted as a good excuse, for, although in the first fury of the *Vara* it might be very difficult for a rowing ship to negotiate the whole gulf as far as Manar, far different was the expedition of D. Jeronimo de Azevedo, who by means of a tow rope got between the rock and the point of the cape and made 25 leagues as far as Manapar by sheer rowing and from thence he crossed over to Columbo with the same *Vara* at great risk; but this reinforcement had to negotiate another twenty-five leagues as far as Tutucorim and what remained from thence to Manar, in order to conduct the flotilla thence and succeed in breaking through the blockade which the Enemy had laid to Columbo by sea. He returned to Cochim where he found the fleet of the North, of which the Captain-Major was D. Manoel Mascarenhas, and though this gentleman greatly desired to go to Ceylon where these two fleets could have placed 600 more men and more than 30 foists, as was thought in Goa, and would have obliged the enemy to raise the siege or to man their ships with the troops, to the no small risk of those who were on the field, as assaults might be delivered on them under cover of our artillery, which might have given us one successful day after so many bad ones, yet so great were the difficulties that they had in Cochim, especially the difficulty of money, that D. Manoel Mascarenhas offered to pawn the praça of Dio. However as the principal object was not merely to cross over to Columbo with a reinforcement of men, who would only consume its provisions the faster, but to convey provisions from Jafanapatao with all possible care and bring what other forces might be got <sup>P 617.</sup> together in Goa, the two Captains-Major returned to Goa, leaving Columbo to fluctuate between its fears and miseries. Wherefore all these reasons do not prevent one from saying that Columbo was lost owing to a mistake similar to the one

which lost Gâle ; and as European war is dreadful, it will always be so, as long as the supplement of the chastisement depends only on valour.<sup>1</sup>

P 781 | In order to try every remedy, they resolved in Council (although this seemed a desperate one), to write to Raja Singa Rajû, Emperor of Candeia (a title which the Hollanders gave him, judging it convenient to humour his pride), representing to him that matters had come to such a pass that if the misfortunes continued, the Hollander might become master of all that we held in the Island, which was not his first intention nor should be his final decision for many reasons. This letter was sent on the 22nd of October, and though it was delivered to him, he neither deigned to reply nor ceased to favour his confederates who continued their bombardment and destroyed a great part of the walls of the city, especially the courâa of S. Francisco Xavier on the side of the beach, the fortification of which the General entrusted to his son, Christovâo de Souza Coutinho, and to the Captain of the guard, Manoel Rodriguez Franco, who made it in some measure defensible ; and in all the other parts they were ever busy repairing, even the Religious not excusing themselves from labour, and to the no small danger of the pioneers, some of whom were killed and wounded. For this work they made great use of the lake, by which they brought palm trees, timber, and fascines, and a certain bark of a tree which they call *Velipâra*<sup>2</sup> which made up for the lack of matches. And as the General greatly feared for the bastions of the beach, he took his position there to expedite the work and to be ready for their defence. The Enemy knew this and kept hurling grenades to make him give up the post, for the post of greatest danger was ever his, and he spent days and nights under arms, either in a shop or in the streets and bastions.

The Hollander General, thinking that he had reduced the City to a state in which it could be entered, on the Ninth of November, sent a lacquey with a drummer and a white flag with a letter to the Captain-General. His purpose being understood, he was told to wait while the Council was quickly

<sup>1</sup> I translate this line as it stands. I suppose it means : "As long as they try to avert the chastisement only by valour," implying thereby that a punishment inflicted by God cannot be averted save by repentance and amendment.

<sup>2</sup> Sin. *belipatta*, "shrub found on the borders of brooks or running water, the inner bark of which is used for cordage. *Hibiscus tiliaceus* (*Malvaceas*)."—Clough.

summoned ; in which it was decided to receive him, for which purpose Diogo de Souza de Castro went beyond the ditch and told the envoy that a reply would be given on the morning of the following day. The Hollander General thought that this delay was a proof of fear and consultation ; and ordered the batteries | to continue with double fury <sup>P 788</sup> till the answer was received. The Belga said in his letter : ' That the successes of Calaturé and Paniture and the state to which he had reduced the ramparts, persuaded him that he had done so much, that no one would consider it' presumptuous of him to call upon him to surrender, which he did in the name of His Imperial Majesty, Rajá Singa Rajú and of the Illustrious Company, enclosing the letters of our General to Antonio Mendez Aranha and to Gaspar Figueyra de Serpa, which had fallen into his hands, in which he had declared that the preservation of Columbo depended on the one and the other | force under their charge ; and that it would in no way lessen his valour, as the courage with which he had acted in this great siege was patent to all and that his demand was only intended to avoid shedding more blood, as he might not be able to check the victorious and disorderly soldiers.'

Our General replied to this letter in the following manner : " The Fortunes of war Our Lord grants as He pleases ; and just as He has given them to your Lordship, He can change them, as I trust He will, since the war which Your Lordship wages on us is unjust. This praça belongs to the King of Portugal, My Lord, on whose order I am entrusted with it, and of it I must give him an account. I am therefore not moved by the reasons which Your Lordship mentions to me, about which I might argue much with Your Lordship, but time will show and Your Lordship will see, that the state in which I find myself is far different from what you imagine. God keep Your Lordship. Colombo 10th November 1655." On the morning of that day there carried this answer Diogo de Souza de Castro and the drummer Thome Ferreyra Fialho, a practical soldier, who advanced a little more than necessary in order to reconnoitre the fortifications. A certain Eleuth-nat came out promptly with two carbineers to receive it, and when the two parties had retired, our men fired a general volley of artillery, a brave demonstration which disabused the Belga of the presumption which he had conceived on receiving the information of Joaõ de Roza. However he decided to storm the city forthwith on the 11th of November which, however, did not succeed.

## CHAPTER 23.

**THE HOLLANDER DELIVERS AN ASSAULT ON COLOMBO,  
AND IS REPELLED WITH GREAT LOSS.**

On the 12th there appeared at dawn the enemy fleet of 18 ships and many smacks, *churrios* and launches, flying banners, pendants, and streamers of various colours, at sight of which our men hurried to their posts. Four ships made for the bay with a light breeze, but with many and good men and many launches, with ladders and other necessaries for landing and storming on that side on which the palisades were low and weak. On the side of the bastion of S. Joao and its neighbourhood, <sup>P 418</sup> from the ditch to the beach, there attacked Captain-Major Joan Vanderlaen with 700 soldiers, ladders and other necessaries to storm the breastwork of S. Francisco Xavier. On the side of Queen's gate there attacked the General, Geraert Hulffz, with 800 soldiers, the bravest of his arrayal, with 60 ladders, many of which were of two rows of <sup>P 783</sup> steps. The Enemy launched on the lake <sup>P 783</sup> many very light and capacious vessels of extraordinary workmanship in which were 250 soldiers, to capture the houses of D. Jeronimo de Azevedo, where the wall of the rampart was three palms, broad and little more than one fathom (*braça*) high. On the side of the plain of Mapâna there attacked 4,000 lascarins of the King of Candea under his Dissâvas, Modeliares and Araches, with various banners and warlike instruments which looked as if the combat would be most perilous in that direction, but as these men seemed to have come merely to embarrass and divert, not many discharges of artillery were needed to disperse them completely, after they had halted; and in this manner the City was attacked on all sides at the same time, though the defenders, as we have shown, were so few.

Coming now to the fray: the lightest of the four ships advanced and entered the bay, while another remained at the mouth, and the Flagship and another [remained] further out at sea; and casting anchor they began to discharge volleys upon the bastion of S. Cruz and on the City. Our men replied from the same bastion, from the breastwork Xavier and from the redoubt of the Matrix, and such was

the fury on the one and the other side, that in a short time the main mast of the first ship came down and she went to the bottom, and only a few of those who were in the launch escaped. The other ship being overwhelmed by the fury of the artillery and many of her crew killed, succeeded in sailing out in the wake of the other two, when the wind rose. On the lake the three *manchusas* that were on guard, in which were not 30 soldiers, sallied out to the encounter and fought for some time, but afterwards they retired and landed the men on the beach and continued the fight behind a stockade which our men had built there in view of such an eventuality. But as it was a superfluous one and the troops few and the posts to be manned 33, this one had but a scanty defence. The Captain of the guard, Manoel Rodriguez Franco, who had with him only Sebastião Caldeyra, an old but valiant citizen, opposed the Enemy, and from the windows of their houses they burnt some with pots of powder, wherewith they entertained them till some of our men came to their help. The Enemy, however, gained the lane which they call [the lane] of Caldeyra, where on one side there faced them Manoel Fernandez de Miranda and Francisco de Lemos, soldiers of note, and on the other side Diogo Leytaõ de Souza, to whose help there soon came Father Damiaõ Vieyra of the Society of Jesus; and these few men were able to hem the enemy in that lane and prevent him from getting into the street, as they tried to do in order to fall upon the | rear of those <sup>111</sup> who were fighting at the Queen's gate, which, if they had succeeded in doing, would have caused great confusion.

The Enemy attempted several times to cut their way in, but were driven back by furious discharges from the huge blunderbusses wielded by Diogo de Souza and Father Damiaõ Vieyra. On this scene of conflict there arrived the Sergeant-Major Antonio Leaõ, and he with his spear in | hand and his companions with their blunderbusses at their breasts, made the Belga return to a corner of the lane, where they defended themselves with continuous volleys of musketry. Soon Captain Antonio de Melo de Castro arrived with his company, and a little later the company of Antonio de Magalhães de Araujo, who had been informed of the danger by the General. They took their position in the backyards of the houses, and the Enemy seeing that all was up, begged quarter which was given them, though they did not deserve it, so that our men might get away from this fray to take part in the others that were going on. Here died 65 Hollanders, and 74 surrendered with their Captain and officers, and they

were so badly wounded that they soon ended their lives, and out of all these only seven Hollanders returned, being exchanged for our prisoners. The others who belonged to this company had been killed in the lake and in the stockade. One of their vessels escaped with five soldiers, another was sent to the bottom by a shot from the bastion of S. Estevão, and seven remained in our hands.

Our men being thus rid of the sea force and that of the lake, let us see what happened to the land force. Joan Vanderlaen intended to carry the breastwork Xavier, and on being descried within the ditch, the three companies of the redoubt opposed them, and a furious fight ensued for a long while, till in spite of all perils and though many were killed and wounded, they made their way to the beach and attacked the low and ruined breastwork. They planted ladders, hurled innumerable grenades and other fire darts, in the attempt to gain it. Our men who were in it, before they could be attacked, did great havoc on them with three pieces of artillery which swept the beach, and with the arquebuses which they plied dexterously; and when they drew near, they threw much fire, whereby everything within and without the breastwork was burnt, and as the smoke enveloped both the defenders and the assailants, only the blows and the report of musketry were heard. The Citizens who were at the post of the Matriz, which was relieved only at this time, hurried to this conflict; and from other sides also there came some succour. And when the battle had been fought with extraordinary bravery for the space of two hours without the Enemy giving in, one of them succeeded in jumping in, but was promptly killed. In this conflict great help was also received from some arquebusiers of the two banquetas of the rampart and from some Caffres with their *azagayas*. Finally when many had been killed, burnt, or wounded, the remainder took to flight leaving the beach strewn with dead bodies and arms of all kinds. On our side also there were killed, burnt, and wounded.

| At Queen's gate, where the battle began, the loss of the <sup>P 785</sup> ~~410~~ Enemy was still greater. Their General came marching with method and order, and the officers who accompanied him moved forward and each one tried to approach the gate on his own side, but they were received with great spirit and dexterity [by those at the gate] as also by those in the flanking bastions of S. Sebastião and the Madre de Deus, the enemy receiving | great damage from our artillery and most of all from the two stone mortars which were on the

level ground, and which Joaõ de Rosa was unable to account for, because when he escaped, that precautionary measure had not been taken, nor [did he know of] the lining of the rampart which was used as a breast wall, under shelter of which the soldiers poured incessant fire with great security, the stone mortars destroying entire companies; whereupon all was death and wounds and confusion with the enemy, and even our black troops seeing the destruction fought without fear. The Enemy was so astonished and taken aback on seeing the greatest resistance where he expected none, that he did not even dare to lay a single ladder on the rampart. Their General was furious, and realizing that he was routed and beaten, he found no better means of reforming his men than to shout craftily that the bastion of S. Joaõ was taken; and he laid hold of a ladder to encourage the others to help him, but he found no response. Our men, realizing the victory, rained fire upon them, and their General was then wounded in the leg by an arquebus shot, but seeing that all fled ignominiously, he boldly made up his mind to place his hand on the gate of the City, and did so in fact to satisfy his desire of capturing it. Our men fought with great order and the field was strewn with ladders and dead bodies, banners, arms, tambours, and trumpets, which were all spoils for our soldiers and lascarins; and if they had had enough troops to follow the routed enemy, the siege of Columbo would have ended that day; however, even as it was, both here and on the breastwork our lascarins, servants, and Caffres leapt over the walls, in pursuit of them as far as they were protected by our musketry, and they succeeded in killing many of the badly wounded, despoiling all of them under the eyes of those who were in safety, for crushed by fear they stopped only within their fortifications.

In this assault the Hollander lost over 1,000 Europeans, not to speak of those of other nationalities that accompanied them; and as happens in such encounters, they lost their best officers and soldiers, though their General had considered the victory assured and had given order to his men that once the city was taken, they were not to give quarter to any, because experience showed even here that no grown up European ever crossed to India but was disappointed with it, before he came to know it, as has happened in other professions. The combat lasted from eight in the morning up to midday, and one must not fail to praise the foresight and wisdom with which, before the assault and while it lasted, | General Antonio de Souza Coutinho attended to *740*

P 786 everything. In the beginning of the battle he was under arms at the Queen's gate, and when he heard of the peril of the breastwork, he hurried to that post, and when the enemy retreated thence, he hastened on hearing the current rumour that they had entered the City by the lake, giving the necessary orders with great self possession and with greater labour than his age permitted. His predecessor, General Francisco de Melo de Castro, though an aged gentleman, ever acted in this siege as if he had been in the flower of his age, and happening in this conflict to be in the bastion of S. Cruz, he was able by his presence and direction to give in that quarter a glorious beginning to the victory.

On our side 30 soldiers were killed and 50 wounded, some of whom died afterwards. The few Ecclesiastics who had acted with great valour, and the many who had distinguished themselves, were thanked by the General in complimentary terms for what they had done, and he gave various gifts of money which were the gifts of greatest consideration in the eyes of the lascarins, as they are folk who are better pleased with gifts than with words. Nor did the women who sallied out into the streets fail to show their desire to follow to the last their husbands whom they manfully encouraged, nor did they fail to succour the wounded with dainties and delicacies with which their houses were still provided.

The General ordered the sunken ship to be pushed further into the lake, and took from it 30 pieces of artillery which he distributed to the various posts along with some biscuits and other provisions which they could make use of and which were shared by the soldiers and casados who went to the wreck. The Enemy removed from the way all the dead and wounded he could manage to remove, and without thinking further about the rest, he continued his bombardment, though with greater slackness, betraying thereby the great loss he had sustained and the disgrace in which he was, as he had promised the King of Candea and had assured him that the City would be stormed that day, for even the Chingalas did not spare them, but threw in their face the valour of the Portuguese. The question of raising the siege was put to the Council, and many of the Officers were for it, as they had lost their best men. But their General upheld the contrary, assuring them of reinforcements from the other garrisons of India, and [saying] that should the venture not have the desired result, he would be responsible to the company for the decision and would pay the expenses of that war.

## CHAPTER 24.

OF THE FRESH FORTIFICATIONS OF THE ONE AND THE  
 OTHER NATION ; OR HOW ANTONIO DE MELO DE  
 CASTRO WAS MADE CAPTAIN-MAJOR, AND OF  
 OTHER SUCCESSES

P 187 | The Captain-General at once informed the Viceroy of <sup>F 120r</sup> this success, giving him a detailed account of what took place, and of what there was to fear, urging reinforcements of men as well as of powder, munitions, and provisions; and while the enemy batteries were slack, he repaired our fortifications, because | as our men desired nothing better than that the Enemy should again deliver an assault, every day they thought they would do so, which would have meant their total destruction and the destruction of all they had in Ceylon, for as they had nothing to fear from the Chingalá, they engaged in that siege all the forces of their garrisons. But the Hollander thinking over his recent loss, and seeing the delay of our reinforcements, decided to wage slower war, and he sallied out from one of his first batteries placed in the house of Manoel Teyxeyra with a covered way, a hundred paces from the moat, where he erected a very strong redoubt, in which he placed 6 cannon, three to batter the bastion of S. Sebastião, and three that of S. João. Thence he went to the beach where he erected another redoubt with its moats and placed two pieces of artillery, which battered especially the breastwork and the curtain of the wall which runs as far as S. João, besides other posts which it commanded. From the first redoubt of six pieces, they made their way by another street to the side of the lake, which ends in front of the bastion of S. Estavao, where he built another redoubt and mounted a mortar, which constantly threw grenades into the City, and some musketeers who overlooked our defences did no small damage. Between these two last redoubts the [covered way led] by means of approaches to the foot of the cross, where it turned, within about 30 paces of the bastion of S. Estavao, and they erected another pretty strong redoubt. in which they placed three cannon against

the revez of S. Joao which hitherto their guns did not command. Thence it turned to the beach within 15 paces of the moat, where they erected a post with gabions and palm trees and mounted thereon three cannon, wherewith they battered the revez of S. Estavao, for after destroying its *camisa* and being unable to remove its fillings, because it was a modern work, they made for the old *arillions*, whereby they separated it from the curtain wall. With all these batteries they pounded the City all day long and often even at night. They constructed a new contrivance, which at first was terrible, but afterwards contemptible. It was a large basket made of thin tarred cords which contained hand grenades charged with ounce bullets and iron barrels like small pistols without the stock but with a sharp butt end, charged with very fine powder and each with two balls. This device was recognized as soon as it went up in the air, and when it fell on the ground, the grenades and pistols went off, always giving time to those who were in danger to get out of the way, though they often exploded in the air when the matches took fire too soon, and only the burnt cords reached the ground, which furnished the boys with plaything.

P 788 | It now appeared good to remove into the City the three companies and the two cannon which were at the foot of the bastion of S. Joao, and the curtain which ran between S. Joao and the breastwork was again lined with palm trees, fascines and earth, both for its defence and in order to have a banquette from which they might defend themselves better, and in it | they opened five other portholes, on the side of the beach, with as many pieces of artillery. In the same way they lined the curtain between S. Joao and S. Estavao without sparing labour, which was very great, and from which no one excused himself, and were it not for the help of the elephants, it could scarcely have been done. The two Generals were engaged in this, when Fernao Martin de Souza, son of the General, Antonio de Souza Coutinho, a youth in his teens was mortally wounded in the bastion of S. Joao ; for when he heedlessly exposed his head, a musket shot hit him, from which he died on the fourth day ; and as the grief was great, because of the proof of valour that he gave, great also was the admiration at the resignation with which his Father took it, without letting any one speak to him of the loss of a son of 19 years of age whom he loved greatly. The seven Hollander boats which we took on the lake as well as the three *manchus* of Domingos Coelho de

Ayala were of great use, and though the enemy at times tried to hinder them, they ever escaped with slight damage. The works increased with the destruction. They built retreats for the bastions, but as their terraces became narrow, some were killed and others wounded by the artillery, grenades, and stones, those who suffered most being the marine pioneers of whom a great number came by their death, the majority in the bastion of S. Estavao, which was pounded by three batteries, because it was a strong one. But captain Lourenço Ferreyra de Brito repaired the damage by his constant presence and labour. From the foot of the Cross, fifteen paces from the moat and the redoubt which they built here, they mined up to the moat; and our men were unable to prevent these works, for there were not enough soldiers for assaults, and they had no powder for continuous bombardment, and as the Captain-General could not believe that reinforcements would fail him, he opposed the proposals of some, more courageous than prudent, about attacking the Enemy in his trenches, in which they had fortified themselves with such art that all the redoubts were connected one with the other by covered ways, revetments, and retreats, with a piece of artillery in each revez.

It was clear to all that the recent events had diminished the valour of the Captain-Major of the Field, Gaspar Figueyra de Serpa, and by common consent there was elected for that post Antonio de Melo de Castro, who filled it with great satisfaction. Much of the credit for what was done during this siege, was due to the captains and the Portuguese who were there, especially to the Captain-General, Antonio de Souza Coutinho, to the Captain of the Field, Antonio de Melo de Castro, to the Captain of the City, Manoel Marquez Gorjao, and to the Sergeant-Major | Antonio Leao, who <sup>F 221v</sup> laboured indefatigably and ever defended that praça with valour. They resolved to erect some defence for the moat which the enemy was making for, and in place of the abandoned redoubt at the foot of the bastion of S. Joao, they erected another on a different plan with revets, retreats, banquettes, and loopholes which looked into those of the Enemy, and they adapted the defences to the fortifications of the Enemy as suggested by experience, for there was no engineer. They called it the redoubt of the Conception and garrisoned it with three companies. It was the usual post of the Captain-Major of the field, and he dug a trench along the wall of the moat, from the bastion of S. Joao up to that of S. Estavao, with outposts to spy the enemy's works.

He placed in it some trusty lascarins, and retired captains, patrolled them night and day, and at night they got into the moat, which was very shallow in comparison with former years when it used to rain heavily, but this year the drought was very great, showing clearly that Heaven was also against Columbo. They dug another countermine in the enclosure of the bastion of S. Joao, between the bastion and the moat, at the same depth as the latter, to hinder the passage of the enemy whose design our General had come to know from the spies he had sent into his camp. In the entrance of the bastion of S. Joao they erected another of beams and palm trees and with fillings of fascines and earth, placing two small pieces thereon, so that if the countermine should fail to impede the mines of the Enemy and they should succeed in getting into the bastion, this one might serve as an inner defence sheltered from their batteries. All the noblemen and those who held high posts toiled at this work and even the old age of Francisco de Melo de 'Castro was not alleged in excuse, but rather he stimulated the others by his age and authority.

And as the Vara, the monsoon of these seas, was blowing and on that account the creeks in the post of Galboca, from S. Cruz to Mapane, were greatly sheltered and calm, and as the Enemy might try to land there in spite of the rocks which nature had placed there, D. Francisco Rolin de Moura and Gaspar de Araujo Pereyra were entrusted with the task of enclosing that extensive line with palm trees, trenches and other fortifications with the help of the other captains who were there. And thus it was made defensible and they placed some artillery in the revezes, and two cannon on the two platforms ; but as the batteries of the Enemy never ceased playing, there was the same difficulty in all places to rebuild what they destroyed, making use of the trees that were in the City and the timber of the destroyed houses for entrenchments and as fuel for the smithy and the powder magazine. Great was now the need of mariners, some of whom were killed in the fortifications, others wounded, and others ill and feeble owing to the scarcity of provisions and continual labours, and as the labours were usually at night, the frequent loss of sleep prostrated them in spite of the zealous and charitable attempts of the captain of the guard, Manoel Rodriguez Franco, under whose care they were, and who tried to avert this danger. Our bastions were so ruined by continuous bombardments | that one could have climbed P 422

them on horseback, and there remained only a narrow terrace on the top, on which one was scarcely able to stand on account of the stones of the mortars, because grenades could be recognized by night from the light, and by day from the report of the mortar, and there was time to get out of the way or to lie flat on the ground and thus escape that diabolical contrivance, but the stones, being many and numerous, cannot be seen at night nor avoided by day.

In one of the parishes outside the walls, the Enemy found an image of the Apostle St. Thomas, and after keeping it for many days within our view in one of his batteries, where they badly hacked it, on the 18th of December they put it into a mortar to hurl it into the City. It fell into the moat, and as our men heard them shout from the batteries, "Take your Saint," the sacred image was ordered to be rescued and it was found to be utterly outraged. It was found hacked all over the body, the arms cut off to make it enter the mortar, for in this fashion under the cloak of zeal, they insult the Faith in these countries, maintaining a dogma which is altogether brutal, both with regard to what they hold and what they impute to Catholics. It was taken into the city with great piety and tears and placed in the Church of the Society of Jesus, but as it was thought that it should go to [the church of] St. Francis, it was carried in procession and placed there with all the solemnity of Mass and sermon, which were the only celebrations the circumstances permitted; and all begged the Holy Apostle to take the City under his protection. On the 20th of the month, there escaped to the city from the camp of the enemy, Simão Lopez de Basto, a Portuguese, who had fled to Vingurla from Goa on account of a crime and as he was an experienced and intelligent man, the Hollander General had made him a comrade and did not keep from him the secrets of his Council and over and above good pay, whereby he had won him over for some special purpose of his, he had also given him many rewards, but honour and fidelity were stronger in him than self-interest, and led him to disregard all danger to life. He gave very valuable information, and he was one of those who laboured most in the last battles of Columbo. This was the only reinforcement which the praga received in the course of six months. One single soldier, free and well paid, came to it at such peril, while all the other pragas of India failed to come to its assistance, though our Lords, the Kings of Portugal, had recommended it so highly, that they ordered everything to be risked for its preservation.

## CHAPTER 25.

F 4220

OF THE VARIOUS ENCOUNTERS OF THE PORTUGUESE WITH  
 THE ENEMIES, OF THE CONTAGION THAT BROKE OUT  
 IN COLUMBO Owing TO THE SHORTAGE OF PROVISIONS,  
 AND OF THE OTHER THINGS WHICH WERE  
 LACKING IN THE PRAÇA

---

To oppose the fortifications of the enemy, the Portuguese dug a mine from the redoubt of the Conception towards the moat, crossing the latter by means of a double palisade filled with earth, ten palms in width, to keep back the water of the lake which poured through it into the sea, | and keeping back the water breast-high, they held the Enemy at bay, but coming to hear that he meant to break through the moat, they covered up that dike which they called [the dike] of resistance with long palm trees which, being fixed on the two sides and joined overhead, sheltered ten soldiers from the fire, which the enemy hurled, and from his musketry. Here there took place continuous frays, our men sometimes mounting the ramparts of the enemy and performing feats of great valour, in which there distinguished themselves the Captains Manoel Rodriguez Franco, and Manoel de Sant-Iago Gracia, who had succeeded the defunct Manoel Gomez de Costa, and they were accompanied by Simão Lopes de Basto, Joaõ de Abreu Ferraõ, Father Damiaõ Vieyra and others, who with pots of powder made havoc of the enemy, who replied with many hand grenades and stones from the mortars. Here they also mounted some merlins and small iron falcons under the charge of Domingos Coelho de Ayala. This work was finished on the 10th of January, and on the first night there began in our trenches and in those of the Enemy heavy volleys of musketry, and much fire was thrown on both sides; and the enemy batteries discharged artillery and grenades in order to divert us and thus to take the moat, which he attempted to do from two sides, one in front of the bastion of S. Joaõ where he opened a large breach, whereby he introduced a gallery in pieces to be fitted up in the moat, which, when covered with fascines and earth, might serve as a bridge to mine the bastion.

Another breach was opened in front of the dike of resistance upon which they suddenly discharged a small piece of artillery with more noise than harm, as it was lower than the dike ; and they attacked with so much fire and smoke that the

soldiers were obliged to abandon it ; but after the first confusion, they returned with great intrepidity, and though thrice beaten back, they succeeded in again becoming Masters of it, and closed the breach made by the Hollander, being greatly helped thereto by a shot, which struck the wall of the moat on the enemy's side and which, as there was no terraplain, fell clean on the top of them and killed some. Then perceiving those who were working in the gallery, they discharged many blunderbusses at them and played havoc with them, but our men returned through the same breach, bringing the gallery with the other fittings of that contrivance. | This fray lasted <sup>F 483</sup> from eight in the night to four in the morning, during which time the artillery, musketry, and the throwing of grenades and pots of powder, went on incessantly and turned everything to fire and confusion. Few were killed or wounded on our side, but the Enemy received considerable loss and he was so terrified that he retired to the redoubt of the Cross and our lascarins became so bold that, getting through the breaches, they set fire to the mines which led to the moat.

The bombardments of the enemy ceased to a great extent in consequence of this retreat, but the grenades and stones of the mortars did not cease, | and in spite of all this risk, the bastions were repaired, especially that of S. Estevão against which nearly all the batteries of the Enemy were now directed, and many were killed and maimed. The greatest trouble they had was the scarcity of provisions which was now pressing and the disease due to constant activity ; and it became clear that it was a contagious disease, of which many common people died and even some persons of consequence, and more especially when they began to despair of relief, because not more than a measure of rice, black and rotten, was given, whereby the sickness became an incurable one and finally a decided plague. In the midst of these sufferings they had for months past exposed the Lord in the Capuchin Convent, from morning till midday, being constantly visited by matrons and children to beg the Sacramental God to save that City. And though some persons were appointed to bury the corpses of the poor, there were so many deaths that the task could not be finished, and the atmosphere became daily more foul. Many of these people had been driven out, and those who remained did so on account of the obstinacy of the residents, who were never more headstrong than when they thought that they were needed for the common welfare of the city, though some of them had been most insolent after they had been pardoned for the expulsion of General Manoel Mascarenhas Homem.

The General determined to send away the unoccupied rabble who were useless for work. They were put on the other side of the lake, where many escaped; others through ill luck fell into the hands of the enemies who forcibly made them return to the city, and to terrify them the more, there appeared one dawn many gallows all round the city with many of them hanging thereon. However they sallied out at night, placing their lives in the hands of fate, but those who were taken were driven at the musket's mouth into the city. Our men were obliged to do the same to turn them away, and not to let them throw themselves into the moat, or under the walls, and there, either as a result of their wounds or through hunger, they soon ended their lives and infected the atmosphere. A cruel action indeed and inhuman, but necessary; a heart-breaking spectacle, but the siege of Colombo would not have been so pitiful had its plight not justified such extremes. The lack of provisions grew worse, and the greatest of all, so far as the carrying on of the war was concerned, was the lack of match cord. They used ropes, but they were of little use. Others were made of the bark of trees of various kinds, which had to be fetched <sup>P 793</sup> at great risk and danger from the plain within sight of the enemy and under cover of our musketry. They also used hemp from the cordage of the captured ship which they soaked in vinegar and wine and smeared for use with wet powder. In short there was no industry that they did not resort to in order to defend themselves so long as there was some hope of remedy. The preparations of the Enemy on the other hand were so great that 26 ships were brought to take part in that siege, though they never succeeded in keeping together more than 18, besides a large number of smaller craft, wherewith at night they held [the coast] from the point of the bastion of Sta. Cruz to the river of Mutual, so that not even a small *almadia* could go in or out without being promptly captured. Other ships were engaged in bringing reinforcements of men, munitions, and provisions, and their camp was so well provided with all things that they used to say with great truth, speaking of us, that their war was one of rich men, and ours of poor men, as was the case with all the *praças* they captured from us.

However, after the soldiers began to despair of relief, they forgot their bounden duty and the constancy with which the Portuguese in former times suffered similar privations, and thinking only of what their fidelity cost them and [forgetting] that wise saying that an individual must not complain of what a whole City suffers, little by little, they began to desert to the Enemy; and in the course of this siege there went over to the Hollander 60 soldiers, including two retired captains, and also

the greater part of our lascarins and some topazes. This they were able to do very easily, as the bastions and walls were crumbling ; and even by day the sentinel abandoned his post and gained the ramparts of the enemy at the double, which sometimes cost not a little to some of them who were struck down by a spear on the way or killed by their officers ; as did Antonio de Melo Coutinho, Ensign of Captain Alvaro Rodriguez Borralho, who chased one of his soldiers up to the trenches of the Enemy, where he left him dead of a sword thrust without being hurt by the Hollander arquebussery. The General was not able to prevent this disorder, even though he hanged five soldiers who were known to have conspired to run away.

Meanwhile the warfare became one at such close quarters and the Enemy approached so close to the trenches and ramparts, that the most usual weapon was fire, and thereby they ran short of pots of powder and other instruments. They made up for it with flasks and goblets till they found a workman to make potc. And as all things ran short, even the Heavens failed them with its rain, for as that Island is subject to two Winters, and as it is so near the equator where there are constant showers, there is rain even in Spring, except when Heaven wants to chastise ; and moreover the time of that siege was one in which rain usually never fails, but during the months that the siege lasted, | October to May, nothing but the most intense heat was experienced. The level of the lake went so low that it dried up the moat and many other parts of that open space where water is found in other years to a considerable depth. On this account the Enemy was able to make his entrenchments with the least trouble, to live in them without any inconvenience, to dig mines without difficulty and open batteries without hindrance, all of which would have been far different | if the weather had kept its usual course. The Hollander profiting by the formidable weather at last reached the moat, with mounds of earth in front of him for greater security, and our men also began their mines and countermined them, and in these they encountered each other daily. The heat was still greater therein and soon consumed the greater part of the men of greater worth, and as human remedies for any kind of ailment were wanting, for a soldier to fall ill was the same thing as to be included among the dead.

On the 28th of February at dawn they found the bridge over the lake rebuilt in front of the Queen's gate, which our men had dismantled during the last retreat. On that side the Enemy began new approaches, directed against the bastions of the Madre de Deos and S. Sebastião, and the narrow and old

cabook curtain which ran from one to the other. Our men forestalled the Enemy by opening a small ditch, or cove:edway with a wall before it, in front of these bastions and the curtain. On that day the Hollander threw a fire bomb on the redoubt of the Conception, and as it was built of wood and mud and had been dried up by the weather, it burnt with such fury that they had much trouble to put out the fire, both parties fighting obstinately ; but our efforts succeeded and they were able to repair the damage. The end of February arrived and still not the faintest hint of relief was received in Columbo, and as the majority of them despaired of receiving any, unless they doubled the cape of Comorim, the Captain-General sent Captain Manoel Rodriguez Franco in a *paro* of Pangim to meet it, as he had done with singular valour on previous occasions when the bar was blocked. He had orders to go to Manar and if there were no reinforcements from Goa to go in search of them as far as Cape Comorim, leaving there a letter addressed to the Captain-Major of Jafanapataõ, Antonio de Amaral de Menezes, giving an account of the state of Columbo, in which the General complained that many nobles were left to perish and their dominion in Ceylon to come to an end for want of reinforcement. Manoel Rodriguez Franco set sail on the last day of February, and passing successfully through the region guarded by launches and ships, he made for the open sea and at dawn he saw a ship and a pinnace which gave him full chase, but he managed to escape, though with great difficulty. To make things quite certain, the General despatched another message on the second of March in an *almadia* of fishermen ; but neither the one nor the other had the desired effect.

---

## CHAPTER 26.

P 788 THE PORTUGUESE AND THE HOLLANDERS FORTIFY THEMSELVES ANEW ; OUR MEN DELIVER AN ASSAULT WITH LITTLE SUCCESS AND HAVE OTHER ENCOUNTERS, WHILE THE RELIEF FROM GOA DELAYS.

---

As the intentions of the Enemy were quite manifest from the fortifications at Queen's gate, our men again with great labour and industry lined the bastion of S. Sebastião with fascines and earth ; and because the bastion of the Madre

de Deos was in complete ruin and the artillery had fallen down to the ground offering free entry to the Enemy, they built another on the inner side upon masts and thick beams with great industry and danger. And the Enemy seeing that we got rid of our useless men from the side of Mapâne and obtained match cord and fascines, closed that open space by a strong stockade with redoubts, revezes and ramparts from the lake to the sea, which was all very easy for him because of the many pioneers whom the King of Candea gave him ; and from the first of March onwards he cut us off from that relief. And though they exposed many to danger, their deaths cost the Hollander little ; and on the 12th of March he commenced a new fortification and battery, ten paces from the moat [directed] against the bastion of S. Joao ; and on the side of Queen's gate he came quite near the wall with approaches. On the 16th of the month the revez of S. Estavao and a part of the curtain stretching towards S. Joao were found completely destroyed, and almost all the other fortifications of the City were incapable of holding artillery, as the parapets were razed, some guns broken, and others had their mounts destroyed.

In these extremities the soldiers in private meetings and in council discussed the remedy for so great evils, and the majority were inclined to the desperate measure of making an assault. The General and other sober persons dissuaded them from it saying : ' That the month of March was advancing and that there would arrive before long the relief which they expected from a Viceroy so zealous as the Conde de Sarzedas, who had the men recently arrived from the Kingdom ; that the few men of Columbo were scarcely able to defend that praça from within the walls, and that they were still less able to do so with breast exposed against 17,000 men ; that an assault needed the best captains and soldiers who would gain little by killing the men who were working in the trenches ; and that the loss of any man of importance would be a great loss, when men were so scarce.' " What despair, Gentlemen " said the Captain-General " obliges us to expose to such evident peril, what we have preserved at such great cost with such valour and reputation ? What account shall we give to God and to the King, if any disaster befalls us for placing this <sup>P 100</sup> praça in imminent <sup>P 101</sup> danger of loss, when we have every reason to expect its restoration <sup>P 102</sup> | and the relief which, as these delays promise, will be such that we shall have a good opportunity for revenge ? " However the opinion of the Captain of the City and of the majority of the other captains prevailed and they adopted it and picked out the soldiers who were

in good health, and they did not exceed a hundred. They sallied out on the 15th of March at eight in the night through a little port made for a gun at Queen's gate and with more bustle than caution they began the assault, the lightest of them advancing into the Enemy's trenches. They found only one sentinel who sleepishly sounded the alarm. The Enemy camp got under arms, and our men then realized how few they were and retired, and it was fortunate that it was at night, which did not betray their hasty flight, which was even disclosed by the loss of some arquebuses which remained there; and in exchange for this disorder, some soldiers skilled in the business wagered to dismount a cannon which was doing great damage to the bastion of S. Estavao, and in fact they reduced the carriage to pieces, but it only made the gun unworkable for three days.

On the 17th of March before the dawn watch began, in the moonlight, the Enemy suddenly sounded the charge all through his quarters and fired three great volleys without stirring out of his fortifications. Our men got under arms, as they ardently desired an assault on the city so that they might either conquer or die killing the enemy rather than fall at the hands of famine and pestilence. The Hollander then discharged all his mortars charged with stones, but this feint stopped there and no one was hurt. As the Hollander continued to mine the moat, on our side also there was begun on the 21st of the month a countermine leading to their mine, strengthened with palm trees and boards, and when they discovered each other, there was fought a most obstinate encounter between eight of our valiant soldiers and many of the foes, and they drove them back with blunderbusses and pots of powder in such fashion that they abandoned the post, leaving the Portuguese Masters of the mine. Those who distinguished themselves most were the Captain-Major, Antonio de Melo de Castro, Simao Lopes de Basto, Father Damiao Vieyra, Joao de Abreu Fernaes, Manoel Fernandez de Miranda and Manoel de Sant-Iago Gracia. This success had its reverse that same day, for when a gun of Queen's gate was being fired, a box of cartridges and two chests of pots of powder which were at some distance, accidentally took fire and burnt Joao Pereyra Corte Real, a valiant soldier, to the great regret of all, for in him died one of the most determined assailants of the enemy; and as the ruins of the bastion of S. Joao were a great peril, our men mounted another piece on the curtain which ran towards S. Estavao in order to cover that field.

*P 757* On the 10th of March, General Antonio de Souza Coutinho had written another letter to the King of Candea ; and some days passed without an answer, but on the 23rd there appeared four Chingalas on the plain of Mapâne to ask speech ; and *P 425,* when some of our lascarins went to meet them, they asked to say that they brought a letter of the King and requested to be received with the ceremony due to their persons. Thereupon they entered with the usual ceremonies and were recognized to be men of the King's guard. The letter was opened in Council and was found signed by the Hollander General under the declaration : ' By command and order of His Imperial Majesty, My Lord.' And in it after repeating the points which our General had mentioned in his letter, he continued in discourteous terms, unworthy of such a person, abusing as much as he was able the Portuguese nation and their doings in Ceylon, and ennobling in contrast the Hollander nation. Some held that the envoys should be chastised for their impertinence, but they were silenced on the ground that they had entered under a safe conduct, and that they affirmed that they did not know the contents of the letter, and Portuguese Rectitude was content with deeming this action a disgrace to the authors and dismissing them without reply, while it increased the determination of the besieged, though the forces at their command did correspond but ill. As a last hope of putting matters right, the Captain-General also wrote to the Conde de Sarzedas, Viceroy of India, on the 26th of March reminding him of the previous messages and giving him a description of the extremity in which they were, and that the praga would not be able to hold out beyond the Tenth of April because of the want of provisions and because of the pestilence, which carried away daily twenty to thirty persons, especially of the black and the common people, and that he must not expect any further news of Columbo for those were its last groans.

The Captain-General, however, supposed that he was communicating with the Count, who had died on the 13th of January, for the misfortune of India also affected the punishment of Ceylon ; because, had he lived, the relief would have left Goa before the 25th of that very month, nor after he had come to hear of the plight to which that praga was reduced did he think of anything else save of relieving it. But God, who wished to chastise it, disposed that he should be succeeded by one who had seen himself deposed from it,<sup>1</sup> and had decided within himself that his honour would not be

avenged except by its final ruin ; which, had it come from the hands of royal justice, might have had some appearance of reason, but seeing that it was [at the hands] of the enemies, there is no word in the Portuguese language to express it. The new Governor immediately arrested the Vedor General of the Fazenda, Martin Velho Barreto, on whose credit and by whose industry the relief had been got ready, and this imprisonment again rendered it impossible, for it shculd have set out from Goa before the end of the northern monsoon of the *Vara* which blows during the whole of March and before the beginning of the monsoon of *Cachão* from the south in the beginning of April, in order to reach Manár where the Captain-Major, Antonio de Amaral de Menezes, P 788 had brought all the provisions and | the necessary munitions and money, which his great zeal could get together, because if they set sail from there before the wind, | they could not P 428 be prevented from entering, as was seen on former occasions when that bar was blockaded, especially in the year [1]654 when the Hollander stranded two of their ships in their vain attempt to disturb the flotilla conducted, by the Captain-Major Estavaõ Soares de Melo. And though in this siege they had a greater number of ships and light vessels, the ships would not be able to hinder it, because they could not approach the shore along which the flotillas come coasting, and because our vessels have a recognized advantage over the light vessels of the Enemy, and even if some should be lost, the loss of Columbo was something far greater ; and a relief is always a gain even though only a part of it reaches the destination.

The enemy ever feared that relief might come to Columbo by way of Manár, but when he saw the monsoon over, he was freed from that fear and that of having to storm Columbo, and he went on pounding with all kinds of batteries at the time when the pestilence was raging most fiercely, for so great was the mortality among the people of the country in the streets, that it harrowed their hearts much more than the war or the famine, for they did not spare dogs and cats or any other kind of animal, nor even the elephants used for work, and at length they even fed on human flesh, and the mornings saw the dead in pieces in the streets, and the General's order to place at the mouth of a gun a mother who had devoured her children, did not suffice to put a stop to it. And as the contagion passed to the white people, there were days on which 25 soldiers died in the hospital : and usually at this time there died daily from eight to 12, and they had sometimes to put seventeen together in the same grave, and as there were now few persons for work,

and the graves had not the depth necessary for so many bodies, the extraordinary drought cracked the earth from which issued a pestilential stench and such vapours that it reduced all to a state in which they did not seem to be living beings, and the corruption of the atmosphere was increased by the foul vapours from the Enemy's field where also there died many of our foes; and all this spectacle made men frantic.

In order that the city might not fall by famine and pestilence sooner than by war, the General resolved to feed when necessary out of the King's granaries, all those who were in Columbo, whites and blacks, who were able to bear arms or be of some use for its defence as were soldiers, casados, lascarinas, Topazes, mariners, workmen of all sorts, and pioneers, which reached the number of 2200, rank and file. But this was however so meagre that a Portuguese casado received daily one measure of rice, with which he had to sustain himself and his wife and children, but they all bore it with such <sup>P 700</sup> constancy, without it ever entering into their thoughts to seek to be relieved from that oppression save by force of arms. The price of all kinds of provisions reached <sup>P 426.</sup> so excessive a figure, as must needs happen, that a measure of rice cost five xerafins, a ration of cooked rice two xerafins, a root of country beet one xerafin, an egg three, a hen twenty-five, and so on of the rest, because there was so little of everything. In this general scarcity the two Captains-General, the Capuchin Fathers and those of the Society of Jesus helped as much as they were able, and also the casados who still had some provisions, as for instance Manoel da Fonseca Moniz, Gaspar de Araujo Pereyra, Luis de Macedo; and in the house of the Captain of the City, Manoel Marques Gorjao, many alms were given, and in this way were relieved with some greater liberality the confined women, and the wives of the noble cavaliers who had died in war; and the daily alms did not fail the poor mendicants.

The lively bombardment of the enemy almost laid low the bastion of S. Estavao, but not so badly, however, as the others, owing to the pluck and industry of its captain Lourenco Ferreyra de Brito. To that of S. Joao the Enemy had easy access, but not to expose himself a second time, he continued his mines in order to raze it completely. Our men began a countermine at which those who still retained some strength laboured, and the foremost and the most constant were, Father Damiao Vieyra, Simao Lopez de Basto, Joao de Abreu Ferraes, and Ruy Lopez Coutinho. When the 4th of

April arrived, they began a new battery against the bastions of S. Sebastião and the Madre de Deus, and the curtain which connected them; and another at the foot of the Cross of two cannon, which commanded the redoubt of the Conception, which they soon dismantled, preventing us from defending the moat which they captured on the fifth. They erected new trenches on its wall with heavy boards with loopholes opened in them, from which they did us great damage, and to evade this, our men commenced a countermine to open into the moat, which when the enemy perceived, he threw quantities of dry wood to burn our dike of resistance; but fighting fiercely each party defended his portion, and without great loss to us, the fire was put out.

---

### CHAPTER 27.

THE HOLLANDER GENERAL DIES, THE SIEGE IS CONTINUED  
OUR GENERAL ATTENDS TO THE DISTRIBUTION  
OF PROVISIONS, AND WHAT TOOK PLACE  
TILL THE BELGA CAPTURED THE  
BASTION OF S. JOÃO.

---

The enemy General, Geraert Hulffz, was killed in this encounter, because there was no fray in which he did not take part nor any work at which he was not present, but was ever the first | in danger. He fell by an arquebus shot <sup>F 457</sup>  
<sup>P 800</sup> which hit him in the breast, | but whose hand despatched it is not known. The enemies felt this death very keenly, and had he died in the first assault, it is certain they would not have continued the siege; but as they were now so superior on account of fresh reinforcements which reached them, and as they saw our helplessness, they had no excuse for desisting from that undertaking. Our people went on approaching the Enemy by the countermine of the moat, and on the ninth of April the Captain-Major, Antonio de Melo de Castro, the Sergeant-Major Antonio Leão, Captains Diogo de Souza de Castro and Manoel de Sant'Iago Gracia, Father Damiao Vieyra, Joao de Abreu Ferrao, Simao Lopes de Basto and some others encountered the enemy in these subterranean passages and with blunderbusses and pots of powder they drove him from the post. On the next day our men threw into the moat a great quantity of dry wood

soaked in pitch, and set it on fire to burn their mantlets, and some who exposed themselves in order to put out the fire, lost their lives being shot down by Father Damião Vieyra, Captain Manoel Gurreyro Neues and the Modeliar of Nigombo, a valiant Chingalâ who was in our service. On the 11th the Portuguese placed a gun on the dike against the mines which could be descried from there, but it was of little avail, for the Enemy repaired it, whereupon they removed the gun and took no further pains about that post, and though they desired to begin another countermine, now there was no one able to do the work nor any taste for impossible remedies. And as the batteries went on, our men again encountered the Enemy on the 14th of the month in the countermine, and fighting with their wonted courage and spirit, they compelled him to give up the work. And from the little gate they had opened in the bastion S. Joao, our men commenced a closed way, because now the war was waged principally under ground, and we cannot mention all the combats which took place there, for day and night they met frequently and sometimes exchanged fisticuffs, those who frequently took part in these scuffles being Simão Lopes de Basto, Father Damião Vieyra, Joao de Abreu Ferraõ, Ruy Lopes Coutinho and others.

On one of these occasions the structures of the enemy took fire and some were killed, and they were now so sick of the war and their men came so unwillingly to these encounters, in which they always lost men and reputation, that if some relief had arrived at this time, it would not have been difficult to defeat them, for contrariwise the spirit of the Portuguese seemed to increase in this extremity, and even the Religious assisted in the greatest dangers, some hastening to console the sick or to give the Sacraments to the dying, others labouring in the work of fortification, carrying fascines and others in the frays of greatest danger, fighting with all valour, as for instance Father Manoel Velez, | Father Antonio Nunes, <sup>F 4570</sup> and the oft named Father Damião Vieyra, all of the Society <sup>Pass.</sup> of Jesus; the Father Visitor, | Friar Francisco de Madre de Deos, of the Order of St. Francis, Father Friar Paulo do Rosario, of the Order of S. Dominic, Father Friar Pedros de Castelbranco of the Order of St. Augustine, and many others who spent the nights at their posts and by spiritual conversations and words of consolation encouraged the soldiers to endure.

We must now give an account of the relief of Goa so long expected in Columbo. It consisted of 21 rowing ships and two merchant galliots, in which were munitions and warlike

provisions for a month, many new raised soldiers, and not a few taken from the hospital and scarcely convalescent, under the command of Captain-Major Francisco de Seyxas Cabreyra who had been appointed by the Count Viceroy, who being a newly arrived gentleman in India and distrustful by character, was in this case misled by the person in whom he most confided, and who was interested in the election of one who had not done badly on land, but was never thought to be anything on sea ; and they say that the Count Viceroy before his death had determined to set him aside and appoint another in his place, but as he did not do so before dying, it served as an excuse to the one who succeeded him and who had decided to do nothing of his own accord. This fleet set out from Goa on the last day of March, when it should have set sail on the first of February, for the reason we have pointed out, and that was the decision of the Count written by him in the General-Orders, and we have ourselves heard him say that if God spared his life, he would not be in Goe on the 25th of January; and as we must believe his sincerity, we cannot but be surprised that the contrary was written to Columbo in excuse for the delay, misrepresenting the state in which the fleet was after the imprisonment of the Vedor da fazenda, Martim Velho Barreto, or before it. What the Count said of the state in which he and Martim Velho, on his credit, had placed it, and what was written to Columbo can be true only in different senses, though it is but a frivolous excuse, because it is known that the imprisonment was devised to frustrate the relief. But as Columbo had to fall by divine decree, it must needs happen that everything should make for its ruin. The [fleet] went past Coulaõ without speaking, and on the 12th of April it was sighted by an Enemy ship which was in Calicoulaõ, and forthwith she made for the deep sea fearing peradventure to meet it. At dawn on the following day off Cape Comorin the fleet became ill governed and divided into two squadrons ; but as the breeze was fresh [the enemy ship] approached, especially when it appeared that the Captain-Major was retiring, and the enemy took courage thereby to fire on the ships. The fleet moored that night behind the cape near land, and on the following morning the ship came again in search of it and found none | to attack P 802 her save Simao de Souza de Tavora in the ship which he had supplied at his own cost to accompany this relief. And though he attacked with great resolution | and valour, to the no small surprise of the natives, who were watching the action from land, the game was most unequal and the wind was greatly in favour of the Enemy, who realizing the danger

of being burnt, by repeated fire destroyed her mast and sent her to the bottom, capturing Simão de Souza and a few other soldiers, for the rest escaped by swimming.

This happened under the eyes of the Captain-Major who went to cast anchor in Manapar and afterwards remained in Tutucorim, course of action keenly resented in India but unpunished, for if the ship chased him, he ought to have made up his mind to burn her, and if he had shown some resolution, even that danger would have been averted. Francisco de Seyxas Cabreyra was a native of Ceylon and had a Mother, Brothers, and Nepheus in the country ; but neither these nor his good name made him succour the country of his birth. The Enemy received tidings of this encounter on 15th April from that very ship, which made them press the siege still more, and with six strengthened cannon he laid low the two bastions and the curtain of S. Sebastião and the Madre de Deos ; and as the balls now fell in the streets and they could not defend the walls, our men blocked with stockades of palmtrees the principal street which began at Queen's Gate, and the two orillons of the two bastions and placed there two pieces of artillery. The grenades caused equal damage, and one which fell in the bastion Madre de Deos hit Captain Manoel Guerreiro Neves and burnt him so, that he soon died after having conducted himself with great valour in this siege. On the same day there deserted to the Enemy, Nicolao de Mouro de Brito from the bastion of S. Estavao, where he had been put in chains during the siege on the orders of the Count Viceroy and the direction of His Majesty for his part in the expulsion of the Conde de Obidos who was arrested and deposed from the Office of Viceroy of India.<sup>1</sup> This gentleman took with him three soldiers, his servants. The same was done on the next day by the retired Captain, Manoel Fragoso, from his post of sentinel at the breach of the countermine, but afterwards when he was set down in Negapatao by the Hollander, he was taken by order of the Governor and hanged.

The affairs of Columbo reached the last stage of misery, and everything necessary, whether for defence or for sustenance of life, was wanting, and there did not fail to arise some complaints against the factor of the King, because it was thought that he distributed some provisions contrary to justice and mercy, but the General dissembled what he could not altogether remedy, and ordered that everything should be distributed in his presence, the duty of those who govern in similar plights when it is neither safe to chastise nor right

---

<sup>1</sup> By a seditious movement, 22nd October, 1653.

to dissemble. The Enemy, seeing that there was less diligence in repairing the fortifications, strengthened his batteries <sup>p 125.</sup> the more, and as the war, famine, and pestilence had consumed <sup>p 103</sup> the pioneers, it became necessary to make use of the men and women slaves of the residents and to give them for their sustenance a quarter measure of rice per day, wherewith they somehow kept up the little strength they had. Shortly afterwards, Adriaen Rothaeus, Governor of Gâle, the first in power and authority in the Island, succeeded to the command of the Enemy camp, and he wrote a letter to the Captain-General in which he represented the state of the praça and called upon him to surrender, giving him the news of the death of the Conde de Sarzedas, of the succession of Manoel Mascarenhas Homem, of the encounter of the relief with their ships, falsely exaggerating its destruction, and that Simão de Souza de Tavora and the other prisoners confessed the impossibility of relief either by way of Manâr or across the Gulf without falling in with the ships which were lying in wait for it ; asking him not to expect that that fleet would not stand the monsoon of the south, and not to blame him, if owing to his persistence in this obstinacy he should afterwards refuse the fair terms which he was then able to give. The General Antonio de Souza Coutinho replied to the letter in this manner.

' When General Geraert Hulffz had a victorious army, I replied to his letter of ninth November, as befits my duty as a loyal liege of the King, my Lord, informing him of the spirit and provisions, which I had at the time, the which he experienced, being defeated in the assault he delivered on this City, where in another encounter he was killed. Even now, I lack nothing to enable me to defend the praça which His Majesty was pleased to entrust to me ; and the failure of the relief is not enough to make me give up hope in the divine mercy which has defended us ; and should this be denied to me on account of my sins, I will fulfil my duty with my life ; and thus I answer the recent letter of your Honour (such was the term used by the Enemy) whom may God keep, &c. Columbo 19th of April, 1656! Antonio de Souza Coutinho.' And to show by some means that he was able to make good his words, some soldiers sallied out that night to disquiet the enemy in his trenches among them the Captain Afonso Correa, Ignacio Fernandez Funchal, Father Damiao Vieyra, Simao Lopes de Basto and Joao de Abreu Ferraõ. Issuing through Queen's gate they attacked the neighbouring quarters and having gained their object by various shots from their blunderbusses, they returned in good order.

And as those who used to work in the countermine were now without strength, they thought it better to place some barrels of powder there, near the mine of the Enemy, so that both the one and the other might end there, a resolution more desperate than valorous, and above all dangerous, for on the 22nd April, when the Enemy was hurling fire in that direction, it caught some matches and almost set fire ~~P 222~~  
~~P 224~~ to the countermine, and it was only Simão Lopes de Basto  
~~P 224~~ and Joao de Abreu Ferraõ | who hastened to the scene, and throwing themselves on the fire put it out at great risk, while the Enemy were firing their muskets on them, from which they fortunately escaped with great credit to themselves. But to show their gallantry, rather than for any practical purpose, the General ordered some soldiers of note to embark in some of the *manchusas*, which we had on the lake, and disquiet the Enemy in the rear. There set out at dawn on the 23rd, Manoel Ferreyra Gomez, Father Damiao Vieyra, Simão Lopes de Basto, Joao de Abreu Ferraõ, Joseph Cuchilha, Sebastiao Rodriguez, Ignacio Fernandez Funchal, Manoel Pereyra Matozo, Joao Pereyra, with many others whose names are not known. At day-break they attacked the fortifications facing Queen's gate, giving and receiving charges to the sound of the instruments of war. The Enemy with their superior forces only defended themselves and our men retired with gallantry and order.

As a final warning the General despatched a dhowey with a message to the Governor of India mentioning in this letter the progress of that siege and the imminence of the loss of Ceylon which he foresaw would fall for want of a relief, about which they troubled themselves so little in Goa that when the news of the first assault reached there, after the death of the Count Viceroy, it was ordered to be celebrated by the ringing of bells, giving out that the siege of Columbo was raised, and sending tidings of the victory to His Majesty, a thing which was not done when it was lost. The enemy began a new battery on the 25th of April directed against the revez of the bastion S. Joao, and as our men had now no defences to oppose, they resolved to remove the powder which they had placed in the mine inside the bastion, as it exposed the defenders to greater danger, and they opened a small gate in the revez of the bastion of E. Estavaõ, so that they might sally through it into the open space.

When May set in, there settled complete despair in the hearts of the survivors. On the first of the month the Hollander General sent a letter asking the prisoners of his nation in exchange for as many Portuguese, desiring (it seems) to

show thereby how much we stood in need of that supplement. The eight persons who were still alive, of those who were taken prisoner on the day of the assault, were given in exchange for as many of those who surrendered at Calaturé. The Enemy approached closer to the bastion of S. Estavaõ, and on the 4th of May there sallied from the recently opened doorway, Simão Lopes de Basto, Father Damiao Vieyra, Joao de Abreu Terraõ, Thome Ferreyra Leyte, Joao Pereyra Matozo, Ignacio Fernandez Funchal, Manoel Nugueyra Freyre, Antonio Madeyro Cabral, Manoel Ferreyra Gomez, Sebastião Rodriguez, and the other companions who also volunteered for such ventures, to deliver an assault in their trenches. They sallied at midday with blunderbusses, pots and flasks of powder, and falling suddenly upon the trench, <sup>x 420.</sup> they made the Enemy retire. He was reinforced by one <sup>r 805</sup> of his captains who brought a corps of soldiers, but he was killed there, and he must have been a man of some note to judge from the demonstrations they made with three simultaneous volleys of musketry. The others retired, and our few soldiers within sight of their camp dismantled that fortification and set fire to the fascines and palmtrees where-with it was constructed, and retired with great gallantry, while the Enemy was unable to believe in the face of such feats that the fugitives spoke truth when they declared that our forces were already reduced to nothing; and in fact they were so few that in various posts the captains found themselves with only three or four soldiers, and consequently they manned the bastion of S. Joao with the few casados who still had life and strength.

However, realizing our weakness, the Enemy determined, after razing all the defences of the bastion S. Joao, to enter the city on that side, as they had always intended, and one Sunday, the 7th of May, he easily advanced to the top of that bastion, as its defenders were very few. D. Constantino de Menezes, who was the sentinel, gave the alarm, and Captain D. Diogo de Vasconcelos rushed to its assistance with the few survivors under his banner. They resisted with the utmost valour, preventing their entry as long as their lives lasted, and killing many enemies. After taking the bastion, they attacked the other bastion of wood which had been built further inside, but there they found greater resistance, because it was defended with somewhat larger forces by Simão Lopes de Basto, Sebastião Pereyra, a retired captain, Father Friar Paulo de Rosario, Vicente de Silva, Manoel Figueyra with some others, and though they killed and wounded them with great fury and determination, the Enemy

charged with all his forces and they were forced to retire, beaten though well avenged, leaving the Captain Sebastião Pereyra and Vicente da Silva dead, and taking Father Friar Paulo wounded with two musket shots.

The Hollander wished to follow up the victory and with picked and lusty troops he attacked with wild resolution the two streets which our men had barricaded in view of this danger. From them there sallied out to meet them, the Captain-Major, Antonio de Melo de Castro, the Captain of the city, Manoel Marquez Gorjaõ, and other cavaliers who accompanied them, and after the first volleys of arquebuses and blunderbusses, they attacked the Enemy at the point of the spear and sword, with such determination and valour that in this encounter they lost some captains and officers of great repute among them, and many soldiers, without desisting from the advance, because in place of the killed and the wounded there succeeded fresh troops; but they were not able to gain their object, for our men thrice drove them back to the bastion, leaving that short stretch of the street strewn with killed and wounded and burnt, and five banners in the hands of the Portuguese, who in the third retreat pursued them with such hardihood that fighting furiously in the staircase, | the one and the other entered the bastion through the gate, but as they were few and the might of the Enemy was there, | they were compelled to retire. On

<sup>F 308</sup> our side there died in this encounter, Antonio Valente de Campos, Andre Afonso, Manoel Fernandez, Antonio Menzes and others, and the captain of the City, Manoel Marquez Gorjaõ, was so badly wounded that he died on the following day, without seeing the final fall of Columbo which he had defended with the utmost valour and unwearied care. They say that the absence of two *espalha fato* (guns) which should have been fired from the neighbouring convent of S. Domingos was greatly felt.

## CHAPTER 28.

### OF THE RESISTANCE THAT WAS MADE TILL COLUMBO WAS SURRENDERED, AND DISPUTES BETWEEN THE HOLLANDERS AND THE CHINGALÂ

Not less was the combat which was taking place at this time in the redoubt of the Conception, in which were captains Diogo de Souza de Castro, Domingos Coelho de Ayala [and] Manoel de Sant-Iago Garcia. With a few soldiers and with all

kinds of arms they worked marvels on this occasion, till the enemy attacked them with all his mighty forces, whereupon they retired to the casement of the bastion where the battle was continued and our men discharged a mortar which did great destruction on the enemy. Here Diogo de Souza de Castro was wounded on the head by a bullet, and though he fell senseless, the fray was soon resumed for about an hour, and the Enemy thinking that a greater force was now opposing him, and fearing the spear and sword, plied his grenades and other devices of fire from without. But as at this time they learnt from an ensign that our men were already fighting the Enemy in the streets and saw that they were being cut off and would not be able to escape being burnt to death without any advantage, they resolved to cut a way through the enemies and to join the main body of our men in the stockades, where they were received with great pleasure, for they had already numbered them among the dead.

When the Enemy gained the bastion of S. Joao and the wooden counter bastion, great was the loss he sustained from the artillery of the S. Cruz and of the breastwork, which kept up an incessant fire, and bodies and banners were seen hurled in the air with such destruction that they felt compelled to descend a second time to the streets, where they were received by Captain-Major Antonio de Melo de Castro, Antonio de Magalhaes Araujo, Afonso Correa, Diogo de Souza de Castro, Joao de Abreu Ferraõ, Simao Lopez de Basto, Joao Pereyra, Sebastiao Rodriguez, Manoel de Seyxas,

*P 807* Francisco | Pereyra, Diogo de Souza de Carvalho, Nicolaõ Pereyra de Sam Payo, Fathers Antonio Nunes and Manoel Velez of the Society of Jesus, and some others with furious resolution, with deaths and wounds on both sides, but more on the side of the Enemy; | but after keeping up the fray *F 430.* for a long while, they were obliged to retire, when much superior forces were brought in. On our side there died in this combat Captain Afonso Correa, Nicolao Pereyra de Sam Payo, and Father Antonio Nunes, who showed during this siege no less charity and zeal for the salvation of souls than valour on the occasions which he did not decline. Some were wounded and among them Captain Diogo de Souza de Castro with two sword cuts and Sebastiao Rodriguez with one.

At this time General Antonio de Souza Coutinho passed from the breastwork to the stockade in which was the Captain-Major of the field, under great danger because the enemy swept the street, and they being all encouraged by his presence, it was decided to attack the bastion again and to drive the Enemy therefrom, but they would not let the General expose

his person, lest any mischance should imperil the City, and on the contrary they forced him to return with no less danger, because he was already recognized by his arms. The General reinforced the few who were in the stockade with the Sergeant-Major Antonio Leão and Captain Alvaro Rodriguez Borrelho, Manoel de Abreu Godinho, Manoel de Veyga and a few other soldiers taken from the occupied posts. With this reinforcement our men attacked so valiantly and with such obstinacy, that it appeared to the few men who were in the breastwork, in which was the former General Francisco de Melo de Castro, that the bastion was completely wrested; and they cried victory, which made him, in spite of being past 80 years of age and very infirm, rush into the street where bullets were flying about, and with gallant impetuosity draw his sword and exhort all those whom he met to follow him, shedding his blood twice for his King and for his Nephew, the Captain-Major of the field, whom he supposed to be both victorious and in danger. But to put him out of danger, they dragged him by force into the breastwork. Our men likewise retired from the bastion in which they left a large number killed and wounded, having lost some companions and others being badly wounded.

Gaspar de Araujo Pereyra, a veteran soldier of that Island, was elected captain of the city, whose advanced age did not hinder him from giving proof of his valour in this siege. He picked out a few casados who were still able to bear arms, and joined Captain-Major Antonio de Melo de Castro and the others above named, not excluding Father Manoel Velez, which made up a corps of less than 30 men, with whom he attacked the wooden bastion, wherein they were received by more than 500 Hollanders with the advantage of position and numbers and dispositions of body. But determined to conquer or die, they entered it, having first thrown much fire on the Enemy and setting fire to the three barrels of powder which they had placed in the casement and they made the enemy, white and black, fly through the air. Then they continued the fight with their swords for more than <sup>F 33</sup> an hour with such valour that the Enemy again realized the superiority of the Portuguese nation in this method of warfare over them and over others, and giving way before such undaunted determination, he withdrew to the other bastion. Our men pursued them and being unable to move the door leading to it, because the enemy had locked it, Father Manoel Velez promptly fetched a handspike and a saw with which they soon brought it down, and there entered the Sergeant-Major, Antonio Leão (who took part in everything), the

Captains Antonio de Magalhaes Araujo, Domingos Coelho de Ayala, the adjutant Thome Ferreyra, Antonio da Fonseca Homem, Francisco de Albuquerque, Francisco de Melo Gouvea and Father Manoel Velez, who were followed by Captain-Major Antonio de Melo de Castro and the Captain of the City, Gaspar de Araujo Pereyra, encouraging all and doing marvels, ten men against an army.

Here was fought a most stupendous combat, and our men were attacked by the flower of the enemy's troops and by all who were able to stand in the circuit of the bastion or ply their musketry from without. On our side also there hastened to their assistance all those whose gallantry did not permit them to look on while their comrades conquered or died without keeping them company, when the defence of their own position permitted it. They burnt many enemies with goblets and flasks of powder, they killed many with sword and spear, but accidents being added to misfortunes, one of our barrels of powder took fire and burnt Ruy Lopes Coutinho, Captains Domingos Pires and Manoel Correa de Barros, the adjutant, Francisco Ariays, Simao Lopes de Basto, Manoel de Sant-Iago, Francisco Pereyra and Bernardo de Castro, nearly all of whom died in a short time, and this disaster here deprived us of a final victory. For by this time the best soldiers we had were killed, and among them Manoel de Abreu Godinho, Manoel de Seyxas Valente, Ensign and retired Captain, Antonio Caminha de Azevedo, Diogo Jacques, and many others, and there were wounded Manoel Caldeyra de Brito, Joao de Abreu Ferraõ, the Dissava Andre de Seyxas de Silva, Manoel Nugueyra Freyre, the adjutant Manoel de Souza, Manoel Salgado each with a bullet wound, Lourenco Paes with three, Antonio da Costa Monteyro with five, and Father Manoel Velez with two, who had laboured in this siege with all valour at various posts and always in those of the greatest peril. Worn out with a whole day's fighting, they could well be excused for retiring to the counter bastion of wood, which, to the no small disgrace of such a heavy force of Holland | , they held till the city was surrendered ; and Captain-Major Antonio de Melo de Castro, who was not a man given to exaggeration, was persuaded, (as I heard him say) that if by the end of that day they had 12 men alive and hale, they would have mastered that <sup>7431.</sup> bastion, which is a mighty proof of the terror which those few men had been able to instil in so numerous an enemy. It was seven in the night when the Captain-Major retired to the stockade of the street of S. Domingos with 10 or 12 casados, both the one and the other badly worn out with a whole

day's fighting, leaving some companions to garrison the counter bastion. The Belga lost that day nearly 500 men, seven captains and other officers, the bravest men he had, in exchange for 120 killed, wounded and burnt on our side, including gentlemen and captains of great repute, and the greater part of the posts of the city, being without a garrison, were as good as surrendered, when they lost their last defenders.

During that night our men toiled to repair the two stockades with some poor defences. The Enemy also repaired the bastion of S. Joao with new parapets, protecting themselves with thick boards, in which they bored loopholes so as not to be exposed to our fire, and turning the artillery towards the city and its streets and towards the breastwork to which the captured bastion was a cavaleiro. Day dawn of the eighth of May saw them fortified, discharging their artillery and musketry in all directions whereby they were soon able to dismantle the breastwork in which there remained at their great peril the few defenders who were in the city, who, though they despaired of being able to maintain themselves, were content to meet death in the defence of their Law and their King. The Religious transported the munitions and other necessaries at the great peril of their lives under showers of bullets, and among others there signalized themselves Fathers, Friar Francisco da Madre de Deos, and Friar Pedro de Castelbranco ; and all were expecting that the Enemy would attack them at any hour, for they were able to do so from many sides, from the barricaded streets, along the beach, since the breastwork was taken, for it could not be opposed, because the captured bastion was higher and the breastwall of the curtain stood in the way. And to disquiet the few workers still more all that night long, there was not an hour when they did not give the alarm ; and during those two nights many deserted to the Enemy.

The Captain of the field and the Captain of the city asked relief from the General, because they were completely unaided, but those who had hitherto entertained some hope of maintaining themselves, now lost all hope of saving Columbo and did not heed the proclamations or the officers, because so many valiant actions had been fruitless and they found themselves on the 9th of May with victuals for only eight days, and that with great difficulty, with powder, munitions, and matches, for two hours fighting, | almost all the men dead, and the living consumed by a protracted war and continuous famine, a state in which they seemed led to a sacrifice rather than to the defence of a praça, which they now considered to be incapable of obtaining terms according |

to the new method of warfare, because such was the tyranny of those who had the greater might that they tried to put an end to valour by such devices ; and on account of all these reasons, despair began to rise in the hearts of those intrepid men who had performed extremes of human endeavour in order to save their honour, and if they had had in the matter of relief the good fortune which they had in their valorous actions during the seven months of siege, no encomium would have been too great to extol the feats they accomplished, and had the praga held out, the feats performed for its preservation would have been further ennobled, and the deeds of valour buried under the ultimate ruin of Ceylon would have been handed down as a memorial for ages to come. But for these very reasons the General and the higher Officers attempted to hide this hopelessness and to obtain such terms of honourable surrender as would be a testimony and a worthy justification of their extreme constancy.

The Procurator of the city, chosing an occasion when the Captain-General was with the clerk of the fazenda, made a protestation and requisition in the name of all the residents : ' That he should think of the safety of their wives and families, or else they would seek a remedy themselves, and that if it were not done promptly, the dawn of the day would find the City deserted.' This step which under other circumstances would have been severely reprimanded had, in the present case, a great excuse. The General, however, did not yield to the request, but finding that such was the view of the majority, he summoned a Council in the Convent of St. Dominic, to which besides the old General, Francisco de Melo de Castro, there came the captains of the City and of the Field, the Sergeant-Major, the Captains of the Companies, the Deputies of the Council, the Officials of the Camera, the Ministers of the Royal Fazenda and the Prelates of the Religious Orders ; and therein it was decided that, considering the miserable state to which pestilence, famine, and war had reduced them, they should try by all fair means and precaution to see whether the Enemy was willing to grant terms, which they all doubted, because he had already captured the foremost position of the praga and had full knowledge that it was completely indefensible ; but they thought they should not omit this measure, leaving in the hands of God and their good fortune what was to be obtained thereby. For this task they then nominated Lourenço Ferreyra de Brito, Jeronimo de Lucena Tavares and Diogo Leytaõ de Souza, to whom they handed certain capitulations, and owing to the diligence they displayed in the Enemy's camp, they were

nearly all accepted, the Hollander being content by a single praca to gain an Island so well known to fame, and so coveted by the world. The terms of capitulation which the Belga accepted in the name of the King of Ceylon and of the States of the United Provinces were the following.

*P 811* | 'That if on the following morning they deliver up the praca, they will observe the following conditions :—That the Religious and Ecclesiastics may take with them the images, reliquaries, sacred vessels, candlesticks, silver vessels, ornaments, and all things that pertain to divine worship | and *F 432* the service of the Churches ; that they may depart with all the movable property they may have, and that two convenient places will be set apart for them till the hour of their departure. That the two Generals shall be conveyed at the first opportunity to this coast, and if they want, to the coast of Choromandel, and they may take their men and women slaves and servants, all their goods, gold, silver, rings, jewels and money, and till they embark they shall remain in their houses. That the persons of the Captain of the City, Captain-Major of the Field, Vedor de fazenda, Sergeant-Major and the family of the deceased captain of the City, shall be treated with the respect due to them, and they shall be protected from all outrages and insults, and they may take all their gold, silver, money, linen, and garments, along with the tapestry and other ornaments of their houses, and in what concerns men and women slaves, regard will be paid to the quality of the persons. That the surviving captains and the retired captains of infantry shall march out with their insignia, and shall go to the coast of Choromandel, being treated according to their quality, and they may take whatever goods and movables their slaves and freed men, whose number is left to the discretion of the Hollander General, can carry : That the Infantry shall march out with all their baggage, banners unfurled, matches lighted, balls in their mouths, drums beating and shall give up their arms in the quarters of the Belga General, and the discharged Portuguese shall go to Europe, but the casados and those born in India, to the coast of Choromandel, being meanwhile maintained at the charge of the Company : That the Vreadores, Ouvidor, Judges and other officers of the Camera, the Factor and the officers of the fazenda and of justice, shall have the same privileges and liberties as the Captain of the City and the Vedor da fazenda : That if any one wishes to remain under the obedience of the Company, he shall be treated with all favour and civility according to his quality and in the possession of his property and movables ; but if at any time they

should wish to quit that country, their landed properties shall be left to the discretion of the Governor of the praça, and the citizens, casados, and Portuguese of quality and their children, that shall remain in Columbo shall, when they quit the place, be treated like other superior officers, but the casados and Natives of the country shall be at the discretion of the Hollander Governor. That the merchants, white and black, and foreign traders shall go to the coast of Chormandel with the same favours and liberties as are granted to the officers. That the Modeliares, Araches, Lascarinis and their followers shall be favoured and treated like the Portuguese themselves. That all the sick and wounded shall be looked after in the hospitals and in their houses till they recover their health to embark, and that they shall be

*PS. 12* given the necessaries | at the cost of the Company, if they have it not, or if the fazenda of the King of Portugal does not suffice. That in the entering of the city the officer., casados, soldiers and foot soldiers, women and children, shall be under the protection of the Hollander Governor against all affronts and violences whatsoever. That the vessels approaching that bar to relieve Columbo shall, until the 30th of May, have notice given them of the surrender of the praça and shall go away unmolested till they are | out of sight [of the City].<sup>r 433</sup>

All this was made and signed on Thursday, the 11th of May. They did not agree to grant pardon to Simão Lopes de Basto nor to the Hollanders who had fled to the City during the siege, or who had come over to us in the preceding years ; and it was a great mistake not to let them escape.

Thése capitulations were accepted by the Portuguese and confirmed on the 12th of May by the Hollanders, and in fulfilment of them the praça was handed over ; and it is quite clear that it was the confident bravery with which they bore themselves in this siege and especially in the final encounters, that wrung from the enemy such honourable terms, and it might be said with truth that they traded with other people's goods, with one who having experienced the resistance, would not believe that what they were told was true. On that day, the 12th of May, there marched out to lay down arms, 94 soldiers, Captains and Officers, in the manner aforesaid, many of them sick and wounded and walking with sticks in hand ; the casados who were not so numerous, but equally emaciated and feeble and with their banners displayed, drums beating, matches lighted, balls in their mouths, swords and arquebuses were carried by those who were able to carry them. It seemed to the Enemy that this was a deception of ours and he frequently asked how so few men, so disabled,

managed to do so much in the final encounter and to garrison 33 posts. When they realized that there were no others who were able to stand on their legs, they gave proofs of great repentance for having so freely granted what would have been theirs.

The Enemy promptly placed in the city a little more than 2,000 Europeans, because all the others who took part in the siege had been killed, along with some from the South and many Chingalas who were in their service; and as their people belonged to various nations and were furious at so protracted a resistance, so much expense and so many deaths, there were not wanting disorders contrary to the terms of capitulation, either with the permission of the superior officers or because the latter were not able to restrain them, for many were the houses that were pillaged, a thing which those who surrendered never escape. It is not known for certain what was the loss of the one and the other Enemy, but it can be sufficiently realized from what has been said, and though the same may be affirmed of our people, it may be more clearly ascertained from the aforesaid letters of the General of the 24th of April, in which he says as follows : ' Now

*P.S. 15* there is no one who can work or fight, because the pestilence rages with great fury, so that up to this day more than 200 soldiers and casados have died of it, and there are in the hospital more than 150 who can be numbered among the dead, for no one escaped this pestilential disease and they fall ill daily and the posts are without defenders. Above all the famine is of such a kind, and this country is scorched to such an extent, that of the pestilence and hunger there have died more than 5,000 persons of the common people and people of the country, and all the others will soon die, and already there is none to bury so many dead persons, for the living are unable to stand on their legs, and these horrible sights make men stupefied and dazed.' The King of Candea remained outside the quarters during the siege, and it was not possible to find out at the time what terms the Hollanders had made with him, but considering the arrogance of that sovereign, it is believed that he would not have helped them to such a great extent save under large promises, which he soon found were set at naught in punishment of his hatred and blindness, because though he had afflictions from the Portuguese, he could have learnt from the other Eastern Kings which of the two was the better neighbour.

When the Belga took possession of the city, all the men of Candea also wished to enter, but only some of the greater personages were admitted, and the others were cudgled back, when they attempted to enter, and owing to these and other

demonstrations, the Natives were so displeased, that on the 16th of the month they raised their camp and went to the King. The latter then began by means of secret emissaries to stir up the casados and soldiers who had received affronts from the Hollanders, inviting them to his service with offers of favour and lands to live in, and signifying that there would be fresh war with the Hollander. There went over to him about 300 men, white and black, some of them being men of note and valour, and besides fulfilling his promise, he allowed them to build Churches wherever they liked and to celebrate the divine offices publicly, saying that he would not forbid his lieges to become Christians and to marry the Portuguese. He broke with the Belga altogether, making war on them as much as he was able, forbidding all trade with them or to send anything from his lands to their präças and ordering the Chingalas to retire from the lands subject to Holland, which were very few according to the information that is generally believed, and in them they have lost some battles of importance. This warfare became still more declared, when they retook Batocalou and Triquimale, which they had previously given up according to the agreement between them, and the Hollander Ambassadors were detained in Candea. But after the first favours given to the Portuguese in these recent years, he put some to death year after year, either to intimidate them or to satisfy his hatred, and few are those who have hitherto been able to escape.

Such was the final fate of Ceylon so clearly predicted by the venerable brother Pedro de Basto as we have related,<sup>1</sup> for God was the more determined to chastise, because the reasons which provoked the divine justice were grave, and of these we shall give a long and true detailed account, though the fact that God declared the aforementioned losses to be a punishment is a clear and evident proof that it was just. From all that has been related, one can form a very clear idea of what we lost, and of the mistakes of that conquest we shall speak at greater length, for what might have been for us the foundation of a Kingdom became ever a pool of Portuguese blood and a continual tax on the resources of the Eastern state. The Hollander was already the master of the cloves and the ~~the~~ mags, spices of the Archipelago : he only lacked the cinnamon of Ceylon, the scent of which brought the European nations to India ; and though he purchased a quantity of pepper in the South, the pepper of Ceylon was superior to all the rest ; and incredible is the wealth which he sends to Holland year by year in 17 or

<sup>1</sup> See Introduction.

18 sail, although their people say it is less, after he became Lord of the prças of that Island ; and unless we have discovered and conquered India at the cost of so much blood and of so many lives, not to speak of the immense cost of so many enterprises, in order that Calvinists may enjoy it, there is nothing which Portugal must keep before her eyes than its recovery, correcting in course of time what was wrong in the manner of its conquest.

## CHAPTER 29.

### OF THE NAVAL ENGAGEMENTS BETWEEN THE PORTUGUESE AND THE HOLLANDERS AT THE BAR OF GOA

As soon as the Belga considered the truce ended, he resumed the blockade of Goa by means of goodly squadrons in order the better to carry out his design of conquering Ceylon ; and with great forces and at great expense he succeeded in diminishing the forces of the State by reducing its trade and by doing his utmost to prevent reinforcements and by laying hands on whatever came from Portugal ; and this over and above the policy which he always followed of trying by all possible means to prevent us from keeping a large sized fleet in India. In command of the fleet under the title of Admiral of the Indian seas, His Majesty despatched in the year 1657, Luis de Mendonça Furtado dc Albuquerque, afterwards Governor of the State, Count Louradio and Viceroy. He reached this bar in September, and the Conde da Vilapouca, Antonio Teles de Menezes, who was coming out as Viceroy, dying on the voyage, the state was governed by Francisco de Melo de Castro and Antonio de Souza Coutinho, who endeavoured to get the fleet ready, the great difficulties of which the General surmounted by his wealth and industry. It consisted of nine baxeys and a pinnace which sailed out in the following order. The flagship "Sacramento", Admiral <sup>P 818</sup> Luis de Mendonça Furtado, | and Verissimo Pereyra, Flag Captain, with 54 guns and a crew of 270. The galleon "S. Lourenço", Captain Joseph Pereyra de Menezes, 30 guns, crew 100 ; the galleon "S. Thome", Captain Gaspar Pereyra dos Reys, 30 guns and crew 180 ; the galleon "S. Maria de Danzic", Captain Joaõ Rodriguez Vieges, 36 guns, crew 100 ; the galleon "S. Joaõ e S. Jacintho", Captain D. Manoel | Lobo da Silveyra, 30 guns, crew 150 ; the pinnace, <sup>F 834</sup> Captain Antonio de Saldanha, 12 small guns, crew 40 ; the

Vice-Admiral's ship, Captain Antonio Pereyra, 40 guns, crew 260. This was a fleet such as would have sufficed to destroy the Hollander completely, had it been united and all had done their duty, but the haughtiness of India did not let the zealous Admiral choose a seaman as Vice-Admiral, or to appoint two sailors to the two baxeys ; but a respectable gentleman who sought this, as well as other occasions, merely for adventure and had come as captain-Major of the ship " Carmo ", was so influential as to alienate the minds of some captains to prevent the complete defeat of the Enemy, and to dispose matters in this manner for the ultimate ruin of the South ; which was better understood by the Enemy Admiral in the second conflict of the fleets which we shall presently narrate, as he himself declared to one of our Religious who was a prisoner with him, and to others ; and this knowledge made the Enemy fight more stoutly in the later conflict ; and thus an ill-disposed mind did not heed how much this helped the enemy against us.

The Hollander Admiral, Adriaen Roothaeus, to whom Columbo surrendered, had nine frigates and two pinnaces, all the frigates having two gun decks with many and good infantry, though in seven of them, and especially in the Flagship, the Vice-Admiral's ship and the Fiscal's, which were powerful ships, the force was much greater, and all were well proportioned ships of war, in which they had a distinct advantage over our transport ships, because large vessels with few men and guns keep everyone at work and are only a better target for the enemy's shot. On the 22nd of January the General weighed anchor, and the fleet set out to meet the Hollander with the morning land breeze, and forcing him to cut his cables, he pursued him, because the Enemy did not await our shock from windward, because he never fights save when it suits him. As soon as the breeze (*viraçaō*) rose and the wind was favourable to him, he fired various broadsides at our squadron, showing rather that he wished to reconnoitre our strength, or was waiting till someone deviated from his course, than promising battle, because there were only long distance shots on both sides. And after wasting the afternoon in this fashion, as when our people were separated into two squadrons, the flagship with those that followed her in one of the tacks, got windward of the Enemy leaving him leeward on the land side ; but like a skilful captain he turned upon the other squadron which was leeward of him. But Gaspar Pereyra dos Reys avoided the shock of the two ships, and three of the enemy ships fell upon the Vice-Admiral ship by about nine in the night,

while the others were fighting the other galleons. The Vice-Admiral, Antonio Pereyra, seeing himself boarded by the Hollander Admiral, by the Fiscal and the other ship, which were surrounding him, drove them off by dint of broadsides, one of them leaving her square flag <sup>P 435</sup> on our bowsprit and the Fiscal retiring with the beak broken, and all three greatly damaged, as was shown by the time they took in refitting. This feat was greatly admired by the Hollanders themselves both here and in Batavia, in that the skill with which he got rid of such powerful ships showed him to be a seaman dextrous in that kind of battle. It was no small credit to him that though he was on that occasion ill with the gout, he dragged himself to a gun carriage and gave the necessary orders without leaving undone a single point of his duty. Our Admiral and Manoel Andre tried their best to assist him, but as the wind was low, they did not succeed. The Hollander sailed into the open sea with the land breeze, and remaining at a distance of four leagues from the bar, he repaired the damage received, while our ships remained in the roadstead till the Vice-Admiral's ship and the galleon 'S. Joao e S. Jacintho' which had received some damage in the masts, refitted.

On the 29th of the month they again sought the Enemy squadron, but as he had not yet fully refitted, he made so far to sea that he disappeared from view, whereupon the pinnaces of Mocambique and China were able to sail freely out of the bar. After two days they returned to view in the evening, but the Enemy was always avoiding a fight on the leeward. But on the morning of the third of February he was unable to escape it, because our Admiral and Manoel Andre fell upon him and bore the brunt of battle that day, and the Enemy had time to fire 27 volleys at our Flagship which replied with great valour, because when she made ready to fall upon the enemies, those who were in charge of the helm and the sails were so unobservant that she slowly pointed to the bowline and to the wind, and gave Manoel Andre an opportunity to fire on them with greater safety to himself, because as he had them at his mercy, he was able to make fierco war on them. But on this day the disunion between our people showed itself very clearly, because the ship "Carmo" getting in the way of the others which followed, he gave an example to the others not to attack the Enemy as they might have done, and by long distance shot he even did some damage to the other two baxeys which were fighting, which gave occasion to those of the Flagship to say that the Hollanders were not the only enemies

with whom they had to fight. They did great damage to her masts and rigging, and the Belga seeing that he had received not a little damage, and that the rest of the fleet might again attack him, made for the high seas, and our men made for the bar ; and here it was observed that though the heaviest guns we had did not exceed 24 pounds, some of the enemy P 557 were found to be of 40. Great was the valour | and wisdom with which the Portuguese Admiral acted on this occasion, infusing courage into all by his presence, (for he was the tallest in stature among the Portuguese in India in those days), and putting up patiently with those of his own people who abandoned him in this encounter, when the noble example which he gave them should have procured union and determination in his followers ; | P 436 and as this disorder concerned so many, it happened that not one of them was punished.

Our squadron sallied out again on the 21st of March, leaving the ship " Carmo " and the pinnace in the bar, and Francisco Gomez da Silva going as captain of the galleon " S. Thome " because Gaspar Pereyra dos Reys was ill, and Manoel Salgado as Captain of the galleon " S. Joao e S. Jacintho ". As the Enemy was making for the deep sea at Sunrise, our Flagship fired a challenge and was answered by the Hollander, and the two squadrons formed themselves in splendid fighting order. And as the two Flagships were vying with each other, the first volley which our ship gave the Enemy with ball and bar-shot made the Belga run up a black flag to warn the Fiscal and the others to come to her assistance ; and as the battle went on with these three ships, they were completely destroyed, their dismounted artillery being visible on the decks and the blood seen to flow through the scupper holes. Captain Jeronimo Carvalho was turning his bows on an Enemy ship with the intention of seizing her, when it happened that at this time our Flagship fired a gun on that side, whereupon thinking that the Admiral was calling him, he desisted from boarding and unintentionally lost a grand opportunity. They fought till 11 o'clock of the day with equal spirit on both sides and between the land breeze and [the setting in of] the viraçao breeze, there were repeated volleys of musketry. The Enemy Flagship then fell upon ours, but seeing that our Admiral was preparing infantry on the nettings and on the poop and forecastle to grapple her, she made away by means of tow ropes from four launches which came to her aid.

The galleon " S. Thome ", which had not yet been able to get as near as the others, sought to grapple the Enemy Fiscal with [the setting in of] the viraçao, and made such a tack

that she fell into the midst of the Hollander squadron. There, for a long while, she battled with the Fiscal and another powerful ship of the Enemy, and when she had already lost the shipmaster, the boatswain, and others, killed and wounded, a shot carried off the head of Captain Francisco Gomez. Another shot broke the stay of the mainmast, and she was so badly damaged that the sails fell on some vats in which were some lighted matches placed negligently upon a gun carriage. Others say that the disaster arose from the firing of two guns at this juncture, for the sail took fire, and either because the soldiers engaged in managing the guns did not notice it, or because all being in confusion owing to the absence of officers, there was no one to put it out, the galleon took fire and burnt miserably, without any one being able to come to her rescue except some foists, the captain of which had no presence of mind, and an *almadia*, the valiant adjutant of which saved so many of the crew as he could, though some of his sailors were killed, while others fell into the hands of the Hollanders and the rest perished, being drowned or burnt, for the fire reached the powder magazine and by four in the afternoon the galleon sank.

P 818 Worn out and destroyed, the Enemy sailed away and our squadron returned to the bar. But to show that he did not give up the field, the Enemy Flagship returned with three ~~F~~ <sup>new</sup> frigates; but when our Flagship and the galleon "S. Francisco" turned upon them, the Hollander returned to continue her cruise. In the course of the battle some splinters drew blood from the General's hands and a spar falling from the top struck him so badly that, had he not been so strong, he might have perished, but taking no heed of these blows, he continued to act with valour. In the thick of the battle the Admiral sent a soldier with a message to those at the helm, but as he was going, a shot carried off his arm. A brother of the wounded man then came up, and being sent with the same message, a splinter cut off his foot, and a ball that entered through the porthole of the helm killed two men who were directing it. Another ball killed three in the "S. Lourenço". Few were the Portuguese killed and wounded in the first encounter; in the second and in the two baxeys which fought, there died 25 in the Flagship and more than 30 were wounded in the "S. Francisco", there died six, and more than 20 were wounded. In the last encounter there were in the Flagship 27 killed, and among them some gentlemen, Diogo Boto and Gomez da Silva, who died in a few days, and 44 were wounded. In the galleon "S. Francisco", 14 killed and 20 wounded. In the Vice-Admiral's ship, 11 killed and

15 wounded. In the 'S. Lourenço' three killed, and one single ball which struck a basket of plates carelessly left near the galley killed nine over and above the others already wounded. In the 'S. Maria' there were five wounded and the rest badly maimed, some of whom died afterwards in the hospital. The loss in the Enemy ranks is not known for certain, though it appears the number was greater than ours, because the destruction was greater and the wounded were in the same proportion greater. On the 18th of April he sailed away towards the South, and it is stated with certainty that some of his ships were not able to go beyond Gâle or Palecate ; and the lack of forces prevented us from concluding with him in this bar.

As Francisco de Seyxas Cabreyra did not land in Columbo the relief, both of men whom he brought and the flotilla of provisions which was in Jafanapataõ ready to mee' him in Manâr as soon as he was sighted, and to set sail with him for Columbo, as has been done formerly, when the Hollanders were in that bar, and as should have been done on this occasion at all risks, it was expected of him that he would at least prevent the fall of Manâr and Jafanapataõ by taking that P 819 relief to Manâr, | but he did not stir out of Tutucorim ; and when the Governor came to hear in Goa from letters of Coulaõ and Cochim, that Francisco de Seyzas would go to Tutucorim and thence to Manâr, and that he was at anchor at Trechendem, he ordered Antonio de Amaral de Menezes who was in command of the operations in Manâr and Jafanapataõ with the title of General, to depose Francisco de Seyzas without further ado, if he should be in Manâr, for not carrying out the order | given to him and for exposing the City of F 4380 Columbo to such evident peril, (—the General of Jafanapataõ and the Captain of Manâr had arranged with the Maravâ to secure him free passage through Utiar—), and if he were not there, to go to the point of S. Joaõ in Manâr with the intention of introducing the relief into Columbo either by land or by sea. But in spite of all the demands made on him, neither his duty as a vassal, nor the duty of the office he held, nor the fact of having a Mother and relatives in Columbo, his birthplace, succeeded in moving him. Finally when this fresh order of the Governor was rightly interpreted, he was deposed and the fleet was entrusted to Manoel de Souza Pereyra at a time when Columbo was already lost, for the date of the order of Goa is the 20th of June [16]56. Manoel de Souza crossed to Manâr with it with the result which we shall now state.

## CHAPTER 30.

## HOW THE HOLLANDER TOOK MANĀR AND JAFANAPATAŌ

Once the praça of Columbo was lost, there remained to the Hollander to turn us out of Jafanapataō in order to be fully Master of all we had in the large Island of Ceylon. For this purpose when he had made himself secure in Columbo and had nothing to fear from the galleons, in the year of 1658, General Rychlof van Goens and the Captain-Major of the Field, Joan Vanderlaen and other captains of note, came in 11 ships, three pinnaces, two smacks, an *escusa galé* and nine launches, in which they brought more than 1,000 Europeans, 300 Bandanees and many Chingalas; and having on the way made himself master of the town of Tutucorim and the rest of the coast of the Fishery, without meeting with any resistance, because there was no opposition from the Portuguese to this force, in February he surrounded the coast of Manār, which might have about five leagues of seaboard, though many Portuguese had believed that large ships could not bring their artillery to bear upon it, which was a manifest mistake, because for the great part there is near land a depth of three fathoms in low tide, and when the tide is high the depth is quite enough for the most capacious ships of the Hollanders.

P 580 | There was in that Island the General, Antonio de Amaral de Menezes, who thought within himself, as others judged, that valour was preferable to good order; and the Captain-Major of the Field, Antonio Mendez Aranha, who had given good proof of himself on other occasions; the Sergeant-Major, Bento de Souza D'ejca, and about 900 men, Portuguese and lascarins, distributed in the following manner. The fleet of rowing ships, of which the Captain-Major was Gaspar Carneyro Geraō, a veteran soldier from the frontiers of Portugal, and the Vice-Admiral Alvaro | Rodriguez Boralho, P 457 consisting of a few foists, *sanguiceys*, *manchus* and dhoneys, divided into *pangos*<sup>1</sup> as they call them there, or squadrons, the ships and *sanguiceys* on one side, the *manchus* on the other, and the dhoneys in a third squadron, all very few in number, but enough to divide our forces.

---

<sup>1</sup> Tam. *pangu*, portion, division.

The force which was on land to garrison the stockade of S. Joao and the others, was divided into three detachments and in single file along that extensive seashore behind some small ramparts of sand made with their own hands, rather to prevent their being seen than to protect them from the balls of the enemy. In this fashion the General awaited the Hollander to attack the Island, either because he thought it was the most convenient or because he fancied it the most honourable. But the people who had some knowledge of Manar and of warfare, were ever of opinion that they should have awaited the Enemy fortifying themselves under the shadow of that small praça, sending out some separate bands and laying ambushes in convenient places to reduce his forces and to break his vehemence and force, because the loss he would sustain from the praça and from the arrayal drawn up near it, and therefore better able to stand the enemy's onrush, could promise them some good success. But as the war of Ceylon began, so it came to an end, by palpable chastisement from Heaven, and the worst [chastisement] on the field was always mismanagement; and those who read these writings cannot doubt how God in this final encounter declared Himself against the residents of that Island and of that small Kingdom.

The enemy arrived one Sunday, and on the Wednesday following he set four launches against one of our foists well manned and with good artillery, but he lost two and the others retired with almost all their men killed. For two days he did not cease to disquiet the ships, which he feared would oppose his landing, but so long as they remained at the mouth of the channel which separates the two Islands, they were beyond range of the guns of the two large ships, and he fared badly in all the encounters. But when the Captain-Major of the fleet saw on the following day that the Hollander was spreading his squadron along the shore, he abandoned this position, according to orders, they say, and put himself between the ships and the shore whence he was driven by repeated volleys to run aground at a distance from the arrayal which occupied the ramparts, to the no  
*Pass:* small damage of the ships and men, | and if on this occasion he had attacked one or two of the enemy ships and tried to set fire to them, or if he had put himself to windward by rowing and awaited an opportunity of doing so, he would not have failed to prevent the landing, so long as the battle went on in this fashion. Or at least it would have been much less perilous to run so close that the enemy could not depress their guns enough to hit him, as other captains have

sometimes | done in India, because so long as this warfare F 437v was kept up, he would never have decided to take from the ships the infantry necessary for their defence, and then getting relief by land with great glory and lesser risk of ultimate ruin, they could have held Manâr and Jafanapataô. But as I know that there were men of valour and experience there, I can only attribute these repeated mistakes to a punishment from Heaven.

The Belga followed up the victory by disembarking at the point of the rampart, on the side of the celebrated Pagode of Ramen-coir, commonly called Ramanancor, where the Captain of the advance guard was, and the ships arrived under sail long before the other detachments which were under the ramparts scattered over such a long stretch of beach ; and that officer, either because he had so few men compared with the force of the Hollander, or because he lacked the courage, retired when he saw the Enemy land. His ensign sought to mend this blunder, and getting seven men together he attacked the Belga who was already drawn up on land, but as this was an action more desperate than valorous, he found he had only three companions when he came to charge with the spear. Meanwhile the Captain-General came up, and seeing that Officer retreat, he hastened with drawn sword to make him halt, while he mustered the men of his division who were coming in sight, but by a disposition of Heaven a random gunshot struck him on the head and he fell dead, though in the opinion of all, his kindness and valour deserved a better fate. His place was promptly filled by the Captain of the Field, Antonio Mendez Aranha, and with the few soldiers he was able to get together, he went on fighting with the Enemy at such risk to his person that he received two dangerous wounds. The Belga drew up all his forces, and seeing that the others retreated to the fortalice, he also went after them in good order. But as this was not sufficiently capable of a defence, and there were no higher Officers, and as there reigned confusion and some say even jealousy, the arrayal passed Mantôta, making for Jafanapataô, while some thought the opposite coast was safer. The Captain of Manâr was Andre Velozo, and knowing the peril in which he was, he wanted to send his wife to Jafanapataô, but she refused to go saying that she would follow him to death, and when the praca was entered without any opposition and they became prisoners of the Hollanders, they chose to remain in Columbo, either because they were more true in love than in loyalty or in order not to have to give an account of the praca which they did not lose.

P 222 | As soon as the news of the fall of Manâr reached Jafanapataõ, they prophesied the same of that fortalice recently confided to Joãõ de Melo de Sampayo, whom the Governor sent without indicating the powers he had, while Antonio de Amaral was still alive ; and he employed all his energy in seeking to uphold the ancient [rights] of the Captains of Jafanapataõ, who were subordinate only to the Generals P 222 of Ceylon, of whom there were none now ; and were it not for the modesty of Antonio de Amaral, this might have been also a reason for hastening its ruin, which was the greater, because there was no order nor any convenient disposition for defence in the one who governed, and because almost all were in alarm on account of the lack of arms and other things, because everything was lost. The fortalice of Jafanapataõ was a small praça, of four regular bastions and four towers in the middle of the four curtains, with its moat and barbican, situated on the river which flows from the hills of Candea and separates the country of Vani from the small kingdom of Jafanapataõ, and empties itself into the sea between the small Islands of the quay of elephants, where there was a small fort, situated in the middle of the water upon a rock, two leagues distant from the praça. Andre Pinto da Fonseca, a veteran captain of India and Ceylon, who was a casado there, foreseeing what would happen, built two stockades at his own cost, one near S. Domingos, the other nearer the praça, which were of great use. And as Antonio Mendez Aranha was badly wounded, Alvaro Rodriguez Borralho was chosen to remain with him in the post of S. Joaõ awaiting the Enemy who was surrounding Ceylon with his fleet and had already posted three ships within sight of the fortalice, the others being moored at the quay of elephants, on the one and the other side of the Island of D. Clara.

Experienced men were of opinion that they should await the Enemy in the jungles of the Vani, where a few were able to give trouble to many by continuous ambuscades, but as this opinion was very reasonable, and they had to lose, it had needs to remain unheeded, and therein lay the ruin of Jafanapataõ in the opinion of experienced people. Tidings reached them that the Belga was marching through the Vani, and the Captain of the praça ordered a man of the country who brought it to be arrested, as he also did to another who repeated the same news, and the first is said to have bought his release, about which I do not want to be a witness, the second is said to have been in prison till the praça surrendered. The Hollander came making for the pass of Sant-Iago. Andre Pinto da Fonseca contended that we should receive him there,

because as our men would be under cover, in a good position, while the enemy was exposed, he would not fail to receive great loss ; but even this plan was not carried out, and he passed to Jafanapataō through that place without any opposition. The casados seeing the poor disposition of the ~~Poss~~ military men under the new Captain-Major | of the Kingdom, begged him to give the estancias over to them, that they would defend their country, houses, wives, and children, but he did not permit them.

They resolved to receive the Enemy at the post of S. Joaō, half a league from the praça, and though the Topazes who were in the advance guard began to fight, and some were killed, | the others retired to the stockade of S. Domingos, F 438, without fighting and without making use of the places that were suited for ambuscades, excusing themselves in that they were few and badly armed, because between Portuguese and Topazes, all those who were found in Jafanapatam at this time did not exceed 700 ; and had the stockades not been built, there would have been the danger of the Enemy entering the praça along with our people. He spent 17 days before he was able to take them, and when these were lost, our people went retiring little by little, first to the Misericordia, thence to the other houses, and finally to the barbican, during which time they carried to the praça provisions, wood, and other things necessary, in small quantities. In the quay was the powder which had come from Bengala, saltpetre and biscuits, but for lack of forethought these were not taken in time. Likewise there were outside two boats full of vegetables and others of salt near the fortalice ; and the sick did not get the biscuits and delicacies which the residents of Negapataō sent them, because he who leaves these precautions to a time like this, seeks to die of hunger.

The Hollander went on surrounding the praça with four batteries in which, besides guns, he mounted four mortars, and he built another stockade at the entrance to the quay to prevent relief. Because the fortified place of the quay was unable to hold out against the bombardment which the Belga directed on it from the Islands of Cardiua and of the quay, and from the stronger battering of the ships, and because the garrison it had was small, and it had no strength against such fury of shot, it was obliged to surrender. The enemy began the attack of the praça on the 16th of March of 1658 and continued it up to the 23rd of June, the play of the artillery and mortars being incessant, and as the praça was a small one, and there were many of the common people, the mortars caused most damage, and the besieged had at

the same time to battle with famine and the pestilence that follows on it, and with the war which was the cause of everything. The captains of the four bastions of the fortalice were four residents of that Kingdom, in that of S. Paulo, Pedro de Faria who lost his life therein, of the next, Antonio Ferreyra da Silva, who died of the contagion, of the third Matheus Vieyra de Abreu, and of the bastion of S. Pedro, Andre Pinto da Fonseca, who was wounded in it. And though the batteries of the enemy laid low the parapets and parts of the rampart, the Belga never made up his mind to deliver an assault on the praça, both because on account of the lack of reinforcement he already considered it his own, and because it was impossible for him to do so without being completely beaten, as it was a modern praça, defensible and well curtained, and he had still the memory of the resistance of Columbo.

*P 824* | There was in it by this time no powder, nor water to drink, because the wells were defiled by the mortars and the substance of dead bodies, which was especially the case with a good fresh water well that was in S. Francisco which was completely polluted by the substance of the bodies of the dead buried in the Church and in the graveyard. The want of victuals and other | things was generally so great *F 439* that there was no Arrack (Urraca)<sup>1</sup> to dress a wound ; and an ounce of tobacco reached the price of 20 patacas, five leaves of betel half a pardao. Many dogs and cats were eaten, and between famine and a raging pestilence, despair came to such a pass that there arose the beginnings of a mutiny, and as there was no hope of remedy, they begged terms from the Enemy who accepted only what he liked. When he became Master of the praça, he ordered all those who sallied out to be searched thoroughly, without regard to the modesty of sex, and seized everything belonging to the Portuguese and the Natives who were there in the three days during which the search lasted ; and only four residents who on the advice of some enemy officers marched out on the fourth day were able to save some things of value out of the many things they owned.

The greatest battle was with famine and pestilence, and the worst the enemy did was by stones, grenades, and mortars, and for this reason after the surrender of the praça their Domine placed on its gate the following Inscription more

<sup>1</sup> The Indo-Port. *Urraca*, from Conc. *wak*, which is a corruption of Ar : *Arak*, properly ‘ perspiration ’, and then first, ‘ the exudation or sap drawn from the date palm ; secondly, any strong drink, distilled spirit, &c.—Hob-Job.

worthy of Calvinistic Theology than of Ciceronian Latin : *Lapidibus, et gratia Dei cepimus hoc fortalicum.*<sup>1</sup> There were noticed some incidents which indicate a chastisement from Heaven. It happened that men were killed merely by cannon balls passing near them. They killed a man one night, he was buried in the morning, and two hours later blood was seen seething and issuing like foam over the grave. When the *praça* was about to surrender, some naked and ill-dressed soldiers begged a *casado* who had much clothing and jewellery, to give them something to clothe themselves with. He replied by asking, 'What will be left to give the Hollanders ?' And Joan Vanderlaen coming to hear of this valiantly thrashed him on the back with a rattan. Never did the Hollander affront the Portuguese nation in India with greater insults, a clear proof of how little they fear it now. He took the *casados* to Batavia with some soldiers, leaving the widows and maidens for some time in Jafanapatao in order to reduce them to his purpose, and they say that some daughters of prominent men were driven by these means to consent to marry heretics, and that some slaves apostatized.

God deserved the final ruin of this petty Kingdom and peninsula by a notable prodigy which was well known in India and can be seen from a certificate of Father Thomas Teles, religious of our Society, which being summarised, because he relates and affirms on oath things which have no bearing on the present matter, says thus : " I, Father Thomas Teles of the Society of Jesus, testify that happening to be in the Kingdom of Jafanapatao in the year 1657 as Vicar of two Churches | which were in one of the four Provinces of that Kingdom, by name Pachilapali, which is altogether a sandy plain, wherein no stones are found, but which has very thick jungle in certain parts, which are infested by tigers and elephants, one Sunday in the month of July, I heard at midnight three or four bombardments from the direction of the sea and a goodly volley of musketry, and immediately afterwards a rattling so extraordinary that it seemed to hurl the houses | in the air. Then the servants of the house F 439, and the outside watchmen, who according to the custom of the Churches of that Province were sleeping in the open on account of the heat, came up the stairs and asked me whether I had seen what had happened, and when I replied that I heard, but did not see what it was, because it was already over when I opened the window, they told me in great terror

<sup>1</sup> 'With stones and the grace of God we captured this fortalice.'

that if I had seen it, I should have been awestruck, for it was a thick cloud of fire speeding like a flash towards Candea. On the following day the sacristan, who is there called Canacapule, told me that many had seen that portent and that the cloud had rained many stones over a space of two leagues. I sent the *meyrinho* of the Church to fetch some samples, and he brought two and I kept this one, which I leave in the hands of Father Joao Cabral. This took place seven leagues away from the praça of Jafanapatao, one year before it was lost. The which I swear to, *in verbo sacerdotis*, on this the 16th of January of 1666. Thomas Teles."

I have this stone in my possession, and it is scorched outside like a meteorite but not smooth, and is somewhat white inside and not a little hard. In this manner God wished to show that he would drive us out of that Kingdom by stoning in punishment for the hardness with which some individuals and some Royal ministers dealt with the poor inhabitants after the death of the renowned Captain Philipe de Oliveyra, its last conqueror, a chastisement which God meted out<sup>1</sup> to the impious, his anger turning to stone against hearts of stone, for though the Balalas were a quiet people greatly different from the Chingalas, they reduced them to the uttermost misery. But the greatest loss I have in mind is the loss of souls, because as it was only a few years since that Kingdom had been converted, it will be very easy for the heretics to pervert it.

Salcete of Goa was in the same peril at this time, because the Hollander joined with the neighbouring Moorish King Idalxa and tried to wrest those lands from us. With this intent he first sent the captain Abdul Aquimo with 500 horse and 4,000 foot; and without previously declaring war, after a long peace, he suddenly advanced as far as Margaõ, while the Hollander hovered about the seacoast behind the islets of Murmugaõ awaiting the issue with the Moors in order to disembark. There was Gaspar Carneyro

P 326 Giaõ with 10 soldiers, many of them very young, in Rachol | as he had heardings that the Moorish Captain had come down from the Ghates, where on All Souls' day of this year of [16]58 they brought him the hurried news that the Moor had surrounded the Church of Margaõ where the Father Bento Ferreyra, afterwards Provincial of this Province, and Father Antonio Fernandez, Vicar of Vernâ, were defending themselves with the help of some people of the country.

---

<sup>1</sup> Footnote in text: A petrosa ira plena mittuntur grandines.—Sep. V. 23. And thick hail shall be cast upon them from the stone casting wrath.—Wis. V. 23.

At the request of the Fathers of that Christianity there had set out from Goa as General of this war, Luis de Mendonça Furtado, Admiral of the galleons and of the sea of India, about whom we have already spoken, and arriving at the time when Gaspar Carneyro was drawing up his men, he set out at ten o'clock in all haste for Margaõ in search of the Moors. Manoel Furtado de Mendonça went ahead with a band to see whether he could seize the road of Navelim, but descrying the Moors from the slope of Margaõ, he wisely halted awaiting the General, and when he arrived, they descended into the valley near the Brook where the Moor had placed some lascarins with firelocks to attack the Portuguese therefrom with greater safety, while the cavalry was drawn up on the side of the palmgroves and the infantry in different detachment according to their fashion. Our General seeing that the grass was tall and dry and that there might be danger of some disorder in case the bombs which they threw should set them on fire, chose a more open place below the village of Arli, where he drew up awaiting the conflict of the Enemy.

One of his higher officers who was considered the most valiant among them, took manifest pains to get a view of him, and our General remarking this sallied out of the ranks to meet him with only the dress sword which he had at his side and a round target, which they had given him in Rachol by way of a shield, because the buckles were not large enough for his arms, and when the Moor galloped at him at full speed, he got behind the hind quarters of the horse and with his left he made the Moor's horse stumble and from one side ran him through to the top of the opposite shoulder, the Moor dropping dead, a feat characteristic of his strength and daring. Captain Fernaõ de Costa had a similar encounter with another chief of the Enemy, but not being a man of such strength, he received the impetus of the horse on his lance, but while his left hand was looking for the shield which was behind him, the Moor delivered him a blow, which however did not avail to save him from being killed by Costa. Then the cavalry charged with great spirit while the infantry did not cease to fire its volleys, though from a distance, but seeing the loss inflicted on them by our musketry, and that they were not able to disturb us, though the lances were poor and drawn from the racks, they slackened, and the Portuguese General approached the village, lest he be surrounded and cut off from water, as they were fighting in the heat of the day. At this time there appeared on the hill another Moor named Xamiro,

P 227. who was retiring into our lands with a troop of horse, and though | they thought they were Enemies, they remained in the same order till the Moor gave up the field with a considerable loss of cavalry, there being only one killed on our side. And the Hollander learning of the issue, and that the Moor was out of Salcete, returned to continue the blockade of this bar, till (after taking also Negapataõ | where a few P 440 casados surrendered without opposition), he made ready to besiege Cochim.

Though the success was great, if we measure our force with that of the Enemy, still greater were the consequences, for had the Moors succeeded, they would certainly have fallen upon these lands with all their forces, and joining hands with the Hollanders, they would not only have kept them and deprived the State of that revenue which is the main part of its sustenance, but would also have aspired to take these prças and to conquer the island of Goa or at least to divert from us the reinforcements of Cochim, and to hasten the ruin by ending everything at-one blow, for everything was in the balance. I leave it to the curious to consider whether the three spears<sup>1</sup> which Christ said to the Venerable Brother Pedro de Basto, would be broken in Ceylon might be understood to refer to the large Island of Ceylon, the small island of Manâr and the Peninsula of Jafanapataõ ; because though they had different governments they were all subordinate to that of Columbo, and according to the general acceptance of terms in India who says Ceylon means all this. Nor is there less propriety in the metaphor, because from the customs of the Abyssinians, which are perpetuated in those of the Hebrews, it is known that Joab did not kill Absalom with three equal spears, though he killed him with three missiles, but with a long spear and two smaller ones which they call *brechis*, because we know that the Hebrews used such weapons, brandishing the long spear with the right hand while holding the two *brechis* in the left ; and applying these instruments to the war of Ceylon a more powerful spear was needed for the destruction of the large island than for that of Manâr and Jafanapataõ, though to understand that this was a punishment of God, it is not necessary to descend to these trifles, but only to be convinced that it was our faults which made most war on us.

---

<sup>1</sup> Vide 382. " When the Brother was praying to God for the State and for the Missions of India, Christ our Lord appeared to him with three spears in his hand saying ' All these three spears have to be broken in Ceylon.' "

## BOOK 6

OF THE

## CONQUEST OF CEYLON

## CHAPTER 1.

HOW THE CHASTISEMENT OF CEYLON WAS FORETOLD,  
AND THE REASONS THEREOF

THE description and the context of the foregoing History of Ceylon shows clearly that in that Island the arm of God was raised against the Portuguese, as was declared to them by the Venerable Brother Pedro de Basto, and as was narrated by us in his biography,<sup>1</sup> where one may find the general revelations made to him regarding the chastisement of the Eastern Portuguese State,<sup>2</sup> and many other particular ones regarding the chastisement of Ceylon, and the loss of Columbo. And without making any detailed mention of other things, it is enough to relate how, when he was recommending to God the welfare of the State and Christianity of India, Christ Our Lord appeared to him with three spears in his hands, uttering these terrible words : ' All these spears have to be broken in Ceylon.'<sup>3</sup> And on the day when the Hollander took Gâle, he said to Father Marçal de Leyva with great sorrow : ' Father, to-day I saw a man streaming in blood like an Ecce Homo. Some misfortune is coming, but I do not know where.'<sup>4</sup> God manifested to him still more clearly the last ruin of Columbo. When he was praying to God for Ceylon at the time of the elevation of the consecrated Host, he saw therein the Virgin Our Lady and St. Francis

<sup>1</sup> *Vida*, Liv. III., ch. I.  
<sup>2</sup> *Ib.* IV., ch. I-III.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.* p. 382, *supra* p. 1062.  
<sup>4</sup> *Ib.* 385.

Xavier prostrate on the ground and praying for the fortalice of Columbo and at the same time he heard these sad words : 'Columbo is lost.'<sup>1</sup> And he already knew that God had taken the Hollanders as an instrument for our chastisement, for when, seeing the heavy losses both temporal and spiritual which that nation was inflicting in this Asia on the Eastern Portuguese State, he begged the Lord to chastise them | the Crucified Christ Our Lord said to him as if rebuking him : ' O Pedro, do not speak so Do not ask for chastisement ; but pray that they may have the grace to be brought to the true Faith, for I mean to use them to chastise India, because I am not satisfied with the Christians thereof ; and afterwards I will disperse them as salt in water.'<sup>2</sup> The Chingalâz themselves knew of this chastisement which God had prepared for the Portuguese from their books and from the tradition of their Fathers and grandfathers, and they sometimes related it to them [i.e., Portuguese] as for instance when Phelipe de Oliveyra subjugated Jafanapataõ, a Yogi announced it clearly to a soldier, who went a-hunting with his firelock. But no one declared it better, as has already been described in the 19th chapter of the fourth Book, | <sup>F 423</sup> than a Chingalâ in the very year in which the first two ships of the Hollanders appeared on this coast to wound these Eastern Seas, for speaking to Fernão Cardoso, a native of Linhares, who was afterwards a caçado in Cochim, a man of good conduct and very truthful, this Chingalâ told him : ' That there will come a European Nation with blue eyes, who will drive you altogether out of Ceylon ; and though they will fortify themselves here in Columbo and in that Island, it shall not be for long, for the Portuguese will afterwards expel them from it and will subdue it altogether ' ; as the same Fernão Cardoso many years afterwards related in Cochim to all those who listened to him.

That it is a chastisement from the hand of God, is also clearly shown by the mistakes of that conquest, for when God desires to chastise, he perverts counsel, and these were ruinous indeed in Ceylon, as we shall see, for at present I shall deal with public injustices. And leaving for another work (should God give us life to compose it) on the Eastern Conquest, the right which our Lords, the Kings of Portugal, have to that Island, before and after the donation of the King of Cota, and whether this right, after the death of this King and others, includes also the Kingdom of Candea, separated from it long before and in revolt against that

<sup>1</sup> *Vida*, Liv. IV., p. 388.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.* 399.

of Cota ; and whether that donation was enough for one to be sure that the King of Portugal is the sovereign of Ceylon wholly or in part, which are all juridical questions quite foreign to the present history ; I will here point out the injustices, violences and wrongs, which the Portuguese there committed, a most sufficient justification for the chastisement which God inflicted on them. For whether we take them in time of war or in time of peace, the lot of the unfortunate Chingalaz was at all times the same ; and though the public war was against the King of Candea, or Madine, or Rajū, or other rebels, the private war ever was against the Native lieges. And as warfare was so frequent and continual in Ceylon, it can be safely affirmed that they were treated like common enemies without there being any exception even in time of peace.

In time of war they were in all respects treated like rebels, P 331 and there was a General who, to avenge the mutilations which the Chingalaz inflicted on us, forced the Mothers to throw their children into mortars and to pound them like spicery with pestles, without being moved to compassion by the cries and mournings of the children at each blow, or pitying the mothers forced to be the terrible executioners of their own children, and their own hearts. In reward for these labours, when they had reduced them to paste, he ordered them to be beheaded, as if they had not obeyed him. He ordered the soldiers to take the children at the point of the spears and to raise them aloft, and as they P 443 were mourning and dying, he said : ' Listen well how those cocks crow,' alluding to the name of those people which some thought was Galas, as we have said, and to the habit of these birds to crow at certain times and when they awake. He ordered men to be thrown into the river from the bridge of Malvana, so that the people might see them fall into the mouths of fierce alligators ; and these were so accustomed to this carnage, that at the first whistle or signal for throwing these unfortunate men condemned to such a barbarous torment, their heads were promptly seen above the water opening the trapdoors of their terrible mouths. So Manoel de Faria e Souza narrates in his Asia and it is notorious in India. Nor was he the only one who resorted to such tyrannies ; and though the Chingalaz sometimes gave occasion for some harshness and severity, by cutting off the noses, lips and ears, of some Portuguese and even of their own countrymen when they seized them in war or captured them, if we pay heed to Christian piety, we ought to be less prone to vengeance, and in no case should we have exceeded the

heathen in tyranny. When Julius Caesar routed the squadron of Pompey on the fields of Pharsalia, he ordered his soldiers not to kill Roman Citizens but only to disfigure their faces with cuts, as L. Florus narrates: *Miles parce civibus; in faciem caedi;* and he was a pagan so accustomed to shed blood in battle that he killed therein more than a million men.

The Hollanders imitated this example a little in Brazil, when they opened the sides of the Portuguese with axes and drew out their hearts, as the English used to do in London to some Holy Martyrs, drawing their hearts out of their breasts. But these are deeds worthy of heretics, and we have not heard that the Portuguese avenged themselves when they were victorious in Brazil, for they not only remembered that they were Catholics but also that they were Portuguese. After the acclamation of our Lord, King D. Joāo IV. the Restorer, in the beginning and during the course of that long warfare for the space of 29 years, some Castillians also resorted to similar cruelties, even glutting women with powder and firing them off, as if they were pieces of artillery, and justifying these terrible practices on the score of their being rebels. And in that war they even attempted to introduce  
*P 83<sup>2</sup>* Laws, new and iniquitous, according to the received usages of Europe, killing the captains who did not surrender when they had no power to resist, thinking thereby to set bounds to human valour, when the preservation of a Kingdom often depends on the delay of one day or even a few hours. Not for all that is it related of the Portuguese, often victorious in this war, that they ever adopted that style and that law.

*| It was not so in Ceylon. And after the evil example P 442- of the Captains, who ever treated them as enemies, one can scarcely exaggerate the cruelties which individual *foreyros*<sup>1</sup> inflicted in their villages, or the violences which they committed therein; of which I will give here only two instances to justify these remarks. There was a *foreyro* who, because a certain Chingalā of his village did not give him areca, crucified him in a novel style, and nailed him to the ground between the toes of his feet and the fingers of his hands and let him die there. Another he would have impaled, had the man not escaped from the prison. In another village when the harvest was gathered, the *Vidāna* and *Cangine* separated the share of the *foreyro*, and divided what remained between himself and the *Cangana* and measurer<sup>2</sup> in such a way that there was very little left for the Husbandmen.*

<sup>1</sup> Renter, lessee of lands.

<sup>2</sup> Sin. *mananna*.

One of the latter raised his eyes to Heaven and said : ' Alas ! Is there a God ? If there is one, for one there is, how is it that He allows us to be tyrannized and wronged in this way ? ' The sky was serene, but suddenly there fell a bolt, which killed the Vidâna and Cangâna and the Measurer and the rest fell through fear. And though these instances and many others that are related were well known, these cruelties and tyrannies were never put a stop to, and always continued in Ceylop.

In times of war, matters generally came to such a pass that the natives were not able to obey the King of Cota and afterwards the Portuguese without completely losing their lives and goods and liberty, at the hands of the victorious enemies, and yet they were, on that account, imprisoned, harassed and sometimes punished with death, though in these straits, so often occurring in Ceylon, they could not help being reputed for traitors, because they could not act as loyal subjects, and the innocent and the guilty had both to pay, though they were not paid men obliged to war. But as this can be better seen when going through individual posts and offices, and because from the cruelties and the violences inflicted in time of peace, one can better conjecture what they suffered in time of war, and be better able to infer the causes of the punishment which God inflicted on the Portuguese in that Island according to what the Prophet Micheas says in the 3rd chapter : ' Hear, O ye Princes of Jacob and ye chiefs of the House of Israel ! It was your part to know what pertains to justice concerning the people you govern ; but, occupied with your own interests, you hate the good of the neighbour and love the evil of your avarice, violently plucking off the skin, and the flesh from the bones ; flaying them and stripping the flesh, and feeding on the flesh of their bodies, breaking their bones and chopping them to suck the marrow. But sure is the punishment When Ye shall call on me in your tribulations, I will not hear you and I will hide my face at the time in return for the devices you used against my people.'<sup>1</sup> After listening

<sup>1</sup> to the moderate complaints of the Chingalâz, we shall dilate upon this subject. Considering that the Generals of Ceylon treated themselves as Kings, some as absolute Princes, conniving at the disorders, robberies, violence and tyranny, of the other Captains, soldiers, foreyres and royal ministers, and seeing what they and the others did, we have no reason to be surprised at the heavy punishment which

<sup>1</sup> Micheas III. 1-4, slightly adapted by the Author.

God there inflicted on the Portuguese nation, her enemies increasing in proportion as the guilt increased, till finally the whole Island was lost and God gave over to the Gentiles and Heretics what Catholic Christians did not deserve to keep.

But as there is no general rule in the matter of customs and government which has no exception, we have no intention of blaming all, either in the matter of deeds or principles and conduct of government, because it sometimes happened in the case of Generals as well as Captains and Ministers, that their good morality prevailed over the principles of government, and on the contrary good principles sometimes prevailed over evil deeds; and there were not wanting persons in whom everything was adjusted by reason and policy, even among individual *foreyros*, in that they did not insist on more than was theirs; but they do not on this account deserve to be praised by all, which is the sad fate of those who govern and order, either because everyone wishes to govern according to his pleasure, or because even those who least understand, think they can give advice in the matter of government.

The last King or Emperor of the Island (as we have related) was D. Joaõ Pereapandar, who had been instructed by the Religious of St. Francis and was a good Christian. He was buried in the main Chapel of the Convent of St. Francis in Columbo on the Gospel side, as is stated on the Epitaph over his grave. And as he had no heirs, he made the King of Portugal the heir to the whole island, and in his name the General D. Jeronimo de Azevedo was sworn to as King thereof by the Natives, as we have written. He summoned the Modeliares and nobles of the island to an Assembly, and left them to choose the laws by which they wished to be governed, whether by those of the Kingdom of Portugal or by those of the Kings of Cota; and they all unanimously said by theirs, or by those of Rajú, according to their way of speaking, because they had been brought up in them, and because of the natural affection whereby we all prefer the customs of our Fathers and Forefathers. On behalf of the King of Portugal, the General D. Jeronimo de Azevedo granted it to them, and thenceforth he and the others were addressed by the Chingalaz as Highness and treated as Kings. Never, however, did they take pains to find out what those laws and customs were; nor were they ever reduced to writing like our ordinances; nor were they published so that all might come to know them; nor was any order given to the Dissavas and other Captains nor to the *foreyros*

of the villages, so that everything was left to the good or evil conscience of each, and there was none to gainsay them in anything however evil it be, and however contrary to the laws and customs of the country, save the Ministers of the Royal Exchequer, who received orders according to the laws of Portugal ; and some under pretext of war, others on pretext of being *foreyros* and others on the pretext of revenue or service of the King, who were at all times the biggest thieves in our conquests, moved by ambition and self-interest, for the most part had no other law than sin, nor any order save ambition.

---

## CHAPTER 2.

### COMPLAINTS WHICH THE CHINGALAZ MADE AGAINST THE PORTUGUESE GOVERNMENT AND A MEMORIAL OF THEIR CUSTOMS

---

To convince one of what has been said, it will be very desirable to point out here the laws and customs of that nation, in order the better to show the injustice with which they were treated, and the justice of their complaints. But just as there never was a Royal Minister to reduce them to writing, in like manner no historian has ever had the curiosity to relate them ; and I am obliged to make use of a petition and Memorial which the Chingalaz presented to the General Diogo de Melo de Castro, for from his reply it is clear that they spoke the truth and imputed nothing false to the Portuguese, nor did the General find anything to reproach them with. This Petition said as follows :—

The lascarins of this Island of Ceylon, subjects of His Majesty, ask for Portuguese Captains for many reasons affecting the common weal,<sup>1</sup> and the Mayorals of the Corias, Nilaz, Careáz, Chaleáz and other castes and Estates of the Island state, that on the death of the King, our Lord D

---

<sup>1</sup> A translation of this petition will be found in the Port. Era II., 214 and Sqq. Compare however this sentence with the translation given there.

Joaõ Darmona Pala Astâna, Emperor of Cota, when there succeeded our Lord D. Jeronimo de Azevedo to the Government of the Empire in the name of His Majesty, at the Assembly held in Maluâna, regarding the observance of the Laws under which the Natives had to live, they promised us in the name of His Majesty to preserve our laws, which we choose because they were humane and benign, wherewith our Kings fostered and preserved us, governing us for the space of 2,200 years and more, so long as the empire of this Island was in the hands of the Native Princes from Vija Bau, the first King thereof, to the last Emperor of Cota, the aforesaid Lord D. Joçô of happy memory, Darmona Pala Astâna, otherwise Preabandar. But as the Lord D. Jeronimo de Azevedo did not endeavour to ascertain what our laws were, in order to put them into effect | and register them in the book of the <sup>F 44</sup>

<sup>P 834</sup> fazenda, | the Vidânas and Dissâvas, new offices never in use in Ceylon, perverted the laws of their Princes, and introducing others with the evil and perverse customs which self-interest dictated to them, (as will appear from the relations hereto annexed) they began to flay us during the government of the said Lord D. Jeronimo de Azevedo, and after his time up to the recent *peri* (or Rebellion) they tore off our flesh, and even after that with fresh imposts and penalties and evils which they heaped upon us, they have brought us to the utmost misery and despair, registering as laws the evils they have recently introduced and not the laws which they ought, and promised, to observe towards us.

And since, in the midst of such evils, it has pleased God to appoint Your Highness as our Prince, to whom has been reserved the palm not only of a true and faithful conquistador but even that of legislator, because of the utmost vigilance with which Your Highness has ever tried to lighten our evils which are manifest to you, we are encouraged to beg for fresh favours, and [to beg] that Your Highness might take counsel to remedy the evils which have consumed us and reduced us to extreme misery, as is manifest and clear to Your Highness from the Corlas, villages and gamatôya,<sup>1</sup> depopulated by the rigour of the tyrannical levies of new taxes to which we are not liable, excluding the host of opinions accumulated by those who first originated this evil ; and opening the Books of the law of God and of good reason, and the provisions of His Majesty, who has provided for everything like the Catholic that he is, and the laws and customs of our former Princes ; summoning to Your Highness' aid for this purpose the

---

<sup>1</sup> *Infra p. 1015 'gamaçoña,' Sin. gamwasam.*

Gentlemen of the Board of Government of this Island, to whom His Majesty has entrusted his conscience and honour ; so as to deliver us from the injustices recently introduced, and that we might be governed with justice, according as it was promised to us in the name of His Majesty, and to foster us with fresh favours. For in the redistribution of villages, which Your Highness ordered to be made to those of us who served His Majesty in war, we have been very ill provided, because everything was given to the Portuguese Gentlemen, to whom we admit that much is due, the Gentlemen who made this distribution not paying heed to the fact that we, the Natives of this country and lieges of His Majesty, are fellow creatures, and that we have no vessels nor commerce outside the island as they have ; and when we are deprived of the land, as in fact we are, let Your Highness and the Gentlemen of the Board and they themselves judge how we are to live and support our wives and children. And while they feed on the meat, there is nothing left to give us for our support, not even from the worst that remains, which is the bones and the refuse. Wherefore we live afflicted and desolate : and we, all the States of this Island, entreat you, as set forth in the petition and other following documents, to observe justice, seeing that the majority of us natives <sup>M 1440</sup> are already Christians, so that we all and our posterity may be encouraged to receive Holy Baptism, because if justice and equity be dealt to all in general, the result will be that the service of God and of His Majesty will advance from good to better whereby we shall receive I. and M. |

*P 536* THE REASONS WHICH THE LASCARINS HAVE FOR ASKING  
FOR PORTUGUESE CAPTAINS<sup>1</sup>

The special reasons which we have, are the ill-treatment which the Modeliars and Araches, our countrymen, inflict upon us, and the fact that they do not treat of our affairs with Your Highness and with the Dissâvas and the Portuguese ; that they ill-treat us by acts of violence and oppression, and treat us rather with pride, compelling us to give them the honours of the white cloth due only to Kings, the said Modeliars and Araches being oftentimes of lessor quality than the lascarins ; and to-day in the Seven-Corlas all are inferior

---

<sup>1</sup> Compare this heading with that of the translation in the Port. Era, II. 217.

to us in quality save the kinsmen of Simão Correa. And in this manner the evils they do to us will be remedied ; for they, the factors of the Dissâvas, are those who judge us, and we never have an opportunity of making complaints against them ; and sometimes our loss is unknown to the Dissâvas, at other times, when it is known to them, they dissemble, because they are their creatures ; and if we have Portuguese in their place, as we beg, we shall be relieved.

If in [time of] war the King grants us any reward, or gives us some larins, they take them for themselves ; and from the villages and arms they take what they like best, and thus they dishearten us from gaining victories.

And generally speaking, from the time of the General Pero Lopes de Souza to this, when the Island was subject to His Majesty, all the Generals who were slain, the countries which revolted, the rebellions which took place, the pitiful and disastrous destruction of our armies and of the Portuguese forces, were all brought about by the treacheries of Araches and Modeliars, whom no honours or rewards, so often heaped upon them, were able to keep in due allegiance to His Majesty and to our Lords the Generals ; but on the contrary they betrayed our armies to the King of Candea, killing with shots and strokes of the catana all those who took them deepest into their confidence, as is well-known to the world ; and after severing us from the body of the Portuguese arrayal, they treacherously betrayed us to the King of Candea, insulting us and taking all our kinsmen as sureties and leaving our wives in Columbo, and even in time of peace they do not let us take them back. In such sort that these perfidious men, siding with the King of Candea in time of war, injure and torment us, and destroy us in time of peace, relying on the Dissâvas whose office it rather behoves to destroy them than to favour and protect them.

| If these posts are held by the Portuguese, the result will be, *P 445* first of all, that the King of Candea will be driven to despair, for he will have no one to exchange letters with or to plot fresh revolts. And far better is a faithful and brave Captain than a weak and false one, who only trusts in treason, as has often been seen in their case. In the second place, if there is any disorder in the lands, there will be a punishment for them ; because as they will not be creatures of the Dissâvas, they will *P 837* take pains | to watch them, and the poor will be protected and relieved ; and we lascarins shall have a judge to resort to in the evils we suffer, a hope of relief which at present we do not enjoy.

THE MANNER IN WHICH THE NATIVE KINGS TREATED  
THE LASCARINS

Besides our *paravenias*,<sup>1</sup> we were given *bichaō*<sup>2</sup> (or quarterage) and they also distributed provisions to us every month according to the quality and ability of each one, and the arms he used. Afterwards we were allotted villages according to our deserts, filling our bellies with rice and our hands with larins, and not our heads with titles, which our native Princes granted with great stint and moderation.

In time of war we were given frequent gifts, nor were these or merited honours lacking in time of peace. But to-day we live in the misery which is patent to Your Highness, all that we possess they enter in the *tombo* and take from us, even robbing the areca from our gardens ; and they make us carry it to *bcot*, a thing which in the time of our Princes was never exacted from us ; and the areca which the King took was only from the *Mototo*<sup>3</sup> of his *gabara*,<sup>4</sup> villages cultivated by his slaves, and even they had not to transport them, but only the oxen of the royal villages. Let Your Highness consider what we have to live on, when even the pepper which we cultivate for our own food is not spared. Whence it happens that we have not the wherewithal to buy buffaloes, axes, mattocks, knives, and the necessary clothing to wear, nor the necessaries of life, nor anything, nor the means of getting them. And what is still worse is, they demand from us what we do not possess, and do not owe, and they force us to procure the same. How came the areca to be entered in the *tombo* as Royal property, when it is ours, and cultivated by us in our *paravenis*? Over and above the duty we paid, they added another without any betterment of the lands but rather the more decayed and depopulated each time. And if one were to say that we deserve to be loaded with further tributes, and to be treated in the manner in which we are treated, we reply that the lascarins never revolted against the Portuguese gentlemen, but that only the Araches and Modeliares did so, as we have said ; for the head governs the foot, and not the feet the head ; and therefore in proof of our loyalty, we ask for Portuguese Araches and Modeliares and the wherewithal to support ourselves, for | the greater F 448.

<sup>1</sup>"This is the general denomination of all lands, the possession of which was ceded by the Sovereign. Sometimes these lands were acquired by purchase, at other times by gift. These lands were frequently granted, originally, under service in tenure."—Bertolacci 286.

<sup>2</sup> *Vechchan*.

<sup>3</sup> *Sin. Mutettu*.

<sup>4</sup> *Sin. gabadagama*.

part of us cannot find a meal for ourselves and wives and children, even from the beet of the jungle ; and we live in the hope that we shall be treated as God and His Majesty and right reason ordained ; and time will show what loyal lieges we are. It is known to Your Highness, that though you ordered the contrary the arrayals are at present engaged in felling the areca trees, and from this you can judge how much we have to suffer and put up with, without any one to help us, and if they do so to us who are men-at-arms, what will they do with the others ? We leave everything to the prudence  
*P 233* and | Christianity of Your Highness, and of those who listen to these things, which are altogether true and are admitted by Law though they are against God and His commandments.

In the time of our Princes it was only for war they made use of our persons, and each one exercised himself in the weapons he used ; but to-day they keep us all occupied in their private work, and do not give time to till the fields, to such of us as have them.

#### THE DUTIES OF MAYORALS IN TIMES PAST AND PRESENT

In the time of our Kings our work was to farm the villages and make everyone till the lands of his *paravenias*, to repair the flood-gates, to plant and sow, and in time of war to watch and guard the *corkas* with the people thereof, and to appear once a year before the Kings with the same people, and with the customary present. Our houses and gardens were privileged, into which none might enter except with our permission ; and the King<sup>1</sup> never ordered the contrary but rather chastised severely those who entered therein in our absence.

To-day they have made us *farazes*<sup>2</sup> (a low caste, which carries andors and palanquins) whether we are present or not, any Pariah enters our houses and demands Royal honours due to Kings alone, and usually we are made cooks, fetching rice and preparing a variety of curries<sup>3</sup> for all who come and go, while we ourselves feed on the herbs of the forest. We are continually carrying *pingas*<sup>3</sup> on our shoulders, and they compel us to fetch coco[nuts], pepper, and other spices for

<sup>1</sup> Farash, Hind. *farrash*, 'a menial servant whose proper business is to spread carpets, pitch tents, &c.'

<sup>2</sup> Caril, pl. caris.

<sup>3</sup> An Indo-Portuguese word said to be from Mal. *pungah*, Anglice 'pingo'. The pingo formed of a lath cut from the stem of the areca or of the coconut palm and still used as a yoke in carrying burdens.—Ten. I., 497.

the *gabaras*, and butteries<sup>1</sup> of the Dissâvas, for we have to give them even these over and above what they take from us. They convert us into rowers, stone diggers,<sup>2</sup> carpenters, and their messengers (*panaviras*)<sup>3</sup> come into our houses and put our wives and children to the torture, if we fail to give what they ask, and what we do not have, and do not owe. And all this was introduced by the Dissâvas who do not leave us a tree unfelled ; besides other things, which we do not mention not to offend the ears of Your Highness.

And every class of persons who have dominion over us, many as they are, as is well known, has right to inflict <sup>F 444</sup> penalties on us. It is for these reasons that the lands and *gamaçoes*<sup>4</sup> are depopulated, because there is no redress for the violence done to us by taking sapan which we have in our gardens, even obliging us to feed those who come to do it, and many other intolerable wrongs, which it will be too long to relate.

### THE SERVICE OF THE NILAZ AND CAREAZ

We pay a pinga a year (which means a load) to the King or to him whose alimony<sup>5</sup> is the village in which we are. The areca and pepper of our gardens were ours, and we paid *oto*<sup>6</sup> and *anda*<sup>7</sup> for our fields. These *otos* and *andas* we used to place in the *motebos*,<sup>8</sup> and its owner would either sell them there or remove them by oxen or *aleas*. We served only the King in public works, with such system and order that however much we had to do, not more than a month's service fell to each one's share, and the rest of the time we employed in sowing and gaining our livelihood, and the King not only fed us when we served him, but even gave us wages, and ordered it to be paid, and in this way the country flourished and everything was cultivated.

To-day we have to serve ten or twelve Lords, the King in his service without pay or food ; the Dissâvas, the Foreyros, the Vidânas of Corias, the Vidânas of villages, Atacorlas,<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 'Dispensas,' whence the Anglo-Ceylonese term 'dispence villages'.

<sup>2</sup> Cavoqueyros, lit. quarry men. The Anglo-Indian term for laterite, *cabook* comes from *cavoque*.

<sup>3</sup> Sin. *panivida* (*karaya*), messenger.

<sup>4</sup> See *supra* p. 1010.

<sup>5</sup> Lit. who 'eats' the village, i.e., whose *comedia* (service-land) the village is.

<sup>6</sup> Sin. *oto*, tithe, the portion paid to the Crown or proprietor by the cultivator.

<sup>7</sup> Sin. *anda* 'that is at halves.' (Knox 101). Rent of half the crop paid to the proprietor by the cultivator.—Keg. Rep. 116.

<sup>8</sup> Sin. *Kordis*, chief of a *Korla*. *Atukordis* assistant to a *Korla*.

Cangânes<sup>1</sup> and Mayorals, and we are employed in all sorts of ways ; in short the great and small make use of us for their service ; and not satisfied with this, they make over our bodies in gift like cattle to whomever they like ; and we spend our whole life in this martyrdom, the *Foreyros* and others making us carry andors, transport to Columbo areca, paddy, sapan and whatever they need, from the villages, and fell timber in the villages and the forests, and drag it to the river, and take it to the Madaduwa,<sup>2</sup> where they have storehouses for its sale ; and thus the villages are destroyed. And so great is the service that they compel us to do that we have no time to cultivate the lands, and though we are aware that His Majesty has ordered the contrary, no orders have been given, and we have lost hope of any being ever given.

In the time of our Kings, only they, and by privilege the Bicanasingas, used andors. At present there is not a Pariah whom we do not carry, in spite of the complaints against this which we made during the recent revolt, and sent to Columbo, and many of us are, and spring from, honourable folk, and yet they make us carry many of low caste, and usually without giving us food.

In the time of our Kings, during war the munitions alone were entrusted to the Chaleaz, and all the rest was carried by oxen and *Aleas*, and we went in the army untrammelled, to dig trenches, and erect stockades when necessary. To-day we are so occupied in time of peace that we are not Masters of ourselves ; nor can we sow or till ; and in time of war we are laden like beasts, suffering want and cold from which many die as is well known, besides that we are cruelly cudgelled to death in payment for the trouble of carrying our loads, and when the arrayas retire, the greater part of us are left behind dead ; and as soon as one of us dies, they at once take our paravanas, because our wives are unable to perform the same service, nor do they give them to others who serve in the place of the dead, and thus our wives as well as our children perish, and they do not regard the fact that we are freemen, not slaves, being lieges of His Majesty, and that our service ought to have some limit, and that they must give our wives and children some means of sustenance. But if in our life-time<sup>P 840</sup> they do to us what is here described, and what every one can see, what have we to expect after death, as is also notorious ? It were better for us to be slaves than to live as we do, so ill-treated, that we have no help save to cry out to Heaven, to help us, since earthly help we have none.

<sup>1</sup> Tam. *Kangany*.

<sup>2</sup> Medaduwa near Urugodawatta, Colombo ; cf. Almanac 1852 LXXI.

## CHAPTER 3.

CONTINUATION OF THE MEMORIAL OF THE CHINGALAZ  
AND THE REPLY OF THE GENERAL

## OF THE CHANDAS AND OF ARECA

Our duty was to pay a recognized portion out of our plants and gardens. But to-day they take from us our pepper and areca, and they compel us to go in search of it to other parts depriving us of our liberty, as something due to them. And if we have no areca, because the areca trees did not bear, or because we did not find any outside our village, as it is sought for by all, they make us pay for it at the price of Columbo, alleging that we had to pay what is in the *tombo*, as if we and the others have bound ourselves to the *tombo*-makers to pay what we have not and do not owe, and even more. And what they exact from us, we give, however difficult it be, though we are not obliged. Because areca was abundant when the Portuguese first came to this country, it was rated at four larins, and at that price, both from their own villages and from outside, they found as much as they wanted. As time passed, the merchants and the *Vidânes* monopolized the whole and prevented us from selling it to whomever we chose, and this abuse grew, and they registered it as law in the *tombo*; and for what to-day <sup>F 447</sup> is worth from 12 to 15 xerafins, they pay us at the rate of 4 larins. Is there a law which orders such a thing, or justifies such wrongs? The Fathers who preach to us, teach us the contrary.

The Kings took no pepper whatever from their vassals, and if they take from us dues and customs, how can they take our fruits? To-day, in addition to their customs and dues, as soon as the pepper is in season, they at once place a guard and seize it, as if it were their own and they had planted it; and they ask for more pepper than the pepper plants yield. And this is the reason why we do not grow either pepper or areca, in order to escape the trouble, as what we are continually suffering is quite sufficient.

## OF THE FARMERS

In the time of our Kings the *anda* fields had two customs, one called *Peldora*<sup>1</sup> and the other *Assucadão*<sup>2</sup>; one was paid at the threshing floor and the other leaving that quantity uncut near the hut where we watch at night, because of the great

<sup>1</sup> Sin. *peldora*, lit. hut-door. 'Peldorah is a piece of Corn they leave standing before the watch house which is set up in their Corn ground to watch their corn from the wild beasts.'—Knox 101.

<sup>2</sup> I do not know what this stands for.

trouble of watching. After these two customs in favour of  
*1141* the Farmer, the crop was divided into halves. Not one of these do they give us to-day ; on the contrary they even take from us our moiety ; for when we come to divide it, the Cangânas and Aruqus<sup>1</sup> have already eaten the moiety of our portion, for they do not eat on the account of the lord but of the Farmer.

As regards the *oto* when we have sowed an *amunam*, and the crop has failed, they take that same as dues ; and if the crop is good they took two amunams, which is double the seed paddy. But to-day they take from us a worse than the *anda*, for the Vidânas and Cangânes measure as they like, and we have no one to appeal to save the day of Judgment.

#### OF THE CHALEAZ

We, the Chaleaz, came to this Island in a *pague*<sup>2</sup> of Moors which came into Chilaö. We derive our origin from Chale,<sup>3</sup> and the port of Chale took from us the name it has to-day. We came seven, one went away, and we remain six. We married in this Island in the Court of the King. The first *paraventia* given to us was Calaturë, and from there we spread along the coast, as is seen even to-day. When our descendants had increased, the Kings levied from us as dues, two *fanams* from each household, and as our duty was to weave cloth, we paid one *tupetim* a year. Those who had service lands and villages, paid their dues like the other natives. The first time we made cinnamon in the Island was in the time of Rajû King of Ceytavâca, and as what we made was small, we were very | *F 447v* well paid.

At this time they increased our tributes, and the two *fanams* which each household paid to the King was converted into four larins a head per male ; and when the King had made use of us for preparing cinnamon, which is increased each time, the Vidanas thereof kept us engaged in their private work ; and when we were hoping for relief from these *engabadas*<sup>4</sup> and afflictions on account of which many of our people fled to Candea where they live free from these excesses, a sentence that came from Goa was declared, making us slaves of the

<sup>1</sup> Sin. *Adukku*, 'assortment of provisions ready dressed' (i.e., for a chief or other important person).—Key. Rep. 132.

<sup>2</sup> Mahr. *bagla*, *bugala*, (Anglo-Indian. 'Buggalow') a name commonly given on the west coast of India to Arab vessels of the old native form.—Hob-Job.

<sup>3</sup> Chale, Chalia (Chalyam) is an old port in Malsbar, on the south side of Beypur river and opposite Beypur. The terminal station of the Madras Railway is in fact where Chalyam was. Abulfeda calls it Shaliyat.

<sup>4</sup> Sin. 'body-tax'

King ; and this for no other purpose, than that those who plotted it may rob us in safety, under the name of slaves. In proof of what they contend against us, they said that the Kings of this Island went to Chale and brought 24,000 captives, as if we were cows or bulls, or had brought us tethered, or as if we had come flying through the air, because whence came the vessels for so many people ? So that the very reason which they allege against us shows that it is all a fable and what we say is certain, as we have in our ołas and ancient traditions ; and without being heard we were sentenced by default, against all the rights of divine and natural law, which they say are observed in the tribunals of justice of the Portuguese Gentlemen. And thenceforth they continued to say what they like, and that the native Kings did not feed those who served them ; all of which is quite the contrary, and those who | say so have not seen or read the ancient books concerning the affairs of this Island and of the Kings thereof, which are extant even to-day ; and the duty under which we live proves the opposite of what is imposed on us. If we be slaves, the King can well sell us and our children, and if he cannot do so, as the Portuguese Gentlemen admit when we question them, how are we slaves ? We prefer to be so, rather than be treated as we are, for then their Ministers will defend us. And how can it be that we are slaves for work, but be not so for the privileges ? Now that we live under this slur, it is necessary to declare the oposite publicly, and the liberty we have enjoyed so many years is enough, even if we were slaves at the beginning for us to have acquired our Liberty.

In conclusion, all of us who have duties and estate in the Island, lieges of His Majesty, goldsmiths, carpenters, Blacksmiths, Turners, Patangatins, Chandaz, Cules, Vidânas of the corla and Atacorolas, Mayorals and Vidânas of villages, we beg you, in the name of the same Lord, to ascertain what privileges and services each one had in the time of our Kings and what they were obliged to do, and to give to those who possess the villages to observe, as was promised to us in the Assembly of Malvâna, as has been set out in our petition, for we were allowed to chose the Laws | which we preferred, and we accepted those of our ancient Kings, and that a <sup>7 448</sup> tombo be made of them to be kept as a protection against the above-mentioned grievances, disfavours and wrongs, which we suffer.

These are the things that now occur to us and which we ought to manifest to Your Highness in order that by your prudence and Catholic spirit you may not only show them to the other Gentlemen of the Board, but also inform His Lordship the Viceroy and especially His Majesty, that he may

protect us and safeguard our liberties with justice, and govern us accordingly, giving us only what is our own, for that is all we ask ; considering that it is not right that many perish for the conservation of a few ; and meanwhile to deliver us from the continual presence of the Vidânas in the villages, for it is a yoke we cannot bear any longer, for we are unable to maintain them in addition to the other exactions we complain of. And for the same reasons we ask the same with regard to the renters of the villages, and that Your Highness relieve us from having to go to and fro felling timber and performing other like services.

Moreover as our ancient Kings did not have *Maraleyros*,<sup>1</sup> and that at a time when everything was in abundance, so as not to harass the poor, and as the *Mardas*<sup>1</sup> were held only in three appointed places ; [we beg] that the same may be done henceforth, for they cause great oppression where they go with many people in their train, living on the blood of the poor, and after making greater expenses than the *Mardas* yield ; and though Your Highness last year, when you came to hear of it, tried to prevent it, the evil is going on.

P 843 | We beg to have in the arrayal a standard or banner of the arms of our ancient Kings of Cota, and that it be placed near the Royal Standard of His Majesty, so as not to forget the memory of such great Lords, and that by seeing the one and the other, we may be encouraged to do our duty, and outshine the arms of Candea.

Lastly we represent to Your Highness that we present these petitions and memorial through a third person, as we do not wish that a particular person should be involved, and in secret so as not to provoke the anger of the Portuguese Gentlemen ; lest the same fate as befell the Mandoria<sup>2</sup> of Belitôta who in times past, by attempting to obtain justice, was for that reason killed, and deprived of all he had ; we do not wish to run the same risk, though so long as we have Your Highness we are sure that no such misfortune will happen to us."

The Petition and the foregoing notices, drawn up according to their little knowledge and capacity, was given by the Modeliares and Mayores in writing to a certain Religious of St. Francis, who after translating them into Portuguese handed them in secret to General Diogo de Melo de Castro, who, like a Christian and a sensible man, thanked him for his

<sup>1</sup> *Maraleyro*, the officer who recovers *Morais*, i.e., death duties, heriots.

<sup>2</sup> See *supra* p. 22.

diligence and recommended him to console the people, saying that he would send an answer in the same way through him, as he did after eight days, in the following manner :—

#### REPLY OF THE GENERAL

'A copy of the petition and other notes are in my hands ; and each time it appears to me better and that everything pointed out is well founded. I will make every endeavour to send it this year to the Kingdom [Portugal], and would to God I had received it earlier so as to send it by the galliots of cinnamon.

Your Honour tells me (for so they addressed the Religious in those days) to consider these papers in the Board and in the Council, but considering that these matters concern so many ; and will perhaps meet with opposition, in revenge for what is set forth there, and they will demand correction, I think it better to send the papers to the Kingdom, without giving any information here, so that the remedy may come from there by way of a provision of the King, and thus do everything without this inconvenience, the more so because what can be remedied by me I will propose to the Board as if of my own accord. Let Your Honour tell me what you think about this.

I wish to do much good to the Chingalaz and to render justice, relieving them from the extortions they suffer from, and from being tyrannised. Your Honour can so notify to all, and that if these matters should not have redress at my hands, they will never have it, that they may hope that we will give it, for in Portugal and India I have some influence. Thus I only want them to be patient, and to give time for these papers to go to | the Kingdom and come back, and then it will be seen whether I am a man of my word. However, meanwhile I shall not fail to try to relieve them, and assist them in every way I can, and to provide for those who have no means. I am awaiting orders from Goa which will come at the first opportunity. All things relating to your Honour's service I gladly undertake, and may Our Lord reward you for the zeal wherewith you undertook this matter. Colombo, 19th December, 1636. Diogo de Melo de Castro.'

I have given the letter as it is, so that one may see from it that the Chingalaz had not exaggerated in what they said, and we shall see later, how respectfully they spoke, omitting many delicate things more closely touching their honour, and that even in the violences and oppressions that they mentioned they spoke so moderately and so timidly. The General at once proposed at a Meeting of the Board that it was necessary to put a stop to the following things, and that the Father Vicars throughout the Island be ordered | to read publicly to F 44

the Chingalâz what was settled, for the welfare of all, and the following proclamation of the decision of the Board was notified.

I have settled in the Junta some matters, the execution of which I entrust to the Father Rectors of the Parishes, as they are for the service of God ; and to avoid the trouble which the unfortunate will have in coming to me from such a distance with their complaints ; where the Dissâva is near, let them go to him ; and the Fathers will see this order carried out or inform me of it.

Firstly that no person shall be obliged to pay areca if he has not got it, and if he has areca trees, which do not yield as much as it is the custom to pay, he shall only be obliged to give to the lord what areca he has and nothing more.

That the residents of the villages shall not be compelled to give to the lord a like share of what they rear or cultivate, cows, hens, eggs, pigs, &c. but that they may sell them freely after giving to the lord of the village what they are obliged to give.

That none shall have as Vidâna a man of low caste, but let them be of honourable caste, under pain of not being obeyed, nor can he complain of any courtesy they do to him, nor punish them.

That no Vidâna or any other Chingalâ or native of the country, shall go in an andor on the road, nor in any other manner be carried by coolies, under pain of punishment to themselves and to those who carry them.

That no Portuguese *foreyro*, nor native of the country shall reside in the village, and still less remain there with his wife and children, because of the inconvenience that results, to good government and the preservation of the villages themselves.

That all persons who contravene these provisions of the Board shall undergo the punishment attached to them. Your Honour shall proclaim throughout the Christianities sending me certificates | thereof from the Father Rectors ; and for the service of God and King fulfil them in their entirety.   
P 545  
Columbo, 20 March, 1637. Diogo de Melo de Castro.

These orders were published in the aforesaid manner, but they had no effect, on account of the rebellion that soon took place, and the death of the General in Candea. Nor was it expected that they would have effect, for it was easier to conquer the Island anew and to drive the Hollanders out of it, than set in order the inordinate and insatiable thirst of self-interest, even after so manifest chastisements. And that this may be seen more clearly, and how modest the Chingalâz were in what they proposed, we shall go through the castes and offices in time of peace | and war, pointing out what was notorious to all.   
P 546

## CHAPTER 4.

THE JUST COMPLAINTS OF THE CHINGALAS FURTHER  
CONFIRMED

---

As no *jombo* was made of the Laws and Customs of these people and of the duties of the particular castes, it was left to the caprice, to the good or bad conscience of all those who had some authority over them, and to the good or evil nature of the Ministers of the King and Captains and *foreyros* to treat them as they like ; and as their minds were soured by the continuous rebellions and the manifest repugnances which that nation showed to foreign domination, they were treated in all things as rebels and much worse than slaves, without anyone putting a stop to the tyrannies which were commonly inflicted on them ; and some under pretext of war and others under pretext of the revenue and service of the King, they reduced them to the extremes of despair. And though these Asiatic people are most particular about the observance of their customs and the distinction of castes and occupations—so superstitious and observant indeed that no greater wrong could be done to them than to pervert them—they made them all without distinction carry andores and palanquins, a most vile office, which in the South appertains to those who are called Cules and in Goa to Farazes and *boys*,<sup>1</sup> and they preferred to be cudgelled and oftentimes to be killed rather than perform a task so mean, when it did not fall to their lot by caste. And this grieved them the more because it was their custom that none save the King himself should be carried on the back of people of low condition, while others who were not wont to go on foot, rode by Permission on *aleas*. But in the time of the Portuguese not only *foreyros*, going to and from their villages and to other parts, but even his *Vidâna*, though often of low caste, and even his slaves, made use of these people without any distinction, and they even made a gift of their service to any soldier, and these latter were already so mighty that when they went to the arrayal or returned, the *Vidâna* or Mayoral was obliged at the signal of a gun-shot to give them a cooly at least for the knapsack, from village to village.

---

<sup>1</sup> Palanquin bearer, from the name of the caste boy.

P 844 | They made them carry *pinga* and loads on their heads, the work proper to those whom they call Curumbis,<sup>1</sup> and they sometimes made them come from Gâle to Columbo with loads of no value, and also from the most remote villages for many leagues, without giving them food, neither on the journey nor during the time they were detained in their service in that praca, though what had to be given to them, and what justice and reason demand, had been settled from the time of their native Kings. They indiscriminately made them build walls (taypas), and perform other services out of doors as well as within the house, though this appertained to particular castes and for a determinate time | with the obligation of feeding P 450 them, which is the first thing that many failed to do, obliging them to bring food from their houses if they had any, or to steal or die unless they found in the jungle some poor sustenance for life.

And all these and other tyrannies were inflicted on them after we had left them nothing of their own, for after they had paid the dues on their gardens, goods and *paravenias*, they were deprived of all their products, the coconuts, arecas, paddy, pepper, sapan, betel, bunches of figs,<sup>2</sup> butter, lacteals, poultry and other things ; and they were masters of nothing, nor were they able to sell, for the *foreyros* or their agents seized everything. As they had no liberty to seek other masters nor leisure to cultivate their lands, being continually engaged in labouring for others, they were reduced to abject poverty, and the majority of them had not the wherewithal to buy a cloth for raiment for themselves and wives and children, nor cattle and implements for cultivation. To escape these inconveniences, in times past all the work that could be done by oxen and *aleas* was as a rule never done by men, so that they might have time and opportunity to cultivate their lands better, and the King has many thousand cattle and two hundred *aleas* for his service. But now any soldier laid hold of any one whom he met to carry his bedding and knapsack, without making any distinction between coolies and better castes. Once some soldiers compelled a man to carry the bedding on his back. One of his nephews followed, begging them to let him go, as he was a respectable man, that he would find them a cooly or would give money for one. They not only did not let him go but used such abusive words towards him that he exclaimed : ' What will become of us if

<sup>1</sup> The Indian name for the prevalent Sudra cultivator caste Kuppi, Kon-Mahar.; Anglo-Indian Koonbee. See Hob-Job., sub. v.

<sup>2</sup> Plantains.

we had not Candea to go to ! We shall all have to become slaves or at least coolies.' And these troops were as ill-disciplined as in other parts of India, and it was not easy for the Generals to reduce them to military discipline.

*P. 547* The *foreyros* ordered them to bring fowls, butter, areca, wax and other commodities from outside their villages and from the lands of Candea, and to carry them, often without giving them food, or making any allowance for risk, loss, or breakage, but taking their value from them, and they had oftentimes to pawn or sell their children for the purpose, and as this trade brought them large profits, there were many who took to it with these iniquities. | They had different measures for selling and for receiving dues and for buying. And with these they made a monopoly of the liquor of the palmyra, which they call *suru*, and other things at the price they chose, and after making it into wine, they made them carry it for many leagues, while it was only by bartering these products that they brought to their houses cheap provisions; while formerly it was their practice to pay the dues and to do some service, so that they might freely | sell what they obtained by cultivating lands, *F. 450v* or rearing cattle and fishing in the sea or river. They felled their jak trees to build houses and vessels, though that was the best fruit of its kind in Asia and their main sustenance, often without paying them, and at other times paying a very low price, though they knew from experience that the majority of the vessels built with such injustice came to a bad end. It happened once that a Chingalâ coming from the side of Gâle with a heavy load of *nachini*, met a Religious in Madampe, and laying the *pinga* on the ground, he began to shout and curse his life ; saying : ' That they made him walk laden like an ox for more than 20 leagues with a load which at most was worth a larin, without giving him his food.'

In the division of the crop there was another crop of injustices, for after the reaping and settling what had to go to the *foreyros*, which was what the *Vidâna*, the *Cangâna*, or clerk of the village<sup>1</sup> fancied, the paddy was piled up and they all ate from the Farmer's portion ; but at the time of the division they used a large measure to recover their dues and sold by another smaller measure. Some *foreyros* used to go to the villages at this time with their families, and all feasted sumptuously at the cost of the inhabitants who went shares for these expenses, and in these exactions was consumed the greater part of what would have sufficed to sustain them for

---

<sup>1</sup> Liannah.—Knox 52.

many months, and each village had a Vidâna contipually resident who had, besides other profits, so many measures of rice per day and his curry, and these dues he recovered even for the time when he was absent. And as they were their judges, they whipped and imprisoned and inflicted penalties like the *foreyros* themselves. They also exacted the asual honours ; their houses had to be decorated with white cloth, and they had to be carried in andores, though they were often of low caste or slaves of the *foreyros* ; which they felt very keenly on account of their customs, and still more when they took their wives, even that of the chief man of the village, without fear of God, or respect for their neighbour. The fishermen, when there were any, were not exempt, for besides the tax they paid which was enough for the sustenance of the House, the Vidânas took for the lords whatever they liked, and when they had to pay them a larin (equal to a tostaô) they gave thein a quarter of it.

There was also an obligation, unjustly imposed on them, on the owners of the *padas* (fishing boat) to pay for each *pada* P 548 3 or 4 amunoës of areca which came from inland, | to be exchanged for fish ; but when its value rose, this exchange ceased and the fishermen were unable to pay their impost. When this tribute failed, they seized all the fish to be sold for the *foreyro* ; and though some complained to the General, there was no remedy and they were again | penalized and P 549 persecuted. They also obliged the Farmers to be the pur-chasers of their fowls, butter, wax, areca and sapan, and other substances outside the villages and in the lands of Candea, and usually to carry them on their backs, without giving them food and sometimes without deducting for the breakage and loss which happens in the case of such goods, but forcing them to pay the highest price. In this way they seized other things not excluding even the *sura* of the palm trees, according to the measure and price they chose ; and afterwards they ordered them carry it for many leagues, though they paid their dues promptly.

And though D. Jeronimo de Azevedo when he was General, on the advice of many, settled that the lordship of every village in which there was areca should be his, and that he would pay four larins or its equivalent one *cacha*, for each amunam to the owners of the gardens and areca trees, it was because at this time there was no lack of areca, and it was not so much in demand as it afterwards became, and for this reason that price was entered in the *foral*<sup>1</sup>; but as some

<sup>1</sup> The register in which the forces or dues were entered.

villages had no arecas, their inhabitants were obliged to get a fixed number of amunams from other villages for their lords, and they were registered with this declaration. When its price rose, owing to its being in great demand, the villages were not able to supply, as none was to be found even at 12 larins, but even then they forcibly and tyrannically paid them only at the rate of 4 larins. And if they had it in their villages, without minding that it might be more one year than another, they made them pay the quantity in its entirety, and the unfortunate people, in order to make up this quantity either ran into debt or even went to beg it for charity in Candea to pay their lords. There were similar injustices in its delivery, for in counting handfuls, for 10 they took 12 and even more, and in each amunam 4 to 5000 arecanuts were needed for these exactions, and those who received the royal dues of areca were the worst in this matter, for the surplus was theirs by a custom introduced by themselves. It was on account of all these oppressions as one can clearly see, that God punished them mostly by the hands of the very people they harassed and persecuted.

And that no form of oppression might be wanting, every Portuguese with a little labour built a grand house of cabook (typas) or of stone, the construction of which lasted many years, encircling the hills and valleys, by means of the coolies of their villages, without giving them to eat but with many a cudgelling in payment, and good punishments if they delayed or fled from the work; and as the rebellions were almost continual and the destruction of these buildings frequent, the poor Chingalaz were ever kept busy at this labour, nor did they resent less that their jak trees were also felled for these buildings, and for the vessels which they built, for they are trees that yield much fruit, and in Ceylon excellent ones, for each of which at various times they were paid one or two larins though they would not have sold them for any price however high. Not less were the molestations of the officials of the Corlas, Vidânas, Atacorlas and Panauiras. All these racked and haled their own countrymen in the discharge of their duties. Each Corla had its Vidâna and four Atacorlas. To them were addressed the orders of the Generals, Vedores da Fazendas and Dissâvas, to carry on the business of the King, and especially their own, and on these pretexts their oppressions were beyond belief. When the Generals built their vessels, all had to serve, some felling timber and jak trees, which they resented most, others transporting them, others sawing them, without receiving any food or pay, but having to support the Panaviras or Messengers under pain of having

to pay for them. So also did the Vidânas, who had jurisdiction in the villages, doing the business which those who governed the Island entrusted to them, paying three or four for a thing worth ten, and taking for themselves whatever they liked from what was brought for the butteries. Such was the manner of the vexations of the poor as may be seen from the following instance. At the season of making cinnamon it was the custom to distribute the King's money in the villages for making the mats in which it is wrapped; and for each mat they gave six bazarucos, giving one to four to each house. When the mats had to be delivered, the people had to feed at their cost those who came to fetch them; and this entertainment cost them more than the price of the mats.

Those who had to bear the heaviest burden were the Chaleaz whom the Ministers of the Royal Fazenda sought unjustly to enslave, without a hearing or a defence of their rights, or heeding the most ancient possession of their liberty, in so grave a matter. The devisers of this and other expedients grew rich and possessed their villages, and as they were on the roll of the Royal Fazenda, the Ministers carried them into effect, especially this one regarding the enslaving of the Chaleas, without redress or appeal, in order to oblige them to make more cinnamon than they were bound to. It was quite a new custom for the bahar of cinnamon to be of four bales and each bale of 94 arratels, but as its price rose after the King made it a monopoly, the Ministers of the Fazenda of Ceylon either on their orders, which is more likely, or on order from Goa, settled that the bahar should be of 6 bales and each bale 110 arratels, excluding the seven which the Vidâna of the Mabâda took as guerdon for himself, which made up a very large quantity, and if the bahars of the seamen and of the privileged Lords <sup>F 452</sup> were increased in like manner, one can well see the loss which resulted to the King in this way. The <sup>P 454</sup> aroba<sup>1</sup> which was taken for the King, was of 75 arratels though formerly only 45, as had been ordained by a provision which was not carried out. They gave money to the Chaleaz for 600 bahars of cinnamon at six larins, or tostoes a bahar, and each Chaliâ being a slave of the King, paid one bahar per head; often they ordered them to supply a larger quantity, and as they were not able to contribute, they left their *paravanas*, abandoned the villages and went away, some to Candea, others to the inland parts where they were not known, and the means by which these ministers sought to enhance the Royal Fazenda, and secretly their own, tended to diminish it,

---

<sup>1</sup> A Portuguese measure, 32 pounds.

as has often been seen in India, of which I shall mention only two instances outside Ceylon. A certain minister went to Diu,<sup>1</sup> and not finding means to draw new certificates for his despatches, ordered that the Nacodaz<sup>1</sup> or the Captains of the ships of Meca, should not enjoy the privilege of a small packet<sup>c</sup> of Venetians, which they were wont only to show to the officer of the Custom-house without paying any dues for them. This privilege corresponded to another which was given them in Môca where they paid no dues for the first *barel* of fine cloth. The profit which he thereby obtained for the King was that there did not appear in the following years a single Venetian, and they gave the excuse that they did not sell clothing, though it was known that at two per cent. this money passed in the English ships to Surat. Here in Goa the Ministers of the King struggled with a royalty on salt. A heavy price was set on it, and as the owners of the salt pans lost much, they gave them up. This price was reduced by a prudent Governor, but it was still so high, that in retaliation the Canarese who brought rice made a monopoly of it; and when we complained of the high price they had set on it, they answered that if we removed the tribute on salt they would remove it from the rice, though what the Portuguese gained thereby was little in comparison with the cost of this provision, and the relief from famine which was raging for years.

Returning to the Chaleaz, their sons, so long as they were not old enough to peel cinnamon, gave only quit rent for it, later on the Vidânas increased this, from 6 bazarucos upwards according to the age, for not less was the power of these kinglets. The Vidânas of the Mabâda, who are the Captains of the Chaleaz, again introduced the practice that they should be given 40 amunams of areca, and so of fish as of other things they had to get a share at the price they pleased to set. They made a monopoly of *Tupiti* (a cloth with which they cover themselves) mattocks, coconuts, vinegar, poultry, butter, &c., and made them sell these things in dhoneys on sea, and pingas on land, without giving them even their food, nor opportunity to look after their families, | regardless of the profit they brought to the King by spending six months of the year in peeling cinnamon, often sustaining themselves with the | herbs of the forest and at other times by stealing on the road, as they had no other remedy. In this way also acted the under-vidânas, getting whatever profit they could and inflicting many other tyrannies on the poor Chaleas.

<sup>1</sup> Pers. *na-khaga*, ship's master, captain.

## CHAPTER 5.

THE SAME SUBJECT IS CONTINUED AS REGARDS THE CAPTAINS OF WAR AND OF THE PORTS.

---

The Putabēnas,<sup>1</sup> though of the caste of the Chaleaz, were only obliged to make the cinnamon into bundles and to erect the storehouses in which it is stored. They and those who peeled cinnamon in the time of their Kings did not contribute areca and were free to sell it to whomsoever they pleased, the head of each household paying a duty of only four larins which they called *Decum*.<sup>2</sup> But the Vidānas levied another from all the sons of each household, four larins per head, a newly invented tribute. Whatever areca they had was seized and entered in the *tombo* for the King, leaving them nothing whatever for their food or for sale ; and if on account of the drought or other misfortunes they were unable to give what they were bound to do according to the *tombo*, or because their areca trees were cut down without regard to the great profit they gave to the King, they were ordered to pay for the areca that was wanting at the price of Columbo, and the Vedores da fazenda with patents (*portarias*) of the General, made this levy through their peons<sup>3</sup> at the cost of many tears to the poor, for as they had not the wherewith to pay, it became a fresh misery and they had to pawn or sell their children. And what seems more incredible is that they obliged the widows of the Chaleaz to pay the cinnamon which their husbands were bound to supply. Ambrozio de Freytas da Camara, when Vedor da fazenda, being informed that the Chaleaz had to pay more areca than they had in their gardens, went to Belitōta, and being assured of the truth of the complaint, ordered at the time the amount to be reduced.

The lascarins did not escape this oppression, though they were so necessary for war, which in that island could not be waged without them, nor were we able to safeguard what we possessed, however many Portuguese soldiers we might have,

<sup>1</sup> Sin. *pataēnda*, dignitary.

<sup>2</sup> Sin. lit. 'sight (offering)', what one takes when he goes to 'see a great man.' All the great men, the Nobles and the Governors of the country make their appearance before the King with their Dackun, their New Year gift, which are due and accustomed presents.'—Knox 47. 'When there is a new Governor . . . the whole country comes up to appear before him. Neither may they come empty handed, but each one must bring his gift or present.'—Ib. 57.

<sup>3</sup> Pioē, from pē, footman, a word that has survived as 'peon'.

for those rugged hil's and dense forests could not be crossed by the arrayal with much baggage and provisions as the lascarins do at their peril in the lands of the enemy ; and they alone are able to climb these heights easily, and with the same lightness of foot they surmount the thickets in which they were bred, and when the musket is of no avail, they ply the ~zachuro. And yet His Majesty had | no worse <sup>F 45</sup> paid men-at-arms than these troops in Ceylon. They served till death, or till they were so old that they were not able to manage themselves nor their arms and what was paid was not <sup>P 85</sup> enough to clothe and feed them | still less their families, without resorting to some industry of their hands ; and when they were unable to serve, they received nothing. If villages were assigned to them in payment, they were kept so busy, that as there was no time to cultivate them, they ran to waste, and as the grant was not confirmed, they were usually given to the Portuguese. Though at first there were Dissâvas who on these terms had 4,000 lascarins, afterwards in all the four Dissâvas there were not as many, because even that scanty pay was wanting. Because of the scant regard with which some Portuguese treated them—and because they were treated like enemies in the villages through resentment at their revolts, though it was chiefly on account of them that the Portuguese were able to enjoy the villages in peace—little solicitation on the part of their Chiefs was enough to make them join the revolts, as they were persuaded that they would even be enslaved, were it not for the need they had of them ; and the strongest argument whereby the King of Candea instigated them to revolt against Constantino de Sá de Noronha was telling them that they woula be again employed in the new prâças erected on the opposite coast of Ceylon.

Everyone understood that without lascarins the war could not be kept up in Ceylon, nor what we possessed safeguarded with any amount of soldiers, as may be seen in this history, but they remained in a worse condition than the slaves, for the latter were at least given food and clothing even when they did not work, but few were the lascarins who were able to maintain even themselves with what the King gave them, and still less their families, unless their own industry helped them thereto. The chief cause of this disorder was that many new Dissâvas came from outside Ceylon, who did not know from experience how important it was to keep many men well settled and content. For these and many other reasons they were persw. <sup>that</sup> they would all be made slaves, if the need for them were not so great.

Even the soldiers took part in these oppressions inflicted on the lascarins, regardless of the fact that they were their comrades in war and in labour. When they came down to the ports, they spent 10 or 12 days in a journey of 2 or 3, making them carry their knapsacks, and if they had any quarrel with them or found them in their way, they sometimes took their lives ; and of those who were in the arrayal or in the garrisons, they violated the wives and daughters even of the highest born, and usually in the nearest Corlas in which we were most confident. And if one remonstrated with them, they replied that they had to feed themselves where they were, that they were rebellious dogs, and that the fewer they were the better. Nor would they permit them to defend themselves by arms, <sup>P 443</sup> | not to give them an opportunity of doing the same. Nor was it easy for those who governed to punish them, for as they were usually far away from the garrison, that is to say in the interior, it was rarely proved who was the offender. And it is a remarkable fact that though <sup>P 453</sup> to mix with other nations, | though if the King had had the wherewithal to pay them, he would never have lacked Asiatic soldiers, foot and horse, who could have been of great use in that conquest.

On the Mayorals of Corlas and villages depends the peaceful condition or disturbance of the country, and so long as they did not appear, no arrayal considered itself safe. They were obliged to appear before the General two or three times a year, with certain dues in acknowledgment of [him as] their King, and to feed his officials when they came there with his messages, for which they enjoyed their privileges. At first there was a Corla which had more than 200, and afterwards many which had not even 10 ; for those that became vacant in the villages of the powerful, remained exempt from this obligation, and the *foreyros* profited by their service lands, and the burden which formerly fell on so many fell afterwards on a few. And while there was at first only one King with his Ministers, now everybody sought to be so, and any servant made himself a greater person than his master, and if what they desired was not done, or what they asked was not given, they raised false charges against them and the latter had not only to pay penalties but sometimes even to pay with their lives. After the villages called Gabara were taken from the Generals, they wanted those noble people to be their coolies, and do all the work of their household, and the Dissa<sup>vas</sup> did the same. On the other hand there was a different excess with regard to the grandees

of that nation, and that was to give them more than was due and to admit them into greater intimacy than was necessary, against the opinion of Rajû, the only governor of the Chingalaz, who tried his best that each might have what was necessary according to his state, but that none should have too much, lest he got it into his head to rebel. It happened that a Farmer among others, sang louder than the others in the tillage ; he had notice of this, ordered him to be called, and he found that the reason for this pride was that he had a *fanam*<sup>1</sup> of silver, which was worth six bazauroos. In our time some grandees had a revenue of two or three thousand pardaos, which were given in such a way that there was room to give them more. And because a part of what had been given to him was withdrawn from D. Theodosio, he plotted the rebellion against Constantino de Sâ, to whom he owed much, and who placed the utmost confidence in him.

And adding to these oppressions those that we shall presently mention of divers Ministers and Captains, there is more room to wonder that they did not revolt oftener or that they sometimes served us faithfully rather than at the rebellions they made ; and if we try to be good judges in our <sup>P 154</sup> own cause, we shall find that the Portuguese nation would not have put up with these insults had they justice on their side. Nor can the inconstancy of the Chingalaz and their inborn spirit which brooked no foreign dominion be alleged as an excuse, for there is a great difference between justice and tyranny ; and if we treated them as they deserved, they would not have considered us in the light of strangers ; nor is one hatred ever remedied by another. This gave a handle to the King of Candea to give out that the God of the <sup>P 154</sup> Portuguese was inflicting on them the aforesaid punishment because of the many oppressions and injustices inflicted on the natives. But as the Portuguese considered him an enemy, they would not admit his theology nor his counsel.

The Dissâvas under pretext of war, generally concerned themselves with their own gains, and few there were who served the King otherwise than out of self-interest. They imprisoned and released entire villages ; they withdrew from one and gave to another as they liked ; and some there were who gave to their kinsmen what they took from their Araches and lacarins. Of the villages distributed to the men-at-arms there was little more than the title left to them, for they took for themselves the whole crop and areca and other thing

---

<sup>1</sup> The silver Sinhalese *fanam* = 6 bazauroos, 20 = 1 larin, and 60 = 1 Ceylon pardaô or xerafim.—H. W. C.

which gave a yield ; and there scarcely remained the where-withal for them to maintain themselves, many being without even this relief and without any grant. General Diogo de Melo tried to grant lands to those people who had none. He sent suitable persons to the four Dissâvas in company with as many Religious to accommodate those who had no maintenance. and they were able to remedy very little and many remained without service lands, because everything had already been given to the Portuguese. About this they complained to the General that the distribution of lands was very badly made. And it is much to be wondered at that the Portuguese should at this time be masters of all the low countries, and that almost everything was distributed among so few Captains and casados, who are sufficient to enjoy them but never enough to defend them, which was ever the greatest mistake of the government of Ceylon and Jafanapataõ, and which ever will be, so long as each Portuguese, often forgetting his origin, wishes to be treated as a Ruler, without reducing himself to the limitations of his birth.

Thus in time of war, as more freely in time of peace, the Dissâvas had on the frontiers and in the frontier towns of Candea, storehouses for salt, opium, cloth, caps, and other things which were exchanged for areca, wax, sapan, and other things of that Kingdom, negotiating these purchases openly, placing their agents in Candea, taking and removing one thing and another, and so great was the thirst for areca, that while its price there was formerly four larins, it was not available in the last days for 15 ; and so abundant was the clothing they took, that a *cacha* which in Columbo was worth 6 larins, those of Candea would not have for 4, and there was no silver | jewellery which was not disposed of to invest in <sup>P 444</sup> areca, with the result that whatever the Portuguese had went into that Kingdom ; and though at first there was shortage of many things, everything came in abundance, the Dissâvas and the Portuguese who had some capital being so greedy in this matter, that they did not give those of Candea time to bring it there, for when they could they bought it for 4 larins. And as the King saw this ambition, he levied a fresh impost which brought him not a little income. And all this made for greater oppression of the natives, as they had to transport on their backs all this merchandise.

<sup>P 445</sup> | In the lands which these Dissâvas ruled, they collected quantities of areca, a custom which they themselves introduced, and there was not a person who had an areca tree who did not contribute to it. In the same way they gathered as

much pepper as they could, and all other things which gave them profit, trading even in such things as butter, poultry, and spiccs, and everything from their butteries or *gabíras* was collected at the doors of the Chingalaz. They had also their smithies in which were made muskets, arquebuses, flints, spears, sabres, (*terçados*) and javelins (*Zagayas*) and all other smaller weapons, many of them inlaid, for themselves and for the Generals, with whom they shared, but nothing at all for the King, though they were the blac smiths of the King who gave them *paravenias* for his service ; and though the King spent on the maintenance of many smithies in Ceylon, it was often necessary to bring muskets, arquebuses and spears from Goa, the King making double expense, while the profit went to them without any scruple of conscience in these and other matters, for according to their loose theology these and other Captains and Ministers always found that the King owed them more. Those who exceeded most in this matter and had the greatest variety of things made, were the Dissávas of Maturé, for there were in those parts good workmen, statuaries, masons and likewise carvers in ivory and other things. In these manufactures even the coolies and villagers had to take part, bringing charcoal with great trouble, without being obliged to it, and on poor pay or none at all.

The Captain-Majors of the arrayals had at one time four fine villages wherein they had much areca, besides what they obtained with the arms of the King from other villages and from Candea through the Vidâas. None of the things consumed in the encampment cost them money, except bread and sweetmeats for their table, for poultry, cows, butter, pepper and other spices, and the fruits of the country came to them from the villages, and because they wanted more curd (*tayro*) they obliged the village of a blind Portuguese to supply it, and on that pretext they took the village away from him altogether, and all the pleadings of the poor blind man to take the curd and leave him the other produce were of no avail. They had moreover every day | from the King's <sup>F 155</sup> granary (there called *pataya*), two paras of rice for their house, which made 50 measures a day, and amounted to 50 candies a year, and as pay they received 100 xerafins a year, with rice and other provisions for the private soldiers of their *estancia*. There was a smithy in the arrayal, and the various kinds of work that was done there, plain or inlaid, cost them nothing, for the smiths were paid and came from the villages of the King ; and at most they repaired some muskets of the soldiers, which was all the pretext for keeping smiths. In the same way the silversmiths, who were granted villages of

the King with the obligation of working in his service, were kept busy working silver and gold and other trinkets of *Pess* crystal. In their villages they collected areca ! like the Dissâvas with all the other profits enumerated ; and all this labour fell to the lot of the natives, and on the same pay.

The Captains of the Companies or of *estancias* imitated these, and they also had villages granted to them, from which came the few cattle that were killed for the soldiers, the fowls and chicken for the solemn feasts and for themselves, for there were no chicken for the soldiers, even when ill, and even of the measure and half of rice which the King gave each one per day, a fourth was docked, though the King gave an additional xerafim per month for provisions for each of the soldiers, and if there were 30, the Captain got as many pardaos, for everything came to him from the villages, and the food of the soldier was very frugal. Each one had 200 xerafins a year, but as everything was paid as they liked, they saved everything. They either increased the number of soldiers and obtained the provisions not due to them, or let them go tyrannizing over the villages, or sent them to the coast towns on their business without any reduction of what the King spent. The disorders and oppressions which they or their Vidanas committed in the villages, in all kinds of work, and other indecencies, made the natives flee to Candeia, or to other places in the interior, and when the villages were deserted, they gave imaginary reasons for it and obtained others from the Generals, who, as it cost them little, easily changed, and with the same ease they again depopulated these ; and as these offices were of short duration and the villages were not considered their own, they did not take any pains to cultivate them for the future, but only thought of the present yield, in such manner that they sold even the straw, behaving in all things like tyrants towards the natives. Under their shadow the soldiers became brigands of the highway and in the villages where they lodged or halted, robbing whatever they could from the natives, and taking whatever they liked for their entertainment and sustenance, and paying for the most part ! with blows and abuse, which all Asiatic people *resent* most. They abused their household, ill-treating and molesting their wives and daughters, an excess everywhere intolerable.

Of the Captains of the ports of Ceylon may generally be said the same as of the Captains of the *pracas* of India, for as their principal object and occupation was based on self-interest, those of Ceylon were guilty of everything of which the others

were accused. But leaving this for another work on the Eastern Conquest, I will confine myself here to what they did to the Chingalaz. They also were generally engaged in the areca trade as already described, but the export of it gave occasion to fresh tyrannies, for when the natives brought P 857 to their ports or sold therein | or shipped therefrom, they did not let them do so freely, but seized it at the price they liked, as may be seen in this instance among others. A short time before the Hollanders took Gâle and Nigumbe there came a poor Chingala with a supply of areca to one or these ports, and its Captain took it by force, giving him only the old price of 4 larins, while it had cost him twelve, over and above the trouble which he and his sons took in carrying it ; and much as he mourned and wept over his poverty, protesting that he had nothing else of his own, as may easily be believed, nothing availed to move the Captain to pity.

It was the custom for the Natives to give the Captain a number of amunams of areca. In the district of the port of Alicaô there was no areca, and though it had risen very much in price, he obliged them to pay it to him in full at the low price fixed formerly. And there was a Captain who obtained a despatch from the General, that no Chingala in that district might sell areca without first giving him what was put down for him, at the old price. It was also the custom to give them a quantity of fish ; they seized more, and in short there was nothing in which they could interest themselves which failed to give an occasion for oppressing the Natives.

## CHAPTER 6.

### THE WRONGS WHICH THE CAPTAINS-GENERAL OF CEYLON AND THE OTHER OFFICERS OF THE KING COMMITTED

We have much to say about their government, but here we shall deal only with what concerns the Natives, and the injustices which the General did to them or those in which they concurred. For as their power was almost absolute and like that of a King, among the other tyrannies which they practised upon | the Natives, the most usual was P 456

this, as we have already mentioned, [viz.] to seize the people of the villages who did not come to make their submission, and to kill them if they did not submit, without protecting them from enemies from Candea. Whence it came about that they fell into this dilemma : If they submitted to the Portuguese, those of Candea captured and killed them ; if they submitted to those of Candea, the Portuguese did the same with them ; and in this warfare there was no escape, as in the recent wars of Portugal and Castille ; and in these agonies the unhappy folk persecuted on both sides, found some refuge only in the forests, and even thence were they dragged out, without it being of any avail to them that many were Christians ; and contrary to reason and Royal provisions, founded on the laws and ordinances of the Kingdom [of Portugal], they not only seized them, but even sold them. The most common oppression of all was, that they did not prevent the violences, robberies and tyrannies aforementioned, though it was the duty | of their office [to do so] and though they had such unlimited jurisdiction that they not only regarded themselves as Kings, but even as gods, as was whispered. It was only to prevent those above-mentioned excesses that they showed they had no power, either because of negligence or because of their scanty zeal in the service of God and the King, or because of favour and friendship or self-interest ; because, as they say, one evil gave rise to another ; and very little was the remedy applied to the excesses, and when one's own self-interest comes into the question their hands must needs be tied, and God and the King ill served.

There was a Royal provision that no jak\* tree be felled, as its bulky fruit was in great part the sustenance of the Natives, and the jak of Ceylon was the most tasty in India. But the Generals did not think that this prohibition concerned them. They ordered them to be felled for building pinnacles and other vessels for their trade and pleasure : and incredible was the labour of this work, some felling the trees in the villages and in the forests, others sawing them, others transporting the wood, iron, pitch, coir,<sup>1</sup> and other things. As many Smiths and Carpenters as there were, were continually engaged in these works ; and their sustenance was either very limited without any other pay, or none at all ; and

\* Note by the copyist : Jak tree is meant, though the text has areca tree.

<sup>1</sup> 'Cayro' from the Tam. *hayiru*, the fibre of the coconut husk. The word 'coir' is from cayro.

consequently, accompanied by blows and ill-treatment ; and the workmen were paid at these same rates. They did not abstain from anything that could interest them. In addition to the areca and sapan supplied by the Dissâvas, they negotiated large quantities through their Baneanes. In Bulatagâma, a village of the King, there were collected for His Majesty 900 amunams of areca, and by a practice introduced by the Generals, without discounting the quantity, there were collected for them 400 to 500 amunams. There was a General who in one monsoon collected all the butter he could and made up 30 barrels, and he ordered them to be sold in the ports of this coast. Another put his arm up to the elbow into the capture and sale of elephants on the King's account, by trickery and in a manner [which it is ~~P 455,~~ not convenient to explain here. Cinnamon was the monopoly of the King, and they ordered large quantities of it to be sold in the most remote parts. Precious stones were also a royalty of His Majesty, but as we said already they should not be taken from the same place more than once in 12 years if they are to be perfect, but some did it so frequently that they were for that reason found to be imperfect, and they always had goldsmiths in their houses and in Malvâna, engaged in making jewels and trinkets of gold, precious stones and crystal. If the Dissâvas had smithies, the General had a far larger workshop in Malvâna where they made whatever works they wanted for themselves and their dependants. And though they could have had armouries of weapons of all kinds without any cost to the King, they never did so ; though they had villages ~~P 455,~~ with mines of iron, smiths, workers in gun stocks, charcoal burners, and other workmen who held their service lands with the obligation of working for the King, as well as goldsmiths, and the expenses were made on the King's account, the General receiving the profit. Sometimes they sent many boxes of presents to the Viceroy full of muskets, flasks, powderhorns, and shot, curiously wrought, spears and other arms, but for the conquest they made none, and [everything] came from Goa, and when the arms were lost in any encounter, as in the final loss of Gâle, they went to private houses in search of them, and took them from the outsiders, when they embarked, giving them very little for them.

Their Scriveners who were called Banâcas,<sup>1</sup> under their shadow, were the Judges of the Island. They compounded the *cavasas*<sup>2</sup> (suits) between parties, and whoever gave them

<sup>1</sup> See ante p. 756.

<sup>2</sup> Sin. *kâriya*.

most had justice on his side. Whoever sued for a village had to do with them, because when the General wanted to give or take any away, he took information from these, ordering the suitor to speak to the banâca about it, and if he gave him a present, or something to gain his favour, he obtained a despatch, and by many expedients they went half shares in the areca, and in all other things which the villages of the Generals produced. Just as when their Kings passed through the lands, the villages in which they lodged were obliged to do them honour, with hangings of white cloth which they called *manduas* and offerings of foodstuffs, which were called *arâcas*,<sup>1</sup> they did the same to the General in place of the King. And though this was so special a privilege, the same was done to the Banâcas though in a separate place. And as they were such favourites of their masters, no one dared to point out the violences and injustices they committed. And because a Religious once made up his mind to do this, a General waxed wroth against him and asked him to prove what he said about his Banâcas. The Religious withdrew saying that, if he had known that the information would give him so much pain, he would never have attempted to do it. The Generals were so much taken up | by these Ministers of theirs because in that labyrinth of lands, selfishness and other collusions, they it was who held the thread. They made and unmade the spools. About other matters concerning the Generals we shall speak further on.

The first Comptroller of Revenue (Vedor da fazenda) that there was in Ceylon after many years of that conquest, was Antaô Vaz Freyre, who on the orders of His Majesty came from the Kingdom [Portugal] to prepare a *Tombo*, which he did ; and not to speak of all, but only of the guilty, this office was always ill received in Ceylon. They had a salary of 3,000 xerafins, (more according to others), and they paid themselves first of all and even in advance. They received the twelve best villages which were kept for the service of the King, and they let out only two or three ; of the rest they were the absolute masters, placing therein the Vidânas whom they wished to favour, and from them they received all the provisions and other things for their houses ; and though the pretext for removing them from the well-deserving persons

<sup>F 800</sup> | was that they did not render service to the arrayal, no one appeared in the arrayal from these villages, and only some rice was taken for the soldiers, and areca for the King, and everything according to the pleasure and distribution of the Vidânas. There was once a Vedor, who within three months

<sup>1</sup> Previously *arugus*, q. v., p. 1018, n. 1.

of his arrival, made a dozen sets of lacquered spears and as many darts besides other works ; and ordered many trees and jak' trees to be felled in the villages of the King, and distributed the planks to the ships of Goa, whither it was all shipped, while at the same time there was shortage of mounths for the pieces [of ordnance] and spears for the arrayal. In leasing, on the orders of the King, the villages set apart for the allowances to the Religious and Parish Priests of St. Francis, one of them secretly rented them ; and continuous were the robberies in the extraordinary registers about which they drew up false papers in order to demand new favours. They all had authority to inflict fines, when they had any power over a village, in the manner they pleased ; and though the fines belonged to the King, they kept back almost all, without entering them in the books of the factory, and because of the things which the Vidânas and other Ministers took, it was a proverb in Ceylon : 'That the devil of fines made his throne there.'

We have already referred to the dues of Marâlas which the Vedores da fazenda ordered to be collected from the Pagans every year on the King's account, for the piety of the King exempted the Christians from it. There set out from Columbo one of these Maraleyros, who were always those to whom the Vedores wished to give profit, with a great retinue of servants and coolies, all living at the expense of the poor, making inventories as they liked and inquiring into matters with such exactitude as may be seen from the following instance. One of them knew that a poor man had hidden a bullock, and after imprisoning him for some time, he took him away tied at the brawn of the arms. Before he reached Columbo, a Religious pleaded for the prisoner, and after enlarging F 157v greatly on the dishonesty, he bargained that the Father should say six masses and he was released. The General hearing of the affair exempted the Father from the obligation of the masses, saying that the bullock did not belong to the inheritance, and that the Maraleyro was ill-informed. They were often so poor that they scarcely had a buffalo or cow or scythe or mattock, but of this poverty they took the dues of the King. But what cost them most, was that they were obliged to maintain this magistracy so long as his vintage lasted; and finally they took more for themselves than for the King.

Many things pertained particularly to the Vedores da Fazenda, but they never attended to them. It was their business to give the necessaries for the sick soldiers in the hospital, and because it was not given and they perished,

first the Religious of St. Francis gave it up, afterwards those of St. Dominic, and finally those of the Society of Jesus ; because they could not remedy, nor look on at the sufferings, P 881 and because of the troubles that ensued when they demanded | the expenses, though the hospital in time of peace could have been well provided, with little more expense to the King than that of the medicines which came from Goa. For from the villages of the King, which went to the Vedores da Fazenda, many fowls could have been obtained, and the village of Visnâva alone supplied 20 daily for his table, and a cow once a week, and so for the rest ; and as there were twelve villages, nothing would have been wanting, if there had been piety and charity, and ambition had not prevailed. There came many [patients] suffering from beriberi, a disease caused by insufficient nourishment and weakness of body. They were never cured because they were not given the necessaries. They went about the houses begging alms, and many casados seeing their helplessness out of charity nursed them in their homes, and even then many died and there was a great scarcity of troops for the conquest, which owing to the death of veteran soldiers, had for the most part only raw recruits. In the last siege of Columbo there were more than 200 sick of this disease, because they were not given the necessaries, little food and putrid rice. And though a soldier in Ceylon cost His Majesty so much, after escaping the diseases of the voyage, due to similar disorders and impieties, and the cemetery of Mozambique and the pestilential sojourn in Goa, they came to die helpless in Ceylon without any one to grieve over their miseries. There was no bed with ropes, or coir, or rattan, though it cost nothing to get them made in the villages of the King, and a few at most slept on mats, the others on the ground, a most pitiful thing, and though they needed seven or eight things, nothing was given, except by force and as if it were taken from their pockets.

If in the conquest there were 500 soldiers, it became 800 when the pay was given, | for the Generals, Vedores, Captain-P 882 Majors, Factors and others who had a suite, also presented their servant-boys and pages. A Viceroy was asked for fresh troops because there were none ; he ordered the registers to be brought to Goa and from them it appeared that there was no lack of soldiers, and there was seen the manifest robbery committed on the King, and the credit of his arms, and the conquest. This is a fault, which, at least, in the absence of the Viceroys, had for a long time been prescribed.

Of the Factors of the King it is enough to say in General that they were like the rest in India. Two died in the prison of Goa, it must be because they did not know their Arithmetic properly, for in India there were no gallows for Royal Ministers. In the registers there were many fantastic expenses, likewise in the list of provisions. In the Custom-house they took for evaluation what they liked, in collusion with the other officers thereof. To those who did the work of the King, after long complaints, they gave the three usual payments, Slow, Ill and Never. Of one it is said, that in making the addition of rice given to the soldiers, he added a zero to ninety and made it nine hundred. But enough of these details.

**P 588** | The same complaints were made against the Ouvidores of Columbo and of the Conquest, and about the manner in which they treated the casados and soldiers, because he was judge of all, though usually he had never worn out his baize on the benches of Coimbra. And as these complaints were General throughout India, I shall only speak of their sessions. It was the custom admitted as Law, to decide the cases, or *careas* of the Natives before the Generals, or those appointed by him. But the ouvidores on the strength of our laws, cited all before them, because of the profit they made, and the civil suits were tried but slowly or never, as in other tribunals. Every year they went to hold assizes, with great pomp of palanquins, marshals, clerks and peons, and all lived at the expense of the poor, and the peons destroyed everything, giving the honours of the way, and bringing *ardicos* or certain presents for all. And after heaping injuries upon them, condemning and acquitting according to the bribes, they returned fully laden, and the officers did not return empty handed ; and one among others admitted that the *careas* and arbitrations were so numerous, that the money which that session brought him was more than his bags could hold. And as all this was against the sworn laws and customs which they had promised to observe, it was a most manifest robbery. This method of judging verbally is received in the whole of Asia ; it avoids great expenses and delays, as was seen here in Goa a few years ago, when a Minister, not to admit his ignorance, and not trusting another, never settled a case by a written judgment ; | and though he ~~was~~ held the office for a short time, he left at his death 160 processes given to him, delayed by many years. And what this man did for lack of Letters others did for want of application. And no judge is unjust, if the conditions which justice needs and demands are observed.

## CHAPTER 7.

PARTICULAR COMPLAINTS AGAINST THE CAPTAIN-  
GENERALS AND THE GOVERNMENT OF GOA

Too much ambition and misgovernment were the causes of the total loss of Ceylon; as those who had experience of that Island clearly foresaw, because though the manner in which the Chingalaz should have been conquered was ever understood, and though it was knownr that the Hollander had his eyes on the cinnamon, neither was the former carried out, as we have pointed out at length, nor was the latter provided against by fortifying the praças in a manner sufficient to withstand European batteries and by keeping them well garrisoned, munitioned and provided. The majority of [the Generals] only attempted to keep their posts and to be in  
*P ss:* the good grace of the Viceroys and Governors. | For this purpose they asked letters from the City, to the King and to his Viceroy and to those of the Council of State resident in Goa, often sending the drafts of these letters to be signed in the Chamber of the City and seeking by all means to lay hands on those which were written against them, and all this only to retain their posts. That none might withstand them, they disposed matters in such a way as to obtain all they wanted. They kept everyone in such subjection, and the ports were so well guarded, that none dared to write against them, both because of the risk of the letters being taken and because of the lack of secrecy in Goa. A certain Vedor da fazenda gave a small parcel of letters to a certain Religious who was going to Goa, and asked him to give it with his own hands to a certain judge, as it was important. The General knew of it and got it into his hands by the following trick. One of his servants visited the Religious in Cochim and told him that he wished to join his Order, and asked him for letters of recommendation to the ! relates as he knew him in Ceylon. The Father gave them to him, and the man going later to take leave of him offered his services saying, that if he had any letters, he would be a faithful courier and would hand them to anyone he directed, as he would be going first and his Paternity would delay several days. It did not appear to the Religious that there was any guile, and among other letters which he gave him was the parcel of the Vedor, given with the request to deliver

it to the judge with his own hands. As soon as he got hold of it, he sent it to Ceylon. The Vedor did not report well of the Général, nor was the latter able to dissemble, and the matter went to such extremes that the dispute reached the Viceroy who gave too much credit to the complaints which the Vedor made in person, and it gave rise to a great disaster. This affair was well known and the Generals who followed had their agents everywhere for the same purpose, in <sup>F 169</sup> Tuticorin, Negapataõ, S. Thome, Bicholim, Sarquilim to take them [the letters] from the *paramars*.

The following case was worse, because when those who govern do not keep secrets, they do not receive truthful informations and are ever deceived, and in this case he was wanting both in diplomacy and Christianity. A certain Viceroy wrote to the Guardian of St. Francis in Columbo asking to be informed about the disputes and disorders of that Island in order to apply a remedy. Like a prudent man he replied thanking him for the confidence shewn to him, but excusing himself from reporting what he knew, because it had to be in writing, and that if his own letter did not come back to the hands of the General, he would at least not fail to receive a copy sent by the keepers of the wardrobe, owing to the diligence wherewith they tried to obtain such letters; and he asked that he might be pleased not to make him or his Order hated by the General, because he knew that he would get the worst of it. The Guardian found that there followed a letter of the Viceroy to his desk, and taking occasion thereby and being moved by zeal, he wrote to the same Viceroy what was taking place in the Island, all matters <sup>P 884</sup> relating to the service of God and the King. The Viceroy sent a copy of the letter to the General and concluded by saying: 'Your honour sees by what kind of people we are judged.' The General found that the Guardian had blamed him for some misdeeds, and he was so wroth that he said whatever his passion suggested against him and his order; and when two Religious of the same habit happened to come, he showed them the letter and shouted out three times: 'Ecce Homo.' In the same passion and with the help of the Viceroy, they wrote to the Kingdom [of Portugal] whatever they pleased against the Friars of St. Francis, but they were not heard, for much caution and even great malice is necessary to hide the dictates of passion.

On the orders of the Viceroy the Christians of S. Joaõ who live above Bassorâ, went to treat with the General and the City of Columbo about migrating with their families to that Island, and they asked for the parts from Chilaõ to Manâr,

lands which at the time were almost uninhabited, though they could have been populated and with little cost, as we shall see, if they were allowed. It is said that they did not wish to admit them, alleging that in a short time they would become masters of the Island and go on multiplying at such a rate as to exclude the Portuguese. This was not the true reason, but that they would have to take those lands away from the hands of the Portuguese who were making some profit there, without minding the advantages of making use of these people, either in the cultivation only or also in warfare, and that Ceylon was large enough for all, besides that they would impede the descent of the Chingaliz upon Jajana-pataō, and that they could have helped us in the war against the Batavian, as they are brave men-at-arms and given to agriculture, as was seen in those who remained in Goa and even gave a good account of themselves in war. And these could not have been a greater mistake than to consider themselves masters of the Island, and not think of the cultivation of the many lands on the one and the other side of Triquilemalē, which were altogether or partly abandoned.

Though there were veteran soldiers in Ceylon with great experience of the Island, who deserved the post of Captains, few were those who obtained it, because the Generals gave them to their servants and to the gentlemen who were their friends, thus defrauding deserving men, who found that those who had no service were favoured above them; and this was always thought to be one of the causes of the destruction of Diogo de Melo in Candea, for as those who commanded had little experience, they were at a loss and were defeated, though there were men of valour there. Very little was the care they took of the soldiers, and of paying them their quarterage; and they did not try to find out whether the Captain fed them; whether they had enough or not, whether the rice was wholesome or putrid; and this complaint was of daily occurrence, and it was sometimes the cause of mutiny and of their coming to Malvāna or to the pass of Betal with arms in hand to demand their pay. They even did away with their breakfast, and a certain General brought from Goa a smaller measure wherewith he intended to distribute <sup>7450</sup> rice to them, with order to pay to the country-born men of Columbo five xerafins and not ten as was given to the Portuguese, which they did not put up with; and though he had promised the Viceroy in Goa to introduce this measure, the promise remained unfulfilled, and his credit was lost because he showed himself a stepfather to those to whom he should have been a father.

The same took place with regard to the lascarins in the treatment given to them by the Dissâvas, in the violences, cruelties, and imprisonments inflicted on them, in the villages and *paravenias* which were taken away from them, besides the other things that have been pointed out, and they never tried to know whether they were provided for. And as everything was left to the pleasure of the Dissâvas, they took from one and gave to another, leaving the wives and children of these who died in war without relief. Some Religious discussed these matters with the Generals and Dissâvas, but they were told that such was the custom, and that the orphans and widows must shift as best they could.

In all things they behaved like independent Lords not excluding the Ecclesiastical affairs, arrogating to themselves the power of Nuncios. There was a General who even interfered in the allotting of sermons, 'I want this one to preach, not the other'; 'there shall be, or there shall not be a sermon'; even going the length of saying that he was King, that he would turn the Religious in a *champana* out of the Island, and sometimes saying to others that he would give slaps and whippings at the hands of Caffirs and other nonsense. One wrote to the Viceroy that twelve clerics were enough for the Christianities of the Island, and that so many Religious were needless. But punishment did not tarry to overtake his person and honour. They even interfered in the elections of the Misericordia, designating two or three, and likewise in the election of the Chamber, so as to have them submissive to their views; and if they resisted them, they were either summoned to Goa where they came twice; and when one of the *Vereadores* complained to the Chancellor about this injustice and the little favour he met with from those who governed the State, he told him: 'Sir, it is not the time for us to be so public spirited'; or they were cudgelled and with such severity that of one it is related that he killed two citizens by blows dealt with his own hand, and being afterwards Viceroy he terribly harried a nephew for doing the same in Macao, it appearing to him an evil with good reason what he approved in himself without reason.

F 460  
They observed the orders and mandates of the King only when it pleased them, and though many were appointed by despatches to posts they had merited, they had often to return without being admitted thereto. As happened to Antonio de Costa Monteyro, a man of note and a great servant

of the King, who took part for many years in the wars and sieges of Ceylon and was trustee (curador) of King Joao Pera Pandar; and though he was a person of such merits, when His Majesty gifted to him the post of Dissava of Maturâ, the General would not put him in possession, because he did not want to remove the one placed under his own hand. And for this purpose he went to Goa and returned three or four times and on his last visit he ended his life there, having spent what he had and leaving his children helpless. In the beginning of the conquest, before matters were settled, they distributed the villages as they liked. To satisfy complaints the King ordered that it should be done in council in the presence of the General, the Vedor da fazenda, the Captain of the City, and in the absence of the Bishop of Cochim also of the Guardian of St. Francis, and that the distribution should be made according to merits, greatly recommending those who had served in the Island, the widows and orphans and daughters of those who had died in war, or had served well. But the General arranged matters in such a way, that only those whom he liked were provided for; and the others, however great their merits, or however poor or needy they were, had to bewail their misfortune. For this purpose they resorted to this trick. They gave the villages at first by *olas*, as they say there, afterwards they told the Vedor da fazenda and other members what they thought about those whom they wished to accommodate. The clerks of the fazenda first presented the petitions of these, in which they often alleged services and qualifications they did not possess, and as the votes were already bespoken, they were provided, and generally they were their favourites and strangers whom they recommended. And as the Guardian was outvoted, he could not help, and sometimes he declined to sign, upon which there was much unpleasantness. He even wrote to the King that his presence was of no use in the council, and in the same manner to the Viceroy begging to be excused. The King did not consent to it, and the Viceroy wrote to him that he must conform with the rest, as that is the custom in all tribunals, this reply disclosing the request of the General to remove these scruples of his, and from this resulted that in Columbo there were some people who did not serve in the Island and even strangers, who had so many villages, that leaving enough for their support, they could provide for half a dozen others who had none but deserved to have.

The greatest anxiety of the Government of Goa was that 2,000 bahars of cinnamon should be sent thither and elephants

to Tutucurim to be exchanged for saltpetre, and about 40 bahars of cinnamon, which were set apart for the fortification of Columbo were sold and taken. And this was one of the greatest negligences of Ceylon that they did not erect respectable praças, nor garrison, provide and munition them in the manner required by European warfare. What was sent from Goa in the beginning of the conquest and when it rendered us less, was much more, as we have already pointed out. Afterwards it was not even a quarter of what was taken, for the pay came to about 15,000, and for rice, wheat, and drugs for the sick, and munitions as much again, though in Ceylon there were for the Royal Fazenda the areca-dues, and the custom duties which were applied to the Hospital. And as the disturbances of the territories were continual, and the dues were very little, after the Hollander began the blockade of the bar of Columbo, everything diminished to such an extent that the soldiers were always ill-paid and many of them were going about ragged, naked, clad in mats sleeping on the floor, and even the plate of rice failed them. They did not attend to the great inconvenience of sending the cinnamon made the same year to Portugal, for it arrived late in Goa and while they were despatching it and bundling and lading, the ships were delayed, and they set out so late that they had to struggle with the tempestuous winter of the Cape of Good Hope, where many were lost for this reason: for relying on their strong build, they struggled with the waves and finally sank in disastrous shipwreck.

For this reason the Royal Treasury in Ceylon was ever in debt, and though His Majesty preferred this conquest to that of the whole of India, yet private persons could not approve that the means for preserving, fortifying and defending it should be drawn therefrom without depending on the State; and those who saw it tyrannized over, not only by those who live therein, but even by those whose duty it was to help it, according to sound reason and the wishes of His Majesty, never gave the necessary information to the Council of Portugal, about the conquest of that Island or about its misgovernment, but drew up fantastic certificates of the preparations that were being made and of other services to His Majesty, though each one was looking to his private interest and not to what was for the greater service of the King, in a matter of such great importance, as the conclusion of the conquest of the Kingdom and Island of Ceylaõ, which as we saw, could have been accomplished years ago, if the forces of the State had not been employed in matters of lesser importance.

## CHAPTER 8.

F 461

## VEXATIONS AND MACHINATIONS AGAINST THE RELIGIOUS

To escape the complaints made against the Captains and Royal Ministers, that they gave cause to the *Perlis* or rebellion in that island, as was described, they attempted to throw the blame for this on the Religious, that it was because of what they and their servants and *meyrinhos* did to the natives, making use of the Coolies of the villages to build Churches and houses and to carry andores and other things for their pantry : That they had stocks, that they whipped, birched, inflicted fines; and made seizures ; that they would not bury the dead till the alms for the funeral were paid, that they made the children of the catechism [classe] work, that their *meyrinhos* were continually harassing the Christians ; and sometimes even touched on matters of greater weight. These complaints were not confined to Ceylon, for the judge Pero Nugueyra Coelho (a free-spoken and extremely ambitious minister, who when holding a different office was finally killed by the Portuguese of Rios) after vigorously punishing those of Columbo in their purse, ordered some principal Chingalaz to be called from each Corla and questioned them about the Religious and their *meyrinhos* from the notes he brought. This was a misunderstood right, for though His Majesty had the powers of a Nuncio, as this right was spiritual, it could not be exercised through purely secular Ministers ; nor in a general examination could special inquiries be made about Religious. But this Minister must not have found matter for any action, for it came to nothing. The complaints must have been repeated, for His Majesty wrote to the Bishop of Cochim D. Frey Miguel Rangel, that he had complaints about the Religious, and asked him to inquire about them, and to inform him in particular about the matters mentioned to him, so as to provide as seemed best for the service of God and his own : but the State of Ceylon did not give opportunity for this measure. The complaints had their beginning in the little regard they paid to the Religious, and because the latter rebuked the Vidanas for the tyrannies they committed, and for their excesses in delicate matters, whereupon they complained to their masters who gave them full credit.

Now I wish they had taken greater heed of these complaints. For as often as there were rebellions, and those of Candea descended on our territories, there was neither a Portuguese nor a Chingalā to rebuild the destroyed Churches nor to give favour and assistance to rebuild them. On the contrary many opposed it, at least under the plea that there was no security in Ceylon; and that so long as this was wanting, it was enough to build them of wood. For these buildings humble or majestic, the Religious went to the forests to fell timber, and they rebuilt them at the expence of the little they had. | After the King withdrew from them the villages <sup>F 461v</sup> of the Pagodes, they had no service-men and there only remained for them to employ Coolies, with such good pay that they were delighted to help them. In long journeys the old Religious in particular, made use of them, though the usual thing was to walk on foot. Those who had them in their villages, made use of them; and because of the good treatment given to them they loved to serve them. And it is greatly to be wondered that those who reproached the Religious with it should approve it in the case of their Vidānas and servants, who forcibly made persons more honourable than themselves do it. Nor does it appear how the Seigneurs could be defrauded by what the Religious took for their pantry at a just price, when there was enough for all, except that they were in the habit of buying them at half the price. But this point needs no answer if one remembers that the Parish priests have to live.

They greatly disliked being sent to the Vigayro da Vara, because of the distance, the expense, the punishments and the disgrace. Therefore some had stocks or a guard house, for the incorrigibles and those living in concubinage, into which they were put for some time. They never birched decent persons, who were only admonished: the Coolies <sup>P 66</sup> | and persons of low caste were birched if they were absent from Mass many days. The Bishops had ordered them to pay 12 bazarucos to the *meyrinho*, for absence from Mass; and those guilty of concubinage, by received custom, paid them a larin; but none of these concerned the poor. And when people kept away for two or three holy days, they ordered seizure to be made to oblige them to come to Church, and if any *meyrinho*, exceeded in this, he was deprived of his baton. Others had nothing besides the name, and bore the baton for dignity, for they did not enter the villages of the mighty, nor those of the King, nor of the servants of the General, who did not come to Mass, except when they liked, having lost the respect for their Parish priests under shelter of those who ruled them.

It was the general custom in the Christianities of India, and it was so in Ceylon, for the children to come to catechism, because when they grow up, they cannot learn. This the masters of the villages did not approve, thinking only of the temporal ; and so great was their opposition that as the Fathers did not desist from their clear obligation, in return for their labours, they were calumniated, and insulted by word and by writing.

It was an order of the Prelates that any Christian who should want to be buried within the Church should give 9 larins ; 3 for Masses, 6 for the building ; and 3 for [burial in] the porch besides the Masses ; but burial in the church yard was for charity. This was observed with regard to those who had wealth ; and many who had no wealth, but were honourable persons, were interred within [the Church] without payment ; and to others who paid less the same was done. And when the deceased had not the wherewithal to have Masses said for him, they said some out of charity which all did, <sup>✓ 452</sup> and we know especially that the Fathers of the Society of Jesus, when they were Parish priests, were dispensed from certain Masses in order to apply them for the deceased poor of their Parishes. And if any of them committed any excess, there was a Prelate, who could be informed to remedy it ; and those who do otherwise do not want to remedy but to defame.

Now I ask, did the Religious send into Candea in time of war the things that have been mentioned ? Did they go there in time of peace to fetch areca, introducing cloth or other things which are valued there ? Did they melt jewellery or silver and gold for their trade ? Did they violate sworn peace by erecting new fortalices ? Did they tyrannize over the Natives by seizing their *paravenias* and villages and service-lands ? Did they rob them in Marālas and assizes, employing them without pay or food, taking their cows and bulls in punishment ? Did they cut their Jak trees ? Did they make them pay for areca at higher prices, and commit other robberies related ? Did they wound ? Did they kill ? Did they inflict rigorous punishment ? Did they employ them in their services when they were paid by the King ? Did they allow Pagodes to be built and the disgraceful game of *Combo*<sup>1</sup> and the rest already related ? They did nothing of this, to be sure.

---

<sup>1</sup> Tam. *bombu*, horn. The reference is to the game called *amboliya*.

*P 270* | In the rebellion against Constantino de Sá many others were spread about the country by the Natives complaining of the violence and injustices which the Portuguese did to them : but never a complaint did they make of the Fathers. In the petition and notes they gave to the General Diogo de Melo de Castro they made the same complaints, but none about the Rectors. On what ground, then, do you accuse them of the rebellions of Ceylon ?

A certain schemer (who by that means obtained wealth and villages, which he did not enjoy, as he soon fell with Diogo de Melo de Castro) persuaded a General to take away the villages of the Pagodes entrusted to the Syndic of the Religious of St. Francis, about which the papers were found after his death ; and after speaking of the other Religious orders he says the following of them : ' Though in this sheet are mentioned the allowances of all the Rectors and convents of all the Religious orders, it must be noted that the Order of St. Francis has some allowances for some Rectors who have no Churches, and that these Religious orders possess so many villages and revenues in this Island, that from the surplus, after paying the allowances of the Rectorates, one can pay the allowances for rice to the Convent of the same Religious in Columbo, to the Convent of St. Dominic and its Rectors, and also to the Rectors of St. Augustin, and even after that, it is believed there would be a surplus of revenue, according to true information. And though the allowance to the Convent of St. Augustin of Columbo is mentioned, it is a second one, for that Convent has villages given by the Generals, and some received by inheritance | *P 462r* which yield more than what the allowance amounts to.'

King D. João Porera Pandar according to the words of his Last Will, in full conformity with his own wishes and the orders of His Majesty, bequeathed [to them] all the villages of the Pagodes, so that out of their revenues Colleges might be built for the native children, who might be maintained in the Colleges and taught the law of God, good customs, reading, writing, arithmetic, singing and Latin, thereby to expell the idolatry of that Island. But this was never carried out because the Royal Ministers opposed it. When D. Jeronimo de Azevedo conquered the lowlands of the Island, considering that the Religious of St. Francis, who were the first to enter Ceylon and were engaged in making converts, had need of maintenance, he gave them those villages which had belonged to the Pagodes, and out of their revenues 100 xerafins were given to each of the Rectors, as long as they were few. According to the *tombu*, they yielded a revenue

of 2,050 zerafins one larin and nine fanams of bazaruco.<sup>1</sup> Owing to information given to the King he ordered by his Alvaras that they should be withdrawn, and wrote to the Conde de Redondo, and entrusted its execution to the Bishop of Cochim, D. Sebastião de S. Pedro, who put them to auction and obtained 3,364 xerafins. So they were for over a year; but as the number of Rectors was already larger and a large revenue was necessary for their allowance, which had to be paid from the treasury, | the Governor Fernão de Albuquerque was informed of the loss which fell to the King, and he passed a provision ordering them again to be delivered to the Syndic to be managed as formerly. And though these villages did not yield a revenue of more than 80 xerafins for each Rector, they were content because of the advantage of the service in the building of Churches and the Convent of Columbo, which at the time could not have been done without this help.

Things remained in this state till the time of the Conde de Linhares, who on further information arranged with the Rectors of the Order that they should give up those villages, and that he would undertake to give a sufficient maintenance from their revenues to 56 Rectors, and should money fail, it would be paid from the Royal treasury. The Comptroller of Revenue, Amaro Rodriguez, took charge of them and entrusted them to the factor on the same understanding. As the price of areca was already higher, they were leased for 4,200 xerafins, an amount which sufficed to pay the Rectors, as their number was reduced and the Churches burnt in the recent rebellion. In the third leasing it amounted to 5,010 xerafins, as areca was worth 16 and 18, on condition that the Renters should supply a certain number of coolies for the building of the Convent of Columbo, which they never did and the Comptrollers never obliged them to do. And there taking place afterwards the rout of General Diogo de Melo de Castro, the lands were lost in the general rebellion. But when they were retaken, the renters recovered | the F 463 produce only after six months of the winter during which there is no yield, and though the Rectors were then 35, they were never paid in full, and 500 xerafins were still due to them, but no Minister obliged them to pay it · and if the number had risen to what it was formerly the King would have had to pay a great deal out of his estate. And as matters were ever becoming worse, they again wrote to Goa, whence it was ordered that the villages should again be given to the Syndic of the Religious at the highest possible

<sup>1</sup> A silver fanam in bazarucos or small base metal, Indo-Portuguese coins.—H. W. C.

price, till His Majesty could be informed of the unsatisfactory state of those villages. They were given to the Syndic for 3,500 xerafins, a price which he alone set on them, for they were in jungle and without men, and many of the trees had been felled by the renters ; and it never came up to the price set in the *foral*. Can greater meanness be imagined ?

When the Fathers of the Society of Jesus came to Ceylon, a. has been related, on the intervention of the Bishop of Cochin, they were assigned the lands that lie from the river of Caymel to the North, and His Majesty said in his letter : with regard to them my Captain-General of the said Island D. Jeronimo de Azevedo, gifted in my name to the College of Cochim the lands which lie from the strait. which begins in the bar of Chilaõ and stretches as far as the great river of Cardiva, all that lies between the said strait and the Sea, from the bar of Chilaõ to Cardiva, which forms an Island, and which at present is for the most part depopulated and *P 572* run into jungle ; and none others save | the said Fathers can henceforth make use of them at any time ; and because they are adapted, better than any other part of the Coast, to the ministry of the said Fathers of the Society, these lands we grant to them as an emphyteutic gift, for ever, free from duty and any tax whatever, so that they may be for the maintenance of the Fathers and Scholastics who are being prepared to be sent to the Island of Ceylon, with the only obligation of placing in the said lands, Fathers and Ministers sufficient for the administration of the Christianities and the Churches which shall be erected therein. And seeing how much this is conducive to my service and to my duty of favouring Christianity and of maintaining Ministers therein, I am pleased to gift to the said Fathers of the Society, for the said College of Cochim, the said lands in emphyteusis for all time, with all the pasture grounds, appurtenances, revenues, dues and dominion, in such manner as they belonged to me, without any obligation or rent whatever, other than the obligation of having a sufficient number of Fathers and Ministers therein for the administration of the Christianities and Churches which shall be there erected.' Notwithstanding this ample grant, as soon as they saw the Fathers making good use of them, they at once ordered them to be taken away, and because they were completely destroyed at the hands of the Renters, | they again restored them, and *P 463* finally D. Philipe Mascarenhas, when he began to govern the State in Ceylon, took them away again, but when he was going to Goa to be Viceroy he was wrecked within sight of them, as has been related.

They were not satisfied with taking away the villages from the Religious, for a certain General sent to ask the Viceroy for the village of Calâne, the principal one of those which maintained the Rectors, in order to place the men-at-arms there, because it was near Columbo. One of the leading Citizens came on this business, and he at once obtained a provision that it be given to the lascarins and that the Fathers be given another in place of it ; but the Hollander prevented it. It was intended to place in it the Pachas and to oblige the residents to abandon their gardens and possessions and go in search of a place to live in. And there was no other village wherewith to supply the needs of the Fathers, for they were all given away. And near the passes from Malvâna downwards, on the two sides of the river, there were not wanting villages if any were needed, wherefore, they say it was only an excuse to get hold of it. On the other hand when the Syndic of St. Francis asked for a village, from the revenues of which to say some Masses for the soul of King D. Joaõ Perera Pandar and for the adoriment of the main Chapel of the Convent in which he was buried, and in whose honour no burials were permitted therein to private individuals who offered large alms, neither in Ceylon nor in Goa did they approve this act of gratitude to a King who had bequeathed that Island to His Majesty without reserving anything to himself nor for his soul, and if the friars of St. Francis had not said some Masses, no other soul would have been so uncared for as his.

*P 573* The palmgrove called 'the King's', situated in Canisture, which was set apart for the oil of the lamp of the Most Holy | Sacrament of the Mother church, from the revenue of which were paid the Father of the Christians and the Rector of the New City, 100 xerafins each, did not escape ; nor the two villages Dunaga and Orna,<sup>1</sup> set apart for the Catechumens and some orphans and the poor, maintained by the Father of the Christians, Rector of S. Thome in the suburbs of Columbo. They took everything for the King, and they gave these villages to the Religious of St. Augustine in place of the candil of rice and the ten xerafins which His Majesty ordered to be given to them monthly as charity, and the same to the Fathers of St. Dominic. At the very time when they turned the Religious out of the villages, they created new offices, as for instance that of the Captain of the General's guard, to whom they gave villages, and one

---

<sup>1</sup> Horana.

admitted that from his villages he made 180 amunams of areca alone. In the arrayal they created Sergeants and Ensigns, with double quarterage and a sergeant-Major <sup>P 464</sup> with a salary of 500 pardaos which they had not formerly, and if the revenue of the King had not been so involved, it would have been advisable even before the Hollander set foot in Ceylon, to have these aforesaid officers of war, but the remedy for it was not to take anything from the Parish priests, but to see how the King's money was spent and squandered on unnecessary things, to increase the dues which were only an acknowledgment of Royal Dominion, and the lands of Ceylon which we conquered were not so few that by this means alone there should not have been enough for all.

The infidels of India and Ceylon who saw this and knew it, could not but wonder at it, as well because they have given to the Pagodes at least a sixth part of the lands, as also because the Kings of Candea on retaking possession of the lowlands, made it their first care to rebuild the Pagodes we demolished, especially those of greater veneration like that of Tanavarâ, Calâne, Nagao and others of the kind, though not with the former grandeur, and they gave promise of doing so, if they continued in possession of the lands, at once restoring the lands which were dedicated to them. And it is a custom of the Natives, and of all those who have a village, garden or palmgrove or other things, to give something to the Pagodes, and so great was the respect they had for them, that no person would touch what was dedicated to them, even though the fruits fall and rot. But among the residents of Ceylon, rare were those who wished to have a Church in their village, and one from the side of Gâle allowed himself to say that he was very happy that there was neither Church nor Father nor Christian in his village. And when a Religious once asked a resident of Columbo to build a Church in his village, as he was able to do without any cost, and that he would help in whatever way he could, as his people were very far from the parish, and he did not like to give trouble to the Christians, and to those of the other neighbouring villages, who for that reason were often absent from Mass, and that he would take the trouble to go there once a week to say Mass and to administer the Sacraments, he replied most coolly : 'Father, if there were a Church in my village, I should not be Master of it'; but a few months <sup>P 574</sup> afterwards he died in Candea; and this gives the point in a nutshell; they want to be absolute masters, without any one to rebuke them.

The Nayque of Tanjaor had given lands for the maintenance of the Mother Church of Negapatao and had placed as a mark a beautiful cross. The Uparaja (Barajo) of S. Thome had given lands to the Church of the Holy Apostle into which no one entered save those who collected the revenues : and on the feast day of the Saint, the Pagans with great joy brought palms, rushes, and flowers and other things needed to celebrate it, and though the Christians knew this, they did what was related, | and no land was more pounced upon than the <sup>✓ 1640</sup> villages set apart for the Churches. They took the service men and the workmen from them for unnecessary labour ; they felled the timber, though not for the King's work, while those of the friends of the Generals were altogether untouched. Finally, when a mighty storm laid Columbo to the ground, there was not a house that was not repaired and rebuilt, and the Mother church alone remained for long years half ruined, with the facade on the ground, and separated by a fence of ola with a hut for Sacristy. What would the Romans say to this ? Since so long as their temple was not covered with tiles, none, however mighty he were, would cover his house with anything but thatch ! And it is a remarkable fact that in this matter the infidels are more heedful of the suggestions of the Devil than Christians are to divine inspirations. The Portuguese of India could well have known that so long as they did not promote conversions and the things of God, the temporal State would never prosper . and well has experience shown this in the loss of Ceylon and the other prças and territories which our enemies have taken from us. And as regards individuals, it has likewise been remarked that from the great riches acquired in India none ever profited, nor founded a house with children and grandchildren, and to show how much justice the Religious Order had before God, and how much God was displeased by scandal in this matter among pagans, I will here mention what took place in Diu. That little Island on the side of the sea is all rock, and on the land side and on the side of the Strait which separates it, all is sand, and it is only in the centre that there is a line of gardens of no small profit, because of the esteem which the pagans have for any greenery. The King Sultan Badur had a Pagode and a palace a little outside the walls of the present City, which was afterwards turned into a hermitage of Our Lady. A casado of Diu bequeathed the right he had to a garden called Jazuá to this hermitage, asking his wife by his last will, to bequeath on her death the other part. She married again, and the husband had recourse to the Senate of Goa. and judgment was given against Our Lady not to offend his Lordship, and

*P 876* because the disposition of the deceased had not been made with the permission of the King. Then happened a thing which had not taken place since the Universal Deluge. The sand rose from the sea and soon covered the greater part of the gardens with such mounds of sand, that they traversed the Island | covering the Jezuâ. And the punishment not stopping here, in the year of the drought, when the Conde de Linhares was viceroy, nearly all the wells turned brackish. and they blasted the rocks, and the cisterns were opened therein ; and even to-day most rare is the case of a Portuguese woman brought to bed and the mother and child do not perish.

But to resume our thread. Such was the gratitude which Ceylon showed to the Religious, especially to those of St. Francis, who from the beginning of that conquest | helped *r 466* them in matters temporal and spiritual ; being present at the sieges, the invasions and the sallies of Candea ; and in the most dangerous retreats which took place, in the arrayal and in the stockades, in which died more than 50, and of those more than 20 were martyred, including in this number the Custodian and 12 other Religious in the first rebellion of Jafanapataõ, besides others who were taken to Candea as prisoners, 12 captured by the Hollander in Gâle, and one killed in the taking of Nigumbo. It was they who persuaded the King D. Joã Perea Pandar to bequeath his rights to the King of Portugal, thus confirming the general right of that conquest, and as they were the first to preach the Faith of Christ there, irrigating it with their blood, they ministered to 200,000 Christians ; [which number would have been] much more if each Portuguese had been an apostle within his possessions. With the same spirit came the other Religious Orders and laboured in the territories allotted to them, and were it not for the scandals narrated, and the incessant disturbances of war, the whole or the greater part of Ceylon would have been converted to our Holy Faith. The Fathers of the Society after their arrival were ever present in these wars, and one died in Uva with Constantino de Sâ, another in Candea with Diogo de Melo. In the rebellion which took place in the time of Nuno Aluarez Pereyra there died two, and two were prisoners in Candea where they died, three were captured by the Hollanders in Gâle. In the rising against Constantino de Sâ on the side of Mature they killed the Prior of St. Dominic of Columbo, another was captured by the Hollanders in Gâle, and a Father of St. Augustine, who was in the arrayal of Diogo de Melo, remained captive in Candea.

## CHAPTER 9.

## ERRORS IN THE CONQUEST OF CEYLON

Besides the above related violences, injustices and scandals, which are the greatest mistakes in the conquest of lands and souls, others were pointed out by some zealous persons soon after the defeat of Constantino de Sá de Noronha, along with the remedies that should be applied. And though the *P 278* state of that Island is far different after it was lost, and though after the entry of the Hollanders we have two enemies against us, yet should it please God that the Portuguese dominion be restored, under which supposition I speak, it will be useful to know what they thought formerly, so as to avoid fresh errors in a matter of such importance and to tread the paths more accommodated to the end. But as some things which were noted need some correction, we shall add them here in order to shorten the discourse.

| They say : 1st. So long as His Majesty is not Lord of the *P 445* highlands of the Kingdom of Candea, it is absolutely necessary to have constantly on the field an arrayal with a good number of Portuguese, and so long as this is not done the lowlands will never be secure, because of the inconstancy of the Natives who had continual wars even in the time of their Kings as well as because of the difficulty they have in accepting a foreign rule, for it is natural to all, and in the case of the Chingalaz it seems a [second] nature ; and one of the greatest errors of that conquest was not to maintain in it such a force as would make the rebel of Candea despair of being able to get the better of us in the lowlands.

2nd. This error consists in the selection, as is done in more modern times, of the officers for war ; for as the conquest of Ceylon requires the observance of many rules, greatly different from the military arts that are learnt in other parts, and as because of the hills and forests, in which squadrons cannot form, they must necessarily march in single file, and the ranks of the Portuguese take up a long space, that of the lascarins still greater, it happened that the advance guard and the rear guard fought without each other's knowledge, and without the possibility of one succouring the other. It is necessary that each individual captain should have as much

experience of that warfare as the senior officers, so as to command in their absence, and if this is wanting, they are soon defeated. To this is ascribed, in part, the rout of Constantino de Sá, because he had few veteran soldiers and captains of companies of little experience ; because if that is required in inferiors, there is greater reason to require it in the leaders ; wherefore it is necessary that the Captains be taken from those who have greater valour and experience of this warfare. which is needed above all in the case of the Captain-Major of the white troops and of the Dissâvas of lascarins. And it happened not rarely, that those posts were given for a certain period to men who came from abroad without any knowledge of the Island, when the captains should have been taken from among the ensigns and should have been promoted according to merit without regard to intercession. And because it was not so, the veteran soldiers were disgusted or went away from the conquest, because they had no hope of promotion. So free from this was D. Jeronimo de Azevado, that for no reason would he admit new comers till they had learnt that discipline for some years ; and so long as one served well, he did not listen to reasons for deposing him, especially in the case of the Captain-Major and Dissâvas, P 577 and he did not consent | that they should be appointed from India or from Portugal, especially if they had not been bred in that militia, as was afterwards introduced. And when it was necessary to make some change he, on the other hand, took the Captain of greater valour and experience from other parts as he did in the case of Luis Cabral in Sofragão after the the death of Simão Pinhão and D. Constantino in Maturé when he displaced his brother-in-law D. Fernando Samaracon | F 466 though, when the latter was asked who should be Captain in his place, he replied that it should be the Captain of his advance guard, Domingos Carvalho Caô a man of many years of service in that island, who afterwards occupied that post for a long time and often. The same he observed with regard to the Captain of the Field ; for the valorous and fortunate Captain Salvado Pereyra was replaced by D. Manoel de Azevedo and he by D. Francisco Royxo, both men of great valour and military ability.

3rd. The error of the conquest was the little or no punishment inflicted on those who rebelled. For it is as bad a policy not to give rewards to those who serve well as to leave such great faults unpunished, for which they had no reason to be astonished, knowing that their Rajú acted with such rigour that he killed even to the fourth generation, and even then there were not wanting those who rose against him.

However we do not recommend this rigour against the innocent, but only against the guilty. This sometimes gave courage to many to whom they afterwards gave more than they had at first, besides other emoluments, though they were the ring leaders, and in their former outbursts had robbed and killed whatever bore the name of Portuguese and those who were on our side, without sparing churches and other sacred things. Afterwards, when they sought means to return, they were forgiven everything without any satisfaction, and this was done without hope of their doing any further service, but merely that there might be fewer enemies informed of our affairs. And though they found fresh guilt in some, they did not do it to all, as there were in Candea other guilty persons who were watching how we acted towards the former. These men made show of greater gallantry in war in our favour, the sure stratagem of every traitor. And though the reason given has its force, a greater reason is the scanty confidence we could place in them, and the bad example given to the others to do the same ; nor could Candea support so many men, and these the most presumptuous, without great detriment to itself and loss of satisfaction.

4th. They gave as the fourth error of that conquest the inroads and sallies into Candea and into the other highlands which were attempted without any precautions in the lowlands, and without the intention of remaining in the hills, both because of the reasons we pointed out, [viz.] the many men that were there added to the Candiot within those hills, and because of the experience of the past losses which we had received in those hills from the enemy ; and generally more <sup>P 578</sup> of our men-at-arms and service men were left there than we killed or captured. And there was no considerable capture to justify such risks and such danger to life, for once Candea <sup>P 166,</sup> was burnt, it was never rebuilt in our time, and we know what the houses of Asia ordinarily are ; and while our arrayals were getting ready, which was never unknown to the enemies, they had time to get their families, movables, cattle and some provisions to the loftiest hills which we could not ascend, and when we did ascend them, it was with great peril. The King had his treasures on the Rock which could only be captured by a long siege. And as the Chingalas never await battle on the field except when they have plotted a treachery or in narrow passes, from the heights of the hills they watched the march of our arrayal, and with large shot gave signals for them to escape or to get ready, placing moreover some good firelockmen in ambush in the forests, to take aim on persons of note whom they knew well, as many of them were

our servants or followers and skilled in the business, who had fled there because of the good rewards given them ; and if any of our parties sallied forth to seize prizes or to seek provisions, they fell on them from the ambushes, and if they did not succeed, with the same agility they hid themselves in the mountains. In this way the arrayal advanced two months and three, from hill to hill, till the diseases resulting from these evils, from the cold and the rains and famine, obliged us to retire, and usually with less men than at the start. Which rarely happened without our being attacked in the narrow passes and roads blocked with large felled trees, or strong stockades, garrisoned with many men, which they let us enter very easily, so that when our men were worn out and sometimes overloaded, their heads might be cut off in the retreat, and generally those who died within doors were more than those killed on the field. The serving men went only under compulsion, and they preferred rather to be impaled, because of the immense trouble they suffered with the loads they had to carry, either because the required number was wanting, or because their loads were increased when others fled, fell ill or died ; and they were not sorry to have some occasion to fling the provisions and munitions on the ground, on the plea of saving their lives, and this reason also would have been enough for us to seek another way of conquest, so as not to depopulate our territories. Besides, the Natives were awaiting one of these expeditions to show their mind, as was so often experienced, and though it may be excused once, and it might be gallant to break the charm of crossing the river of Candea with a good number of Portuguese if the people had not been scandalized by our excesses, we cannot understand what considerations made the other Generals <sup>or</sup> ~~or~~ rush headlong with limited forces to penetrate those difficult hills <sup>or</sup> and those impervious forests. We have not heard that the Hollander, though he has fallen out with the Chingalà, has attempted such a mode of warfare, though it is 31 years since they took Columbo, though they have no lack of troops in India to place in Ceylon larger squadrons than we had here ; and if we admire their military administration, we must admit that the mistake was ours and this was wisdom. Let it be borne in mind as settled by experience and by reason, that on no account ought we to enter those hills to give them up again. Afterwards we shall say what others discoursed up(on) this point.

5th. In this point it will be shown how they disapproved a proceeding approved by all statesmen and great Captains, because though they are all of opinion that at least on the

frontiers, and in the case of restless nations, there should be good garrisons and fortalices, experience shows that such did not seem convenient to the Portuguese in Ceylon, for in time of rebellions all the garrisons of the frontiers came to grief, though only 15 to 20 leagues in the interior, because there were very few men in them, with a small supply of victuals and munitions ; and as the force of white troops was so small, and on these occasions the lascarins were not forthcoming, whatever was in the garrison diminished the arrayal, and if they had been well garrisoned, the arrayal would have been altogether exhausted. This was seen in the time of D. Jeronimo de Azevedo in the rebellion of Domingos Correa, because as these dove-cots did not exist, and as he had many men, he retired when he could with less loss, while the contrary happened to him in the rebellion of Cangrane Arache because of the garrisons in the interior, and in this retreat he was neither able to garrison them nor was he willing to withdraw them, and all was lost before he could relieve them. And on account of this experience he did not want to fortify Maniorauaré ; and to protect the movables of the soldiers, and to remove the maimed and wounded, he thought it better to send them down to the ports, and the goods of the soldiers in dhoneyas or on aleas, or to entrust them to the obedient villages, in which nothing was wanting, and because the sick and wounded would be better cared for in Columbo. He did not care for garrisons in Gurubébile, Seytaváca and Ruanéla and elsewhere, and only consented to Simão Pinhaõ erecting that of Sofragaõ, which though a strong one, was twice lost afterwards. He only cared for Balané to facilitate entry into Candea, though it cost him much to erect, maintain and defend it with Portuguese and lascarins, because at that height the cold was great, in course of time the lascarins retired and the Portuguese who were changed from time to time diminished, till in the first rising that followed it was lost with nearly 100 soldiers. All the rest at all times was sheer waste, as happened to Rajú himself in his invasion of Candea, though he had other forces and a discipline very different from ours.

P 580 | And even in case any of these posts were ever so well garrisoned and provided, what can it well defend, what passes of the hills, and what passes of the rivers does it defend, when there are so many [passes] to the low country ? When they are unable in troublesome times to come to the sea ports to refit and find provisions, soldiers and lascarins, and return with them to quell the fire of rebellion ? But when there is a garrison, the first anxiety is how to relieve it without equal

danger to the relieving party when the country is in revolt, as has been seen in the course of the foregoing history. The whole of this argument is founded on the scanty fidelity of the Natives, and the scanty force of the Portuguese that was kept there, for if we had two arrayals, one in the lowlands and another in the highlands, or at least one on the field and another in the garrison, the inconveniences pointed out would cease, as we shall show later.

6th. It cannot but be a manifest error to distribute the rents of Ceylon in such manner that the King remained poor ; and the Hollanders found occasion to say with truth that our war was a war of the poor. Because this also prevented the harbours of Ceylon from being fortified, as they should have been after there was reason to fear European enemies. And though the Portuguese had succeeded in conquering and possessing all the lowlands of that Island on the one side and the other, and the Kingdom of Jafanapataõ and Manâr altogether, the distribution was such, that the conquest of Ceylon always depended on reliefs from Goa, not only of men but of other things likewise, and even at the time when the war was at a standstill for some years, the royal treasury was in debt. And since Ceylon was so fruitful this could not have happened except from misgovernment, even though some Ministers robbed largely. And those who know that all the rents of Ceylon before the *tombo* of D. Phelipe Mascarenhas yielded an income of a little over 10,000 xerafins, will easily understand that the whole distribution of the Royal Revenue was a piece of jobbery, when every reason demanded that at least till the whole of Ceylon was conquered, a large revenue should be assured for His Majesty so that without further reinforcements from the State, which was ever distracted with other enterprises, that conquest might be provided for, and not be dependent | on one which was often unable <sup>r 468</sup> to give it. After the loss of Columbo, there were not wanting some Portuguese who in order not to have to live poor amidst their own folk wanted to go over to the Hollander The reply, however, was that if they did so in the hope of receiving villages they were wholly mistaken, for as the Company had conquered Ceylon by war, all the profits which the Island yielded must be for it. But as the Portuguese wished to spend freely before the conquest was over, they did not even succeed in doing it, nor did the few whom the war <sup>P 522</sup> spared receive any | profit from Ceylon. And some were so blind that they surrendered to the Chingala King year by year and he sacrificed them to the Pagodes.

7th. Finally leaving other errors of minor import which can be easily understood from this history, the principal mistake of this conquest was its delay ; because if we had set about it with the needed forces, which were not lacking at the time, it would have been achieved even in the times of the Kings of Cota, or immediately after the death of King D. Joāo it could have been done with greater ease for good reasons. First, because the people of Candea at that time were not accustomed to the firelock and musket. Secondly, because in the time of the Kings of Cota, everything outside the hills was subject to them, and the people were more ready to follow the fortunes of their native Kings than a stranger and a rebel, and if the Portuguese forces had been added, the [King of Candea] could not have secured himself within a diameter of nine leagues, of which alone that Kingdom of the hills consisted, and whither we had so often entered with less forces. Thirdly, because if D. Afonso de Noronha after entering Sēytavāca had continued the war with the 4,000 Portuguese he commanded, each time augmenting them with the forces of Cota, in the manner we have said above, he could not but have obtained the complete conquest of Ceylon as he had men and money in abundance from the sacking of Sēytavāca and from his unjust exactions in Cota ; and if the tidings about the Turk diverted him, after conquering him in Ormuz he should have continued this undertaking, at least to make up for the discredit he earned by his first expedition. And if the jealousy of India and the corrupt minds of that time had not reduced the forces of D. Constantino de Braganza, as we have left recorded, after conquering Jafanapataō it would not have been difficult for him to subdue the whole of Ceylon, for as no harm had yet been done to the King of Cota, his subjects would easily have accompanied him. Fourthly, because as we shall show, no affair of India was of greater importance than the conquest of that Island, and amidst so many unnecessary things which were undertaken in India, this should have been the first, for in those brave days, there was no lack of forces in India <sup>F 468.</sup> to carry out this undertaking, nor can one see what excuse can be given by those who governed it for not doing so, and for writing with such inconstancy to the King, that after erecting the praça of Columbo he ordered it to be demolished. This conquest would have been effected if after Andre Furtado de Mendonça had conquered Jafanapataō, they had increased his forces ; and every reason demanded it, as the revolt of the Kingdom of Candea under the rebel apostate D. Joāo was fresh and the treachery he practised on Pero Lopes de

Souza would have been avoided : matters which demanded such a punishment as would resound throughout the whole of India ; but when passion and jealousy reigned, reason was ever wanting. The two Generals, D. Jeronimo de Azevedo *pass* and Constantino de Sá | de Noronha had brought that conquest to such a state, that if they had been reinforced as was needed, they would have succeeded in subjugating the whole of Ceylon, and when the Batavians had great forces in India, every reason of state demanded that we should place the largest forces in Ceylon, to remove from them every hope of entering it as well as to assure for ourselves that refuge in case of an emergency.

---

## CHAPTER 10.

## MEANS FOR ACHIEVING THE CONQUEST OF CEYLON

After pointing out the mistakes of that conquest, they proceeded to give the means for its amelioration, and to some it seemed so difficult to set it right in the way followed by its government, that they were of opinion that everything should be brought back to the starting point, annulling all the grants and gifts of the ports in which there were no fortalices, as well as of the villages and Vidanias, in whatsoever way they might have been made, even if made by the King of Cota or by His Majesty, since the King did not wish to consider as settled, without further order from him, all that had been confirmed by the Board of Ceylon. Wherefore it was not convenient that anything, save the grants of the fortalices and factories, should remain in vigour, which is a course approved by those who did not wish to be completely ruined ; for which purpose they thought that a fresh *tombo* should be made, distributing them with such moderation that the King should always have what was necessary for that enterprise, a resolution which can be reproved only by those who place their self-interest above all things.

And that there might be no suborning or presumption in the mighty ones in order to retain what they possess, they recommended that a *tombo* be made in the following manner, | *F 469* which I give here in order that it may be done in better times from the *tombo* that is kept in Goa : [Viz.] That a list of the villages of each Corla should be drawn therefrom ; and that

men of conscience and truth with experience in the Corla, be chosen to go there, each taking a clerk of the country who should be sworn to observe faithfully the instructions given below and others that might seem good, promising them advantageous portions if they should do it well and that on the contrary they would lose all rights, if they distorted the truth. They should be given authority to chastise those who hid the truth, and a guard of two *mascarins*, without further expenses. And after entering minutely in the *tombo* all the fields and other products that have to be registered therein, using the words of Ceylon as shown in the *tombos* of Goa, and after settling the price at which these victuals were rated in that country, they should limit the price of the pepper of the *mutelos* at five measures a larin, and areca at ten an amunam, and of the gardens of private persons at *Pass* six, out of regard for the four larins that is wont to be given them for each amunam. They should do the same with all the dues, without leaving out in each village more than the service lands required for one single mayoral, even though formerly there were many, and if it be a large village there should be left [some service lands] for a *Manâna*<sup>1</sup> and *canaca-pules*, without omitting to enter any other thing in the *tombo*. The same should be done in the Corlas which the *Vidânas* and the *Atacorlias* enjoy, who must be removed both in those [villages] found to be ruined and concealed, and in those dedicated to the Pagodes, and in the [cultivated] fields that happen to be outside their villages, noting down against the villages the district to which they belong, to avoid the inconveniences that result from the contrary practice. Of all the villages of the Pagodes in each Corla a special *tombo* should be made to give effect to the order of the King and to obtain therefrom the maintenance of the churches and their Ministers. Of the gardens and properties which are outside the villages, there should be made another *tombo*, to recover dues (and we do not call them tithes as they are commuted into dues), and to know the number of people for the distribution of salt ; and every 20 years there should be held an inquiry as to what further yield there is in those properties and what others have been since cultivated ; all of which should be given for three lives, and when these were over, the surplus produce should be distributed among those who deserved it, and finally it should be stated : This village has so many houses of such and such a kind, in which are so many people,

---

<sup>1</sup> Sin. *mananna*, the measurer. Knox calls him *Monnâ-nah*, the measurer. His place is to go and measure the corn that grows upon the King's land.—Hist. Rel. 52.

for the purpose of distributing salt to them ; their rents amount to so much ; taking care not to put down in one village those who have run away from another, unless they were residents of ten years standing [or] unless they came from Candea. And when there were many brothers in one house only one should be obliged to live therein, the others being free to marry and live wherever they found better prospects ; the same of the females if there are no males.

The same orders should be observed in the villages of the Bâda, for the distribution of salt | and in order to know <sup>P 149r</sup> better what cinnamon there was for the King and the customs of the Vidâna, restoring to each village the Chaleaz thereof, even though they had been absent for 10 years. As for the Chaleaz who were not of the Bâda they shall be *arutus*,<sup>1</sup> or belonging to the villages in which they had lived for 10 years serving as coolies. The same with those of Gampa.<sup>2</sup> Because if all those of the Bâda were together and they were given their service lands, they would give more cinnamon, and if more were necessary, as much as they wanted for themselves and their relations, over and above their obligation, on condition that they were paid, and that in weight not more than a quarter should be taken away as discount. This Vidânia should be leased for three years to the one who undertook to treat the people best, and to give some more cinnamon than the usual quantity in return for the many profits that he had. The same *tombo* and lease should be made of the villages of the Agras, because otherwise much will be lost and few good gems will be forthcoming ; and the villages of the Curo<sup>3</sup> [should be leased] to the one who undertook to give most elephants and *aleas*, paying a certain sum for those that were above the number, or paying double for any shortage at the end of the three years. And should any one <sup>P 84</sup> ill-treat | the people of his villages, he should be removed at the end of the year in which he should be [found to have done] so. And if they treated them well, other things being equal, they should never be removed. And the villages of Mangulacorla, in which also elephants are hunted, should be distributed in the same way, and if by their labour they captured a large number, the King should pay them a certain price, for few were taken there, and they were of lessor value. In the same way the lands of Bulatagâma should be rented to the one who gave most pepper, areca, and money, besides what was entered in the *tombo*, for great were the profits

<sup>1</sup> Sin. *adutu*, belonging to, adscript.

<sup>2</sup> Gampa.

<sup>3</sup> Sin. Kurusa, elephant department.

obtained from other sources. And one must not consider as a trifle unworthy of this history a matter on which depends the conquest and preservation of that Island.

On three points, however, I must comment on this proposal. The first is the leasing of the *agras* of precious stones, since it has been mentioned that in the time of the native Kings they were not dug except once in 12 years, and that in this way they were perfect, which is not the case when they are dug every year or within a shorter time. Wherefore it seems better to resort to other means, either renting in the preceding years only the stones that may be found by chance, and in the year they are dug Ministers deputed for it assisting thereat, for sometimes one single gem exceeds in value all the rest, or by renting for that year, if anyone is found to be prepared to take this rent under such great risks.

I remark, moreover, that there is no talk of increasing the land revenue, because it is a wonder that so many and such extensive and fertile lands yield a revenue of only 10,000 xerafins, though in them, to be exact, the tithes are commuted, as is done, <sup>F 470</sup> or should have been done, generally in the lease-lands of Goa and of the North, because in the case of gift (*merce*) lands (as they are called) the King D. Manoel set no duty, but only the obligation of tithes. And if jurists consider it well, they will find that he has retained only the high dominion, giving up the direct dominion and usufruct from the lands he wrested from the Moors, because he held them as traitors and destined the [lands] for the Portuguese who would settle down in Goa, because they are few, seeing what he did, and that he could well do so.

They reply to this by saying that besides the revenues of the custom house of Columbo, of cinnamon, and other ordinary rents, there should be applied to the expenses of Ceylon all the areca of the villages of the *foreyros*, which by ancient custom was Royal (property) which the Kings sold only on their own account; but in order that some profits from this areca may go to the *foreyros*, let it be given to them altogether at the price of the *tombo*, and let them give the money in two payments. Nor should those be listened to who say that without it, and without the revenues of the custom house of Columbo, there will be enough money for everything, because it cannot be believed of so many Royal Ministers that they were all thieves, for there were very few or none who had an abundance of money, or paid all the arrears owing to the King, though many of them had the areca of the villages <sup>P 555</sup> which they afterwards gave up to rent the dues of the custom house, wherein they lost about 8,000 pardaos a year, for the

dues amounted to 2,000 and the areca up to 10,000, and they ever tried not to pay the dues and to keep the areca. Such was the zeal for the common weal, the residents of Ceylon persuading themselves that all that the Island yielded should be theirs, and that the expenses which the King made therein and the right he had to it, were recompensed by the honour of possessing it, drawing the necessary expenses from other parts, where customs levies and other taxes were paid, and that it was not unfair to have custom duties in other ports and to do away with them in Columbo—All of which are plans unworthy of Portuguese zeal, and ill devised at a time when the State was in need of larger expenses to oppose such doubled enemies. They behaved so dishonestly in this matter that with false oaths, because of bribes received, many of them freed the properties of the Pagans as their own. And this could not be excused on the plea that the King of Cota had given this permission to the Portuguese casados and their descendants not to pay custom duties in Columbo, for at this time they possessed nothing outside the walls to trade with ; and it was little that entered their houses, for which it was not reasonable to pay in time of siege and of so many troubles. Afterwards, however, when they became Masters of greater territories, they had another King, who could order the contrary for the common good. Neither did the properties of the Pagans ever have this privilege, nor could a King, Pagan or Christian, give them the right to swear falsely.

For these same reasons and other great advantages, they thought it convenient to take for the King all the salt that was made in the Island or brought to it from abroad, as was done especially from the coast of the Fishery, paying those who brought it a suitable price ; and to distribute and sell it to all at the rate of two measures for a fanam of cayxas<sup>1</sup> and they made so much of this proposal about salt that, as we shall see, they thought that the conquest of the kingdom of Candea depended on withholding salt from him for five years.

In spite of all these additions I cannot be persuaded that there will be enough revenue for the whole of that conquest including the building of praças, which they wish to be erected in the Island, their garrisons and provisions and the two arrayals necessary for the conquest of Candea, unless greater taxes and the State come in, and still less for the King to derive from it any other profit save the cinnamon.

<sup>1</sup> A silver fanam in cayxas, i.e., cash (*kasu*). The Portuguese never applied the term cayxa to their own coin, and it may be supposed that the *kasu* in question were the mediaeval Sinhalese coins.—H. W. C.

The third remark is about the gift of villages ; because from the experience of those of Bacaim and Damao, if they are given in perpetual emphyteusis, there will be nothing left to distribute to deserving persons in time to come ; and the mighty ones become new potentates, drawing around them P 886 the people of the other villages to increase their revenue, and not permitting Royal Ministers to carry out any matter for the service of His Majesty, besides other notorious inconveniences. If they are given for lives, they only try to take the products, and the less the number of lives, the more is the damage they do, as they fell fruit trees, spending nothing for their improvement, even though it will need very little expense, so long as they think they work for another. The remedy for this seems to be to give them for lives, stating the rents and the state in which they are, with obligation to improve if possible, and should they not do so to deprive them at once. If however they improve it, it will at any rate be renewed, because if they think that this obligation holds good in ecclesiastical emphyteusis which, as is to be seen in Father Pinheyro, is more privileged, it can with greater reason be done in secular emphyteusis. And if His Majesty as Grand Master [of the Order] of Christ should make commanderies of some villages of Ceylon, it will be not a little convenient, for as many have valour and capacity to merit, and not all have capacity to govern praças, he can in that manner satisfy many deserving people and employ in the praças only those who have the needed qualities to defend and govern them ; a suggestion which so far I do not know whether any one has mentioned, though it is very necessary in India, and remedy and honour are thus found together.

For the same purpose of increasing the Royal revenue, they<sup>1</sup> treat of reducing expenses ; and they considered it not only unnecessary to have a Comptroller of Revenue, but even convenient and necessary not to have one, and that a General and a Factor were enough, because of the great inconvenience which the experience of so many years had shown, because they were always in continual dispute, the well-intentioned Generals pressing for the conquest, for soldiers, hale and ill, and for the pay of the lascarins, and the Comptroller of Revenue making these completely impossible ; and the Generals who were inactive gave as reason that they could not do otherwise because they had not the wherewithal to pay, and from this arose the incessant writings and complaints which they mutually made to the Government of Goa. And as we are speaking of reducing expenses, we might mention P 471

<sup>1</sup> That is, the Commissioners who drew up the report.

the 5,000 or 6,000 pardaos of the Comptroller of Revenue and his clerk. For in times past, when the wealth of the State was great, the Comptroller of Revenue of Goa had not more than 2,000 pardaos, and because one of them rendered a great service, they doubled this pay ; and as this was not remarked when another succeeded him, he and the others retained double pay. And because Nuno Vaz Freyre came from the Kingdom [of Portugal] to set right the affairs of the Island, they ordered him to be paid as in Goa, and those who succeeded him drew the same pay, as there was no one to pay attention to it, and as perquisites they received another thousand, for when they went out of Columbo, they wanted to be paid a daily allowance for every day. The clerks had nearly a thousand pardaos, besides the great profits of their pen.  
P 887 They<sup>1</sup> wanted everything to be provided for, paying what was just to the one who wrote the new *tombo*, till it was known what the revenue of that island amounted to, and then to entrust everything to the Factor and his clerk, making the General a superintendent of the Royal revenue, and giving every year the balance to the Factor, since on him falls the trouble, when money is short, and he will have no excuse for providing the fortalices and arrayals badly. And as His Majesty entrusts to him [the General] so great a matter, he may be entrusted also with the revenue, for if he wants to rob, he will do so in spite of the greatest precautions, and there will be fewer to do so, and there will be an end to writings, one against the other, and the retarding of the royal service. And if these reasons are not enough to do away with the office, let him be given a thousand pardaos without further emoluments from cinnamon, wherewith he increased his quarterage, or his goings out from Columbo ; for there will not be wanting those who will accept it, and do the work as well or better, because they will not have so much power. The profit of his pen will be enough for the clerk, who will have the post for life.

They also asked that the Ensigns and Sergeants be removed along with the Sergeant-Major, recently introduced by Constantino de Sá de Noronha, because a Sergeant-Major was altogether unnecessary and the warfare of Ceylon was not like that of Europe. But as I do not see who has to succeed a Captain-Major killed in war, or who would carry the banners if there were no Ensigns, let this proposal be left to the judgment of experienced Captains.

They do not want that there should even be a Captain P 871v of the General's Guards, introduced by D. Nuno Aluares

---

<sup>1</sup> The Commissioners.

Pereyra, to save his pay as well as those above mentioned. But as this concerns the authority of the General, which it is good not to diminish, I should not easily agree with this opinion, just as I was never able to reconcile the fact that the Chingalaz should address the Generals as 'Highness' and the Portuguese 'Your Honour' (Merce), because on the one hand, though it is one thing to be a King, and another to represent him; yet on the other hand there should be no depreciation of the courtesy due to a post of so great respect. For this reason I should be of opinion that everyone should address him as 'Your Lordship', for it is well known that this title is not sold so cheap among Portuguese as among other nations. And because the Portuguese did not do so, they gave occasion to the King of Candea and to the Hollanders to treat the Generals with little respect, as they knew very well the diversity of these titles.

---

J. H. H.

## CHAPTER 11.

### OTHER MEASURES THAT WERE PROPOSED FOR THAT CONQUEST

Passing to the distribution of lands, they desire that after renewing the *tombo*, the native men-at-arms should have the first place in the distribution of villages, as they have no other despatches,<sup>1</sup> and that what is once given to them should never be taken away to be given to the Portuguese, even if they die or become involved in the tumults of the revolts, unless they were ringleaders, but that they should succeed each other in the posts and offices for many and grave reasons, and in order that they might conduct themselves well in war and peace. Should one die or be incapacitated from office, he should be succeeded forthwith by his son, brother, or kinsman, and they will come forward because of the service lands. The minimum pay and upkeep of each lascarín should be limited to 10 pardaos, vested in villages which should be free from taxes, for it is not a gift but a maintenance and pay, more certain than money. For this reason they should not be obliged to give the price of areca, which must be discounted in their payments at the price of the *tombo*, and the villages would be less on this account. To the Araches they appointed 30 xerafins. The same to the Banaca of the General, one [of whom] would be enough, with

---

<sup>1</sup> Remunerative offices given by Royal Despatch.

two Motiares, or clerks, and the General should have in his keeping a copy of the *tombo*; and each Motiar 20 xerafins, and the same to the Motiar of each Díssâva; and to each Modeliar who serves with lascarins 60 xerafins. And if these officers serve well, they should have their rewards increased and likewise all others who discharge their duties satisfactorily, and all this for three lives, because though it was not the custom of their Kings, it is good to do them this favour, putting them in this matter on the same level as the Portuguese, so that their children and grandchildren <sup>P 472</sup> might profit by the labours of their ancestors.

But in the case of villages given for lives, they shall pay taxes, payment for areca, and all other services, because this is now a gift. But in the case of those that are given as pay for actual services, they shall make no payments, as has been said, nor render any service, for there will not be so many that more will not be needed for the arrayals and garrisons, as we said of the villages of the lascarins. In this way they will all be satisfied, and the more so if they are in the neighbouring corlas, because they will have more certain sustenance in time of war, though those who receive them as gifts might have one or other in the more distant Corlas. And when one cannot or does not name [a successor], he shall be succeeded by his son or most capable son-in-law. And though in those days some of the grandees had more revenues, it was not for three lives, nor with such privileges, and just as there is a limit to [what is given to] the Portuguese, so it is just that the Natives should have it also, so that there may be enough to give to their lascarins, and kinsmen, without whom they cannot be grandees nor hold such posts. But it <sup>P 489</sup> must be a fixed rule that if any one who holds a gift [land] should revolt, he and his successors would lose everything, and that the King would never again use their services; and in the rebellion against Constantino de Sá de Noronha it was found that one must at least take action against the leaders and pardon those who were carried away by the violence of that storm, setting great store by those who have been faithful for generations.

If we had to seek examples, the Turk pays all his Timarrotas with lands, and the Mogul does the same to his Captains with the obligation of [supplying] a certain number of horse; and he has them ever ready for any disturbance or fresh conquest that he undertakes, and those who are acquainted with that great Monarchy say that he has 900,000 horse, though he was never known to place them all on the field; because almost always there are disturbances, both on the frontiers and in

the interior of his Kingdom, caused by his tributaries and neighbours and by the Rajaputros, who living in high mountains generally disturb him, as even his own sons do, either in the lifetime of the Father or on his death; and if this [present] King holds out for some years more, after conquering Vizapur, in a short time he will reach the Cape of Comorū; and already the Kings of Golconda, Mayssu and Canarā, are tributaries to him, and if he succeeds in conquering the Mountains or the Drugos of that new bad neighbour, the whole Portuguese State, which we hold, will be a neighbour to this great Monarch, which ought to give great concern to Portugal, for there is no trusting the Moors. However, they follow a different style from what has been here pointed out, for they do not distribute the lands for lives, or in perpetual emphyteusis, but [give them] to those who deserve most, or prove themselves best in war, and on the slightest suspicion or petty fault | they freely take them away, although for a <sup>P 478.</sup> different reason, for such mighty Princes generally care little whether the lands are fruitful, provided they are obeyed; which is the reason why I do not dare to condemn what has been settled in Ceylon.

They hold that it is convenient to have 6,000 lascarins for the security of the lands, and to quell any rising in the one or the other Coast; 1,500 in Maturē, with 100 soldiers; 1,000 in Sofragāō with 70 soldiers; 200 for the guard of the General; 1,000 in the Four-Corlas with 30 soldiers; 1,500 in the Seven [Corlas] with 60 soldiers; 1,800 in Mangula-corla with 70 soldiers, where there must be another Dissāva to rule the lands bordering on that river as far as Tayriela and those of Mantota and Vānū, having his garrison on a rock on which formerly a King had his City, as it is a very strong position and there is water at the top, and because these lands cannot be governed from the Garrison of the Seven-Corlas, and for that reason they had been almost lost. And this number of Lascarins must not seem too great, since Rajū had 60,000 and paid them all without drawing upon the 1,900 villages of his Gabāra nor those of the Pagodes; and with <sup>P 880</sup> the surplus he maintained his Court and hoarded annually | large sums of money; and in our time D. Fernando Samaracon had 12,000 paid lascarins in Maturē, besides the expenses of his person. In this way a great service will be done to the *foreyros* in that they have not to supply men-at-arms as has been settled, according to the manner in which the Moors are ruled, because if they gave them as they ought, it would be another tax and since they could never be persuaded to give them, because in Ceylon they never did what they should,

this was ever the gentler means, and we shall avoid the inconvenience of the Portuguese not desiring to have lascarins in their villages and of coming to blows continually with them. Nor would it be always necessary for them to bring their wives to the fortalices, from which they received great oppression, and generally they had two [wives] and supported two families and rebelled without minding those that remained. They desire also that these troops should be, at least in great part, from the villages of the coast, and near our ports, because they are more reliable and more united with the Portuguese, to whose obedience they return sooner, because the punishment is more speedy ; that they be mixed with foreign troops who would always be more faithful, disclosing any plots that there might be ; for even Rajú made use of this means, keeping with him men of various races ; and for this reason they greatly approved the coming of the Christians of S. Joaõ, as we have already mentioned.

After making the total of these men, and of what is necessary as pay and gifts to each Dissâva, they set aside the villages that fell to them, so that the Dissâvas might distribute <sup>F 473.</sup> them according to the order of the Generals ; and those who receive gift lands [they thought] should receive patents, and new lascarins should be enlisted for the service lands of those who are promoted to higher posts. In each frontier corla there should be appointed a village, accommodated to the service of the one who shall be chief thereof and keep watch over the lands. Great account should be had of the sons of Modeliares and other nobles, that they might intermarry with the Portuguese, picking out for this purpose soldiers of good nature, who do not make light of such kinship, for should it succeed, one single person was enough to prevent a rising or to give warning of it, just as one single person was enough to disquiet them ; and the greater the authority he had, the greater would be the advantage drawn therefrom, and the more the better. Such Portuguese should be given in the name of the King a thousand pardaos in money and a village that yields a revenue of 200, if before the distribution, and if after it, the first or one of the first that became vacant, out of those distributed to the Portuguese and which would yield that amount, besides what he deserved for his services, and the dowry which the father-in-law might give him ; and they consider it a great mistake not to have done this as was [formerly] done.

Against this proposal there is in the first place the recent example of D. Theodosio, the leader of the rebellion against Constantino de Sá de Noronha, who though closely related

*R 891* to the Portuguese, declared himself, because a certain revenue, out of the many he had, was withdrawn. | I did not ever approve this mixture of our blood, which afterwards shows itself in valour and in customs, and rare is the case of one who lives as God commands and gives the respect which is due to the one who becomes his wife. In Ceylon, however, considering the great convenience proposed, I should not reprove some kinship with the most notable person of that island, for the example of D. Theodosio does not weaken the force of the advantage.

Passing from the lascarins and their Captains to the Portuguese Captains, to whom the King was wont to give other grants by despatch and gifts : To avoid some injustice springing from the Captain-General not having enough service men, after the villages he held were withdrawn by the King, they think it convenient that over and above the villages of his palanquin Chalias, he should have one or more villages suitable for other services, of 500 pardaos of revenue, and a similar sum in other places for his servants, the Yeador, Bandigarrâla and Captain of the guard, if this post is retained ; for the Vidanias, from which they formerly had their profits, must be discontinued ; and the Captain-Major of the field should not have more than one single village out of those which he formerly had for the service | of his person with the former salaries, so that they might not seek to obtain this post by Despatches, because it must always be given in order that one may serve, not as a reward for [past] services. For the same reasons each Dissâva must have only one village applied to the service of his person, and another smaller one to provide for his household, with 200 pardaos in money and other perquisites, about which we shall speak later, on condition that he will not make use of the villages of his lascarins to whom he must be a Father, to distribute to them what the King gives, and thus avoid the expenses of those whose revenues came to 10 or 12 thousand xerafins. To the Captains of companies they assign a village, one of the small ones for each having 10 or 12 coolies. And when they march they should be given aleaz or coolies of the foreyros.

All the above-mentioned villages should always be applied to these posts, and those who govern them should be made to take great care not to depopulate them, and those who commit violences should be severely punished, because excepting those of a General and his dependents, the others should be under the obedience of the Captain-Major of the field in the same manner as the Dissavas govern their own. And since others must be confirmed, if the number of Captains

deputed for the Conquest should be less, [the lands] must not be given to others, but should be rented out on the account of the King, either to buy slaves for the Captains who have less service-men till they have enough, or for the rice and provisions for the most needy garrisons and fortalices. In all these villages they should pay dues, or it should be discounted from their salary, for the reason already given. To the Captain of Columbo they also say, should be given in the same way a village of 200 pardaos of revenue, since it is not reasonable that he should be denied, | as some wished, what is given for lesser reasons to many who come from outside, as he does not get the dues which the Captains of other places get.

<sup>P 882</sup> They say that 12 other villages should be set apart for the upkeep of the garrisons, because of the many inconveniences arising from the contrary practice, as has already been pointed out with great insistence but without effect. There should be two in the Dissâva of Maturé, in which it is necessary to have always a garrison of soldiers; another in Sofragaõ, six in the Four-Corlas for the larger arrayal, one in the Seven-Corlas, two in Mangula-Corla. These [villages] should be rented out to those who undertook to supply the greatest quantity of rice to the garrisons. If these have no need of so much, it should be given to the nearest fortalices; where there must always be provisions for a year, which should not be consumed | till they have been replaced, especially in the <sup>F 474</sup> most remote fortalices, [which should be] accommodated to receive the garrisons of the interior or to supply them with provisions when the country does not yield, so that it might not happen, as was sometimes seen to the great discredit of the Portuguese name, that they surrender for lack of provisions. And as Columbo is the capital, it should be an example in this matter and keep this deposit from one year to another, the King supplying what is necessary for his soldiery and the city levying a contribution of one per cent. In those districts in which this cannot be done, another village should be applied, rented out in the same manner as the rest, and all on condition that, if the people were ill-treated, they would be punished in the way they deserve and the villages taken away at the end of the year, but that if they do well, doing good to the people, they shall never be taken away, other things being equal.

Having settled the maintenance of the men-at-arms and the provisioning of the praças and garrisons, they come to the distribution among the Portuguese, and they condemn [the practice whereby it happens] that the King has very

rich citizens while the conquest is very poor. But in order that the conquest may be profitable, the fortalices provided and the citizens rich, the distribution must begin with the persons who have been longest in the wars of the Island, and of these [they must begin] with those of greater service and qualities, and not those who merely come to settle in Ceylon, counting as half a year an expedition in the arrayal, or stay in one of the garrisons of the interior, because these were then [posts] of greater danger and trouble, and usually without pay. On presenting their petition, they shall be rewarded by despatch ; but any one who then, or at any time, shall be found to have deceived, or shall be convicted before a Judge, shall lose all the right that he had to the favours of the King, for in this matter there was much falsehood. For many reasons no one shall be given more than 300 xerafins according to the *tombo*, nor shall the number of those who receive this amount exceed 40 persons. A revenue of 200 xerafins shall be given to 60 persons of lesser services and abilities, being despatched according to the rent, either every 10 years or less, and the number of years shall be stated in each despatch. And <sup>P 293</sup> whoever exceeds this limit or the number | fixed, shall lose half that amount, because the revenues of the Island are not enough for more, save when it shall be altogether ours. On this point Luis Pinto and Luis Teyxeyra were consulted, and many other persons of great service and merits, who held many villages, and they were satisfied with 200 xerafins, because they understood from the manner of that warfare, that neither they nor their children would enjoy them long in peace. And if the disposition of the war should be different, and different the taxes and the cultivation of such fertile lands, there is no doubt that the pay and favours could be more generous.

For persons of lesser services and abilities, they assign 150 xerafins, | not to exceed 200 persons. To the rest they <sup>P 474.</sup> assign nearly a hundred ; and to no one who has seven years service would they give less than 60, because all these gifts with a little industry and capital, yielded a third more than is valued in the *tombo* ; and if they choose to make improvements, they will soon double this amount with less burden to their conscience than when they trade. If this order and limit were kept in their entirety, His Majesty would be pleased to confirm them, and if they are not observed, then they shall be annulled ; and whoever convicts them in a court can have them for himself, the King also waiving the tithes and fortieths.

The sons of the Citizens and ancient servitors of the Island, whose Fathers are dead, can plead the latter's services ; and should there be more than one in each household, if the others have some service in the Island, they can be given some advantage on this account ; and they shall enter in the time and place in which their fathers would come if they were alive, especially if they had been killed in war. So they settled at the time, but God disposed otherwise as a chastisement for Ceylon, for rare is the resident or Ceylon-born man who lives to-day ; and this question is settled along with others which they raised and which have no place any longer ; and for this reason we record only what can be useful for the future.

After providing for those who had served in the Island for seven years and above, some gifts [they said] might be made to those who have served less, and also to those who merely came to settle in Ceylon. Those who have a goodly portion in the Corlas nearest to the ports, might be given something in the furthest and perilous corlas, but in the case of these to whom little was given, it was good not to give divided portions ; and these distributions should be made in the Dissāvas which were nearest to the ports in which they dwelt, so as to avoid the inconveniences to the farmers and 'oreyros, and they should serve in the garrison of those praças ; and should they be in the new fortalices, the years of their stay there shall be counted as service. I make no mention here of those who at that time bought villages, nor of those rewarded by despatch who serve in the Island, because the former did not obtain the confirmation of the King, and the latter who already had villages and to whom others were given as pension, have all passed away.

## CHAPTER 12.

### *P 884* OF THE DISTRIBUTION TO THE ECCLESIASTICS, AND OF THE REMEDY AGAINST THE VIOLENCES MADE ON THE CHINGALAZ

From what has been observed, they unanimously judged that in conformity with the First order of the King, the *F 475* villages and revenues of the Pagodes should be allotted to the Ecclesiastics and the Churches for their construction and adornment, and to the Bishop, if there should be one, without

duty or fee, by way of a decent stipend, discounting therefrom the areca and pepper, on condition that they should sell the pepper like the others. And as those Parishes cannot be kept up without Convents, whence to supply the Vicars who fall ill or die and where they can learn the language, they desired that revenues should be given for their maintenance and erection to those who need them : That they might make use of the servicemen of the villages, because it was certain that they give them better treatment than the Seculars commonly do. And if the Vidanas and the mayorals do wrong in this matter, the Dissâvas can proceed against them as in the lands of the Seculars. And should there not be at the time so many Churches and Vicars as to need the whole of this revenue, the villages must not be given to Seculars but only rented out for the King till they become necessary for the Ecclesiastics. They rebuked the false zeal of those who say that it was not convenient for Churches and Religious to have immovable property, on the ground that they did not die and that rents and properties became entailed, because this might well be true in the case of villages of the King and of *foreyros*, but not of the Pagodes, because the native King who gave the royal [villages] to His Majesty, gave these to the Religious and Ministers of Christianity. And even of the Royal villages, when there is need, the Religious are not undeserving, because they always accompany [the soldiers] on their campaigns and there was no rout in which some [Religious] were not killed, or wounded or captured ; and often a Religious animating the soldiers with the crucifix in hand, after giving them the sacraments, was of more avail than many soldiers put together. And if a Secular thinks that a despatch [appointing him] to a fortalice and [granting] villages for three lives is a small recompense even for seven years of service, what will a Religious order think, which gives continually and so long as the Royal service lasts, Religious for the military expeditions ; for if the Religious do not die, their services do not die either, nor do their spiritual services, which are far more important according to their statutes.

As this point touches judicial matters, it is somewhat out of place here, and all this scruple about the villages of the Pagodes can be removed by a nominal rent<sup>1</sup> without going into the discussions whether before the gift of the King D. Joâo Perea Pandar, the King of Portugal had any right to the conquest of that Island

---

<sup>1</sup> Lit. 'rent of an egg.'

*P 185* | There came an order from the Kingdom that each of the four Religious orders that were there should have the spiritual care of a Dissâva, which seemed most wise, because the spread of Christianity would give them enough to do, and there was no lack of villages of Pagodes in the Dissâvas. But as the Religious of St. Francis came before the others and had spread in various Dissâvas, this caused some *F 476* embarrassment, and they ever retained the same distribution and administered 56 Churches. Now that Ceylon is completely lost, if God be pleased that it be recovered, it will be easy to carry out this order so as to avoid many disorders which might result from the contrary. It will always be proper that as regards the situation of the Churches, the convenience of the Christians be considered, rather than that of the Vicars, in order that they may more easily attend Mass and instruction, without detriment to the work of the parents and the children who cannot make long journeys each day, which can well be made up for by Canazapules and other trusty persons, who can teach them in far off places, or cause the catechism to be taught, giving an account of everything to the Vicars, and seeking a convenient hour when they are not occupied. Above all it is of great importance and a matter of conscience, that the Parish Priests should know the language of the country, and one must be judged useless for this Ministry, if within a year he cannot shrive and catechize his flock, without trusting his conscience to interpreters who through ignorance and sometimes through malice, say bread for stone, and lay this new burden on the most difficult precept of the law of Christ. The Prelates must take great care in this matter, and if they do not remove them, let the Bishops do so, and if there is no Bishop, let the Vigayro da Vara do so. And in new Christianities it is always prudent to make use of less rigour, showing that they only seek the welfare of their souls, and not inflicting rigorous punishments nor exacting anything for the burial of children within the building, for in course of time and by kindness everything will improve, according to what has been indicated, for in the case of tender plants kindness avails much and rigour does harm, as was seen in some risings in which they killed the Vicars and burnt Churches which they never did in others, the Vicars of which were beloved:

They also desire that there should be a resident Bishop in Columbo, and as at that time the Bishopric of S. Thome or Melipur was vacant<sup>1</sup> they thought that he [of Columbo]

<sup>1</sup> The Bishopric of San Thome was vacant from 1628 to 1634, and for fifty years after 1638.

should have all [the other's] jurisdiction, with Manar as well as the whole of Ceylon, and that much good would result from this both in the political as well as the spiritual Government, for in temporal matters it would make the Generals proceed more carefully and keep the Viceroy informed of the truth. He could assist at the distribution of villages, and other things of importance that are treated in Council. For this reason His Majesty had already ordered the Bishop of Cochim, D. Frey Andre de Sta. Maria to go to Columbo, | and because he did not go, there were many disorders in the distribution and in other matters of importance, which it was not desirable to leave | to the judgment and will of one single person, for there was no one who had the authority to propose what was convenient, especially when [the Generals] were inexperienced and tried to become absolute Lords. If [Ceylon] had its own Bishop, he could be assigned a stipend out of the villages of the Pagodes, or without taking one vintem from the Royal revenue, he could be paid in cinnamon, which the Prelate could order to be made without prejudice to what was made for the King, and he might be given for his service one of the twelve villages which the King took for himself, as was said, so that he might not have to depend on the Generals.

Under the protection of this Prelate Christianity could be more easily promoted throughout the whole Island, especially if it be altogether conquered, or if we live in permanent peace with the King of Candea, as did Philip de Oliveyra in Jafanapatao, because if each Portuguese became an Apostle of his village, in a very short time they would be converted to our Holy Faith ; and when the authority of the General and the zeal of the Bishop are combined with the diligence of the Parish Priests, in a very short time will be accomplished that which is most to be desired, and which the King recommended most of all and which is our greatest obligation. The Ecclesiastics, moreover, would have been more respected and venerated than they were wont to be in Ceylon, the Royal Ministers forgetting what was related of the celebrated Captain Duarte Pacheco that because he insulted a cleric when Captain of Mina, he ended his days in a Hospital. And for a graver crime a Governor of Brazil was wrecked in a storm, when he had previously hanged on the yard of his gallion a Cleric whom he killed without remembering what Pope Gelasius wrote to the Emperor Anastasius, that he should be careful how he regarded the honour of the Ecclesiastical dignity which exceeded the Secular dignity much more than gold exceeds lead, and that the temporal must obey the spiritual authority and not the other way about.

It is however necessary, before undertaking the general conversion, to banish all manner of infernal Ministers, because they persuade the Chingalaz that by giving freely to them they would be delivered from sickness [which is] the greatest stumbling block of the whole of heathendom. For they have no lack of ordinary medicines, and for surgery they have many medicinal herbs, whereby dangerous wounds are cured, of which [herbs] they make great use in Surgery, because they have some books, or know them from memory. However they make little account of natural medicine, thinking that just as sickness arises owing to wicked men already dead and reborn as devils, so they can cure them also; wherefore they sell all they have and pawn their children, leaving themselves nothing to live on. And the worst of it is that this evil attacks even some country-born grand-daughters of the Portuguese | and their families, a reason for obliging one <sup>F 476c</sup>  
 P 597 to inflict | the punishment of imprisonment on the Masters. as they are called, and the forfeiture of their property to the one who convicts them, publishing beforehand a general proclamation, so that the ignorant may not be scandalized, and declaring that the remedy for diseases must be from God and natural medicines, more ancient than these Masters of the Devil, and that in the times of their native Kings there were physicians paid on the King's account to treat them, for they have enough knowledge of medicine, and that Ramānasur Arache has made a summary of their books, and that whoever should do this again would receive the title of Chief Physician for himself and his descendants, so that they may practise it and teach it to others, who may exercise the art all over the Island, receiving a village on the King's account; and that no one should practise without the approbation of the Chief Physician in writing, and that they may communicate their doubts to him paying him for the trouble and offering him their presents.

They assign a Master for each place where there is a Christianity, to whom the rich shall pay something, which will be twenty times less than what they gave to their sooth-sayers, and the poor shall be treated free. For this the Vicar shall give them two amunams of *nēle*, or a part of it in other provisions, gathered at the time of the harvest; and in the same manner the portion of the Canacapules and a part of the pay of the *meyrinhos*, so that they may not take bribes nor commit violence by not having the wherewith to live, under pain of being punished by the Vicars in what pertains to the Churches and by the Dissāvas in political matters. The *foreyros* must assist in this, depositing it in their villages

till the time of payment. But where there are no Churches, there shall be taken a tenth part for the Vidânas of the Corlas, if there are any, and the Dissâvas must always help to root out these wicked people, and not let it be said with scandal that the Vidânas had an understanding with them and shared the profits, and should they do this, they shall incur the same punishment. If anything remains over from this amount, it shall be given to the Vicars, either as alms or for Masses for the poor.

In the same way and with the same rigour the Negâtas<sup>1</sup> or diviners must be got rid of, to whom they give more than twenty per cent. because there is neither work nor loss in which they are not concerned ; and though they are unable to escape them themselves, they think they can deliver others. All the husbandmen know the proper time for tilling, but they say they do not know the hour, and they go to ask it from one who knows less than they, more than twenty times before beginning and harvesting any kind of crop, and never with empty hands, under pain of going away without an answer, over and above the usual pay when the harvest is gathered, though there is no proof of their science and knowledge | except that they say they know. And as the <sup>P 477</sup> Holy Office, for good reasons, does not so far proceed against these wicked folk, it becomes the more necessary that the other Ministers of the Faith and of the King should not be negligent.

Because it may happen that the villages of the Pagodes may not be well distributed in the Corlas, for it is only in them <sup>P 558</sup> | that Churches can be conveniently erected, a perpetual exchange might be made, or they might be built where it is most convenient without acceptance of persons. To the foreyros, however, who give favour and help for these buildings, for the conversion of souls, and for the observance of the precepts of the Church by their men, there shall be given authentic certificates, so that they may be rewarded with favours as promoters or defenders of the Faith, conferring a right on their heirs, if they had not been rewarded in life ; because it is certain that if the one and the other Ministers join and the Natives give up hope of having a Pagar King again, and all live in peace, the whole of Ceylon will soon be converted, and their children and grandchildren will afford still better results.

All this will be better attained by avoiding the acts of violence that were committed on the Natives, whereby the Portuguese and the Faith they professed were made hateful to them. To this end no *Foreyro*, however privileged he may be, shall be exempted from giving to the arrayal, and for other services of the King one out of every five coolies, and the same shall be done in the villages of the Pagodes so as not to let [a work] which needs a thousand fall on a hundred as formerly, an exorbitant measure practised by the mighty. No lord of whatever quality shall oblige the farmers to carry earth or stones for the erection of his houses, though those who have service-men may use them to fell timber, to transport it on *aleas* or buffaloes, and to take them by river to the ports, giving them the necessary sustenance and when the harvest allows of such work. They shall fell no jak tree, though the tree be withered, without permission in writing from those who rule that part of the country, nor for the service of the King, as has been ordered by his Provision, the which shall be done only in the presence of the Mayorals, giving oath about the number felled, and the planks made, which shall be sawn, so as not to waste such good timber, and whoever does the contrary shall pay three pardaos for each plank. The lords who have enough service-men of the low castes shall be carried to their own villages or from them, but nowhere else, without payment, and the persons who cannot go on foot shall use horses, or oxen, or *aleas*, or their slaves, or coolies of the ports, of whom there will be no lack, because of the pay. And no *Vidâna*, even though he be a Portuguese, shall be carried by the coolies of the villages, nor shall he be of low caste or a slave under pain of rigorous chastisement and forfeiture of the slave to the powder house. Neither banners

| nor ornaments of white cloth shall be set up for the *Vidânas* <sup>F 477v</sup> of the Villages or of Corias, but only for those persons to whom this honour is due, and for the *foreyros* who go to the villages at the time of the harvest, during which they shall

be fed for only a space of three days at the expense of the Natives. The Belalás and honourable people shall not be ordered to pound rice, as they have been greatly oppressed by this new custom, and other ways were not wanting. The

<sup>P 500</sup> Seigneurs shall not take the areca by count, but by measure | as made by the officer of the village, and if [the nuts are] larger they will be worth more. Nor shall they order their farmers to bring anything from outside the village, under penalty of 50 xerafins to go to the one who accuses, because they greatly resent this abuse. No villager of whatever quality shall sell areca, pepper, sapan, wax, poultry, butter,

and *calilas*<sup>1</sup> to any other than his Seigneur, under pain of having to pay him three times over, and whoever buys will forfeit it to the same. They shall however, buy areca and pepper, in the manner already pointed out, and other things at the price usual in the country. As for all other things the villagers shall be free, such as for instance all kinds of provisions, fish, *sura*, *jagru*, coconut, betel, except the betel of Bulatagāma and other betel villages, where the custom shall be kept. And if the Captains find this detrimental, let them buy from the Seigneur though at a somewhat higher price.

It will be more advantageous to the King not to take areca from the Chaleas, but to let them sell it freely to whomsoever they like, because when they are able to shift for themselves they will make more cinnamon, and they will be more content when they see that they are looked upon as free men and not slaves. Nor shall they give any areca to their Vidana, nor shall there be taken from them as Decuns four larins per head but only per each household. There shall be no under-Vidanas to live continually in the villages of the Mabada, but only at the time when the cinnamon is gathered. Nor shall there be taken from them fish, *topitis*, mattocks, coconuts, and oil for the Vidana, nor shall they be required to be constantly at their service, because when they see that they are favoured by the King and his Ministers, all those who now keep away will return to their villages, gardens and *paravenias*. And since that Vidanaship is always given by despatch in reward for services, he shall either be given a salary or some bahars of cinnamon free, with orders to the one who governs to see how he conducts himself and to find out his perquisites, because they never had anything save by fleecing the poor Chalias, who have enough to bear in having to go about the wood for six months collecting cinnamon. It is said of the Hollanders of the Molucas that they tried their best to get a supply of cloves by doing favours to the Natives and giving ten patacas to the one who plants a clove tree and waters it, leaving the tree to the owner, provided that when it bears he sells the produce at the usual price. In Ceylon there would have been no lack of pepper plants without giving patacas, because the Natives sowed them, had the pepper not been taken from them, the Seigneurs even asking more than the plants yielded; and because of this misrule the pepper failed. It is convenient to oblige them to plant pepper promising not to subject them to any violence, but to pay them the due price as has been pointed out.

<sup>1</sup> Sin. *kalala*, a kind of carpet or mat.—Clough.

## CHAPTER 13.

## OTHER MEANS THAT WERE PROPOSED

In favour of the Chingalaz they wished that the laws of Rajú which they preferred should be observed in all things conformable with reason, as was promised them by oath; and that therefore the laws should be reduced to a *tombo* and be published that they might know that we are willing to observe their laws. That when their causes come before the General they should not be tried by *banacas*, because whoever gave them most had right on his side, but by the Generals verbally; that the assizes of the Ovidores be stopped, as they gave rise to oppression and were of no effect: that the Maraleyros should not go about the villages, but from what should be the capital of the Corla they should inquire as to who had to pay Marálas and recover the same, all expenses being on the account of the King whom they serve, and there should be little pomp, so as to reduce this yoke which weighed most heavy on the Natives; that the posts of Vidanas of the Carpenters, Smiths, Turners, Goldsmiths, Potters, Drivers of Oxen and Paneaz, be given to worthy native persons, as such was their custom, and that the Generals who gave them to their dependents, at least the five first to his Bandigarrás, should satisfy them with the villages he has: that the inhabitants of the villages which have no areca should not be compelled to supply it, and if they have but little, they should not be deprived of it all, but that some amanoés be left for their purposes to sell freely as would be understood from the following example. From a village that gives 20 amanoés the Seigneur should not take more than 16, leaving it a fifth part, and if this equity were observed towards them, they would plant areca trees and would be quite content and would not sell stealthily but rather watch that they might not be stolen and the result would be greater profit to the *foreyros*; that the Seigneurs of villages should not have resident Vidanas but they might go to them when they like, in the manner already described, without defrauding them in the division of nél: that they should not by any means admit Vidanas who are not Balálas and of good birth, because their gentle folk resent being ruled by low castes: that they should feed the coolies as was customary when they made use of their services: that they should let them sell their merchandise, selling poultry, eggs, butter, rice, bunches of figs, betel, and whatever else they have, to anyone who paid them most, and if the

*Foreyros* needed these things they should | not resort to any <sup>F 478.</sup> violence : that they should not have stocks to imprison them in, but that when there were grave crimes and it became necessary to punish them, the Generals should do so or those deputed to be judges, about whom we shall speak presently. That they should take away from the fishermen of certain villages the payment of certain amanoës of areca that was put down in the *foral*, and that they should pay duties on fish, and that the dhoneys that are in the ports and in villages should pay the dues only to the *foreyro* to whom it was due, and not <sup>P 901</sup> to the Vidânas, Cangânes, | Clerks, and other individuals, because by that unjust division they took all the fish. The captains of the ports levied a certain quantity of amanoës of areca by custom, and they seize as much again. It is good to find out how much the people obliged to it can give, and to prohibit them for forcing the people to give more, leaving them free to sell what they have to those who pay them more.

There were in some Corlas as many as 300 Mayorals, and they came to be less than 10, and there were as many Magistrates (Corregedores), an institution which they thought should be altogether abolished, leaving to the Mayorals of the neighbouring villages, where the Generals happen to lodge, the obligation of doing the customary honours to them as well as to the Dissâvas once a year. And as it is the custom throughout the whole of Asiatic heathendom to erect resting houses (*amboloës*) in public places, covered with tiles at the cost of the people, for the convenience of wayfarers, it was convenient to have them in Ceylon, and some person with a sufficient service-land should be always there, to keep the necessary utensils, at least those necessary for cooking rice, where all might sell their merchandise. Whoever commits any violence here, however venial it be, should be rigorously chastised, thereby preventing them from going to abide in the villages and commit violences and injustices. It was also the practice in Ceylon to give food in these places to those who did not carry food, as is done in other Kingdoms, and there were lands of the Kings for this purpose ; but all these good customs were allowed to die out. When these (resting places) are built, every soldier who is found to have gone out of his way into the villages, must be rigorously punished, and all those who have been proved to have killed a native out of war time, or violated a woman should, besides the deserved punishment, forfeit all gift lands in favour of the one who accuses him. The same will be done in case of thefts, according to the amount, lest while one part is being conquered, the natives rise in another, and if one wants food, let him bring it or buy it

and he will spend less days in this journey. The same applies to those who carry messages from the General and the Dissâvas; and the obedience which the chief men of the Corlas paid to the General should fall to the account of the Mayorals of the villages in the usual manner, and only once a year when the week for his Corla is announced, to give him an account of any vexation done to them, or to answer any question ; or as often as they like or shall be summoned, and the officials of the General should not ask them for anything from the *pingas* | they bring, nor should the Controller of Revenue, if there is one for the King, which is no way convenient, because of the low position to which this reduces the Captain-General, whom the natives acknowledge as their King in place of the King of Portugal who must not care for these trifles. And in the remote parts of the opposite coast this visit should be paid to the Captain.

To prevent the abuse of many persons making themselves Kings and making use of the workmen and smiths, who have service-lands from the King, especially the Dissâvas who kept them engaged in their own | service and in the service of their friends, while the arrayal was short of arms it is convenient to withdraw these service-lands and that they, should be paid by those who employ them. The Dissâvas should be obliged to have arms made for the arrayal, the fortalices and garrisons, according as they should be ordered by the General, always giving preference to the service of the King, and giving them a pardo for each firelock or hand musket, and two [pardaos] for muskets on supports, besides the iron which could be had from the villages in which it is found by leasing them to those who [promise to] give most iron, and more work will be turned out for the King within one month than was done previously in one year, and with greater smoothness, if they are brought from the villages to the nearest garrison of the Captain-General, to the arrayal and the garrison of the Dissâvas and the fortalices. And no other firearms or spears should be made without permission of the afore-mentioned in writing, stating the number and the kind and shape thereof, which however should not be used by any save men-at-arms, Vidânas or servants of the Portuguese, under pain of grave chastisement and fine [to go] to the one who accuses. There should be in Columbo an arsenal of all kinds of necessary arms in great abundance, with a special salary to the one who takes care of it. The other prâças and garrisons should be supplied with the necessaries, and even with some extras in the keeping of the Captains, to be kept in Racks and storerooms with strict orders not to use them save in war, and making a list of

the number and kind, so that they might not be exchanged but handed over to their successors, and paying him the cost of cleaning and repairing them, which should be done with all care, investigating about everything at the trial on giving up office and making him answer under oath.

Because the twelve villages which the King ordered to be kept apart for his service, and which had been leased to Vidānas by the Controller of Revenue, who alone profitted by them, giving no service to the arrayal, though that was the plea for the proposal, are almost wholly destroyed and unoccupied, as for instance, Gampa, one of the best villages which always belonged to the King, and is now reduced to such a state by the renters that timber is felled even for *catamaroēs*, and remains abandoned by its inhabitants, and they do not even allow a shed, still less a Church to be built for saying Mass | as was customary, it is convenient to give P 479. these twelve villages to private *foreyros*, and those in which there is rice with the obligation of supplying so many candis to the arrayal, and those which have cinnamon [with the obligation] of supplying so many bahars for the King who will thus be benefitted and the village carefully cultivated.

In order that everything may be well regulated, it is convenient that the Dissāvas and captains of ports should be Ouvidores and Tanadares, with a determinate district including the villages of the Pagodes. And every mayoral who conceals any disorder in his village shall be punished along with the delinquents just as the judges themselves in their trials.

P 503. For lighter offences there shall be | in every Corla or *pato* a noble Christian who shall judge them and inquire into grievous offences and report on them and assemble the lascarins, coolies, and workmen for war and service, who shall be appointed by the Dissāvas or Judges of the country. No Vidāna or *foreyro* shall have power to put in the stocks or chastise a mayoral, or any other noble person for any fault whatever, but they shall deliver him to, the person of the Corla who will take him before his judge. In light faults he shall have power to place him in the circle<sup>1</sup> till he pays the fine that seems just, which shall be deposited in the hands of the surety till he is brought to court, and if therein the fine should be judged well levied, it will be given over to the depository who must always be a reliable person, and it must be placed to the account of the *motiar* to be paid to the King. All causes between the residents, if of some importance, shall be judged by the appointed judges, from whom they may

<sup>1</sup> Sin. *welikma* or *ana-va*.—H. W. C.

appeal to the General who shall ever be ready to hear them. as their Kings did, giving them sight of themselves and some hours of audience every day, thereby gaining their love. They shall chastise the Vidanas within their jurisdiction. previously informing the Captain-General, if possible, when the matter is grave, without regard to the excuse that they are sent by the *foreyros*; and they shall even depose them when they have deserved it and send word to their masters to provide their villages with better officers. The Vidanas shall also have the power to put in the stocks for one or two days. men of low caste for faults in their duty, ordering some blows to be given, because such people cannot be governed without punishment. The mayoral of the Corla will investigate about the pagan heads of families who die in his Corla within four months, inquiring from their heirs and other witnesses to know what property they had, and whether they had paid what was due to the King, which must be deposited in safe hands to be delivered either to the Maraleyro in the manner described, or if it is to be altogether confiscated, to the official of the King, because so great was the competition over this office that the vehemence of the last uprising is attributed to one of those appointments.

They found that in order that God might help them, it was convenient to restore the villages of the Pagodes | to Parish Priests, because without them Churches could neither be erected nor maintained, and if they remained in the hands of the Ministers of the King, the salaries would never be paid, and at most only a part, and that with great trouble. And [they thought] that it was a great impiety to withdraw the palmgrove of the King, dedicated to the oil of the lamp of the most Holy Sacrament of the Mother Church, and that if it had belonged to one of the mighty ones or to a dependent of the General, it would not have been interfered with. That at all events villages should be restored to the house of the Catechumens, and the religious of St. Augustine, to whom some had been given in commutation of their allowances, should be paid out of the factory as was done to the others. That they should grant the petition of the Religious of St. Francis applying for a village, or a fixed sum, from the Royal revenue for Masses or a solemn office every year for the soul | of the King D. Joao Parea Panda: who left nothing for himself at his death, at least as an act of gratitude to close the mouths of his lieges.

That they should put an end to the abuse of the Generals seizing, as they said, the villages as often as they liked, sticking to this custom so tenaciously that, though it was

prohibited by the King, they never gave it up, in order thereby to lord it over all and not to be obliged to do anything save what they liked, a thing which is not conceded to vassals in any Kingdom, and if it is necessary to punish, the King has prisons, fetters, the axe, and the halter, and there is no need to punish their wives and children by taking away the necessaries of life on every occasion ; nor should it be allowed [to the General] to give the village by *olas* to those of his faction, whether the villages be vacant or possessed by someone on good title, because according to Royal orders those that are vacant must be distributed by the Board. A heavy weight on their conscience was [this matter of] preying upon the lowlands, when people were either unwilling or unable to obey, because, if they were subject to the King of Candea, our arrayal seized and killed them, taking what they had, and if they were obedient to us, those of Candea did the same. Whence it appears that so long as we are unable to protect them, we have no right to capture them. This kind of warfare was lately waged between Portugal and Castille upon the people of the frontier who were subjugated by the one and the other army.

It was the custom of the Generals to reside always in Malvâna, but the last [General] settled down in the City letting the houses which D. Jeronimo de Azevedo had there go to ruin, with the object of governing the City in all things and forgetting the conquest, to the great detriment of those parts, because the people of the most remote Corlas could not easily come to Columbo nor have speech with the Generals, and in what concerns war they were nearer the arrayal of Sofragaô and other garrisons. They must be ordered under severe penalty to reside in Malvâna, and if they did the contrary their salary should not be paid.

Those who had experience of the Island were persuaded F 480. that it could have been completely conquered many years ago if the want of a good reinforcement and the private interests of the Generals had not delayed the conquest ; or that it could at least have been preserved in peace : but they resorted to inventions for gaining credit in the Kingdom, writing by themselves, or by others, about what they were doing against Candea, killing and capturing and doing other things in their interest at the same time ; and in war and peace they allowed the Dissâvas to supply Candea with whatever it had need of and from the sea ports the same thing was done, while the Generals winked at this [practice which is] nothing short of manifest treason, which gave room to say that they were interested in it while everyone maintained that they could

have reduced Candea in five years by cutting off opium, cloth, and salt, which are the things they were most in need of, because without them they cannot live. [The Generals] were busy with their own gains, their trade and their pinnaces, felling the timber prohibited by the King, without remembering the necessary fortifications and provisioning of the prças, even after they came to know of the Hollanders' intention as to that Island. And the reason why the Candiot joined the Hollanders was that he did not trust the Portuguese, because when he was in friendship with them after the peace which was made in the time of Diogo de Melo de Castro, when he restored all the prisoners and among them three Dissávas, [saying] that he would pay the tribute which he used to pay, till the matter was made known to His Majesty to whom he wished to be a brother, and for which purpose he sent a Religious of St. Francis giving him the expenses of the journey to treat with the King about his claims ; but they kept none of the things that were agreed with him, and at Goa the Viceroy did not even allow the Father to go to Portugal, who thereupon returned to Candea, gave an account of himself and restored the moncy to the King. They thought they had Candea under their thumb, but God so disposed things that had it been at this time they would have accepted peace on lesser terms.

To prevent the robbery inflicted on the King at the time of the general payments, in regard to the number of soldiers as well as in the distribution of rice, they deemed it absolutely necessary that the Bishop should be present, if there was a Bishop, otherwise one of the Superiors of the four Religious orders, to take note of the number and the work of the soldiers, as was done in Jafanapataõ where the Guardian of St. Francis was present. And therein they likewise required that all the things here pointed out should be observed. And in the other garrisons the Vicar should be present. As regards the rice that is distributed to the lascarins, it should be according to the roll signed by the General, in which the number should be marked, because there was great deception in this ; that the Captain-Major of the field should be deprived of the two *parras* of rice per day | which makes 50 candies yer year, giving him F. 111 only what was necessary, discounting the absent soldiers, by the list of the Captain-Major, with whose permission they go down to the ports.

That it should be very profitable to the Royal revenue, in case there is peace with Candea, to make a monopoly of areca for the King, since the Generals and Dissávas alone profit by the areca that comes from that Kingdom. That the Generals

should be content with the areca given by the Dissâvas and Banacas. That all the areca from Bulatagâma should be for the King, because the 400 amanoës for the General was a custom introduced by themselves and as it would be hard to withdraw it, let it be done by a Royal provision.

That the Captains of *estancias* should be taken from among the veteran soldiers of valour and experience in that warfare, because of the great harm done by the contrary practice. Because of a complaint which the Viceroy D. Phelipe Mascarenhas received about a General of his time concerning this matter, he sent from Goa as Captain of a relief, Nicolão de Moura de Brito, who was still a young man and a favourite of the General, and he wrote to him that he was sending this Archangel to keep company with his Angels. That honours should not be given to Araches and Modeliars who are not of noble birth, because those of noble birth feel keenly when they are deprived of this honour. That all lascarins should be well treated and their sustenance should not fail, because they will be reliable, when they do not lack what is due to them in justice. That the same be observed with regard to the soldiers, and that their pay and provisions should never fail, because if they are given what the King has ordered, they will neither fall sick of the *berebere* nor go about plundering on the roads and villages for something to eat, nor will there be *uprisings* against the Generals for keeping back their pay and reducing the rice, which it was always the custom to give them, and the Generals would be better able to chastise them when they do anything contrary to what is laid down by military discipline. That to prevent the neglect of the Hospital by the Royal ministers, seeing that the Custom-house duties of Columbo were set apart for its expenses, it would be a great service to God and to the King if a person of conscience and authority were present when the goods are despatched, and that the money recovered should not be in the hands of the factor, but promptly handed to the Religius who administers the Hospitals, and that there should be a treasurer and a book of Receipts and expenses so as to give the factor an account of the expenses incurred.

This, in substance, is what zealous men, well versed in the affairs of Ceylon, and men of good judgment thought at that time, without failing to foresee the opposition which these proposals of theirs would have from those who are self-interested, as well as from those who think that the Chingalas were deserving of being totally destroyed as being rebels often convicted of that treachery, and that all that they possess should

be taken and that they should even be enslaved. | But they <sup>P 481v</sup> ought to consider that they gave them no favours, that they did not give them fair treatment, but deprived them of their liberty and their goods, sufficient reasons for not letting pass an opportunity of freeing themselves; and if all things were diligently examined, those accused will be found to be innocent and the innocent to be accused. And if this does not silence them, they must consider that we always found in them strength and courage to defend themselves, and that their highlands on which they rely are not so easy to conquer as all those who fell there presumed. And now that we have listened to the judgments of others, and have seen the chastisement which God inflicted on us in Ceylon, and the great losses we had in that Island considered by itself, it remains to compare it with the rest of the Portuguese State in India, to realize the better its convenience and how much we ought to attempt to recover it.

---

## CHAPTER 14.

## PURPOSE OF THE CONQUEST OF INDIA

In the comparison which we now propose to make of Ceylon with the rest of the State of India, one may first consider in general the difficulties of the enterprise, and then compare Africa with Asia and see whether it is convenient that Ceylon should be the head of the State or at least its principal member, before we treat of the convenience of its recovery and of the possibility of its conquest. Because to wish to escape difficulties altogether, is to banish grand enterprises, as it is certain that undertakings are called great only because of their arduousness, and that actions devoid of difficulties are also devoid of glory. When King D. Manoel wished to discover India in the year 1596,<sup>1</sup> the second [year] of his Reign, he held various Councils in Monte-Mor-O-Novo where he was, in which he discussed this most grave topic. The majority were of opinion that India should not be discovered although they already had sufficient information of it, and they indicated these three reasons which Joao de Barros gives in decade 1, book 4, chapter 1. Firstly, because this great enterprise entailed great expenses and obligations.

---

<sup>1</sup> Sic for 1496.

as it was too vast a State and too remote for conquest and preservation against the might of the most wealthy and powerful Potentates and Monarchs. Secondly, because it would greatly weaken the forces of the Kingdom of Portugal which would remain without the necessaries for its own conservation, considering the might of Mauritania and the disquietude of Europe. Thirdly, because there might arise new competitors, and Portugal might be drawn into war with the whole of Europe, since one profit, at the time almost merely imaginary, was enough to cause the world to be divided between the two crowns of Portugal and Castille, which would also excite the other European nations if *F 488* they should see in Portugal the far famed riches of Oriental Africa and India.

These reasons contain greater force than they show at first sight, because as regards the first, new seas never before navigated<sup>1</sup> had to be discovered, although there was a Portuguese who to display his erudition tried to detract this glory from Portugal, and even if it be true that Carthage achieved it first, what information remained to us of that voyage to take away the glory of that discovery in which voyage it was necessary to navigate with the lead always in hand, advancing by day and heaving to at night? Nor could they avoid great delays in such extensive climes, nor lamentable shipwrecks, as were afterwards experienced, some owing to storms, others owing to shoals, some owing to the ignorance and rashness of the Pilots, and sometimes owing to the passion and blind malice, which obliged the foreigners, after taking the altitude of the Sun or the stars to consult all those who understood the matter, | and the same should be enforced by law in Portugal, to prevent the rash and desperate measures of one single man carried away by his passion, who, the more ignorant he is, becomes the more presumptuous; and they should take great pains to honour and foster the Nautical Science and Mathematics in Portugal where they were first resuscitated, and without which a pilot may be experienced in currents of the Ocean and signs and other matters of navigation and the bowline, but he will have a complete lack of other necessary information, while the computation of one eclipse is enough to show whether one is going out of his route, as happened in the Voyage of the Viceroy Pero da Silva in the year of 1635, because when one pilot said out of malice that he did not know where he was, and another said that he was outside the island of S. Lourenço, the contrary of what he believed, merely to contradict the former (as was

---

<sup>1</sup> Mares nunca d'antes navegados, a classic phrase from Camoens.

communicated to us<sup>1</sup>), an eclipse which was seen afterwards made it clear to all that they were within, as the Mathematical men showed him.

Nor were the disasters on the Coast of Natal due only to the size and great weight of the ships with poops and forecastle and four decks, though the make and the load might have helped them to sink the sooner under the storm, but it was because they set sail at the wrong season, and because relying on the strength [of the ships] they tried to brave the winter of that stormy cape,<sup>2</sup> and all that delay arose from their waiting for the cinnamon of Ceylon and the flotilla of cloth from Cambaya, for covetousness would not let them avoid this greater danger, nor the self-interest of the sailors let them reduce these unwieldy structures, which were approved at that time only by self-interested Portuguese, though they were as inconvenient for navigation as for war.

Nor could many deaths be avoided in climates so various, | F 482v for though the sea is certainly more wholesome than land, there are many causes for sickness, as for example the stale, reboiled and rotten victuals, the ill-protected barrels of water, especially after passing Guiné, the half diseased persons taken from Limoeiro<sup>3</sup> and Gabria, the number of sailors, and the scanty accommodation of cabins; and if people fell sick in great numbers, the great and inevitable lack of cleanliness was the certain cause of their greater danger. [There is also] the bad distribution of food stuffs without regard to the requirements of climate, and other accidents of less importance, [all of which are] reason enough for the loss of health and lives. And when the voyages are long and without refreshment, the scurvy or the corruption of living men is certain; and these inconveniences I wish to point out because they can be forestalled by taking precautions and by revictualling on the voyage as foreigners repeatedly do. A ship of ours sets sail rather late for Moçambique, and though there are many ports and islands at which they can take refreshment, without doing so she makes for the Indian Ocean, and when the monsoon fails, she arrives so late that the moiety of her crew is dead or at death's door, P 508 or if she does put into Sacatorá or winters in Moçambique, | where no proper arrangements were ever made for so many people, they miserably fill the graveyard of S. Gabriel, without the Royal Ministers feeling any compassion for their great misery, as if the King had ordered them only to take the

<sup>1</sup> The author came to India in the fleet of the Viceroy Pero da Silva.

<sup>2</sup> Cabo Tormentoso, stormy cape, was the name first given to the Cape of Good Hope by Bartholomew Dias in 1488.

<sup>3</sup> Limoeira is a prison in Lisbon. Gabria is a ship for prisoners.

ship to India leaving the men buried at sea or land, and though the danger was so usual and well known, the necessary remedy was never applied, because of want of foresight and punishment. About the might of the African and Asiatic Princes we will speak later.

As for the second reason, that the Kingdom would be enfeebled for lack of men if they were employed in this conquest, it is certain that the Portuguese character takes to arms more readily than to the mechanical [arts] or the plough, the lower orders in order to improve their condition and the second sons and illegitimate children of the nobility in order to obtain a suitable means of living, although they see that the mechanical arts made other Kingdoms prosperous and wealthy and that they regard labour as their inheritance, and industry their birthright. And if we argue from experience, Botero has already noted the disproportion of the Portuguese force with which King D. Joaõ went to Ceyta and afterwards Afonso V repeatedly to Africa, before our conquests, and after the conquests the force which King D. Manoel had when he wanted to succour 'Arzila, and D. Sebastiaõ when he fell; which seems a manifest proof of the reduction of the population caused by conquests. And in our time, we have seen families becoming extinct by failure of heirs for reasons which are generally not unknown. And the Portuguese nation did not as yet accustom itself to mix with foreign nations, and as all these are losses of our blood and of our lives, they are therefore felt the more. Neither does the maritime power of other nations or the neighbouring [power] of our rivals, cease to demand preparation for any fortune of war. And since Portugal is too small, to keep what it has already discovered in Africa, without taking deeper root therein, it does not seem convenient to attempt fresh discoveries, because if we place larger forces in Africa, there will be an abundance of gold and riches; and if we place less, we expose our labours and sweat to become the prey of other nations, whose covetousness and jealousy had already opened their eyes for our destruction, and by seeking to grasp everything with scanty forces, we shall end by having nothing, because in the matter of conquests and of Kingdoms in Heathendom and Christendom, arms and cannon were ever the most forcible arguments, and in the laws of acquiring we must not expect improvements in the world, nor wait for the time to come when we shall repent having discovered new causes for our ruin, new reasons for our shame and new echoes of our disgrace: and above all, if the greater Asia had always been what it was, vices would be therein more

**P 910** certain than riches, voluptuousness than Portuguese frugality, and if they have been enough to corrupt the good customs of other proud and gallant nations, they will be enough to taint our own, and the more so because the further it is from the head, the greater will be the licence, which is ruinous to discipline, because if under the eyes of its Kings and of their rod the forces of Portugal were never sufficiently kept under restraint, when they are far away and beyond fear, the regions of India will never be without scandals, ill in keeping with the principal purpose of spreading our Holy Faith, without which one can scarcely justify the attempt to conquer Idolatrous Kingdoms.

The third reason was of no lesser but rather of greater importance, from what we have pointed out, because as other nations have no lack of might and industry, they do not desire that they should forgo profiting by them, and that we should determine the quantity and the price of everything, because if they are Heretics, they will find justification for anything, if they are Catholics, they will not fail to find some pretext, and if they are mighty, whether singly or united, we shall have to take them to task and take the field against Europe; and as the lands and seas are so vast, and as it is impossible to have equal forces everywhere, we shall be defeated if our forces are unequal, and we shall be destroyed when they are equal, as we shall have to carry on war with the resources of one single Kingdom and nation against all those who seek to compete with us.

| This was as well foreseen by prudence as it was shown **F 483.** by experience, since in India we contended at the same time with the two European nations most powerful on sea, as well as with the other who came. Nor was there any negligence in making due opposition to them, as people commonly say, because the State at once sent help, and it was only the disobedience of India that frustrated the object of the expedition of Captain Lourenço de Brito. Nor would Andre Furtado de Mendonça have been tardy in 1602 if God, who wished to chastise us, had not divided the forces by a storm in the gulf of Ceylon when he was giving chase to Jacob Nek, the first Hollander pirate that ploughed these seas. Nor was the force which the Conde de Feyra brought in the year 1604 so small, as not to be sufficient to destroy them, had the divine hand not been against us, [and caused] the loss of his life and of eight of the largest ships out of the 18 that came in one fleet, in which they say there came 9,000 men. Nor would D. Martin Afonso de Castro, in the year 1606, have been late, if the Batavian had not foreseen

everything and had not promptly employed his heavy forces in India, or if disorder had not been mistaken for valour in the seas of Malaca. But though we prevailed in India at that time, these nations grew so much in maritime forces that they confronted us with equal opposition and equal loss in all the seas and conquests, and uniting themselves for our ruin they were able to establish themselves in trade ; and the Batavian began to develop greater pretensions of expelling us from our conquests, for he infested all of them, though he could not keep up all. Now we see that other European P 911 nations | are also passing the Cape and that there is difficulty in opposing them all, because the Asiatic Princes who favour them are glad to find rivals in trade for their own advantage, and those who were aggrieved or destroyed by us, [find in them] means to avenge themselves, since the other European nations are persuaded that where we entered they too can find a way, this finally was the greatest difficulty of the conquest of India that was pointed out, because from Asiatics we would take only what time and circumstance should teach us.

These grave reasons, fairly foreseen even then, were not enough to make King D. Manoel desist from his plan. and the principal reasons which moved him were, as pointed out by Barros, the feeling that he had inherited along with the Kingdom which God raised, the obligation of carrying His Holy name to foreign nations ; and that his Father, the Infante D. Fernando had also laboured at this discovery, over and above the special love he bore to the memory of the affairs of his uncle the Infante D. Henrique, who had been the first Author of this grand enterprise and to the title of Lord of Guiné | which he enjoyed, without the expenses and bloodshed which other smaller States cost him ; and finally, to those who proposed these difficulties he gave as his reason that God, in whose hands he placed the success of his design, would facilitate the means which made for the welfare of the Kingdom, and though he went against so many opinions, and did not defer this enterprise during his reign, people did not refrain from saying that he was waiting for a special order from Heaven about this affair, and if such had been the case, there was no reason for blaming delays, which did not exist, but rather [there would be reason] to qualify as inspired by God the determination which the King took, and the intention which he had therein of spreading the Faith of Christ among heathen peoples ; and as he thought that such was the end for which God had founded the Kingdom of Portugal, he would proceed all the more securely, the more he was persuaded that God would favour F 181

a work in which there was so much of God's interest that it would be manifested by God himself. These are motives which assured him that he was right in proportion as he conformed himself to the will of God which guided him.

Nor did the reasons proposed to the contrary seem to him insoluble. ever before the discovery of India, nor did it seem to him that he would be blamed for having recourse only to the superior reason in matters political which God desires to be regulated by prudence. Because as regards all that was said in the first difficulty, reason and afterwards experience showed that the great length of the route to India was no reason to be terrified into giving it up as too long, if it were carried out with prudence and caution, because all the dangers of a voyage and the inconveniences of such prolonged navigations were easy to obviate by means of places of call, in which one could be refreshed both on the outward and on the return voyage, and this was never the reason why our rivals called these navigations insane, for they were able to say so only of the manner in which we carried them out, because though we could have been refreshed and supplied with water and other things in going and returning, we never attempted to reduce this great inconvenience, as should have been done, especially after the enemies infested the Island of S. Elena which we should have garrisoned, as well as the bay of Saldanha or of S. Braz for the return voyage, and we should have kept in all these ports the refreshment necessary for our ships, whereby we would have preserved lives which must be more esteemed than the eastern spices. And by this means going to Angola and Brazil could have been avoided, for experience has shown that the weak food-stuffs of India are not sufficient to nourish the dispositions and strength of the human body, so as to sail therefrom direct to the coast of Portugal, without many deaths and great disadvantages, and that without such renewals of health, a voyage becomes a perpetual wastage of lives, which they do not suffer who go so well provided that they have an abundance of all things. But what we did not do, was done by the two nations, the English and the Hollanders, and the latter have recently erected a praça in the bay of Saldanha to the great detriment of Angola and of the passage of the Cape of good hope, from which they can impede the navigation of other nations. F 144 All the other inconveniences mentioned could be easily surmounted if the management of all this were left to men of experience, zealous for the common weal, and administration of the sea and on the sea were left to those who hav experience of it, so as not to pretend to or expect miracles by

presumption, because nothing is so opposed to them, for God does not assist the presumptuous but those who, while relying on divine favour, have recourse to the proper means to which God is wont to give efficacy.

As for all that was said in the second difficulty about enfeebling the Kingdom, it was disproved by experience and knowledge of Portugal, wherein time has shown that a few inhabitants within narrow limits have in a few centuries spread and inhabited them, and that as they could not be contained therein, they went to inhabit new Islands, and that so long as only those were given to India who could be dispensed with in the Kingdom, there could be no prejudice to the safety of the latter, and if in time to come the contrary is experienced, let them see whether it is not due to dissoluteness, at least of the youth. Nor was it possible to populate what was discovered, nor is it convenient even if it were possible, because the African countries of the new conquest were of such a kind, as regards climate, that no beginnings of settlements should be made there, but only garrisons for the spiritual and temporal fruit, and when those barbarous people are reduced, as in the case of Angola, by Christian policy, they can be protected from inimical invasions, and by means of the Faith of Christ and good customs their minds can be purified, and by that means even the dispositions for their own defence, which will dispense with the need of our patronage. They will not refuse to trade with those from whom they first learned trade, if violence and tyranny be not introduced therewith; and peace will always flourish if the Portuguese do not earn the hatred of those races. Even in America there would have been no need of slaves from Angola, if the unjust slave-driving of Brazil had not preceded, which not only alienated the Natives from our service, but even from our trade. Finally Africa is a country more suited to gain profit from, than for habitation, but the latter is a matter of greater importance, because all other advantages must give place to the propagation and conservation of life, especially in the case of the Portuguese nation, as it is limited in number and in conquests and does not mix with others.

The third difficulty is answered by the contradiction it supposes, because when the riches which are supposed to be in India are brought to Portugal, they will ever supply the sinews of war, and opportunities for making it will never be wanting, and one who has treasures to support it will not fail to succeed therein. And being the first to enter, we would greatly have improved our cause if we had

distributed ourselves in India according to reason and not according to ambition, driving such deep roots as would have enabled us to overcome any foreign invasion, while [on the other hand] if we were careless, the way was not so unknown as to make it impossible for others to try and improve their fortune by the very same principles by which we could have supported our own, for reason foresaw that whoever entered first would have a better foundation for his business : and we had this advantage that justice was on our side, that no nation would nor could set foot in India for the first time with such a large force as would suffice to expel us, so long as we were in possession of it, if we knew how to take it and how to forestall. Nor could there be such a great preparation in Europe which could remain hidden from us, and if we had known how to win those nations to our side, with them and with the prudent and lawful exploitation of their wealth, we could oppose any power that should come to make war on us, and there was time for us to know by better information and experience how far our conquest should extend. That nothing was lost by attempting that voyage, because if it were not convenient to continue it, the first expenses would be recovered by the glory of having achieved it, and others would not attempt what we had given up. But if it is expedient for us, it is by all means convenient that we should be the first, and it would be no small discredit if, after looking the Cape of Hood Hope in the face, we gave up the hope of King D. Joaõ II. and gave in to the fears of those who discovered it, since there are no seas which are not regulated by the stars, and those which at one time were most rough at other times were navigable, nor do the seas of our coast enjoy so great a tranquility as to make us fear those we have discovered, and after Portugal had invented and facilitated the use of the Astrolabe and had made use of the cross staff, sailing on the high seas and beyond sight of land in square rigged and mighty ships, all navigation became easy, however lengthy it be, both as regards the convenience of provisions as well as the difficulty of storms. All these reasons are so solid that they have since been confirmed by experience.

*P 914* | Such were the discourses in Portugal before the expedition of Vasco da Gama, but on Pedro de Aluares Cabral's return to the Kingdom after having discovered the land of Santa Cruz, which was the name he gave to it and which was afterwards unjustly changed into Brazil, those conferences were resumed, as is related and discussed by Joaõ de Barros in decade 1, Book 8, Chapter 1.

## CHAPTER 15.

F 445

THE MIGHT AND WEALTH OF EAST AFRICA  
BRIEFLY DESCRIBED

When it was already settled that India should be discovered, as was done by Vasco da Gama to his undying glory, the Portuguese soon gained sufficient information about Africa from the Cape of Good Hope onwards and about this Greater Asia extending all along this coast, which is well marked in the maps and the sailing charts, and about the might and wealth of their Kings and monarchs both in peace and war, though the interior of both Africa and Asia is not at all properly described in our maps, especially Africa, of which for that reason I shall give a clear, though not perfect account. And to begin by the sea coast :

From the Cape of Good Hope inwards as far as the Kingdom of Inanbane, we do not know whether there are any people who are not barbarians, without Kings and without any further product save that which can be obtained by the cultivation of land, such as the Hollanders are doing under the protection of the praça which they erected in the bay of Saldanha. The Kingdom of Inanbane extends from the Cape das Correntes to the Cape of Good Hope, but [its King] does not rule over the barbarians of the Cape, who live on the cattle they rear. From the river of Inhanbane inwards as far as the river Sabia, lies the Kingdom of Botonga, the limit of the territories of Manamotapa, which of old had Emperors, and which they call the land of Mocaranga, which were all of one King, but were afterwards divided into these four, Manamotapa, Quiteue, Sedanda, Ch'canga, for, because the King was unwilling or unable to attend to the government of such large territories, or to show his confidence in his sons, or because in truth he wished to give them all a heritage, during his lifetime he divided the lands of Mocaranga, giving to Sedanda those that lie southward, from the River of Sofala to that of Sabia ; to Quiteue those that lie northward from the river of Sofala ; to Chicanga the interior lands of Manica which are contiguous with these two kingdoms. On the death of the Father, they rose against the eldest Brother P 915 who retained the Kingdom of Manamotapa [which was] larger than the [other] three put together, and all retained

the name and language of the nation of Mocaranga, except in the small fringe of the sea which belongs to it and in which among the Botongas, there is some difference in language ; and though the Manamotâpa wages continuous war on the three rebel [brothers], he never succeeds in subduing them. This Kingdom has a length of more than 200 leagues and a breadth of almost as much. On the North-west it borders on the Kingdom of Bûtua, with which it is often at war, *Fasee* and the last named is thought to extend to the neighbourhood of Angôla and to have commerce with these lands, because some articles of Portugal appear in those kingdoms through that way. On the East of it is the river of Zambézi ; on the South-east it extends as far as the sea, a part of the Luabo River and the river Tandancûlu, which would embrace eleven leagues of Coast, where the kingdom of Quitêue ends. On the North-west, it borders on the two Kingdoms of Quitêue and of Manica or Manies ; which will have a length of about 100 leagues as far as the sea. To the north of Llanica is the Kingdom of Abutua, on the North-east Monamotâpa, on the South the Kingdom of Béri. From Luabo to Moçambique there are 130 leagues of Coast in which are diverse Kings of whom we shall presently give an account.

The Zambézi river which waters our Colonies is in some places one league in breadth, and is navigable for 200 leagues up to the cataract of the Kingdom of Sacumbi, which extends for 20 leagues as far the Kingdom of Chicôua, where are the mines of silver which the King ever concealed from us. From Chicôua upwards, it again becomes navigable as far as the large lake from which it rises, and whence many erroneously thought the Nile began, because our Fathers who dwelt many years in Ethiopia saw its source in the manner described by Father Baltezar Teles in the History of Ethiopia, and Plutarch already gave sufficient information about it in the life of Augustus. The conquistador Francisco Barreto reached this place, taking the fois's in pieces on the back of elephants, which he put together after passing the cataract. But he was obliged to return, because the Caffirs of the lower [Zambesi] did not understand those of the Interior, as we know from a certificate of his which was shown to us in Trapor by Gaspar de Brito Gadis who accompanied him on that journey. The river proceeds straight West-north-east, and the lake from which it rises is very broad and strewn with Islands. From it, they say, rises the river Zayre of Angôla, being thus very similar to the great lake of Brazil, whence rise the Rio de Prata and the Gramparâ, the largest rivers of the known world.

Thirty leagues from the sea, the Zambesi divides into two branches, and making a more perfect triangle than Sicily, [these branches] enter the Ocean at a distance of 30 leagues from each other. The larger is that of Luabo, which again divides into Luabo and Cuâma Velha, from which the others take the name of 'rivers of Cuâma'. The lesser is Quilimâne, which Vasco da Gama called the 'Rio dos bosinaes' because of the fresh information about Moçambique which he found there, and from this issues the Rio de Linde, within the triangle. The Luabo is navigable all the year round, and Quilimane only in winter, and nevertheless the Portuguese frequented it most, though out in the sea it has a shallow and very dangerous bank. From which may be seen how small the vessels of Vasco da Gama were, for they sailed along that Coast over the sandbanks of Sofala, and through the channel between this sandbank and the mainland, as there was no other channel by which to go out. By this Zambezi river one can reach the river Zayre, and by it he can descend to the lands of Angôla; and when there will be forces enough to conquer these lands, the limits of the conquest should be these rivers and that lake. In our days Cizinando Dias Bayao, a native of Evora, tried to reach Angôla by land through the Kingdom of Abûtua, with 10,000 or 12,000 caffirs of his territories, and when he was already far advanced into the interior of that Kingdom, he had to return to Sena, the town from which he had set out, where he wanted to procure some refreshments of which he was in need, without knowing the plot which they had made against him, and a desperate woman killed him by poison through fear.

In the Interior of the Quilimâne and in that coast there were the Macua Caffirs, a small Kingdom of little importance, but the people were well inclined and friendly to the Portuguese. Five leagues higher up, flows the river Laranga, and the Caffirs are subject to a certain person called Bano, who used to share his territories with his brother, though he was a King with few vassals. These Caffirs are well disposed and well inclined. Within the Interior, on the other bank of the Zambesi, live some mighty Kings, among whom Marâne is the Lord of large territories, and Maurúca in the neighbourhood of Moçambique, is King of the heathen Macuas, very savage and thievish folk, the most evil inclined among them, hideous in gallantry and other barbarous customs. They conquered those countries under the name of Zimbas, about whom we shall presently speak, and the native Macuas who escaped their teeth abandoned them owing to their

ferocity, but they retained the name of their predecessors. And though the King afterwards forbade them to eat human flesh, when they find it, they do not spare it. They spread as far as Cape Delgado, and these 300 leagues, up to the Cape das Correntes, is the district of the Governor of Moçambique.

Sixty leagues from this fortalice lie the twelve islands of Quirimba, besides other uninhabited islets, extending as far as Cape Delgado. From the Cape das Correntes to Cape Delgado there lies over against the mainland, the large island of S. Lourenço, 300 leaguos in length and 90 in breadth where it is broadest, being 60 leagues across from Moçambique, for so great is the breadth of that channel. From Cape Delgado to the Line [of the equator] there lies the coast of Milinde, under the jurisdiction of the Captain of Mombaça, the whole of it being inhabited by Caffirs, differing in language

<sup>P 917</sup> | and customs, and all savage like those of the coast of Quirimba. Along the shore lies the Kingdom of Mogalo, and inwards of this, to the North, there extends the large Kingdom of <sup>F 487</sup> Munimungi, belonging to a powerful heathen Caffir. On the South it borders on Mauraca and Embeoe, and on the North and North-east [it borders] on the ancient Kingdoms of Abexim, which the Galas took from it; on the East [it borders] the Kingdoms of Coraje, which is 5 degrees from the Line [of the Equator] towards the tropic of Cancer. It consists of heathen Caffirs, has many gold mines, and on the North-East and West it is surrounded by the ancient territories of the Abyssinian Empire. The islands of this coast have each its Moorish king, all vassals of the King of Portugal, and all of them hail from Arabia Felix and from the City of Larach, [and are] of the sect of Ali, and the majority of them have contracted marriages and are mixed with the natives. In all these Islands the Portuguese have inflicted so many tyrannies on them, depopulating many, that they were obliged to call in the Turks to avenge them, but after many robberies they perished under our steel and in the teeth of the Zimbas to whom we delivered them. And landwards, in the Interior of the Coast of Milinde, there dwelt the Caffirs Mosseguejos, as savage as they are valiant, and according to the fashion of the Abyssinians they cut the foreskin in war, which the Galas also observe, who must have learnt it from them, for we do not know of any other nation that does it, and the Abyssinians took it from the Hebrews, which must be understood more widely than the word sounds.

On the side of the Line [of the Equator] to the North, there is low land, the most barren and arid that can be imagined, which on this account they call the desert. At an altitude of one degree there is Brava, which is governed like a Republic and was a tributary of ours, Magadaxô, at three degrees and a half, fortified by art, and the Moors are our enemies. Inland there dwell the heathen Maracatos, very dark, but sleek haired and well featured, well bred, intelligent, and like the Abyssinians in manners. The coast runs beyond Megadaxô for more than 150 leagues up to the Island of Sacatorâ, and is thinly populated and most sterile, and it the end of it is the Cape of Guardafuy Inland there are some villages pertaining to the Kingdom of Adcl, the capital of which is Arar, and the stretch [of coast] as far as the ports of the Red Sea is called the Coast of Baragiaô. Six leagues before the ports is Zeyla, where the King of Adel usually dwells because it is a sea port. He is a rebel from the Abyssinian Empire like the others. From the ports within [the Red Sea] besides [the territories of] lesser kinglets, 12 or 13 leagues in front of the island Massua, there stretch the territories of the Abexim, and from Suaguen upwards are the Funges and Balous and the other countries of Nubia as far as Suez, which is the end of that strait, which is at a distance of 22 leagues from Cayro, and there end the territories of Africa.

The Caffirs are generally robust and strong, and among them are found men of very large bodies : they are as voracious as they are able to bear hunger. Among the Mocarangas the Quietêues | are considered the most valiant. The people <sup>F 487</sup> <sub>P 911</sub> of the Coast of Melinde and | the desert are all strong, robust, and daring, whether they be Arab inhabitants or Abyssinians or pure Caffirs or Half-breeds. And if these people of curly hair who inhabit the whole Interior of Africa, from the sea coast to Cape Verde, had been men of intelligence and good government, they could have been masters of the world by means of the wealth of gold that is in those vast regions. In proof of this I will recount the origin of the Galas who have conquered the greater part of the Abyssinian Empire and have become masters of the interior of that Coast, since our Fathers could not find out this truth from the Abyssinians. In the years 6 and 7 of the current century, some of our Religious went as missionaries to the Coast of Guiné, and among other Kings they converted the King, D. Pedro, a man of more than 100 years of age, and of him Father Baltezar Barreyra says in an Annual [Letter] which has been printed : 'The King, D. Pedro, disclosed to me that about 70 years ago, a race of Caffirs made up their minds to conquer other

lands, because their own were not able to contain them any longer, (he does not say from what part they set out) and that he had come in that arrayal in command of his men. They were armed with *brechis* and *zagayas* and with targets of rattan which protected them, and they lived on human flesh ; and they continued this march for ten years, till they separated and occupied and lived on the lands from Serra Leoa up to about the Red Sea,' and he concludes : ' These are the people whom we call Manes here, in Angola Iagas, in Moçambique Zimbas, in Ethiopia Gálas.' They are very dark, strong, robust and bold, and as we had encounters with them in Angola, in the Rios and in Moçambique, they paid us the compliment of admitting that the Portuguese were most valiant, but that they were second, God sending this punishment on the Abyssinians, as was prophesied to them by Father Antonio de Azevedo, for their contumacy, and to the rest of Africa for its barbarity, because they depopulated entire Kingdoms.

We have given an account of the Kingdoms and peoples of East Africa, and now we shall point out briefly the chief spices of these seas and these regions. Those who want other curious details must read the work of the Dominican Father, Friar Joaõ, on East Africa, where they will find information about the fertility of the countries in which the Portuguese live and trade, and which owing to the neglect of the Caffirs do not produce more for sustenance and enjoyment.

In the sea of the Busica islands, 20 leagues to the south of Sofala, there are many mermaids, from whose mouth issue four tusks, of the length of a palm, like those of the wild boar, and are greatly valued [for their virtue] against all fluxes of blood when brought near the flesh. There is also an abundance of seed pearls and pearls, and the Natives being accustomed to take them | by diving, become capable *iss* of remaining half a quarter of an hour under water.

In all the rivers of the coast of Sofala, and in the Zambezi, there breed many sea horses. They have four tusks of more than two palms in length, a good palm outside the mouth, | and those of the lower jaw are straight, and those of the upper jaw curved. From these are made articles much whiter and more durable than with ivory. Elephants are numerous throughout Africa wherever food is found, as may be gathered from the innumerable tusks which they barter every year, though not more than two are obtained from each, and they are so large that in this respect they excel all Asiatic ones, and sometimes tusks are found of half a bahar in weight.

In all the lands of Manamotâpa, or at least in the greater part of them, there are mines of gold, especially in Chirôro, where there are many, and the most perfect are in this Kingdom, in Manica and Abitua. Nor is it only in these Kingdoms, but also in that of Monimungi, as we said already, and in that of Adeâ in Ethiopia, and in others of that large country from which proceed the riches of Egypt; and if we add to this that of Mina, the whole of Africa may well be called a mine of gold, and God has deposited these great treasures among barbarous people who do not know how to esteem them, in order to make men realize that value does not consist so much in what things are, but in what they are esteemed to be.

It is obtained in three ways. The first and the most ordinary, by digging pits and mines, and following the veins of the earth which they know already : from which they take it and put it into buckets, washing and scraping off the earth, whereupon the gold, being heavier, remains at the bottom. For this reason they dig near water, not because it is not found at a distance from water, but for the convenience of not having to bring water from a distance. But it is not without great risk to life that they do this, because as they are poor architects, their mines often give way and bury them. However the desire for the things of little value for which they exchange it, makes them overcome every obstacle. The second manner of seeking it, is when it rains, because then they all go about the rivers, brooks and rills, in search of gold which is exposed by the currents and floods, where they find many chips and nuggets. The third manner is to extract it from certain stones which are found in the mines and have veins of gold, for they reduce them to powder and when they wash the whole in buckets, the gold remains at the bottom. This gold is called Matica and is base, of few carats ; all the others [they call] Dahabo, be it dust or in nuggets, and the latter more or less solid, because when the red earth, which is found in some veins, is removed, there remains only the gold. The Caffir who discovers a large mine of gold, incurs the penalty of death and forfeiture of goods to the King, if he does not call out to another to come to his side to bear witness to what he has found, and of how he has taken nothing of it for himself, and he is bound to cover it up F 400 at once with earth, placing a branch on top ; and if others see this, they run away from it as if from death, to which they will be condemned if they approach it, even if they should not take the gold, because the King does not want the Portuguese to know that there are large mines of gold in his territories, lest they take his Kingdom from him. So great is

P 220 the force of the stars, that it makes the gold to spring out of the ground as if it were plants, which is best seen in large mines where the earth seems cleft in many places and in the clefts nuggets of gold. At other times in frequented and well trodden places, gold is seen to spring out in nuggets, and sometimes in quantities of a thousand cruzados and of great weight, sometimes in powder, like fine sand, sometimes in grains like small or thick beads, at other times in nuggets or lumps which seem molten, or in boughs, with springs enveloped and penetrated with earth, and when this is removed it becomes hollow like a honeycomb or, iron, slag that comes from the forge; and as this earth is red, it seems to be turning into gold, and the gold of these nuggets is of the best quality.

From the Cape of Good Hope to the Red Sea, there is found much amber, which the sea throws upon the shores, for it grows at the bottom of the sea, whence it is torn by the movement of the water and of the currents, especially in times of great storms in places of lesser depth, because the waves dash with greater force, and this violence wrenches bits of it, which rising to the top of the water are carried by the wind and waves to the shores; and it is at this time that they seek it to sell. There are three kinds of it. One is called Griz, and is very white, [another] Amexueyra, which is grey, the other black as pitch, and often soft as jelly and of bad odour. The natives say that this is what the whales eat, chew and vomit, because it was found in the stomach of some which died in that Coast, and birds and other fish were often seen to eat what was floating on the water, and it is one of the signs they have to come to gather it. But from this one can conclude, that it is not only the whales that throw it up, but even the other fish, because though it tastes well, it is so heaty that when they eat much, they cannot digest it. The Griz amber is more esteemed, and they say, it greatly strengthens nature and gives new life to the old. But in those warm climates I should not approve its use, as of other heaty things taken regularly. There is no doubt that it grows at the bottom of the sea, because it has sometimes happened that it was brought up with the anchor of vessels. Often there come up large pieces of 20 and more arratels, like the one that was thrown in Brava in the year of 1596, which was so large that the men around it could not be seen, and so broad that it looked like a hillock, of which the whole of that coast was full, and for more than a year it was distributed very cheap to merchants, Moorish and Christian. And such large pieces cannot be thrown up by whales so as to suppose that it grows in them.

| There is plenty of cotton, from which the Caffirs owing ~~to~~<sup>Poss.</sup> to their ignorance, make only *machiras*<sup>1</sup> which are rough sheets. The Moors of the Coast of Milinde make finer cloth. The Portuguese here follow the same policy as in Brazil, taking the cloth of India to keep up commerce, and at the same time bringing it hither from Portugal. It comes from some shrubs which are sown, cultivated and lopped, in the same way as the vine, and without any further trouble than that of taking away | the seed or *capacela*,<sup>2</sup> which being heavy is given to cattle in cold weather, which they do by shaking it with a bow and bow-string, which also serves to twist it. It is one of the greatest riches of the whole of Africa, and especially of this Asia, where very fine cloth of excessive price is made, and in the known world there is no finer cloth or greater abundance. They also make other ordinary cloth altogether white or coloured, for which they make use of *Xaya*, just as we use woad.

They cultivate fields of sugar cane, which grows everywhere in Africa and Asia where there is water and humidity. And there is no limit to its cultivation, though in the better lands there is more substance and the canes are thicker and taller. The Caffirs cultivate the cane only for food. Here in Asia they work it with such ease, that they are greatly surprised when they are told of the structure of the Brazilian mills, and though some in this country do not know how to refine it, in the north, in Cambaya, Bengala and Kina, they refine it with lime and they make sugar candy like crystal and very hard.

In Rios there is the precious Aguilha<sup>3</sup> (aloas), and if it is old, Calambâ<sup>4</sup>; especially in the hills of Lupala, 90 leagues away from the sea and four or five leagues in breadth, which the Zambezi gets round by breaking up rocks strong as steel, carving them out as with a pickaxe, and leaving them over-hanging the river to a breadth of only 50 fathoms, and at the time of the floods it is navigable with great risk and not without damage. There are also various kinds of wood, and roots with medicinal efficacy for purges and discharges of blood and wounds which are cleansed from all putrefaction within 24 hours, and the wound however dangerous cured in a few days. Throughout all the country of Manamotâpa, there is found another kind which, when pounded and drunk, brings milk to the breast, not only of women but even of men,

<sup>1</sup> *Machira*, plural of *chira*, an African word for rough cotton cloth.

—Del. II. 6.

<sup>2</sup> From Kon. *kapus*, cotton.

<sup>3</sup> Eagle wood.

<sup>4</sup> The finest kind of aloë-wood.—Hob.-Job.

and it has leaves almost like the aloes herb. The quirimbas have many indigo plants; in the triangle formed by the mouths of the Zambesi and Cape Delgado, there is plenty of Mauzâ,<sup>1</sup> and in the latter much coral, and on that coast are thrown some cocos from the Maldiva carried by the current, and they are medicinal, and there is there plenty of tortoise shell also, and in Sacatorâ Aloes or *Azevre*.<sup>2</sup> On the coast of Melinde there are snake stones, a very valuable medicine. From all these countries and from Ethiopia come Civet, wax, and other usual articles of merchandise which it does not seem necessary for me to take up time in describing, | P 489 v  
but I will say only this, that the horses of Nubia are the largest and the most handsome in the known world, according to the testimony of our Fathers who lived in Ethiopia, to which the Funges and Balous pay a tribute of horses, and one of those Viceroy sent one to the Conde de Linhares which, though the fifth in size in his stables, was a third larger than any Arab or Persian horse in Goa.

P 922

## CHAPTER 16.

## A VERY BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THIS GREATER ASIA

Passing to a brief description of Asia, because it is now well known, more especially the coast than the interior, João de Barros, in Decade 1, Book 9, Chapter 1, divided Oriental Asia into nine kingdoms, following the sea coast. The first begins in the Red Sea and ends at the mouth of the Persian Gulf, because he does not yet speak of the distance of the coast of Arabia from the gates of the Red Sea as far as Suez, but only of what is watered by the Ocean. The second begins at this gulf, and ends in the mouth of the Indus River. The third [ends] in the Gulf of Cambaya and in the City which gave it this name: the fourth ends in the Cape of Comori; the fifth in the river Ganges, in Bengâla, the sixth in Cape Zingapure, the seventh in the large river Menaô, which flows through the middle of the large kingdom of Siaô, the eighth in the most Easterly cape of Liampô, a word corrupted by us from the name of the city of Nimpô; the ninth stretches in a north-westerly direction up to the strait

<sup>1</sup> Hind. *mahu*, *bassia latifolia*.<sup>2</sup> Another kind of aloes.

which separates Asia from the country of Yesu, of which it is now doubted whether it belongs to the new world. If what we read in one of the Annual [letters] of China is true, that the Moscovites have taken\* a praça there on the North, it is clear that they not only discovered those seas, but that they separate Asia from America even in front of Japan, because the Tartars, who already reigned in China, are not Lords of the whole of Asiatic Tartary, but only of a tract of land which will have a length of 300 leagues and a breadth of 60, [consisting] partly of barren highlands and partly of extensive plains, inhabited towards the east of Tartary, whither a short time ago the Emperor of China himself marched against the Moscouites, who like exiles had taken possession of some tracts of land under the protection of a fort, where the (Emperor) took them and captured many; though now some people write that the Moscouites have recaptured it.

From the mouth of the Red Sea to Aden, the capital of that Kingdom, there will be about 40 leagues, from thence to the Cape of Fartaque, at fourteen and half degrees, there will be 100 leagues; from that place to Curia-Muria, 120, thence to the Cape of Rosalgate, at 22 | degrees, a sterile <sup>F 490</sup> and desert country, another 120. At this Cape began the kingdom of Ormuz, and from it to the Cape of Moçandaõ at 26 degrees, there will be 87 leagues, where the first division terminates and the Kingdom of Ormuz on that coast of Arabia comes to an end. The whole of this country is called Hiamen by the Arabs, and by us Arabia Felix, because the interior of it is the most fertile and populated part of the whole of Arabia, which is also divided into 'stony Arabia,' and 'desert Arabia,' a very wide land, which stretches from Egypt as far as the Euphrates and Caldea, and terminates <sup>P 523</sup> in the Angle | made by the rivers Tigris and Euphrates called Mesopotamia. And leaving aside also the Persian Gulf, which waters the inner coasts of Arabia and Persia and ends in Baçorâ, or the mouth of the two rivers after their confluence, the cape opposite to that of Moçandaõ, at the mouth of that strait is Iazques, and from thence to the Indus there are 200 leagues of coast, thinly populated and full of hidden rocks, and the country is almost a desert, which we call Carmania, the Persians [call it] Heraao Ajan, in which are the Kingdoms of Macran and Guadel, upon a cape of the same name. Trajan reached Carmania, and they say that seeing the unfriendly face of India he returned to Italy, but we suspect another reason, as we shall say.

\* Footnote in text : in the neighbouring Tartary.

In the third part of this division, there will be 150 leagues including the bay of Iaque ; from Diul to Iaque 38, from thence to Dio 50, this Dio being at twenty and half degrees. From thence to Cambaya, at twenty and half degrees, 53 leagues, including part of Guzorate and the lands of the Rajaputras. From Cambaya to Commori along the coast, there will be 290 leagues, the [portion] most frequented by the Portuguese, and the flower of India, in which are the kingdoms of Dekan, Balagâte, Canarâ, and Malavâr, separated by diverse inlets below the Hills of the Gâté, and above by diverse rivers, all of which flow into the bay of Bengal, breaking that coast into inlets, which being surrounded by mountains, form most diverse ports, well charted and known in the sailing charts and in Maps, though in Malavâr there are fresh water rivers, which they call Mangâtes and flow from the Hills of the Gâté, forming many Islands, and nearly as many Lordships, which make the country delightful and their water very beneficial to the health. From Cambaya to the river Batê, there will be 70 leagues in which are our lands of the North. From Batê, which is 5 leagues from Chaul, to the river Aliga of Sintacorâ, where the lands of Dekan end, there will be 75 leagues, thence to Zamguisar 25. And from that to Cintacorâ 25, which is 12 leagues to the south of Goa. Such is the division of Joaô de Barros, to which I add that the Natives call that tract of land below the Gâté, Concaô, and the inhabitants Concannis, and the country above the Gâté [they call] Dekan, and the inhabitants Dekinis. But the most usual thing among these people, P 400 is to reckon Concaô from Banda, which is 5 league, to the North of the bar of Goa, up to Mirzeo ; and the territories above the Gâté corresponding with this, they call Balagâte, the whole of which belongs to the King Idalxâ, but in this year of [16]86 the Mogul took from him Vizapur, the Capital of his Kingdom, and he has only to conquer some hills which they call Drugus, wherein the rebel Samba, son of Xivâ, who has subjected the greater part of this Kingdom, still holds out.

The third division begins at the river Aliga, [and extends] as far as the other river called Canjecorâ, 5 leagues to the North of the Mount Delf, a prominent Cape of this coast, in which there will be 46 leagues of the province of Canarâ. Thence to the Cape of Comori, there will be 93 leagues, and from P 402 | the province of Malavâr, which is divided into the Kingdom of Cananôr which begins at the river Canherekôra [and extends] to Purepatan, up to Chetfia, stretches the Kingdom of Calecuth, which has 27 leagues of coast, in which is Tanor, the capital of another small Kingdom subject to

the Camori. At a short distance from Chatuā begins the Kingdom of Cranganor [and extends] as far as Cochim. This latter Kingdom ends in Porcā, 14 leagues further. From Porcā to Travancor, for a distance of 20 leagues, runs the Kingdom of Coulāō ; from there the Kingdom of Travancor, as far as Cape Comori, the distance from Goa to that Cape being 150 leagues. Between Cape Comori and that of Cingapur, lies the Gangetic Gulf, which we call the bay of Bengal, in the middle of which are the Islands of Ceylon and Canatra, which are believed to have been separated from the mainland. From Comori they count 110 leagues to the furthest place, the head of this bay, beyond Ceylon, where the great river of Ganges flows into the sea, which though it does by many mouths, there are two principal ones, which make the figure of the letter delta of the Greeks. The first mouth is called Satigaō, and the most eastern Chatigaō, at a distance of 100 leagues, but in a straight line to the north-east, from Cape Comori to Chatigaō, there will be 370 leagues, 200 [of which] are in the Kingdom of Biznagā and 110 in the Kingdom of Orixā, and 100 in the Kingdom of Bengāla, subject to the Mogol already from our beginnings in India. From Chatigaō to the cape of Zingapūra, which is at one degree to the north of the Line and 40 leagues from Malāca, to the East, there are 380 leagues, which are divided in the following manner : 100 leagues to the Cape of Negraes, at 16 degrees, the beginning of the Kingdom of Pegū, the district in which is the Kingdom of Arracaō. Thence to Tavay at 13 degrees, the last City of the Kingdom of Pegū, there stretches the great bay, into which enters a mighty river which, rising from Lake Chiamay on the North side, irrigates the whole country of Pegū, and from that Lake, which is 200 leagues from the shore, there rise six notable rivers. Three of these rivers join the others and form the great river of Siaō, the three others pour into the bay of Bengāla : the Cavor, above Chitagaō in front of the island Sornagaō ; that of Pegū, | which waters the Kingdom of <sup>F 491</sup> Ava in the interior of the country ; the third is Martavaō, at an altitude of 15 degrees, between Tavay and Pegū. In Tavay a short time before we entered India, there began the Kingdom of Siaō, which ends in Camboja in the Eastern sea, where we conquered Malāca from a Moor who had rebelled against it. From Tavay to Camboja there will be 500 leagues of Coast. Beyond Siaō and the river Menaō, there lies the 8th division, and the State of Camboja, through the middle of which flows the lordly river Mecon, which, they say, rises in China and flows enriched by so many streams and for so long a distance of country, that when it flows

P 825

into the sea it forms a Lake of more than 60 leagues in length, and at its estuary it issues through many mouths. Others say that when the winds are contrary, and the ground very level, the waters turn back till the wind ceases, and then flow into the sea. Then follows the Kingdom | of Kampâ, on the mountains of which grows the finest Calambâ. Then comes Caukinkinu, which afterwards revolted from the kingdom of Tunkim which is the larger. The coast of these Kingdoms is very tempestuous and has many shoals and there is little navigation, but already they have war Galleys. Then follows that of Kina, one of the largest Monarchies in the world, and the most populous country that is known, the size of which is already well known and which requires a longer description. From the island of Aynaõ, where the seed pearl is fished, the coast runs for 275 leagues, and then begins to turn to the North-west, the Cape of Nimpo being at an altitude of 30 and two-third degrees and the coast running North-west to South-east up to there, and proceeding 400 leagues up to 50 degrees, there ends the most Eastern and northerly land of Asia. In the archipelago of S. Lazaro, strewn with large and innumerable islands, the Portuguese were Lords of Maluco and of others, and still keep those of Solor. After they reached India, the islands of Japan were also discovered.

The extent of these Kingdoms, the riches of their Kings, and the valour of those nations, and of other Eastern ones who serve them, are fairly recorded in our *decadas*. There governed at the time the Arabs, a race that conquered a great part of the world, and threatened Europe, either by means of kinglets, of Xeques or of Moorish gangs, which greatly facilitated our enterprises, and their united forces can drive fear into the greatest potentates, because the countries are very vast, the people robust, bold, daring, patient of toil, and free from luxury. In the interior of Arabia, says Holy Scripture, there is also gold. They are great traders, and on this pretext they went on introducing the Mahometan Sect along the maritime parts of Africa and Asia. The power of the Persian, who at this time was called Xeque Ismael, was greater than that of ancient Darius, and he is one of the mightiest potentates of the world, especially after he mastered Mesopotamia also, which was afterwards taken from him by the Turk, a part of | Armenia P 826 and the peoples of Gorjestan, a passage to Persia so difficult that only Alexander and Soleyman accomplished it, and this it was that was symbolised by the Gordian knot which Alexander cut. Their principal strength consists in cavalry,

of which they make great use, managing [the horses] with great skill, gallantry and valour, as the Romans already experienced, and as Paulo Jouio testifies, saying that three Persians are enough for five Turks. These people are the flower of Asia, but they never took to seafaring, because in the maritime countries of Persia, as well as in Arabia, there is no wood for ships of war or for high decked ships ; and even in the rest of Africa, the Moors do not build anything save poor vessels, and [when they wish] to have vessels of some worth, they buy timber from this coast.

Carmânia is divided into the kingdoms of Macran and Guadel. It also has valiant people, of whom the Arabs  
P 928 make use, | but the country has little wealth. In those days the King of Cambaya was Lord of the Indus as far as Batê, and of many lands of the Interior ; but on the death of Sultan Badur, in the time of Governor Nuno da Cunha, the Mogul King Achebar seized that Kingdom, one disorder following another greater one ; and as for commerce, King Badur used to say that for riches he was one, the Emperor of Velur, two ; and the king of Bengal, three. By commerce and by means of arms the Mogul Monarch grew to such an extent, that he is to-day one of the greatest Lords of the world, and [his empire not only] borders on that of Persia and Tartary but even reaches the walls of China, extending from Sinde to the Ganges, and in the interior [it extends] up to the Kingdom of Tiporâ in the Interior of Arracaô ; and after the recent capture of Vizapur, he has already made the neighbouring Kings tributaries, and he will soon reach cape Comori, if there should be no civil war between the sons ; and men of experience say of this Monarchy, that there are in it 900,000 horse, and if he comes down the Gâté after reducing the Drugos, all that remains of the Portuguese State in Asia will be at his pleasure and will, which being that of a Moor, will ever be suspect, a thing which ought to give great concern. Its riches are immense, but the expenditure is likewise enormous, as the lands are distributed to Captains who are obliged to war. These Princes came from the province of Moguestan in Tartary ; they descend by the female line from Tamerlan ; they conquered other Kingdoms on that frontier, defeated the great King of the Patânas who live in Vdeli, whence they styled themselves Vdelf Patka [=Padshah], which means the great king of Vdeli [Delhi].

The Kingdoms of Dekan, Balagâté and Canarâ belong to Captains who have revolted against the Emperor of Velur, and, because the latter was called Narginha, the Portuguese | confounded the title with the proper name. He was F 493

a Lord of great wealth and large territories which extend from this to the other sea of the bay of Bengâla. When he found himself ruined, he affected a friendship with the Portuguese, and made a gift of the territories of Concaõ near Goa to the State, after destroying the fresh forces with which the Sabayni began to make war on us. We speak of him in another place in this History, and to-day there remains only the memory of his former power, his empire being altogether extinct.

Canarâ is still retained under the Government of a woman now subject to the Mogûi. The other Kingdoms of Malavâr are well known. They are all independent people, and courageous in war, which the Nayres of Malavâr hold as their peculiar trade and occupation. With all of them we had long warfare on sea and land. And though Afonso de Albuquerque had pointed out that Canarâ was the buttery of Goa, and that it was convenient to keep a mutual peace, on the occasion of a contract about pepper and because of *P 227* the rise of the price of gold in Goa, after the rise of gold and silver in Portugal, they refused to receive payment in that coin, because gold was very cheap in their territories, and the result was that we lost the prâças which we had there; and when afterwards so great a tax was imposed on salt, that even the vassals were ruined, they raised the price of rice so high, that all that we acquired was not sufficient for our sustenance, and it was distributed with such niggardliness, especially after the war with the Mogol began, that this country has experienced severe famines, for it is a sure consequence, that when the value of money rises, merchandise must rise also. In all these lands, from Cambaya to the cape of Comori, there is plenty of excellent timber for ship building, though to-day they raise the price of this also, and as everything necessary for their construction and for our sustenance had to be bought, all the loss fell to us.

In the Coast of the Fishery, the Maravaz were ever dreaded as a savage people and daring thieves; and after it came into the hands of the Nayque of Madurâ, we received no little damage, as likewise from the Nayque of Tanjaor and from the Kings of Velur and Goleonda in Nagapataõ and S. Thome. The people of Bengâla and Arracão are men of little valour. The large Kingdom of Pegû was conquered by the Bramaz who had come down from the Interior. After Afonso de Albuquerque took Malâca, the King of Siaõ lost many lands in that promontory, which was seized by various Mahometan Kinglets; but still he has a large Kingdom, most flourishing for its wealth, even after the loss of the

Kingdom of Malâca, where this Kingdom began at two degrees and a half to the North, while it ended in the Mountains of the Kingdom of Guevos, which begins at 29 degrees. | *P 922.* But it still has a length of more than 300 leagues, in which are eight Kingdoms, and in might 30,000 elephants, of which 3,000 are elephants of war, which most Oriental Princes make use of in battle. The Kingdoms that come next, Camboja, Champâ, Caukenkina and Tunqui, are all very fertile countries and well populated, and of the river Meron it is known that if in a day it rises by a palm or a cubit or more, immediately the paddy stalk grows as much, the ear being always above water, and they cut it from vessels, which sometimes go to Champâ above the trees. In all these Kingdoms there is so much silk, that all wear silk, and they greatly esteem a cloth of cotton. They are separated from the Laos by a desert, lying between, and they have more practice in arms than the Kinas, who being peaceful in everything, are women in war, and being satisfied with their own, they withdraw into their own limits, of the size, fertility, industry, wealth and government of which, it is better to be silent than to say little. After the Heathen Tartar became master of that Empire, he launched large fleets on sea, whereby he subjugated the Chinchoe, and *P 922* drove him out of the island | Formosa, which by means of more than 20,000 somas, [viz.] large ships of war, he captured from the Hollander, and the latter from the Castilians. In the Archipelago the Moorish King of Achem is a mighty potentate, and the Malays are valiant and impulsive. In Maluco we were received as people predicted in their vaticinations, and when four European nations contended for the cloves and nutmegs of Banda, as they could not be faithful to all, we reputed them as traitors, which gave rise to warfare and a siege of 30 years, and when the Kingdoms of Maluco became ours, the Catholic King, on the score of being the recoverer, took them for himself, from whom the Hollander took them. The riches of the South are greater than in these lands of the North, and as they were very far from the Capital of our State, the Hollander first began to drive roots in that direction, and as the injustices and violences of the Portuguese, not to call them treacheries, were so great in the kingdoms of Maluco, only such chastisement could be expected. And inorecible is the profit which the Hollander obtains there. In all these lands there is timber for ships of war, especially in Camboja; in Kina there is plenty of pine. There was afterwards discovered Japan, a nation as intelligent and determined as it is valiant.

## CHAPTER 17.

DISCOURSE ON THE SUBJECT OF THE TWO FOREGOING  
CHAPTERS

Considering the vast extent of the countries of Oriental Africa and this Greater Asia and the two Indias, on this side of the Ganges and beyond it, the might and the wealth of such extensive Regions, | Kingdoms and Monarchies, under <sup>F 493</sup> the sway of Heathens and Mahometans, it does not seem a matter for dispute whether it is possible to conquer them and garrison them and populate them to such an extent as to enable us to keep the dominion over them all, when there is in addition the aversion wherewith all nations resist the domination of foreigners, men of a different religion, as diverse in colour as in customs. Neither does the example of the conquests of Alexander and of the Romans now facilitate this enterprise, because we are neither able to bring to India by sea the force which Alexander led by land, nor did he and his successors keep up what they conquered, at least beyond the Euphrates, nor did they gain so great a power till they were able to conquer what is another's without danger to what was their own; and though he reached Cambaya and the world shrank before him, in spite of the fact that he had formerly sighed for more worlds to conquer, when he learnt of what still remained of Asia Minor and its extensive seas, he <sup>P 529</sup> judged it impossible to do what in the heyday | of youth he thought easy. Trajan reached Carmania, and his Historians say that as he was already old, he did not undertake further conquests; but whoever considers the lands and the power of the Princes who had to be vanquished, will find that it was prudent not to cross the Indus or climb the Caucasus. For though a European army well directed is able to cross some provinces of this Asia, the first industry [of the Asiatics] will be to set fire to the lands, to do away with the supplies for the Cavalry, and the sustenance of the soldiers, as they learnt from the King of Persia, who did so on the arrival of Soliman; and when [the army] is distributed in Garrisons, it will soon be ruined, for every war waged in haste or by surprise, such as those which Europe tried in Suria after the capture of Jerusalem, is exposed to great dangers and complete destruction; and large conquests must not only be in continuous lands, but must also be made after securing what is conquered.

Having laid down these principles as undeniable, it is convenient to consider whether we should merely carry on commerce as the English did afterwards, or whether it is

convenient to maintain maritime power along with that on land, and how far we should extend and multiply therein. Pure commerce seems to dispense with warfare with these nations; but everything being well considered, it was always more convenient to have a force on sea and land at the same time, because without a sea force we could only be mercantants, for if they closed us the door, as the Mohometans tried to do everywhere, we should be obliged to make a way for ourselves by force of arms, and thus learn from experience what reason had suggested before; and as it is not impossible to set foot on land, and spread therein, since the world discovered by us is so great and belongs to our conquest, all good reason recommends that it should be kept up without fresh consumption of Portuguese people, which can be brought about in a few years, if we live <sup>P 493</sup> in peace, and if the choice of the climes is good, as we already experienced in our Islands, and as can be seen in the land of Santa Cruz, since the prosperity of Kingdoms is the sure result of wealth and the multiplication of children in good climes. And it is very important to unite prosperity with fecundity by a good choice of climate in recently inhabited lands. Which was a thing greatly bemoaned in India, when they realized the mistake, and when it was seen that though the Portuguese could have peopled one or more Kingdoms, instead of increasing, we were daily decreasing for want of good disposition, both because we were exposed to the invasions of Asiatic enemies, whose enmity we made on land and sea by our absolute dominion, as well as because we were assailed by the rivalry, envy, and hatred of Europeans, whereby we became reduced and consumed, and because the lands we inhabited did not generally help propagation. It may also be feared, that, though India was discovered by us, if we do not make ourselves powerful therein and only treat of commerce, there will not be wanting a European nation that will also attempt the conquest, as was intended and achieved by the Hollander, when we had taken root in India.

<sup>P 530</sup> Having thus settled that it is convenient to have a land force also, it next remains for us to consider whether it should be in Africa or in Asia, or in both, whether separate or united. It might seem that Africa should be preferred, as being nearer to Portugal, and in order that we might continue our conquest and the præpas which we formerly had or might have in future on that side of the Cape, because those savage people, it would seem, could be subjected in course of time more easily than the mighty Asiatic Princes, and it would be the more easy for us, the less præpas we erect. And as the treasures which God deposited among those savages are great, we should

esteem them all the more, because they know and appreciate them less. And this must be attempted with few praças in the beginning, and if possible with their good will, and when peace is established with them, by many factories in which the articles of trade can be stored and secured from other nations. And though praças of great strength are not necessary to defend ourselves from the Natives, so long as they are wild, yet every consideration of prudence requires that they should be such as can resist any European power, since reinforcements must come from a great distance. Because if we now think of subjugating them completely, we shall find it impossible, because of the extent of the territory, the opposition, the number, the wildness, the distrust, and state of those people, as we always experienced in Angola for centurics, and in Rios during the conquest. For men of judgment, who set foot there, were all of opinion that to secure all the products of those territories the first and the most convenient means was to set those Kings at their ease, so that they might be persuaded that we seek their trade and not their captivity, nor the dominion of their territories, the which can be attained | only when our forces are such, and P 444 we multiply in such manner, that we can achieve it without manifest danger. Because as those savage people have no rooted property nor movables, and live chiefly by the chase, without sparing any kind of animal, when they see themselves pursued, they will readily go in search of other lands, and all our great plans will be frustrated, if we lose their service. It will be quite otherwise, if we treat them in such manner, and even train them to prefer a Christian and politic dominion to the barbarous dominion of their Kings, as can already be seen in the lands we possess, where they have great regard for us as well as great loyalty. And though the whole of maritime Africa is unhealthy, it has been experienced that the Interior has a good climate, as had also been observed in Arabia, Persia, Carmania, and India as far as Malavar, with regard to the more inland territories, and that the children of the Portuguese who live in the Rios are robust and well proportioned.

P 444 These reasons were not so weighty as to prevail in those times, because the first intentions of D. Manoel were upon Asia, the riches, drugs, and spices of which, were better known and celebrated in Europe, as well as because, when once it was discovered, its trade was inviting and, if given up by us, could excite other nations. Nor did it seem convenient to think only of the riches of Africa, when we were able to profit by the many things which Asia produced. And in truth, as we shall

sec, the mistake was not here, because we might have enjoyed everything to our great utility and the satisfaction of the Asiatics. Nor could the trade of Africa be well kept up without the cloth and other trifling merchandise of Asia, since matters came to such a pass, that they were taken over from India to Portugal for a similar trade with Angola. And above all, throughout the whole coast, of Africa, (even if no other land was known outside the Island of S. Lourenço) there was not discovered any port suitable for ships of burden, save that of Moçambique, the Cemetery of the Portuguese, and exposed to the fury of the Monomocuya, and to the *rato* or sharp rocks, which cut the cables and which even iron chains were not able to resist. Nor did they find depth in the river of Fernaõ Velozo, except in a small beach of sand, and as it is so near Moçambique, it was exposed to the very same drawbacks.

But the mistake in this was not one of choice, but our ruin sprang from three sources. The first, that we wanted to dominate on sea and land at the same time; the second that we divided ourselves in many praças, all weak and ill garrisoned and ill provided; the third that we did not chose more healthy climes in which the Portuguese could multiply. The first won us the hatred of all those nations, because they were compelled | to navigate with our safe conducts or F 44 become our prey, which was felt not only by the Moors, who were already declared Enemies by their Sect and again by the loss or detriment which they suffered thereby, but also by the Natives, because we imposed this yoke on them, and because a few strange men thus tried to confine all the trade to themselves, and to subdue such powerful Princes to that new tribute, while they considered us pirates rather than simple conquerors.

The praças were so many that King D. Manoel took another course and in the last letter which he wrote, ordered those of Calecuth, Columbo, and Pacem to be demolished, so as not to have to contend with so many enemies as the Camori, the Chingalà and Achem. And as they never fortified them as was necessary, when every reason demanded that being at such a distance they should at least be able to hold out for a long time, they finally came to an end. And the worst mistake was, that the temporal and spiritual conquests were never in accord, because all that the zealous Missionaries did on the one hand, was undone on the other by the evil example of the Portuguese; and if in Goa, which is the capital, there was such an abundance of outrages, there must have been much more in remote praças, and they were scandalized

<sup>P 132</sup> especially to see the cruelty wherewith they killed each other, either in duels or in unexpected fracas, vengeance gaining the better of valour ; and this in the midst of people who, according to their Religion, would not kill an ant. And thus considering us on the one hand as pirates, and on the other as cruel assassins, they abominated intercourse with us, and could not believe that the Religion we preached was good, for experience has shown that the Devil moves them to greater observance of their Sects than Christians showed in obedience to the divine laws and inspirations in the observance of their Religion. Mauters came to such a pass, that our Fathers in Japan had one Mass for the Portuguese and another for the Native Christians, because the latter assisted with all reverence and decorum, which the former did not do. And though there were laymen in India who were Apostles of the Faith, the usual thing was that people lived so scandalously as to lose all credit in the eyes of those peoples, seeing that they placed all their observance of religion in the celebration of feasts, and forgot the good behaviour which promotes it more. And though King D. Manoel thought, because of what took place with D. Vasco da Gama, that the fear of arms would be more effective than the love of good deeds, and so long as no better advice was given on the point, he thought it best to send Pedro Alures Cabral with a good fleet and lusty men, so that the Indians might realize the power of the Kingdom to carry out the enterprise, and that it would be more profitable to them to seek our friendship ; yet as his primary intention was the spread of our Holy Faith, <sup>F 135</sup> | the King soon sent with that fleet eight Religious of S. Francis, men of zeal and prudence, whose guardian was Frey Henrique, Confessor of the King, who was afterwards Bishop of Cepta, along with eight other chaplains and a Vicar, to administer the Sacraments on land in the fortalices which the King ordered to be built, giving order to the Captain-Major to let them first announce the Gospel, with admonitions and requisitions in the name of the Roman Church to the Mahometans as well to the Idolaters, to give up their diabolical rites and customs and convert themselves to the Faith of Christ, so that all might be united in charity and Law and Religion, since we were all creatures of the same Creator and redeemed by Jesus Christ, who was promised by the prophets and waited for by the Patriarchs, so many thousand years before his Incarnation ; alleging to that end all Natural and lawful reasons, and making use of all the ceremonies which Canon Law supplies. And that if they should be so contumacious as not to accept the one law of Faith, and should refuse the peace which must

exist between men for the preservation of the human race, and forbid the commerce and intercourse which are the means whereby love and peace are maintained among men, since commerce is the foundation of all human polity; and should they resist both the one and the other, in that case bitter war was to be made on them with fire and sword. By this <sup>pass.</sup> he intended especially to justify himself before | the infidels and Idolaters, because as for the Moors, by the law of their Alcoran, they are enemies of the human Race, and especially of Christianity. But the preaching of the Faith could not at the time be of any effect, because the new Missionaries did not know the native dialects and the interpreters were not able to declare the Faith and the lofty Mysteries of our belief, in the proper way so as to make them credible, and Mohammedanism and Idolatry incredible, as was necessary for them to change one Religion for another.

The third reason for our failure, was the selection we made for our habitations, because they were for the most part unhealthy climates, where men soon ended their lives, if they were not sober and provided with the necessaries for human life, or where they lived with little or no health for propagation, which can and must be remedied by looking for lands with more benignant climates, which are not wanting in India and in the interior of Africa, for it is of all human causes the most important and a matter of the greatest consequence for the common weal. And we saw on the contrary, that through mismanagement and owing to the multitude of people put on board a ship bound on this voyage, oftentimes a half would perish; and there arrived a ship Belem in Lisbon with more than 400 dead, apart from those who had died on shore. If she winters in | Moçambique, she leaves the greater part buried, <sup>F 495.</sup> because of the lack of things and because of the evil hospitality of that climate, as was experienced by the ships of D. Antonio Telo, and by the Galleons of D. Philipe Mascarenhas, who there buried 1,600 men. And for the commerce of the Rios, the bay of Jesus, otherwise called the River of Sant-Iago, in the Island of S. Lourenço, was far more to the purpose, and thither we set our prow to escape the sandbank of S. Romaõ and the shoals of India. For they were able to go every year to Quilimâne with the Eastern and Western monsoons, and under the protection of that praça acquire great power for commerce and dominion, in that large and fertile Island where large plantations of sugar [cane] could be grown, and many ships built with the fine wood of the pine and other kinds, had we known how to get on with the Natives. The harbour is safe and has depth for large ships, and it was easy to blast

the rock that lies in the channel ; and it was certain that there was an abundance of flesh and fish and provisions, and that the climate was better than the one we experienced in M<sup>g</sup>ambique, which lacked all the conveniences ; and there were in that Island other harbours in which there could have been a large trade.

The same disadvantages were found in Ormuz, which was a most warm place, as it was an Island of salt, as were generally all the ports of Arabia belonging to that Kingdom. Goa, the capital of the State, declared against us at the very beginning, obliging King D. Manoel to write to Afonso de Albuquerque  
 P 934 que not to let the affection of having conquered it twice | make him blind, because in addition to its being neighbour to a mighty King, if so many and such good lieges were to be lost therein, it was much better to abandon it. Some attribute this to the fact that it lies between two mountains, from which the Sun reflects morning and afternoon and makes it an oven ; others attribute it to a neighbouring lake, into which much filth enters, to the detriment also of our neighbours of S. Joa<sup>c</sup>o of Carambolim ; others still, to its being built mostly on mud and surrounded by marshes which are full of it. And in the beginning this contagion could not have been attributed to the multitude of people, for it was only 31 years since the Sabaim had shifted from old Goa in search of better river facilities, to that site where formerly there was a forest of wild boars and other mountain game ; and it was a small City. Finally others consider it due to lack of cleanliness, which, in spite of all the diligence that was practised, could not be remedied in the case of the lower folk, especially when they are protected by the power of their masters, and in the case of Pagans on account of their superstitions. The maladministration in this matter was so great that when an elephant happened to die, they threw [the carcase] into the aforementioned lake, and caused a pestilence in the environs, and there died in our old College of St. Paul alone 16 Religious, and the Fathers were compelled to fill the garden | and cloister with goats in F 196 order to purify the air. Afonso de Albuquerque expected an improvement by changing its situation, and there is no doubt that we could have experienced better health outside of it, just as it is certain that this was the greatest enemy of the State. And in the present ruins there is a continual pestilence, because of the many noble houses that we saw erected there, very few are still standing, and the large suburbs of St. Lucia, St. Thomas, the Trinity, and Our Lady of Light, and almost the whole parish of the Rosary, are laid low, though in the parish of the Rosary there were 17,000 souls for confession, and

in St. Lucia, even in the time of the Conde de Linhares, there were 29,000 pagan families for the traffic and trade, for all were attracted by the prosperity of commerce. And as each Portuguese house was a convent,<sup>1</sup> all this was no inferior to Lisbon in the number of souls.

In Malâca some found a better habitation, though it was so near the equinoctial line, but even that is not a good site, and those who suffered most were the soldiery, both because of the scanty care they took of them, as well as because of their misconduct, as for instance their going about in galleys, Catires and foists, without any protection from the Sun or rain, being drenched almost every day owing to the continuous Samâtras,<sup>2</sup> or showers that last a short while, and their clothes drying on the body, whence it happened that more died from beriberi and from their own attacks, than from the weapons of the enemies, as we saw in our own days on the occasion of some quarrels of the General Luis Martis de Souza Chicorro with the Captain of the praça, D. Diogo Coutinho, in which, they say, there died 70 men. And even in Goa, in the first year of the Viceroy D. Pero da Silva, there was so great   
 P 933 jealousy between | the sailors and the military that in the course of that winter about 80 were killed. But owing to the fresh discipline of Portugal, this fury is now abated, which was often caused not by hatred but by pride and envy, as may be seen from the following instance. There landed in Goa, having come from the Kingdom, one of two brothers, named Pitas, with a great reputation for valour and skill with the sword. On the second or the third day, on the pavement of our Lady of the Mount, he encountered five others coming down, and they ordered him to draw the sword. 'I do not know,' says the Newcomer, 'how I have given you offence to be ordered to draw the sword from my side.' They replied that they had no grievance and only wanted to know whether he was valiant. 'Are you five,' replied Pita, with good reason, 'to make that trial on one man?' Thereupon one of the [Luso] Indians said with arrogance 'That is cowardice,' and Pita, 'That is impertinence.' Thereupon drawing his sword he killed two and withdrawing he said 'That seems to be enough for a trial.' One of the other three replied 'After killing two? You must die.' | 'You will have to die P 936 first,' replied the Newcomer, and that one fell too; but the greatest pity was that Pita went home to die of his wounds. Of such cases and infamous attacks many can be recounted.

<sup>1</sup> Many people in one house.

<sup>2</sup> Sudden squalls such as are common in the narrow sea between the Malay Peninsula and the Island of Sumatra.

## CHAPTER 18.

## THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED

From what has been pointed out it appears clearly, that it is no easy matter to combine all things, good harbours and good trading stations and good climates. And because D Francisco de Almeida found these advantages in Ceylon, he promptly formed the opinion, as we have already remarked, that the capital of the State should be placed in that Island, being driven thereto by the cogent reason that we would then have only Ceylon to deal with, and be free from war with the other Provinces of India, if we had in its ports the factories necessary for trade ; and that there we would be able to found a Kingdom, till time showed us what else we could and ought to undertake. It is an opinion which was approved by all those who set foot in Ceylon, for in that Island there were found together all those great advantages which we have pointed out ; and if peace should be impossible therein, we should resort to all military operations without offence to the other Kings, because as we shall see, considering the forces that were then placed in India, that conquest was not impossible ; and if our forces were all together on an Island, no Oriental Prince would be able to oppose us on sea, nor would any European nation be able to come with power enough to threaten us. And as this opinion was much talked of and approved, Afonso de Albuquerque did not escape the imputation that he did not carry out that conquest because of his disaffection to D. Francisco de Almeida, in whose time and by whose son, D. Lourenço, Ceylon was made tributary. Because if King D. Manoel began at the time to be concerned about the Red Sea, in order to close the door to the Sultan of Egypt and afterwards to the Turk who conquered him, the orders of the King were due to the information [sent from] India and those he had from the Levant ; and those people would never have stirred against us, if the echo of our bombardments had not resounded so much, and if from trading we had not at once proceeded to conquest and absolute dominion. Because the sentiments of the Camori of Cambaya, and of the Moors who dwelt in those parts, were quite in keeping with their fear that we would monopolize all the Eastern spices in our trade, depriving the Sultan and the Turk of their emolument. And if we know how ill this was F 10:

taken by interested Christians, we cannot doubt that Moorish Princes, the Lords nearest to Egypt, instigated by those of India, would consider it no less prejudical, because some dreaded the loss of the market for those spices, and others feared even conquest.

Afonso de Albuquerque saw (before he had clear information about the continent and the Islands beyond the two straits of Zinceapura and Sunda) that the three great trading centres of the East were in the hands of three Mahometan Kings of limited might, and that they were so situated that he could make them the head and arms of the State, with harbours of sufficient capacity for trading ships, and as his valour did not consider anything impossible, and his good administration of war rendered everything easy, he resolved to take Ormuz, Goa, and Malâca, making Ormuz the right arm of the State, Malâca the left, and Goa the head, where there were very capacious ports, timber, and many of the provisions necessary for commerce and war; and one who attempts to carry out a similar project in the part of India hitherto discovered, excepting Ceylon, could not easily have made a better choice, if only the results had been in keeping with the desire. But experience showed that all these places were unhealthy, as we have pointed out; and after they were conquered, he did not live long enough to remedy what he had disposed. The others continued what was begun, and involved themselves in so many wars, that it was never possible for the State to take more thought for the future than for the present, and when European nations came upon us after a century, we found we had laboured for others, and that profits were purchased for them at the cost of our blood. For, when they entered India, there was no Prince therein who had any considerable power on sea, nor a Turk to plough these seas, and the only one, he of Achen, who, backed by Holland, wanted to stake his all, was taken by Nuno Alvarez Botelho.

*P 537* | After conquering Malâca, Afonso de Albuquerque attempted, with that great spirit which embraced all things, to obtain clearer information about further India and the innumerable Islands of the Archipelago; and the King, being informed by him about the immense riches, drugs, and spicery of those countries, tried by means of embassies to make friends with the greater Princes, and to open fresh trade and conquests in those seas and in the Kingdoms of Maluco. But afterwards when it was found that, owing to the variability of the monsoons, two years were necessary to go and come back from Goa to Maluco or to Banda or Borneo, and when the difficulty of commerce | and reinforcements was *P 497*

seen, they say, that in the time of King D. Sebastian the question was treated of placing another Viceroy in the Island of Formosa, for so great then was the request for cloves and for nutmeg and for other products of those faraway regions. But, they say, the Hollander already discovered a way to Macassar, which made the voyage easy, and as the Island of Formosa had passed into the hands of the Tartar Emperor of Kina, it would have proved a source of greater loss, if it were again attempted. There is no denying that the riches of the South which the Hollanders now enjoy, is greater, and that the voyage from the Cape of Good Hope to the Strait of Sunda is more unobstructed ; but time and experience might afterwards have shown better whether this division was convenient, since it requires a greater outlay of men, arms, and money to maintain two States.

It is also held as an infallible maxim in India that whoever is Lord of the Sea will be so also of land, and that the greatest destruction of the King's ships consisted in letting them waste in Panelim without any kind of commerce. And the former was so clear to the mind of the Hollander, that whenever he saw us with a fleet of large ships, he never rested till he succeeded in destroying them, either by treachery or by fire, as we saw here in the case of two galleys within the bar, in one of which, when about to set out to fight, manned by 130 men, explosives were placed by a Fleming, bribed for the purpose, and he had already fled to Bardez, when the galley blew up. The other [was destroyed] in the docks of Panelim, where His Majesty has lost many millions for lack of a careen once a year and a cruise every six months, because the wood-worm that gnaws, seeks warmer water within two palms of its surface. And if the Batavian cannot destroy them by treachery, he resorts to surprise attacks, whereby he burnt in Mormugāo the three finest ships that were ever together in India, under the guidance of a traitor born in these parts, who also instigated him to conquer Malāca. And when he cannot attain it by these means, he seeks to meet us in battle, and though in this bar he burnt a galleon of ours, on another occasion two of our large ships were set on fire by one of our galliots, and in the seas of Malāca they did us all the damage which I have related in another<sup>1</sup> work.

*Poss.* | But as it is impossible to keep up a large fleet of large-sized ships without commerce, people realized that this would never be remedied by the Royal Ministers, as was recently

---

<sup>1</sup> In the *Vida*, p. 331 *et seq.*

experienced in the trade of Moçambique and Rios, and that Captains and Merchants lost India, the former by devastating the ports and banishing commerce by the injustices and violences they committed, which set the world in wonder | P 498  
 that in order that one man might become rich in three years, all others have to be poor for ever, and the latter by carrying on commerce in unarmed vessels, and usually in *parangues*, galliots, and pinnaces, badly provided with arms and defenders; about which I shall mention only two instances, and one of them still quite recent. There lived in Dio a Moor whose ancestors had been from father to son Nacodas or Captains of his people, and ever faithful to the Portuguese. On coming from Moca, he asked a nephew of his to take a jar of quince to the Captain. Instead of quinces he took by mistake another jar in which a quantity of Venetians was hidden under some other sweets. When the mistake was found out, they wanted to exchange, but the Captain would not give it up, saying that God had done him that favour; but if he thought them forfeit, they belonged to the King and not to him; but he did not enjoy them nor did his heir. The result was that the Nacoda went to Cambaya, saying that the Portuguese were not what they were. Instances of this kind one can relate without end.

But to come back to merchandise. There set out from Macao, Gomez Freyre de Andrade in a good pinnace in which besides a good quantity of gold there was merchandise worth 600,000 patacas. To escape Hollander pirates in the two straits of Zingapur and Sunda, he passed through that of Bima, and as they were all eager to increase their capital they decided to go to Bengala. On the coast of Choromandal they came across a Hollander pinnace with goodly artillery, while they had nothing more than five pieces of small calibre. The pirate began to batter them on the side, and as there were 70 passengers, they decided to attack and take her. The Batavian understood his design and avoided the shock once and several times. They then placed a piece in the sternwalk (*varanda*), and at the first shot it fell into the sea and put the ship into such confusion as to impede the use of the helm. Finally there was no help but to surrender, putting such a great treasure into the hands of a few enemies, and they were taken to Musulapatao, where they received the mockery and ridicule of those people.

On realizing this, they are for many years past planning a company of merchants, in which all would care for each one's own as well as for the common interests, and all working

P 939 together would not only be able to keep what still remains to us, but even to recover what is lost, and to aspire to still greater things. Because they think that the riches of Africa alone are sufficient to make it most prosperous, if there be good administration, which at present consists (as was also the case in the early days of | the State) in conciliating the mind of the King of Monomotapa, avoiding the tyrannies and injustices done to him. It was the custom of that King to distribute his territories to Caffirs of the greatest worth, whom they call Fumos and Encoses, which corresponds to our Counts and Marquises, in order to keep them quiet and peaceful, for otherwise they raise great revolts | and P 4939 rebellions, which the King cannot prevent, because they took his people and he is not obeyed. It is these people, who, out of self-interest, disclosed the mines of gold to buy therewith clothes for their wives and children ; and when they were provided with this, they turned to their scanty cultivation, for their riches consist of 400 to 500 cattle, and as many wives as they can support, and slaves by whom they are so venerated that they address them only with their breast on the ground, and even their wives address them on their knees, an adoration which even the Portuguese Lords of the land also arrogated to themselves. But seeing the large quantity of gold that was brought to the fair of Dambarare, they were blinded by avarice, and dispossessed the Fumos and Encoses of their lands, intruding themselves therein with patents of the King, who granted them because of his interest in the cloth trade and in return for bribes given to him. And on account of the insolences of the Christians, the Caffirs gave up disclosing and working in the mines at the instigation of those who saw themselves dispossessed and on account of the illtreatment they received. And as they are people of little ingenuity and the country is extensive, and while some invite them, others illtreat them, they readily change their abode, and not only are the lands left uncultivated, but even their owners find themselves without the profits of barter. And at present without better arrangements no good can be done, even if we conquer those lands, because in order to live according to their pleasure and in freedom, they would rather cover themselves with the skin of an animal they kill, than suffer insults and violences, as they have no lack of lands for cultivation and for pasture for their cattle, because these lands are most fertile, and if they are industrious, they can draw great riches for them alone. This presumption of the Portuguese reached such a pass, that a few years ago Antonio Rodriguez de Lima

took the field against that Emperor, and because his might was dreaded and because his people forsook him, for they did not dare to go against their King, either through treachery or hatred of the Natives, the King was killed by his own people while fighting valiantly. The action [of Antonio] was reprobated by all, but punished only by God, for he died suddenly in Goa and realized little gain from the great riches with which he wanted to go to Portugal.

The remedy they propose for this is, that the King [of Portugal] should give strict orders to give up the lands which were not conquered for the Crown, and forbid [his subjects] to ask for them in future; and that he should ask the Monomotapa to give up the site of the fair of Dambrâre, P 910 where we already have a Church, as the Christians are all there, and have built a *Chuambo* in which they might live protected from the arrows of the Caffirs, with no fortalice at present because there are no batteries. And then there will be plenty of gold as in former times, and the Caffirs will be satisfied with us, when all disorders are forbidden under grave penalties.

| It was also the custom to pay the King a cloth or *chuabo* P 490 for each *motoro* of cloth which the residents brought to Dambrare into his territories. And the Portuguese and other Christians usurped even this tax, and the King complained with reason, that though he was Lord of the territories, he received no profit from this commerce. And his poverty obliged him to give up his lands to the Christians because of the bribes they gave him, for he had not the wherewithal to clothe himself or the 700 or 800 wives whom he has, and whom he thinks right to retain in spite of the Baptism he received. But as he was proud of the name of Christian, he even said that had it been in his power he would have left his States to the King of Portugal. And there is no reason for us to complain of his not disclosing the mines of silver, because he is quite convinced not only by his reasoning, but even by their prophecies or persuasions of the Devil, that once these mines were disclosed, we would take his Kingdom. And as they make no great esteem either of gold or of silver, but only of copper for their jewellery, it is very likely that it is not profit which prevents them from disclosing [the mines], since they take no silver, but fear and dread lest their State be taken. And neither the Portuguese nor the Castilians, who also came to discover them, though without success, were so cautious as not to utter a word about the dominion which the Catholic

King has over the silver mines of the new world. And they are not so stupid as not to understand that the more riches they give us, the greater will be the war we make on them. For the same reasons similar fairs and habitations must be sought in the kingdoms of Manica and Abuta.

They say that the fair of Dambarâre is at a latitude of 18 and a half degrees to the South, and that the distance by land from Quilamane to the mouth of the Zambezi, is 280 leagues to the West, which on the chart makes more than 240 ; from Cape Negro, which is at 15 degrees, 130 leagues ; from Angola, which is at 8 degrees to the south, 200 leagues, save for the impediment of some mighty rivers. So that the way from Angola to Dambarâre is shorter than that from Sena where we live and whence we set out. And in case there is an intention of conquest, these two forces can unite. This is what they say of Africa, which I wished to mention here, so that one might prevent the inconveniences which retarded the commerce, because to know what can be drawn from Asia, it is enough to consider what we draw from it, what the English, the Danes, and the French draw from it by pure commerce, and what the Hollanders draw by piracy, commerce and conquest. Wherefore who is there that does not see how powerful the company will be which handles all these P 961 treasures ? Before we lost Ceylon, Zealous men persuaded us to draw up a scheme about the form of such a company, and the Viceroy Conde de Sarzedas premised us that he would send the scheme for discussion to learned men experienced in such matters ; but on his death the papers remained in the hands of the Conde de Odemire, who in a letter showed himself quite pleased with them. But because in another more P 439 secret paper it was said and proved that the Viceroy and Governors should be Presidents, as they are in the Council of revenue, he only objected to the diminution of the power of the Viceroys, though an attempt was made to increase it in another way, for it was clearly shown that it was not convenient to administer [the Company] by way of a ' round table ' and that the government should be divided between five Consuls, to whom should be given the administration of the docks, the treasury, the arms, the people and justice [respectively], with the title and power of an Auditor-General : but owing to the death of King D. Joaç IV., of the Count and the Bishop-elect of Japan, who was greatly concerned in this transaction, this endeavour led to no result, though even then our final downfall could still have been averted.

## CHAPTER 19.

THIS CHAPTER TREATS OF THE RIGHT OF THIS CONQUEST

Lest the reader imagine that the suggestion to keep peace with the Oriental Princes arises from some scruple or doubt about the right to this conquest, when I am merely adopting the course which seems most convenient, I shall treat briefly about the right of the Portuguese to enter India, and the ground on which the Kings of Portugal called themselves Lords of Guiné and of the conquest, navigation and commerce of Ethiopia, Arabia, Persia and of India on this side of the Ganges and beyond it. The curious [reader] can read Scaphino de Freyas, the jurist Vazquez, and others who treat this matter after Hugo Grotius brought out his 'Mare Liberum'. Joaõ de Barros treating of this point in decade 1, chapter 1, repeats the difficulties which were again brought forward in Portugal about this conquest; but neither then or at any time [afterwards] was it ever doubted that it was just; on the contrary, King D. Manoel added to the title of Lord of Guiné, which King D. Joaõ II. had taken, the above-mentioned one of [Lord of] the conquest, navigation and commerce. And what we have proposed may be the more confirmed by what he says there.

For, says Barros, as is quite natural, that in the two first voyages of Vasco da Gama and Pedro Alvares Cabral, the enterprise did not manifest itself so much in the resolution to set out, as in the expediency of the return, because the toils of the sea and the perils of land which Pedro Alvares Cabral went through, and what he saw | and experienced in trying to communicate with the Oriental Princes, again revived many doubts in the opinion of notable persons in Portugal, even of those who had approved of the discovery of India. For it was one thing to consider whether it is good to discover what one does not know, supposing it to inhabited by Pagans as peaceful and submissive as the ones of Guiné and of the rest of | Ethiopia, with which we had communication already, and whence without arms or other din of war, by bartering things of little value we obtained much gold, ivory, and other substances of great value; and it was quite a different thing to consider whether it was convenient and profitable for Portugal to attempt to conquer lands by force of arms, for the sake of the commerce of India. Because as experience showed, and as the Moors prevented us from having commerce with the Pagans of the country, we had to rely more on the might of arms than

on merchandise. And for some it was enough to see in the sailing charts so great a stretch of coast and so many turns of the rumb as to make our ships twice encircle the known world before coming sight of the one which is to be discovered—a picture which so astonished the imagination that it frightened their wits, seeing that the Kingdom [of Portugal] was taking upon the shoulders of its duty a world not painted like that of Hercules, but so real a one that it might crush it with the weight of land and sea, and storms and climes, and the heat of the sun. For if out of the thirteen ships of the fleet of Pedro Alvarez four were lost in one moment, it was due to the fury of the elements and was the effect of nature, which, being regular, only blows at certain times, and can be partly fore-stalled by precaution and choice of the proper seasons. But to deal, converse and trade, with the people of India, whose Idolatries, abuses, errors, vices and sects [were] the first object of the discovery, required another St. Thomas the Apostle, who would enter only with the intention of proclaiming the doctrine of peace and salvation. But if our [preaching] comes with arms, and men more concerned with their private interests, instead of making an impression on those Pagan people and on the Moors, who by profession are enemies of the Gospel, it would only serve to make it more despised. They were already possessed of this commerce to such an extent that they were absolute Lords of all the riches of the sea ports, wherewith they were able to make war on us more easily than the African Kings. And because our arrival in India made them lose their trade and with it their power, they would all conspire to oppose us as has already been begun.

Other Lords of the Kingdom, [men] of great authority, admitted these difficulties but brought forward other advantages which prevailed over those fears, as for instance, the proclamation of the Gospel, for which God would help with an abundance of grace and great progress of the Catholic Church,

*P 943* and that in spite of the opposition | of the Moors and of the Samory, who was instigated by them, we had already three friendly Kings of Cochim, Cananor and Coulaō, who vied with each other for our friendship and trade, because of the gains they experienced. And as money was the sinews of war, there was so great profit | that the expenses could be met therefrom, *F 1000* if the Moors wished to try their hand, and the Kingdom could still be rich, because from the spices that were brought in the fleet of Pedro Alvarez the return was five, ten, twenty, thirty and even sixty to one ; and all other reasons gave way in face of the extent of this gain, which ever prevails in all political councils.

But it is certain that neither the one nor the other reason had such effect in moving the heart of D. Manoel to this discovery and conquest and its achievement, as the inspirations of God, and difficulties only served to make him more provident and cautious. He decided to continue what had been begun in the course of more than 70 continuous years, and he derived from it greater fruit than his forbears without being deterred by the fear of what was still to come, because he was convinced that great things like that, which surprised the world, were not achieved except by many and divers vicissitudes and perils ; and he wished to add a new title to his State.

Joaõ de Barros discoursing on the question of right says, that [D. Manoel] did not take [that title] without cause or claim but with great circumspection, justice, and prudence. Because on the return of Vasco da Gama and especially of Pedro Alvarez Cabral, he effectually took possession of all that had been discovered by them and had been given and granted to him by the Supreme Pontiffs, and afterwards he took possession of the rest of India through his Captains. This donation was founded on the many and great expenses that the Kingdom had incurred, on the blood and lives of so many Portuguese who perished in that discovery by sword and water and sickness and the thousand other sorts of labours. Afterwards [Barros] goes on to declare what a title is, and what rights are implied by the one which the King took. For the word title among jurists has various meanings, as being a generic name which includes divers species. Sometimes it means a pre-eminence of honour or dignity, as Count, Marquis, or Duke. At other times it means the Lordship of property, whence the very writings which a man holds for his goods are called titles. But more properly and [more] to our [present] purpose, a title is nothing else but a sign and indication of a right or just claim which one has to what he possesses, either on account of dignity or ownership. With this difference, however, between Kings and lieges, that a King's title requires no other writing than that he calls himself such in his letters ; but in the case of a liege in order that the title of his dignity P 544 may be observed, he must have a writing from the King, | from whose hand he received it, and if it is a title to property, he must have a writing | from the one from whom he received it. 7 551 Wherefore, properly speaking, a title of honour must be called a dignity, and that of property Lordship. Just as the term King, when applied to the Royal dignity, denotes jurisdiction over all his lieges, but when it refers to the Kingdom and not to them, denotes sovereignty, similar to what each one has over his own private property and which therefore he can sell,

gift, &c.; but he cannot lawfully do so with his lieges. Wherefore, retaining the etymology of the verb from which the noun King is derived, which is from reigning, we rightly say 'King and Lord of Portugal,' but as the better object is the jurisdiction over men, we call him their King and not Lord; similarly when we call one King of a country, we understand that he is such over the men who live therein.

So much in explanation of the title of King and Lord; and according to that, and right to and justness of the name, King D. Joaõ II. entitled himself Lord and not King of Guiné, because though he had (Lordship) dominion over it, he had no jurisdiction over those people, though no one prevented him from having it, and there was no distinction of States among them; and as that country might have been granted to the first occupant, how much more [can it not be granted] to the one to whom it was gifted by the Supreme Pontiffs, who are universal Lords to distribute to the faithful of the Catholic Church (either directly or indirectly, for Authors are at variance) the lands which are under the power of those who are not subject to her yoke, according to the concurrent [testimony], (for we do not go so far as certain jurists) of passages of Holy Scripture which we shall presently point out. With the same caution, King D. Manoel called himself Lord of the conquest, navigation and commerce, of Ethiopia (understanding thereby, according to common use, the whole country of the Negroes), Arabia, Persia and India, because the Supreme Pontiffs granted to this Kingdom all that should be discovered from Cape Bojador up to the oriental shore, in which are comprised the one and the other India, Islands, Seas, ports, fisheries, &c., as is contained at length in the very donations which were afterwards reaffirmed by the Pontiffs who erected the bishoprics of India, and by Gregory XIII. who in the bull which he issued to King D. Sebastian, declared him and his successors patron and Lord of the Churches of China and Japan, because he erected and supported them, revoking by that bull what had been settled in Rome, because it was only about these parts that a doubt could be raised.

For the right of Patronage which the Sovereigns of Portugal have over the prelacies of India, is founded on a remunerative privilege granted by Nicholas V. in the year 1454, when the Portuguese had succeeded in discovering Guiné | and afterwards confirmed by Callixtus III., Sixtus IV., Innocent VIII. and Julius II.; and it is not only a remuneration for heroic services rendered to the Church in the past, but also an obligation for the future. 'Et ipse Alfonsus Rex (says the Pontiff), ejusque in Regno Successores, huic tam piissimo, ac praeclaro,

omnique suo memoratu dignissimo operi, insistere ualeant, et insistant.' And as King D. Manoel discovered the navigation of unknown seas, for they sailed from Portugal to East India, he took possession of that navigation by [taking] the title thereof. He discovered lands inhabited by Idolaters, Pagans and Mahometans, so as to conquer and take them from their hands as from unjust possessors, since they refuse the Glory due to their Creator and Redeemer ; and he entitled himself the Lord thereof. He discovered the commerce in spiceries and other drugs and substances of the Orient, in which those infidel people traded by sea and land ; and by the same principle, since he was Lord of the route and of the conquest, he was entitled to the Lordship of its commerce. For these titles he had no need of other writings save the first Apostolic donation and [his own action] in entitling himself such. And afterwards they were confirmed by right of prescription for one hundred years before any European nation came to India, none of whom was Catholic, so as to entitle them to the Pontifical donation which they never had.

And as for navigation, we began with such a large might of arms that, making ourselves Lords of these seas, we forbade the Pagans and Mahometans from sailing in them without *cartaz*<sup>1</sup> or safe conducts, and captured in fair war all those who refused. For although by the common law, seas are common [to all] and sailing free, and by the same law we are obliged to give right of way to others who have properties near ours, as there is no public way, this law holds good only where the Imperial and Roman Law prevails. Not because the Christian Kings and Princes are subject to such a law, specially he of Portugal, and others who are immediately under the Pope by obedience and not as feudatories ; but [because] they accept these laws in so far as they are conformable to reason, the Mother of law. The Moors and Gentiles, who do not follow the one and true law of Christ which all are obliged to observe under pain of condemnation, are not included in that law, as they are not members of the Evangelical congregation, though they are our neighbours, being rational [creatures] and so long as they live, they are able to receive it, because if the principal part of [man, namely] the soul is condemned, the part which it animates cannot be [privileged [to have] the benefit of our *laws* as they are not members of the Church.

And even conforming ourselves to that common right, it is not only these people that are excluded. By that same principle no heretic whatsoever, separated from the Church, or even a member of it, can ask the right of way to those

---

<sup>1</sup> Not a European but an Arabic word, *Quirtas*, papers, documents.

*P 848* oriental regions. Because before our advent in India and before our possession of it, there was no one who had any inherited or conquered property therein, and where there is no previous action, there is no right of way present or future, because just as every act requires a natural principle of right for its continuance for any length of time, in the same way, action to be just must spring from a precedent principle of justice, which in common law is a universal centre to which all the acts of men, who live according to the law of God, conform. As there is no sea or land to which there is a way through these seas and these lands over which the right of Portugal extends, and as the right of way does not imply a right to force of arms, to the prejudice of a just possessor, no title devolves on other Kingdoms and nations, even if they may be Catholics. For who is there who thinks he has a right of way by sea or land to other lands or seas outside the Portuguesc conquest ? Or who thinks that he is obliged to open the door to another who seeks it by force of arms ? These reasons are as conclusive as they are evident.

Besides the right of conquest, and over and above the Kingdoms and lands which are well known to be in our possession, the King of Portugal is, by treaty, Lord of the Kingdom of Tigris in Upper Ethiopia or Abagia ; by inheritance he is King of the Islands of Mamâle, and by the same title, of the Island of Ceylon ; by donation *inter vivos* [he is King] of the Kingdom of Pegu, and by last will and inheritance, of the islands of the Maldivas and of the Kingdom of Maluco, over and above the other titles and rights above mentioned ; and he has the right which every Christian Prince has, unless there is a pact to the contrary, to make war on Mahometans, [who] by their sect and according to the writings of the Alcoran are enemies of the human race, since they cannot claim the right to preach the true law and Faith ; and to [make war] on Idolaters who blaspheme the name of the true God and oppose the preaching of the Gospel, as is proved from Holy Scripture, and as Father Tirino points out in his Commentaries on Scripture.

Nor is there less certainty about his title touching commerce which requires two contracting parties, an act which presupposes peace, friendship, or obedience, as is testified by every ship that came to Portugal laden with all the articles that are made or produced therein. However, to speak especially of this commerce, we have the use of it in three ways. | The first is, when [such things] are produced in the *P 852.* lands and Lordships we held or hold by conquest, among lieges of the same King, though the dues on imports and exports belong to the Crown of Portugal. The second way is, by

permanent contracts with the Kings and Lords of the land, to give us merchandise at a certain price or to receive ours, as has been settled with many of these Lords. Which the King wanted to restrict to spices, leaving other contracts free to the Portuguese without a tax calculated on true value. The third is, that we navigated all those parts, and accommodating ourselves to the usages of the country we contracted with the natives thereof by exchange | of one thing for another, according to their price and ours. And though these three titles of Conquest, Navigation and Commerce are indeterminate acts, as regards time, yet as regards place, they are so extensive that they comprise all that which lies from Cape Bojador to the end of the earth and the Oriental islands, in terms of the demarcation of Alexander VI. between the Crowns of Portugal and Castille ; and King Manoel could not take other titles more conformable with justice, and the actual hold he had over this Oriental property. But this is not the reason why we do not approve the many unnecessary wars which we carried on in India, and which were in great part the cause of the ruin of the State, because if we had been content with resisting the unjust aggressors, and had not sought to keep the whole Orient under foot, we would have justified our cause in the eyes even of the Native Princes and we would not have given them a reason to justify resorting to foreign arms for their defence. And hostilities and offensive wars being at an end, we should have been able, in a short time, to keep a united force and to multiply in such manner as to dispense with reinforcements from Portugal, as we should then have had enough forces not only to withstand any Oriental or European invasion, but even to remove from them any hope of getting any advantage therefrom.

---

## CHAPTER 20.

### THAT IN THE FIRST PLACE THE ISLAND OF CEYLON SHOULD HAVE BEEN CHOSEN FOR THE CAPITAL OF THE STATE

---

If anything could weaken this statement it can only be the inconvenience of the climate, the [difficulty] of navigation or provisioning or of conquest. But it has already been seen that there is no better climate anywhere in India, nor greater conveniences for the health and increase of the Portuguese

nation in whom there is seen this great difference from the Northern races whose propagation fails, or if there is a child, he does not reach or does not pass | the 25th year, a disillusion *F 593* which God gave them [to show] that this conquest was not for them ; and the promise which God made to King D. Afonso Henriques is confirmed by experience, for it is evident that the very term of Empire among strange nations cannot mean merely the narrow limits of Portugal, without including the spread of the Faith, and [the increase] of Native vassals and even of the nation itself.

For navigation there is no place in these seas better suited than Ceylon ; because at the extremity of that Island are divided the two monsoons which blow in these seas, and ships can come there or go out with the right monsoon, either to the North or to the West, or to the South or to the East, a peculiarity *P 588* which is not found in any other land. About the capacity of the ports, we have already said enough, because there are at least two at the top of the Island, deep enough for the largest ships, and four in the opposite coast, while that of Triquimalale is such that it is doubtful whether there is any other like it in the known world. Nor was it an unhealthy land, provided it is cultivated and peopled. There is timber in abundance in Ceylon, and if it is cut in due season, there will not be the inconvenience of its not being durable. But it is a notable fact that no care is taken in India to fell seasoned trees and when the moon is favourable, to which many people attribute [the fact] that the King's ships last so short a time in Portugal, because they are built of green wood, and they say that it was again experienced in the fantastic Galleon ' Padre Eterno '.

As for what concerns provisioning, that Island, if cultivated, is most fertile, as has been said, and though at present it lacks wheat, it does not seem possible that it would fail to produce it in all the cool lands, and D. Antonio Mascarenhas grew it as an experiment in the lowlands. Meanwhile, just as we bring it to Goa from abroad and send it to the other prças without minding this inconvenience, it will not be a novelty in Ceylon.

The whole difficulty is in its conquest. All those who were versed in it were persuaded that it could have been easily achieved, if as soon as that Island was discovered and the Rumes defeated by D. Francisco de Almeyda (a war which we provoked by the manner in which we acted) and before we

engaged ourselves in other wars, we had placed all our forces in Ceylon. Thither the Viceroy D. Afonso de Noronha took 4000 Portuguese, and he could have had the King of Cota and all his force on his side, if he had not robbed him, and as the island was divided among four chief potentates, he could easily have subdued the three of Sneytavaca, Candea, and Jafanapataõ. For in those times those people had no practice in firearms; ¶ 503. they fought unprotected as they always did, and the Portuguese used them [firearms], besides defensive armour which they then used but gave up afterwards, because on the sea they could not easily manage with them, and both on sea and land they were scorched by the violence of the heat of those climates. But it was the case rather with arms of steel than with those of leather and Coats of mail, which should have been retained for attacks on sea and investments on land, if the poverty of the Royal treasury and of the soldiers had not been such as may be seen from this History, because if the Mogul troops and other Asiatic Cavalry make use of them in those same climates, no sufficient reason can be found for showing less concern for life than for some trouble which they may cause, thus making victories easy to the enemy and even despising any preparation for them. And though in ancient warfare in which they vied with each other at close quarters, sword to sword, and spear to spear, the number of the dead was greater ¶ 504. than in battles of these modern centuries, yet experience has shown, that fire is more effective, for we see among Europeans that everything is reduced to that method of warfare; and much more then does it appear necessary for defence.

The same could have been done by the Viceroy, D. Constantino de Bragança, who had taken 5000 men for the conquest of Damaõ. His intention was to chastise and vanquish the King of Jafanapataõ, as he had been ordered from Portugal, and to continue the conquest of Ceylon, had the whole affair not been frustrated by envy, as we said in its place. And after we inherited the right to that Island, and when the war would have been all to our profit, no zealous person or man of good sense can realize why it was that no greater heed was paid to so opulent a Kingdom, in which were found together all the good dispositions that were wanting in India, because in those days there was no pressing war in other parts, and no more important one than this presented itself. Experienced men were the more confirmed in this [opinion], when they saw us take the field against the rich and mighty King of Cambaya, because we did not refuse, but rather provoked a war of such consequence; and what reason can be given for not undertaking one of lesser difficulty and of greater importance, seeing

that after so much expense and so many deaths, we only obtained the island of Dio, [which was] so unhealthy, and some lands of the North, without any protection or means of defending them against the King of Dekan, the neighbouring Kinglets and finally the Mogul, [which was] the reason for their being constantly invaded, each time with loss of population, over and above the fact that the conveniences of Ceylon are not found therein, and that the increase in the race was so small that in Dio and Chaul we have to-day | little more than the ~~xx~~ walls.

And to effect the conquest of Ceylon, two methods were constantly put forward. The first, to conquer the lowlands of those four provinces, Maturā, Sofragāō, the Four and Seven Corlas, which was never so difficult as not to be achieved by 700 men or less, and the more easily, when the Natives helped us. This done, they proposed a larger force for the garrison of Balanē and for the incursions into Candea, with the object of remaining and fortifying [ourselves] therein, and after fortifying ourselves in a suitable place and after inviting the Natives peacefully, by making known to them the right to the conquest and the laws that will be inviolably observed in their regard, to open up military roads to the chief sea ports, as the Romans did, obliging the Natives under grave penalties to preserve them in that state, and keeping always the same effective arrayal in the four Provinces, and the one of Candea continuing regularly to subdue the highlands, in such manner that they would lose hope of the war ceasing, so long as the revolt lasted, without risking ourselves in narrow passes, but carrying on the undertaking with all prudence and caution.

~~P 860~~ For experienced men were persuaded | that neither the King nor his lieges would be able to hold out and withstand war for a long time, if once they understood that the Portuguese would not desist therefrom, because it would not be possible for them to live on the top of the Mountains nor to sustain themselves on the unproductive hills if we were Lords of the whole plain from which they draw their supplies, because however much they exaggerate it, neither in the woods nor on the heights can such a crowd of men find what is necessary and requisite for human life, as will be better seen from the following consideration.

For this incursion into Candea some people were content with a 1000 Portuguese which, it is certain, can be enlisted in India many times over. What I am sure is, that the greater the number, the more assuredly and briefly will the result be achieved, by men already accustomed to such warfare and to

the conquest of the lowlands. And if we should not be able to enter Candea with a goodly number of Natives, it would always be dangerous to deal with such a large number of enemies. But it is on account of this that they made this division of two arrayals, because they understood that so long as the lowlands were secure, those who accompanied us would never rise against us in the highlands, and on this they founded their greatest hopes of achieving the total subjection of the Island, because once the Crown of the Mountains is subdued, there will be no difficulty, nor did we ever find difficulty in subjecting the lowlands of the opposite coast, and the Kingdom of Jafana. *P 501* pataō was often vanquished and finally held by us.

Such was the common opinion of military men; and to accomplish this was the desire particularly of two Generals, D. Jeronimo de Azevedo and Constantino de Sá de Noronha; but they never had a sufficient force of Portuguese men-at-arms to form two camps and to secure permanently the one and the other lands. And though to one who has not fought in Ceylon and has no knowledge of the determination and constancy of the Natives in defending their independence, this division might not seem a sufficient security, as there will be Chingala soldiery in both camps, and though it will not seem possible to him that ingress and egress into those inaccessible mountains will be facilitated thereby, [yet] so strong is the argument of experience that I think it a safe thing to submit to what is approved by men well versed in that conquest. And all those fears will be dispelled the easier by a larger number of Portuguese troops than D. Afonso de Noronha actually led and D. Constantino de Bragança thought he had brought, and Andre Furtado de Mendonça could have hoped that they would not fail to give him, after he had conquered Jafanapataō, for nobody doubted but that if he had such a force and captains experienced in that warfare, he would be able, on those and other occasions, to vanquish any opposition of the Natives, even in the time of Raju with whom D. Constantino had to contend.

*P 551* Others recommended another method as less risky and more assured. For they believed that if the Candiots were cut off from salt, opium, and cloth for five years, they would either die or submit. Because when they have no salt, they swell and die, and one who is accustomed to opium will soon faint and lose all dexterity when deprived of it. And though they wrought some coarse cloth, it was done in such small quantities that it was not enough to cover themselves with, in those cold lands or to put on any other garb save that of the inhabitants

of Brazil or of the Interior of Cafraria. And if this were carried out, they would be obliged to come to obedience, for all these three articles come from abroad, except for a part of the Salt, for what is manufactured in Valavé in the lands of Chilaô and Putulaô and in the openings of D. Constantino and that of Comoripiti, was all in our hands, and what came from abroad, especially from the Coast of the Fishery, can all be prevented, both because those Christians were lieges of the State and because it was not difficult to hold all ports and entrances. From Valavé comes the greater part of the Salt of Candea and the lands of Batecalou, and if the ring of sand | P 603 is cut open at the time the salt begins to form, filling the salt pans with more water, the quantity will be much greater than at present, without any labour. So long as no praças were erected in those regions, when there was war only with the Chinga à, it was found enough to keep there some *manchus*, Dhoneys, or foists, to prevent anything being taken without falling into our hands. But for greater security they desire that some new praças be erected, in which all the Salt could be collected, and that all those who are obedient should every three months go according to the division of Corlas to take the share that will be found conveniently necessary for each person, or family, and all should be enrolled in the factory of the nearest praça, making a rough estimate for once, reckoning one measure enough for a person for a month, at least if incorporated in one family, and keeping strict watch over all entrances and noting down what is taken. And for every measure of Salt that shall be found in excess, they shall pay a larin, and our officials double, to any person who shall denounce them for letting pass anything extra. The same punishment shall be given to those who give salt from one village to another, though in the same [village] one may help another; and this will be the principal means for putting a bridle on revolts and for subjecting the whole Island. Every one admitted this, but it was never carried into effect because of the selfishness of individuals. But if the King should forbid it as treason and chastise it as such, in the case of any person, of whatever quality he be, everything will be carried out. For this must be carried out with the same rigour in Jafanapataô and Manar, and also as regards other substances like opium and cloth, without distributing more than is necessary, and only to the lands which are obedient to the Portuguese dominion.

With the revenue of these three substances they could go on erecting fortalices and maintain their Garrisons, which will P 603 not only serve for the possession of the obedient lands in

peace, but for the relief of the praca of Triquilmalē and Batecalou, either by land or sea, without the arrayals having to cross the lands of Candea. The experiment must be made whether it is possible to keep the great river of Jafanapataō always open, by cutting once for all the ring of sand, since on the opposite coast there are many lagoons and rivers that are opened by the force of the tide, because if this is achieved, the Kingdom will be a perfect Island. For the same reason they thought it convenient to deepen the more shallow passes of this river, in such a manner as to make it always navigable, to dispense with the dhoneyas that come from Batecalou, since it was seen that the openings of D. Constantino were never closed. This will not only serve to make service more easy, but will also make the defence of the Kingdom better, for the ~~F 555.~~ river is very broad, and if this had been done, it would not have been so easy to the Hollander to ford it. It should be forbidden under grave penalties to divert the labouring people from Jafanapataō who pay poll tax, nor to let them be taken outside or sold, on the pretence that some of them are slaves of the King, for even if it were so, it belongs to the ministers of the King to make use of them, and there can be no greater outrage, not to call it by any other name, than to sell them out of the Kingdom, leaving it depopulated, when there were so many lands in Ceylon which ought to be repopulated. And the King can well be undeceived, that in so remote a state there will be any remedy to such excesses, unless they are given the punishment due to them. The celebrated Captain Philipe de Oliveyra acted so differently that he never took a fine, because they were so poor, and punished them in another way to keep them obedient. They found that for the good Government of that Kingdom it was necessary that the captains should not be appointed for three years, as has now been introduced, as it was a post to serve in and merit, and not one to be given as reward, and that it should be given only to one who has served well in the Island, and were one not satisfactory, he should be removed at once, he being always, like the Captain of Manar, under the orders of the General, as was first done, under penalty of intolerable disorders resulting from the separation.

They also found great disadvantages in the place and position of the fortalices of Batecalou and Triquilemala, with regard to the purposes for which they were ordered to be built with such instance, danger and cost, contrary to the peace settled and sworn with the Candiot, which came to be the final ruin of Ceylon; especially Batecalou, because it was too far out of the way, and could not be reinforced by land except

through the lands of Candea, nor by sea except at [the time of] the monsoon, [when] the bar might happen to be blocked, as happened in some years, or obstructed by stockades and fire-arms, as it sometimes happened, because the fortalice lies on the side within the Anchorage of the ships, as it were, in the Interior, on an islet, which has a passage in which the water, for a great part of the year, comes up to the knee, and at the other, to the waist, through which 3000 men can pass together, and on the opposite side where artillery fire could not reach. It has but a small view of the sea, and nothing at all of the bar, unless they keep watch there. It lies too near the Salt water and broad river to command it so well as to let no hostile vessels pass, and therefore it has no good water within it for some months in the year, nor is there a place outside the praça, wherein the casados and other people of the wings (azas) or inner stockades can live, though no one is safe out of them. And as there must be room for the play of the artillery, it had need of better walls and bastions, which might cost three times as much as the praça; and it would cost less to build a new one, than to build what is necessary in this, and this praça | can be shifted to the sea-shore, where it can receive reinforcements by sea and land with greater ease, by opening a good canal from the lagoon to the sea, between the rocks and the tank of the maynatos (washermen), because as it is full of sand, when the bar is blocked, it opens here with greater depth, seeing it has no water from the mountains but only from the ordinary tides. Thereby it can become an island or at least a peninsula, with a large field for palmgroves and shelter. And if the force is together and near the bar, it can be easily defended by vessels and trenches, whether opened or blocked by the Cachaõ or South wind.

We do not know whether the Hollander has shifted it. It may be that he has done so, to make sure of being reinforced by sea at any time and because it has only a garrison without a town of Hollander casados. Which was more convenient in our time, so long as the Portuguese did not multiply to such an extent as to need a division, keeping there a good garrison of 150 Portuguese and 100 lascarins, either from the other side of the Island or from the ports of Maturé and Belitôta who trade there, giving them lands to cultivate and two larin a month, and the Belâlas who serve the Vaneå will soon betake themselves to the place in which they see greater security. Instead of having to wait for pay from Columbo, which failed them for a long time, there should be set apart for it 200 bares of cinnamon to be sold in Musulapataõ or Bengâla, and exchanged for munitions and other things necessary, as they

had been set apart already to be sold in Sinde. This [cinnamon] should be made on the side of Gâle, and should be entrusted to the factor of that praça, with order to sell it along with some elephants that shall be taken in those lands, keeping that praça immediately subject to be Government of Jafanapataô, whence it can be better provided than from Columbo. It is also convenient to add to it the lands of the greater Paneva, and others along the sea-shore to the north, which do not belong to Cutiar. And because there is cinnamon on that side also, it can be had there. And they did not judge it convenient that this praça should be given as a reward by despatch, but as [a post] to serve in, so long as matters were not altogether well disposed and ordered, because those people are more valiant, bold and treacherous, than those of Jafanapataô, and they have defeated two of our fleets by treachery.

P 554 | But as they understood that it would be difficult to undo what had been already done, they said that since from the bar of that lagoon to Calarma there was a length of three leagues, with many palm groves and *nele* lands, and the whole was sometimes reduced to an island, because another bar opened there, and there was another small island on which the fortalice should be situated, if that bar had been always open, as the natives desire, at least a small stronghold should be erected there, with heavy artillery below and smaller [artillery] above, with lodgings for 15 persons, | which would suffice for the *reser.* defence of the pass against the Chingalâ, and it should be erected on a sandbank which lies to the east, so that by means of a barricade and some black troops it can prevent [the formation of] the ring of sand, whereby the bar is blocked, and defend the passage to the small island on the west side. By this means they can withdraw into those three leagues [of country] from the island to the principal bar, and be secure against all the might of Candea. Some dhoneyes in the river at the suspicious passes will be quite enough, because the inhabitants of those regions will never be secure by any other means, and they will never lose hope of being secure, nor will they take a contrary resolution, when they are between two strong places and surrounded by a strait and vessels of war. On the contrary we shall be able to assault them more easily by land and by the strait and the lands of Chapanture which are the most important.

As this arrangement was [meant] only against the Chingalâ, and on the other hand all prâças of little strength were a drawback to the State, I neither approve or disapprove these suggestions, but I only record what was most spoken about and was considered to be the best.

## CHAPTER 21.

## THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED

Triquilemale on the contrary, has all the advantages, in that those of Candea cannot lay siege to it without the provinces near Columbo coming to know of it and falling upon their rear, because there are no mountains nor rivers but level lands of low jungle, and it is the same for reinforcements from Jafanapataō by land. Nor can entrance to its two large bays with their long view towards the sea coast be obstructed by sea. There was, moreover, ample accommodation within the stockades for all sorts of troops, and water and tanks inside. And if Batecalou had much paddy (*nele*), it was because there were people to cultivate it, and not because it had more or better lands than Triquilemale, at least if they repair a large dam which would cost only 200 pardaos, and [which] was allowed to go to ruin through misgovernment, though some natives offered to maintain it. And when there is water in the tank, *Pass* then other lands will be abandoned by people in order to go there. Which is not the case in Batecalou, where the Vaneas always diverted the people from submission to us, so that they might remain Lords of the lands, paying only some tribute, as they always did. The result which the ministers of the King obtained thereby was, that these lands were lost along with their great profits, and the lands afterwards became unhealthy on account of the swamps and the water stagnating in those extensive plains. And for want of a garrison and ships of war, the praca became a cage, looking on at what entered or left for the profit of the Candiot without being able to do him any *Pass* injury or to prevent him from doing any.

It would have been [quite] otherwise, if there had been there a Captain of valour and energy, with 100 white men and some barks manned by lascarins, and if some of the dams had been repaired, and they had been supplied with necessaries by Jafanapataō and Manār, since this praca served to protect them. To which all the lands of Cutiar should be subject as they were of old, without allowing any salt to be distributed at Ilambiture, but obliging all to come to the fortalice for it, according to the manner described above. Nor should vessels go to Cutiar for provisions, but instead they should go to this praca, selling and bartering their merchandise for necessaries, and the opposite should be allowed [only] in exchange for 100 candis of rice which can be brought from

there. If there were in the praça a captain or inhabitants of means, there would be no lack of provisions from the mainland, and if the lands were again peopled, there would be no need of anything from outside. The lands of Urlas should be under his jurisdiction for the good government of the Kingdom of Jafanapataō and Columbo, and also the lands of Gantale, where, after repairing the dams, there will be rice in abundance for that praça and for the whole of Jafanapataō, and meanwhile Batecalou can help, if the necessary disposition be not lacking. They also wished that there should be vessels which could put out to sea, with pioneers not only to cut the sand bar of the natural salt pits of Valavē, but also to do the same to other distant ones.

It is convenient to build a fortalice on the river of Valavē, one of the four principal [rivers] of the island, which has on its banks such fertile and extensive lands as those of Batecalou, [which] at the time were almost wholly abandoned; and the site of the praça should be at the mouth of the river on the Western side, and it should be of such a form that the town, between the river and the sea, might be protected by artillery, since it is more exposed to attack on the land side, and that the people and the garrison might take refuge therein in case of danger, as it is easier to go to the praça along the shore. At the beginning it is convenient that there should be there two or three foists and some dhoneyes and the arrayal of Maturē and Sofragaō, and the praça should be built of wood, an easy thing in Ceylon, [in such sort] that artillery can be mounted on it, till a better one is erected. And if there is anyone who is willing to do this at his own cost, it might be given to him for some lives, so as not to burden those lands and because there is lack of service men, giving him 2,000 pardaos to buy slaves and for other expenses with the lands of Valavē for five years, and when these are over, he should have a fourth part, another [fourth] part [going] for rice for the fortalice, and two [fourth parts] to the Portuguese casados, who might go to dwell there, and who should be given 50 pardaos each, even if they have other portions elsewhere, and to the Topaz Casados up to 30 [pardaos]; and they should all be given lands for palm groves and ground for houses; and as all this will be in our lands, when there is need to punish, it can be easily done, and the arrayals will warm to the work and the greater part of the expenses will come from the lands and from salt. When that is over, the Dissāvas of Maturē and Sofragaō must come [and settle] nearer to this coast, in a place suitable for defence and for union in case of need. The jurisdiction of Valavē should be the nearest Corla and the salt pans of lesser Paneva.

They likewise desired that fortifications should be erected at the two openings of the estuary, which separates the island of Calapiti, which has a breadth of two leagues and a length of ten, both for the sake of securing the arrayal of the Seven Corlas from the obstruction of rivers, and also in order to form by means of the praça of Putalaõ on the North a new Dissâva for the King, out of the lands of the two Dissâvas which in those times were abandoned and so remote from the post of the Seven Corlas, that they could not be governed therefrom. It is from there, they say, that Ceylon began to be peopled, of which there are many ancient ruins, as we already mentioned, and four tanks, and some of them ten and twelve leagues in circumference, irrigate from 15 to 20 leagues of land. These were destroyed and the land became a jungle; and besides these, in Mangula Corla alone there are 366 ordinary [tanks] though many of them were then without dams because of the little zeal of the Royal ministers. The new Dissava should pay heed to this and prevent the pilgrimages to Anu-Raja-Purê, whither Pagans and Christians resort on the pretence of visiting those antiquities, and under such a plea a Rebellion was plotted there. And though the praça might seem to be more secure within the island on one of its bars, yet as it will then have to be built more for the sake of the land than of the sea, for the commerce and security of the arrayal, they thought that a site should be chosen near the river Pomparati, in the manner described [in the case] of Valavê, because under its protection there will be many and extensive paddy lands, all abandoned, which can be distributed to Portuguese and Chingalâ inhabitants and to those who wish to come from outside, without any duty for 20 years or less; and there will be no lack of people who would wish to go there because of the fertility of the lands and the trade of the Interior.

In the corresponding port of Chilaõ they would like to have another fortalice, because the Chingalâ [King] had his eyes on it, and carried on trade therefrom with those of the opposite coast of the continent, during the previous rising against Constantino de Sâ. The arrayal and the Vicars of the Christianities can retire to it in case of danger, without the trouble of having to cross rivers, and some Portuguese *foreyros*  
*posse* can live there, and there is no need | to have a large number of soldiers. And indeed this part had a Captain with a salary, though there was no praça and he did not live there. It might be given for lives to one who is willing to build one at his own cost together with the lands it formerly had, and the salt which can | be collected at Anabulundâna and Maripo, as these places *posse* are near and Putalaõ is far. It can have under its jurisdiction

the whole of Jaticapato of Diuemedi, with the lands of Moniceraō from the river inwards, and all the *adultū* (*arutas*) villages of Manigaō with the whole of Madampē.

To Nigumbo, they said, should belong the jurisdiction of the lands from Salpe right up to Galalūa, excluding the latter, however, but including what lies from river to river; and that the Captain of Columbo should not have jurisdiction over [these] lands, because he generally came from outside and did not know the customs of the island, and because his salary, gains and perquisites, were quite different from those other Captains, and it was enough for him to have a good village. That it behoved to change the quarters of the Captain-General from Malvāna to the Great Stockade, which was the foremost stronghold that Rajū had against us, where there was a half-built fortalice recently renewed by the Candiot. And there vessels can come at any time, while the post of Maluāna was out of the way, because of a large hill on account of which in the last rising it was ordered to be given up, and as it is only a little more than half a league distant, what is done from Malvāna can be done from the Stockade. That the Captain-Major of the arrayal should retain the jurisdiction of Beligal Corle, along with the villages of the Captains who were with him, and that all the rest of the Four-Corlas should go to their Dissāva as formerly; and from the [Dissāva] of the Seven Corlas nothing else should be withdrawn save the new Dissāva of Mingula-Corla and Nigumbo. To Calaturē they gave the jurisdiction of the neighbouring Corla, together with all that lies between its river to that of Paniturē, all the rest going to Sofragaō as formerly. As the Dissāva of the Four Corlas had no fortalice from which to derive any profits save Columbo, whither the merchandise of Candea did not go, because there were other places more convenient principally Ruanēla (they gave him a moiety of the merchandise that came thereto, and of that which came to others they gave to the Captain-General, leaving the administration to Ruanēla), and Bulategāma to the Vidāna who is there instead of the Dissāva, and that those whom the General and Dissāva shall place there should be visited by spies, so that they might be punished, when they deserve it.

That those of Candea would not object to the prices fixed for the merchandise they order to be sent to our ports, since before the last rout, they used to ask almost the same terms, and these articles were sold at the same price in Triquilemalē, Jafanapataō and Manār. And those things which they take from our ports, save the excepted ones, shall be at the prices current therein, and as much as they please. And though the

number of people who are there, cannot be known for certain, at least when peace shall be secured, it will be possible to determine how many cands of salt will be required for each ~~Port~~<sup>Pass</sup>, because even if they take something more, it will never be more than will be consumed in a short time, and ~~for~~<sup>the</sup> the very thought that they and their lieges can run short of it, is enough to make them circumspect in their rebellions.

As the ports were forbidden to have lands subject to them and as Alicaõ and Beligaõ had many villages, it is, they said, not convenient to have fortalices in those ports. It is necessary to annul the grants given by despatches, and if the people thus deprived happen to be [people] of the Island, they must be given in compensation some increase of their portions, but if they be people from outside, let them be compensated by an equivalent village, and let the jurisdiction of Beligaõ, as well as its corla, belong to Gâle, with a village of 200 xerafins in compensation for the loss in areca that is thus withdrawn. In conclusion, they say, that it is convenient to have some vessels in all the prações, so that they may relieve each other and defend the sea and rivers through which the provisions come to them from the mainland, all joining together for enterprises of greater [moment]. And just as it is not enough for us to have the city of Columbo without an arrayal in the field in order to become masters of the Island, in the same way it is not enough [to have] other prações without vessels always at hand to make up for the lack of arrayals. And in order not to depend on Goa for everything, if each village gives a mature jak tree, sawn into planks, they can build as many vessels as they like, keeping them drawn up on land with headmen (mocodães)<sup>1</sup> paid to lookafter them, as the rest of the crew can be had for pay at any time in the ports. They wanted two *besteyros* in Valavé, one in Gâle with a *Sanguicel*, in Calature one or two *manchus*, in Columbo two foists with three *manchus*, in Nigumbo, Chilao and Putalaõ a *manchua* each, in Manâr two *besteyros*, in Triquilemalé two *besteyros*, in Batocalou four.

But I do not make out the reason that moved them to hem the ports of lesser importance on the side of the Gulf with prações, leaving the most important ones in the extremity of the Island unprotected, because it was ever necessary to have strong ones, especially after the European nations began to cruise in these seas ; and they could only say that those ports of the Gulf, as well as of the bay, were better adapted for the

trade of the Chingalā. But as they are so many, it does not seem possible, nor did they think it so, to fortify them all with substantial praças. And as they could not all be defended in this way, it was possible with lesser cost and greater fleet to hinder the Candiot from any sort of commerce by erecting stockades instead of praças, till the revenues of the Island permit greater expenses. Because if they promise themselves the submission of that Kingdom in five years, and place the security of the other lands in the distribution of salt, what is the use of dividing the forces | so much before we are able by ~~P 500~~

~~P 500~~ means of reinforcements or by natural increase | to build and garrison so many praças ? Wherefore, I conclude, that the whole mistake was, that in those early times we did not surround the island with a good fleet, either to pursue this method of warfare, which they think the most secure, in case they had no hopes of reducing it, or of pacifying for good the people of those Mountain ranges ; or along with the other things which we first proposed. But if it is certain that the Hollanders have already fortified all those ports, all their fears will cease, when once Ceylon is recovered.

And because this uneasiness confirmed by experience ever prayed on some conquistadores of Ceylon, even after all these precautions, and even on the supposition that the King of Candea would be obedient, they warn us all to lay aside the illusion that we should be able to possess those lands in peace for any length of time, if they are governed according to our way, since Rajū himself could not do it by his method, though he had set up some stockades in the Interior and had cut them off from arms and salt, because with arrows made of the areca tree they captured one, and with the arms they found there they went on taking others, and when he appeared on the scene, he died of poison or of grief, as we said already. For the causes whereby we fomented their pertinacity, are not less than those given by the people of Seytavaca, and the resentment that seized them, when someone urinated into the mouth of a cooly for taking a measure of salt to his house, a matter which they took so ill that besides calling upon God for justice, they made up their mind to avenge it. And if for so long a time we were unable to secure what we had conquered outside the hills, it would be wiser to let them govern them in such a way as to derive good rents, and to make the following terms :

That neither the King of Candea nor his successors shall claim any right to the lowlands, but only to those within the hills, as of old, for he is called King of Candea, wherefore he had nothing either in the lesser or in the great Paneva.

That he shall possess nothing in Bate-calou, Tambacarave, Ilamduhari and in Cutiar, as they ever were under the dominion of Triquilemalé, as he acknowledged, when he became master of them, by sending *pingas* and acknowledgments every month.

That he shall have no right over the tanks, and the lands of Urla and Caludeva, as far as our lands of Mangula-Corla, nor in the lands of Anu-Rajá-puré.

That he shall be friend of [our] friends and enemy of [our] enemies, and will never admit any European nation into Ceylon, nor give them entrance into that Island, nor have any agreement or pact with them, either for trade or for any kind of hostility that they may intend against us.

That he shall liberate all the Portuguese or people of the country that might be in Candea, | whether they be taken in *P 550.* war or had fled thither, whether slaves or freemen.

*P 560* | That he shall deliver all pieces of iron or bronze ordnance of whatever kind they be, which he has within his lands or secretly in ours.

That for the first time he shall give 100 muskets on supports, and a 1000 standard firelocks, and in the following years 20 muskets on supports and 50 firelocks, as he has there many of ours, much iron and many workmen; that he shall give every year 6 tuskers, and four *aleas*, out of the many he has there.

That he shall not send any elephant or *alea* out of the island, nor any vessels with merchandise on his account, nor receive from outside anything whatsoever or materials of war.

That he will send all the areca of his territories, pepper, sapan, wax, ivory, *calâlas*, and all other merchandise into our ports which are nearest to him, selling the areca at 7 larins an *amunam*, the pepper at 5 measures a larin, the sapan at 12 larins a bar, the wax at 6 larins a maund (maō), fine *calâlc* at one and a half larins, if coarse at one larin, delivering these articles on account of the King of Portugal to his ministers, a quarter of the profit going to the Dissâvas, another to the Captains of the prâcas, another for their erection, and the last for their casados. And any other person that buys them will lose his money, and the share of the Dissâva in Bate-calou shall go to the sea Captain, who may be there, and of what goes to the lands of Manâr this portion shall be divided between the Captain and the chief of those people. The share of the Dissâva of Triquilemalé shall go the Dicksâva of Jafanapataō. Of what goes to the new fortalice at the openings of D. Constantino, the captain shall have two shares, and the two others shall go for its erection.

That in time of peace the merchandise which is not exempt shall be taken to Candea, but neither in peace nor in war shall any one be allowed to go up to Candea from our lands in search of any article of trade, without permission in writing from our General, and the watchmen or neighbouring villages who shall let them pass, shall be severely chastised, because of the inconvenience that can arise therefrom, and in order that so many people, freemen or slaves, may not flee thither ; and whoever arrests a slave in the frontier villages shall receive a third of his value, and a Freeman shall pay a third part of the fine as if he were a slave. All the frontier villages shall, whenever it is proved that any such person has passed, pay the same penalty to the owner of the slaves, and to the accuser, in case of freemen.

---

## CHAPTER 22.

P 561

### CONCLUDING PROPOSALS AND THEIR CRITICISM

F 510

And because the merchandise of Candea ruined our lands, enriching those of Candea, as our people ceased to cultivate them and occupied themselves in this business, notwithstanding the decrees of excommunication passed against it, and as the Generals and Dissavas allowed them to violate the peace, going so far as to seize and kill people in our lands by means of Vagueaz because of this interest, besides other inconveniences, they said, that this trade should by no means be allowed on our side.

That there should be no hostages, because unless it were one of the Princes they would be of no use ; and if they give [a Prince], not only would the expenses be greater, but he would be of little avail, since the others could make believe that he is dead, and it could be the occasion of some fresh treason plotted with our people ; and this would also be a reason for them not to ask hostages from us, [and we might tell] them that we hope to have a lasting peace without hostages. And if they press for hostages from us, they should be [given] only on condition that a Prince should come [to us], and that the King with the greater persons of the Kingdom would become Christians admitting Fathers and Churches, and not as formerly, when, though there was a Church and a Parish priest, they did not let any Christian go into it, though there were nearly 2,000 of them, including fugitives and merchants. And it seemed certain that they would neither give a Prince nor become Christians except in a case of special Divine inspiration.

Such was also the reply given to the inquiries which His Majesty ordered to be made in that Island, about which the Bishop, D. Frey Sebastiao de S. Pedro, collected information, without any other result save a fresh provision about cinnamon and another about Moors, which was rather a scandal to them than a profit to us, as nearly all of them remained in the Island, though not one of those who did not show himself faithful to us in the last rout should have been pardoned, nor the others allowed to remain in our lands or to trade in our ports, under pain of becoming slaves and of forfeiture of property to him who accused them. And those who remain as being faithful, should not dwell in the interior nor serve as *Canacapules* of the factories. And those who come from outside, as merchants or sailors, should be immediately entered in a list, to know how many they are, and the time when they came; and if they remain beyond 6 months, they should incur the penalty aforementioned.

The King also asked : What they considered the best means for keeping the people secure and content without being tyrannized, and what number of lascarins would be necessary, F 610v which questions have been answered in the preceding discourse. And as for having more Dissávas, whatever name they please to give them, it was necessary that they should have the requisite power and authority. And if there be one in every Corla, as those of the frontier and furthermost Corlas desired, they will never be I 610s secure with so small a number of lascarins. Wherefore it is better to let this office be what it was before, except for the changes above mentioned.

The King inquired further : What was the reason why the conquest was so long delayed and who was most guilty in the matter ? The answer was that the cause was a long standing one and involved many who were dead, some who erred through lack of experience, others through misgovernment, which could not be remedied now except in the manner aforementioned, and that their successors would be more guilty, if they paid little heed to these observations, because the greater part of them had been approved by experience and by common sense, and must be examined and approved by the King and his ministers, who would never be blameless, before God and before the world, if they acted out of consideration [of persons], since it concerned a Kingdom of great profit in which there was a large Christianity and greater conversions were expected. Such were the proposals of persons, zealous for that conquest and for the rights which the King had in that island, before the Europeans went to India and even afterwards, before the Hollanders set foot in Ceylon.

But I do not know what star [it was that makes] the policy of India, however independent it pretended to be, always favour the pensioners and not the military, as at the beginning when we entered it, thereby draining the Royal treasury in order to feed those who are not bound in duty to defend it. It is a practice altogether contrary to the order of the Hollanders. In Holland they are engaged for such a pay, and for so many years of service, a moiety of which they receive in Holland. Once they set foot in India, all their clothing and expenses are at the price of the factory, which is high in everything; and when they come to close accounts, either very little remains to them, or they are again involved in debt. At the time when their service is coming to an end, they send them betimes to some remote praga, or employ them in some lengthy enterprise, and if they allege that they are free from engagement, they make the passage to Europe difficult, or satisfy them by giving them some military post, if they are worthy of it, resorting to all kinds of subterfuges to keep them at work, often without letting them set foot on land, and though the treatment they give them is mean and the food and drink limited and unclean, the certainty that these things will never be lacking and the rigour of military discipline joined to the Lutheran and Calvinistic perfidy, which is the origin of the hatred they bear towards Catholics, are the reasons why the greater part of them do not desert to us, whose decent and honourable treatment they acknowledge, though they object to the lowness and uncertainty of the pay. And so far P 411 they do not concern themselves about increasing the race, for only some of the officers have wives, and they know from experience that they are unprolific, as we have already pointed out. The result is, that with them everything is reduced to a question of profit to the Company by pillage, trade, or war, and there is no question of benefiting the pensioners, because this must not be tried, till peace has been assured by means of arms.

P 412 | Another fatal thing was that we disposed the condition of our pragas as if there were no danger from the natives, nor anything to fear from Europeans, even after they began to invade us, or as if they were unable to attempt the conquest of Ceylon, after they had twice besieged Mogambique, conquered the Malucas, invaded Macao, after a slow siege of 40 years, and after awaiting a good opportunity, they had ended by getting the whole of Maláca, as they afterwards did with all the rest as far as Cananor. All this was not enough to make us perfect the fortifications of Ceylon, and keep such garrisons and provisions as would enable us to resist, as it behoved, any foreign power.

And if they thought that to close the ports to the Chingalaz and even to cut them off from salt, was so efficacious a means as to subdue them in 5 years, would not ships of war be more efficacious and less expensive to bring them to that subjection? And it would not have been impossible for them, at the time this was discussed, to avail themselves of European help, in which case neither fleets of such limited strength nor praças of such little resisting power, would have been enough to prevent an enemy from entering. And as the principal object of the conquest of Ceylon was not only to gain the products of the Island, but also to increase the Portuguese race, one cannot understand how it could have been achieved by continual war. The King will not desist from conquering the lowlands on any terms, so long as he has dominion and power in the highlands, a thing which he has never forgotten in [the course of] such long years in good fortune and bad, continuing what was begun by Madûne and his son, even when the legitimate King of Ceylon was alive; and all this in order not to have a foreign King. If one considers this well, he will be persuaded that it will not be more difficult to conquer the whole of Ceylon once for all, than to keep up so continuous a war as in the past 150 years, and that all the energy and money that will be expended therein will be well rewarded by the conquest of so fruitful a Kingdom and a foundation for our increase, from which will result the prosperity of the State and the conversion of so many pagans.

Many were persuaded that, if we had known how to combine the mildness of peace with the rigour of war, after the death of Rajú and after we became Lords of Seytavaca, it would not have been difficult for us to conquer the whole of Ceylon. For in peace the Natives should have been treated like lieges and not as enemies, as Countrymen, and not as strangers, | so F 611, as to win their love towards the Portuguese. And though it is common for Asiatic nations to attribute favours to good fortune, and sometimes kindness to fear, a thing which is known to dispose them to ingratitude and pride, there is no stone so hard which does not surrender to kindness, nor a mind so rebellious that it does not recognize a benefit, nor a will so depraved that it does not let itself be moved by kind deeds; and the more excellent and honourable the Chingalaz are among the Asiatic nations, | the greater are the dispositions that will be found in them for captivating them. And if they should come clearly to realize how much better their condition would be under the Portuguese Kings than under Chingala [Kings], one could scarcely believe that good treatment would fail to be sufficient to appease them altogether, and to make

frontiers, and in the case of restless nations, there should be good garrisons and fortalices, experience shows that such did not seem convenient to the Portuguese in Ceylon, for in time of rebellions all the garrisons of the frontiers came to grief, though only 15 to 20 leagues in the interior, because there were very few men in them, with a small supply of victuals and munitions ; and as the force of white troops was so small, and on these occasions the lascarins were not forthcoming, whatever was in the garrison diminished the arrayal, and if they had been well garrisoned, the arrayal would have been altogether exhausted. This was seen in the time of D. Jeronimo de Azevedo in the rebellion of Domingos Correa, because as these dove-cots did not exist, and as he had many men, he retired when he could with less loss, while the contrary happened to him in the rebellion of Cangrane Arache because of the garrisons in the interior, and in this retreat he was neither able to garrison them nor was he willing to withdraw them, and all was lost before he could relieve them. And on account of this experience he did not want to fortify Manicrauarê ; and to protect the movables of the soldiers, and to remove the maimed and wounded, he thought it better to send them down to the ports, and the goods of the soldiers in dhoneys or on *aleas*, or to entrust them to the obedient villages, in which nothing was wanting, and because the sick and wounded would be better cared for in Columbo. He did not care for garrisons in Gurubêbile, Seytavâca and Ruanêla and elsewhere, and only consented to Simão Pinhaô erecting that of Sofragaô, which though a strong one, was twice lost afterwards. He only cared for Balanê to facilitate entry into Candea, though it cost him much to erect, maintain and defend it with Portuguese and lascarins, because at that height the cold was great, in course of time the lascarins retired and the Portuguese who were changed from time to time | diminished, till in the first rising that followed it was lost with nearly 100 soldiers. All the rest at all times was sheer waste, as happened to Rajú himself in his invasion of Candea, though he had other forces and a discipline very different from ours.

*P 880* | And even in case any of these posts were ever so well garrisoned and provided, what can it well defend, what passes of the hills, and what passes of the rivers does it defend, when there are so many [passes] to the low country ? When they are unable in troublesome times to come to the sea, ports to refit and find provisions, soldiers and lascarins, and return with them to quell the fire of rebellion ? But when there is a garrison, the first anxiety is how to relieve it, without equal

the treatment that was given these, and according to their ~~posse~~ convenience they submitted, being ever ready for fresh affronts and risings. And where the Portuguese hoped to improve their position, they encouraged old enemies to inflict fresh losses, though experience had shown that however ill they take injustice in time of peace, so much the more is justice able to silence and convince them in time of war. And at the same time, they often acted with severity, as has been mentioned, towards those who could not help being with the Enemy. The rebels were pardoned and given great favours, because they were powerful, while the unhappy folk who could not do otherwise, were destroyed. There was a great difference indeed between the subjection of the Chingaláz, who were ruled by a Native King, and the extinction of the heirs of the rebellious Candiot, because so long as the latter lived, they disquieted the Natives and attempted to extend their dominion. But if the Chingalás were without a King, they would be a people without a head, exposed to every evil as in other Kingdoms, and more disposed to foreign subjection, if we had known how to win them by good treatment and benefits, as many people advised before the Apostate D. Joaõ rebelled.

But as the disposition of the State after the loss of Ceylon and the other prações is different from [what it was] when we first dominated it, and as that conquest cannot be undertaken without first turning out the Batavian from that Island, no one doubts that the force necessary to invade and conquer it will likewise be sufficient for the complete conquest of Ceylon, especially of the lowlands. The difficulty, however, is to dislodge the Hollander, either from Ceylon or from India. Some people thought it easier to take Ceylon by storm before reinforcements could be sent from Batavia in sufficient quantity to withstand our forces. But as they have information about all our actions, both in Portugal and in India, where from Vingurlá, which is at a distance of 9 leagues from this bar of Goa, they are watching whatever is taking place therein, it is scarcely possible to take by storm so many well-fortified prações, though the garrisons be limited, without their being able to forestall the damage. The talk which goes on among them about a decisive resolution in Portugal, is what was declared in Malaca by one of their Magistrates or skippers to one of the two Fathers of the Society who were going about there in disguise, | on the occasion when Antonio Telles de Menezes sallying out with a fleet from Brazil and drifting through a tempest, came near the Cape of Good Hope, where a Hollander ship, seeing 32 of our bayzeys, was persuaded that they were making for India,

The skipper met the Father and asked for a word in secret, and [begged him] not to refuse to answer his question. The question was : Why are 32 Portuguese Galleons going to India, and where are they making for ? The Father found the question a strange one, because it seemed to him that the disposition of Portugal, owing to the war she was carrying on against Castille, could not give room for such a great undertaking. | The Hollander assured him that there was no doubt, because one of their ships had sight of them off the Cape of Good Hope, and he only wanted to know where they were going. The Father replied to him : ' That supposing it were true, they would be going straight to Goa.' ' No,' he retorted quickly. ' The 32 galleons are making straight for Betavia, and we have no help but to muster all our maritime forces and give them battle on sea, to see whether we can burn some (because it is very difficult to sink ships of war in these seas), or cause such damage as to enable us to keep the country.' He then asked him, in case [the ships] came to Malaca and if the Father were sent with some message to them, whether he would return to that praca. He replied smiling : ' I would return as to my own home, because there is no force in Malaca to resist 32 Portuguese galleons.' The Hollander was surprised and added : ' That he should remember the hospitality he had received there, that such were the fortunes of war and that if he were prisoner [the Father] should not forget to help and favour him.' But the hospitality they gave to those two Fathers was that, though they were then under their safe conduct, they were taken as prisoners to the fortalice of Nigumbo. Such is the opinion of the Hollanders that has persuaded men of experience that everything depends on a victory on sea, for they are disliked by the Natives who all, and especially the Chingalâz, will rise against them, if they see them defeated at sea.

They won this hatred of the Oriental nations by delusion and by disillusion. By delusion, they persuaded them that they did not come to conquer like the Portuguese, but only to trade, and as the nations of India were not firm in friendship with us, but retained a fresh remembrance of the successes of the conquest, and of the war which we waged on them, in which they lost blood and lives beyond reckoning, till they became altogether weakened in maritime power and in riches which increase by commerce, under such a violent yoke they yearned for nothing else save for vengeance | and freedom. And because the Hollander offered it to them by means of his arms and favour, endeavouring by all means to embitter them

against the Portuguese State, in order to lay his own foundations and form an alliance among them against the Portuguese, they did not take a single praça of consequence in India save with the favour of the Natives. They perverted the Japanese, as we said already, by persuading them that we would make them Christians so that afterwards we might conquer them by means of their own arms, showing them what the Catholic Kings had conquered in the New World, as they said, by this trick. They alienated the Kings of Maluco, those of Java and many others from our friendship; they estranged the Persian King, and finally the Chingalā and Dialxa. And thus these and others all declared themselves as our enemies, all through the agency and deceits of this nation.

P 227 | Then as they waxed great by pillage and by commerce, which they turned to their own advantage, beginning by Maluco they became masters of those Islands and those seas. To the clove which yields them much, being set at a very high price, they added nutmeg and mace of Banda. They conquered Macassar, and recently Bantaō, three leagues distant from their Batavia, which they made the capital of India in spite of the opposition of the Mataraō; and under the pretext of favouring the son of the King of Bantaō, they excluded the one and the other, multiplying prações in the isle of Sumatra and in the Strait of Sunda. From Malaca to Cananor they excluded the Portuguese, and they also tried conclusions with the Persian, setting foot on the Island of Queyxume, but they soon desisted from this enterprise when the Sufi treated them as rebel pirates, without consenting to receive their embassy. From this resulted the disillusion of all these nations, seeing that their whole armament ended in placing a yoke on them, and that the more they grew in wealth and power, the greater would be the tyranny with which they treated them, especially in Ceylon [where] the great hatred which they had earned from the King, does not promise them any fresh help against us. And from all information we gather, that in the enterprise of recovering that Island we shall have only the Hollander against us, and that the difficulty in which we found ourselves when those two nations expelled us therefrom, was greater than the one we shall meet with when we want to recover it, unless we forget ourselves to such an extent as to let the Batavian make up his mind to conquer it altogether, with a greater force in order either to increase his might or to ensure his independence in case of an ultimate peril, by transferring to Ceylon what he cannot maintain in Europe, for not less is his foresight, | nor does the hatred that P 228 he has won promise him less danger.

## CHAPTER 23.

## THE FEARS OF SOME PEOPLE REGARDING THIS CONQUEST

In speaking of these matters, the first remark of some despondent persons is : 'How will it be possible in the present state of Portugal to undertake so great an affair as turning the Hollander out of India, or at least out of Ceylon ?' To this common objection I reply, in the first place according to the opinion of the whole of Europe, that the might of Holland considered in itself is small and limited, and that the Catholic Kings would have subdued it many a time, if the rivals of their greatness had not taken it as an instrument for their revenge, the Duke d'Alva being cut off by four armies and D. Joaõ de Austria by as many. And that if the assistance of France P 88; alone had failed, she [Holland] would have been conquered long ago. But as she has reached such a height of power that she already thinks of becoming the arbiter of war, it is not possible that the Catholic and most Christian Princes will fail to understand, that by giving her help they give her arms against themselves. And Castille must have already realized that she had armed the King of France against her own State, when by her reinforcement she impeded the final progress of the conquest of Holland, after it had been shown that Holland could be conquered within her marshes and her own rivers in spite of all the power she might have on sea. And though Famiano Strada appealed to the sea, thinking that that nation was invincible therein, Crómwell (Crómel) has already shown that this opinion is false, since he defeated the Batavians in Rotterdam without the help of any other nation in a battle fought between the two powers, English and Hollander ; and as all the forces Holland has in India, consist of people brought from Europe, when the source fails, the stream will fail also. And if God so disposes matters, that on the expulsion of the Turk from Europe, the might of the House of Austria becomes more free, it will not be difficult for it to subdue the Batavians in punishment for their rebellion and for the offences received at their hands.

A few years ago, after comparing the might of Turkey on land with that of the Hollander on sea, they would all have said that there was no comparison, and we already see that the might of Turkey is not invincible, if the league of the Christian princes against it perseveres, and we trust in Our Lord that it will soon be expelled at least from what it possesses

in Europe. When the news of the recovery of Brazil reached here, [so] great was the confidence they had in those praças <sup>F 514</sup> of Arrecife, that the Hollander prisoners said : ' The Portuguese might take Amsterdam ; but Arrecife, never.' But we see that they not only gave up Arrecife but even the whole of Brazil into the bargain. The same thing happened in Angola, [which was] conquered by a force smaller than what they had, because as they had taken it against all human faith, God did not give them valour to maintain it ; and driven by fear or by sickness or by the sword, they have also abandoned the Island of S. Thome and what they had taken in Maranhaõ. All these are instances to [make us] believe that they would likewise abandon India, if they find there a force that could defeat them, since in Brazil they had placed 8 to 9,000 men on the field, which they could never do in India.

And whoever considers well the progress and object of Holland, will not fail to see that they only treat of their aggrandizement to the prejudice of the Roman Faith, and that they are never of any use against the enemies of Christianity ; as [for example] at present, when with their maritime power they could have diverted that of the Turk from the Mediterranean and helped the House of Austria, towards which they have so many obligations, and the Republic of Venice ; but heretical arms have their edge generally only against Catholics.

<sup>P 560</sup> | For all these reasons, it is not so impossible to drive them out of Ceylon and out of India, as some people believe. And if [the idea of] a Company for trade in India were accepted in Portugal, the more they are divided here, the greater is our persuasion that the result will be the same as in Brazil, and it will be made clear that there is a great difference between self-interest and the common good ; that if Captains and Merchants lost India through selfishness, the one by banishing trade from our harbours by their violences and injustices, the other by enticing the enemy by lack of resistance, zeal for the common welfare can correct these mistakes, when they are persuaded that by seeking the common good they increase their individual advancement. And the capital with which such a company is started can, and must, be so great, that it can not only hold its own in opposition to that of the Hollander, but that it can even extinguish it here. It is not good to publish the means [for it] and Portugal is not unaware of them. A great minister once told us that when His Majesty, who was [then] governing that Kingdom, explained to him what a certain Lord had arranged with a Catholic Potentate of Europe, [he replied] that at that time it seemed to him an

undertaking above the forces of a Kingdom enfeebled by the preceding war. That reason has not the same force now; because it will always be necessary for Portugal to undertake some conquest by means of its surplus population, both for its advancement as well as for exercise in war, because as Africa is almost entirely abandoned, as there is no school of Flanders now, and as those whom the war with Castile had trained are now dead, we shall find ourselves without men who profess a military career, while the malice of the times is opposed to <sup>P 514</sup> such negligence. And as no conquest can be more profitable than that of India, and in India [none more profitable than that] of Ceylon, no cost in men and money must be regarded. Because when we multiply under the shadow of that Kingdom, we shall be able to be Lords of India or of its commerce, which I always consider to be the better plan.

What confirms this the more is, that though the Hollander has monopolized almost the whole trade of the three quarters of the world, it is notorious that the trade of India alone yields him more revenue than all the others, and that whoever lets him retain this power, gives him arms against himself and against all Catholic dominion, which is the greatest foundation of Calvinism. And the longer his destruction is deferred, the greater will be the difficulty of destroying him, because where there is no lack of money to pay, there will be no lack of men for war, and they will always have plenty of needy men and vagabonds who regard neither conscience nor honour and offer themselves to serve in undertakings as unjust as are those of Holland.

And just as it is necessary to try to get together a sufficient Capital in Europe for the purpose of so great an armament, so I consider it quite evident that if some of the Asiatic Princes and merchants see that it is well established, they will invest their capital, if we want to be helped by them, obtaining by <sup>P 570</sup> means of us what they cannot attain against Holland by their maritime forces. Because they are now quite persuaded of Portuguese good faith, and that in public commerce faithful intercourse will never fail, because of conscience and honour. Constantinople was surprised at what it experienced a few years ago, because when a Moor of Granada died in Macao, the Misericordia of that place sent to the one of Goa the capital he left behind. From there information was sent to Constantinople and two of his kinsmen, men of Granada, came here to recover their heritage, which was ordered to be paid to them in the Congo, and they went proclaiming the good faith of the Portuguese throughout Asia. And as these people, being merchants, place great value on such things, if they are sure of

profit in our Company, I am sure, they will invite us to take them in, and that if we are willing, we shall be able with the capital of Asia to be masters of it as well as of Africa.

They turn round and ask : ' How will it be possible either for the King or for a Company to place in Ceylon immediately so great a force as will suffice to attack some of those prâças on land, and at the same time to withstand on sea the forces with which the Batavian will come to their help ? ' I answer that if there were a league with other Princes or with England, with the necessary pacts, it can be effected in one of two ways ; either this power will at the same time attack Batavia and the other prâças of the South, or if the forces are larger | the Portuguese can attack Ceylon, the others Jacatrâ, and the Hollander force, being divided against two nations, will have less strength and will make less opposition in that Island, where one or more prâças can be already taken before they have reinforcements from Batavia, if she can send any. Or at least, we can set foot on land, as they always did, out of range of the artillery of their prâças, and when sufficiently fortified, we can either fight them on land, if they come to meet us, or lay siege to one of their prâças, which in my opinion should be Gâle, both because, when once it is taken, our fleets can take shelter under its protection, and can receive reinforcements throughout the year, in the manner indicated, as well as because it has so long a circuit of walls that neither can the usual garrison resist an assault, nor can an extraordinary one, if it is attacked on all sides and stormed by artillery.

But what will happen, they say, if Holland makes war on us in the harbours of Portugal and in the other conquests ? And if it is true, as they publish and show in print, that Castille has given them the right to the Indies through hatred of Portugal, (which can scarcely be believed of a Catholic King), they will say that they do it with the same justice with which Castille presumed to do it, and we shall never find that Monarch on our side, if once Spanish politics decide that it is better for it to aggrandize Holland than to help Portugal. But as for this point, if it should be so, this confirmation of the right is quite unnecessary for | Calvinistic justice, since without it they entered India and made war on us. It has been already remarked that not only Castille but even other Princes of Europe [who have] no rivalry with Portugal, are becoming interested in the downfall of the United Provinces, and a league can be arranged with them. And as they have no means of egress or ingress save through those channels, it will be all the more easy to hem them in, if there is a force to attack these channels, or to invade them at the same time

Because if France or England attempt it by land or sea, it is certain they will succeed. however much the Hanseatic Empire may unite itself, of which we have so far seen no other effect, except that each one thinks of his own interests. Nor does Portugal fear them on land, if precautions are taken, nor are the conquests in danger now, unless the armament of the enemy be very great, which cannot be the case, as they have so many distractions, and if the European Princes will finally realize that it is not only the Portuguese nation that is concerned in the downfall of Holland, because if they continue to enjoy India in peace for a long time, just as no Prince of Europe is now secure on sea without very great expense, so also no one will be so on land. if they continue to increase their riches. And well can one be undeceived seeing that, if they are so proud of their fortune as to put forth so many roots abroad, they will not fail to grow fresh branches nearer home, for their wealth supplies them men and might to carry it out. And there is no one who is not surprised to see how such powerful neighbours can put up with their threats or the losses they inflict on them with grievous insults, which are not unknown to the world, or who approves the policy of such unjust enterprises or allows a republic, which, beginning with a few fishing boats, rose not only to lay down the law to Europe, but even to overawe her by its deep-laid plans. For in order to understand that these people are the very soul of Calvinism, it is enough to see the caution with which they govern India, without allowing any Catholic Ministers to set foot in Maluco, Ceylon, Jaianapatao, Malaca and other pracas, where there were large Christianities, and all [of them] perished under their dominion. They allow Mosques to the Moors and Pagodes to the Pagans in Malaca, and when one of our Fathers asked a Domine of theirs, why they do not allow a Church to the Catholics, he replied unblushingly that if there were any their own men would frequent it. And in Betavia their Secretary said to another Father of the Society [of Jesus], that Father Becano was a prophet, because the chief men of Holland and of those States were Atheists.

They also say that if the whole capital of a Company were forthwith all involved in war, before previously receiving any profits wherewith to cover the expenses, it could not fail to go to ruin, before it was firmly established. I confess I do not understand such arguments. They see that the Hollander  
P 972 came to India, and that before he had any root therein, he profited by pillage and Commerce, whereby he waged war, and though we have so many roots in India, they think that we shall not be able to do what the other did. I do not

determine a time in the midst of so great contingencies, for that must be regulated by the power of the Company, by its conventions, leagues and circumstances, which the course of time will show. The Hollander kept up the blockade of Malaca for 40 years, till he met with an opportunity to attack and carry it. Ceylon cost him 20 years of conquest, before he had finished with the Island, interposing truces as long as they served his purpose. Let the Company be formed, and the more riches it has, either in the way of its own capital or [money] from others or from leagues with other nations, the more suited will it be to conquer and to obtain better terms from other nations. | Provided however, that it will not be *F s/s* so lax as to be satisfied with a little and desist from the greater and the more important. And though many spices of India are in the hand of the Hollander, even England loads 7, 8, or more ships every year, and the Dane and the Frenchman also find a cargo for their ships, though they have not, what we have, the entire commerce of Africa, which in the opinion of all is enough to make a Company very rich in a short time. A Captain of Moçambique made, besides other great revenues, more than 600,000 to 700,000 xerafins in three years, though he was in debt when he arrived and had to answer for ships and money, and though he did not put into the ports within his jurisdiction a fourth part, or even less, of what he could easily distribute through faithful hands, because in the future he could do much more as the extensive district of Mombaça was not in his jurisdiction. Nor can an argument be made of what took place in recent years, when the King took for himself the trade of the Rios, because everyone knows that in India to rob the King was a Portuguese indulgence, because punishment did not ensue; and this was a thing so well foreseen that no zealous or experienced person approved of it; and the well-intentioned foretold all that happened.

## CHAPTER 24.

### SOME FURTHER DIFFICULTIES ABOUT THE COMPANY ARE EXPOSED

When it is settled by common sense and disinterested reasons, that it is only by a Company that one can maintain and recover India or at least Ceylon; and that by means of it we can get the better of Holland, just as she got the better of us by means of her company, they pass on, in the

first place, to the manner of its Government, and ask whether it is convenient that it should be by 'round Table' without <sup>P 273</sup> any priority in votes or offices, | or powers, or whether it should be the contrary. And it was always considered convenient, that [the administration] should not be by a round Table, but that there should be a President, with other Assistants who might be called consuls or Deputies or any other [name] that seem good, because the importance of the Government does not depend on this. And because it is not convenient in India to reduce the authority or power of the Viceroys or Governors of the State, they should preside over this, just as they preside over the Board of Revenue, because, otherwise, owing to many and very grave reasons on the one and the other side, which I think unnecessary to point out, as I think they are very clear, no good will result. This was the first point to which the Conde de Odemira objected, as I mentioned already, when he saw the papers which we sent him about the formation [of such a company], as he did not know of the other, | which had to be presented <sup>F 516</sup> to the King in secret. Nor do men of business fail to understand that it should be so, but they tell me that they desire His Majesty to confirm one out of two or three persons whom they will name. It has always seemed to me a difficult thing for the King to diminish this Royal right, the more so when one considers that our Lords, the Kings of Portugal, always selected one of the foremost men of the Kingdom for that post, and as the King entrusts the state to him, it seems a sufficient reason to entrust to him the Government of the Company. And he will proceed the more cautiously, the more interested superintendents he sees at his side. Now I am sure, no Portuguese gentleman will accept this post, unless he is appointed by the King alone, since such has always been their privilege. But as this depends on the good pleasure of the King, it is enough to suggest it, so that His Majesty may choose the best, determining also the manner of his emoluments and pay, and whether he should have a share in the Company, because we do not pretend to give instructions here, but only to point out the conveniences and difficulties, leaving the decision to the one who has to settle them.

But as so large a machinery cannot be moved and managed by one single man, it is necessary to give him many assistants, to whom he can entrust the work, namely a Controller of the Revenue and capital of the Company; another over the docks, another over the troops, another Auditor-General, with the powers that are wont to be given in armies, without

withdrawing from the Viceroy or Governor the power of a Captain-General over those of the Company. A Secretary and other lesser officers are also necessary, according to the needs of the number and the working of such a large concern. And what is said of India holds good also in the same way of Portugal, where it must be settled whether the votes of the Assistants. Deputies or Consuls are decisive or consultative, and whether it is the obligation of the President to follow either all or the majority, and other difficulties that spring from a Government of this kind.

In the second place, they point out the payment for services. And it does not seem a matter for doubt that there must be a <sup>P 574</sup> distinction between pay and rewards, since it is clear that in so far as they serve the Company, they must be paid by it, and it must be settled what must be given to the Deputies and other Ministers of the Board of Government and its administrators, how much to the Generals [appointed] for particular enterprises, the Captains-Major, Admirals, Chief Officers and Captains of sea and of war, and other officers of the militia; to the soldiers, and sailors, and to those who handle the artillery; and whether these payments must be made only in money, or whether there should be some freedom in this matter, especially as regards the voyages to Portugal, and for how many years of service they should be bound.

Speaking now of gifts, the liberality of our Lords the Kings of Portugal always bestowed special gifts over and above <sup>F 517</sup> the pay, which they give their lieges as long as they served, to those who specially distinguished themselves by their valour or ability or quality. And although the services of India were wont to be remunerated in India, and many prazas are now lost, and only Castillians must be admitted to those that remain, without liberty to trade, from which arose the violences and injustices which depopulated them completely or in part, nevertheless what remains is not so little, but that many still remain to be given, and service lands are better expended on those who serve in this arduous conquest than on those persons who never sallied out of the bars and never saw the enemy face to face. And if in Ceylon, in the villages dedicated to the Pagodes, there be set up commanderies, as we have already pointed out, the King can reward the deserving therewith, and also with such others as seems best to reserve for that purpose. And generally [speaking] in all Kingdoms and Monarchies as long as there is much to give, there will be no lack of claimants, or of those

who complain of want of equity, because no one thinks that he is inferior to another, but when the door is altogether or partly closed, everyone will be content with the opening that is before him.

And if we reflect on the administration of Holland, in this Company of theirs, pay there is, but besides that there are no gifts, and [yet] they never lacked either their own countrymen or foreigners to serve them. For already the Viceroy Pero de Silva sent Amaro Rodriguez to the South to ascertain the number of troops the Batavian had in India, and he found that in the garrisons of their pracaas and in ships, there would be between 10 to 12,000 men. And there is no doubt that at present there are rather more than less, though being distributed over many pracaas [the force] is more enfeebled, as we experienced in the many pracaas which we kept up with a very small garrison of soldiers or of casados only and pensioners. And though the Hollanders make up for the scantiness of their garrisons by the good fortifications they erect, and by good provision of victuals, arms, and munitions, and more especially by their maritime force, which is always effective, since it is asserted as certain that they always have in Betavia about 25 large-sized ships ready to sail | in case of any danger, over and above the squadrons wherewith in due time they undertake some new enterprises, neither are these ships provided with their full crew, nor has Betavia more than a thousand European troops, nor can the ships be made ready without taking in the men who are distributed in garrisons and other bateyes. But they make all these expenses in order that they may drive terror into India, and that there may be less delay in hastening where necessity calls. It is, however, a great proof of the amount of revenue that India yields them, and of the plenty they have wherewith to pay those who serve them, in which consists, as we said, all the gifts of their Company. | F 6170

It will therefore not be a strange thing, if our company is administered in the same way, at least so long as there is such a terrible enemy of the Portugese conquests. For if some people marvel at their policy and administration, what reasons can they allege for condemning in us what they admire in them? Let them leave aside injustice, but in all other things let them act like Hollanders, and I assure them that they will get the better of them, and that in India [the Hollanders] will be no more permanent than they were in Brazil and in Angola, unless they want to persevere in a mistake so gross, and a blindness so manifest, as knowing the error and persisting in the disorder.

Another question is whether it is good to admit into this company foreign capital of Europe or India. For some say : ' What profit can we derive by shedding our blood and losing our lives to augment other people's capital ? And what profit shall we gain by enriching other nations or potentates ? ' From these I only ask whether Portugal in her present state, or even in greater prosperity, can withstand the forces of Holland in India without foreign help ? If they say she can do so, the proposed difficulties disappear : if they admit that another mightier power is necessary, then their objections have no force, for no one fails to see how great is the danger to that which we still hold in India, because of the war they make on us with their own and with foreign arms, and that their greatest object is to drive us completely out of India, and to become absolute Lords of this conquest and this commerce. Let it not seem to any one that the reason why they disregard us for the present is the little harm they receive from us, because it is in order that they may have a better opportunity of increasing their might so as not to be vanquished by any military expedition that seeks them. For after making peace with the Portuguese, they never kept peace with the Natives. They made themselves Lords of Macassar, they took Bantao, they attacked Queyxume and already, they say, they have laid siege to Mussulipatao, and want to begin a praça there, despising among other Kings. the might of Persia, though with ill success, and that of the King of Golconda, imposing that yoke on him in order to become Lords of the best cloth of India, making for themselves a monopoly of the Diamonds and other great riches of that Kingdom, and profiting by the distraction of the Mogols' war, as he of Golconda, being already tributary of the latter, was so unnerved that he is unable to make any considerable resistance.

Let Portugal be undeeceived [of its belief] that Holland takes no notice of the Portuguese in India in order to spare them, [since it is] in order to turn them out of it with greater security | and [also] any other European nation whatever, F 618 and to root itself in this Orient in such fashion as to get the better of all, and to prevent any progress of the Catholic Faith. Not even in the time of the truce did they treat us like friends, nor did they appear in our ports, rather, they refused us [admittance to] theirs, and on some pretence or other, even though it might have been nothing more than the striking or not striking a flag, when it served their turn, they profited by our negligence, and took occasion to fall upon us unexpectedly and carry off all that remained to us. It always seemed to me a good thing, that we should have

recourse to God and put our trust in His Divine protection, but I do not approve of our relying on Miracles alone, because God ever wishes that secondary causes should ever be applied, and we have seen the downfall of many a Christian Kingdom of greater might and wealth than the State of India ever reached.

But to consider independently this objection, which they make, to admitting foreign capital into this new Company, it seems certain that it must not be offered to those nations who have already entered India, and those from whom we have anything to fear, because as we only deal in commerce, so long as this is not prevented, they only seek to increase their own. Those, however, who do not attempt to enter India, can be of no prejudice to us either in Portugal or in the conquests, however much they prosper. But in India, if the capital comes from Princes, they would not like to arm us against themselves, first in order afterwards to retaliate by means of what they gained by our means ; if the capital comes from Guzarates and from Banian merchants, those people have never cared for war but only for commerce ; and it will be a good plan indeed if we become masters of India with the capital of Indra itself ; and if we question the Hollanders, we shall find that they began and continue their company in the same way, and that they consider it a matter of Statecraft to manage the capital of some of the Potentates of the Orient, so that by that dependence they may make them put up with the insolences and violences they do to them. Finally one cannot reprove what the whole of Europe approves by various banks of commerce [consisting of] their own and foreign capital ; and what experience and reason have proved to be a wise course in other nations, cannot be a mistake in our case.

They also object to the limit that must be placed to the capital of this company, which can have diverse meanings. The first is a minimum that must be accepted from each shareholder in order to facilitate the accounts of so great a business. The best opinion in this matter can be given by men of business, who have experience in such things. It <sup>P 577</sup> would seem good | however, not to give a share to any individual for | less than two thousand cruzados ; and if some <sup>P 610</sup> people wish to invest less, let them settle among themselves.

The other meaning is : what is the limit that must be set to the total capital of the Company, because some people think that if the capital were several millions, there is no place now in which to invest it or to divert or to trade with it.

This doubt is strengthened by the fact that there are very few substances brought from Portugal to India, in which it can be invested to any considerable extent ; and in India, if we exclude Africa, the greater part of the merchandise is in the hands of the Hollander and of other European nations who resort to this commerce : and the policy of Holland is such that when they were at war with the English, they sold in the same harbours in which the latter were trading, and at a very much lower price, the same substances in which the English traded, merely to destroy them, inflicting that loss on themselves in the hope of greater profit in other things, so that the British might not have profits ; and many find themselves so embarrassed by this difficulty that they do not see a way out of it ; and they come to the conclusion that if the capital be great, there will be greater loss, and if little, it must be of no consequence. There is no arguing with people who always jump from one extreme to the other without halting at the mean whereby great enterprises can, and must, be promoted.

The first thing that must be settled is, that just as this company is founded for India, so its principal dealing and commerce must be in India, as we see in the case of that of Holland. And as at present we are at peace with almost all the nations of India and of Europe, we shall not knock at the door of any friendly nation without it being opened to us, when they understand that we do not go with armed forces against them. Therefore, except for the few ports of the Turk in the Red Sea, and those which we lost in Arabia, unless there is some agreement, those of Ceylon and of the Maluccas, which the Hollanders enjoy completely under the title of Conquest, and those of Japan to which it is hoped we shall soon be admitted, in all the other ports of Africa on the continent as well in the Islands, and of Asia likewise, any well-manned *bael* of ours can trade with security. And there are so many [such ports] and so profitable and so rich the merchandise that, when exchanged in India they will not fail to yield great wealth. They oppose this with the [example of] various English companies that were founded in a few years and were soon destroyed, and [they say] that the same might happen to us, since we are not shrewder merchants and traders than they. I shall not be able to give a full explanation of the reasons for those vicissitudes, for I do not know what happened in England. | I know that ~~F 612~~ the first company made war on the Portuguese, who caused it grave loss, and that when peace was made, Captain Ethna ~~P 772~~ came at once with 8 ships, having founded another company |

about which they do not speak now, and we presume that it was undone at the request of the first. Afterwards they formed others, and one came again a short time ago, and we only see that they persevere in this trade, although they are chartered ships, and that they would not have continued it, if they received no profit therefrom, which is the chief object, whatever be the reason for their chargeableness, and they never abandoned their factories in which they have cargo ready to be quickly taken, and they make their voyages in due season; so much is certain, the rest is uncertain conjecture, so far as we are concerned.

Another thing that must be settled is, that the seas of Europe must not remain enchanted ones for us, but just as the English and the Hollanders voyage therein and trade on the one and the other coast of the Mediterranean sea, in the channel of Flanders and in the seaports of France, England, Ireland, and on the one and the other coast of the North Sea, as far as the most remote bounds of Livonia, Muscovy and Sweden, trading in those harbours with the merchandise they take from India; and before they had them, they came to buy them in Lisbon, bringing the products which are exported from the ports of the North; so also must we do, because we cannot suffer loss in what gives them profit, even when bought from us. And it will not turn out as it happened to the great fleet of Phelipe II. commanded by the Duke of Medinasidonia, which came to grief in the channel of Flanders and on the coasts of England and Ireland, because there were no pilots who had any knowledge of those seas. And at present, if we look for pilots in Portugal, rare will be the one who knows the way to the Levant or to the North. And if we frequent these ports, we can bring to India what the foreigners bring of things that have value here, though as the voyage is so long, the cargo that needs most space will usually be the provisions. Of other merchandise I do not speak, because it is not unknown in Portugal, and it is well known that there was always profit in gold, silver, amber, coral, emeralds, woven fabrics and broadcloth, and other fine cloth of good colour. And because experience has shown that the heat of the ships' hold not only corrupts the provisions, but even damages everything else, foreigners were wont to open trapdoors on deck with iron gratings, through which in time of fair weather they get air, but which are closed in time of storm, a trifling precaution which I always considered to be of great importance, like others which they made use of and which we must imitate and not despise, both for the conservation of health as well as the

durability of the ships, since we know that their ships succeeded in making 14 and 15 voyages to India, and that ours were very fortunate, if they made two, all on account of the scanty care they took of them, whereby the King lost many millions, without being able to make up for that waste owing to the sheer neglect of our Government. Let them do what others do and we shall keep our ships for many years.

**P 278** | They again insist on the policy of the Hollander who can undersell the substances we sell wheresoever we go, in the manner described. It is however certain that they will not succeed, if we wrest them from their hands, which is the principal object of the plan I propose. Nor will they be able to forestall our counsels, if these are kept secret. Nor does it seem possible that they can do so in such a variety of harbours and, least of all in those of the nations with whom they wage war in India. And everything is reduced to uncertainty in time of peace, and determination in time of war, because if all our ships of commerce are well provided with artillery and have sufficient crews, which is generally lacking in theirs, in those seas in which they think themselves safe, they will never dare to take us by surprise, nor can this take place in the case of perpetual commerce, for it is idle to imagine that they can thrive by such losses, and if they sometimes did it to the English, it was only to prevent them from entering some port, and all this fear is more an echo rather than a voice, an accident rather than a substance. Let us pass now to the third meaning of the foregoing objection.

---

## CHAPTER 25.

### THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED

---

The third meaning which the preceding question can have is with regard to time: Whether it will be convenient to increase in years to come the total capital of the company, and in how many years its profits should be distributed. The first question is easy to answer, because if experience shows that with large capital the gains will be greater, there is every reason for increase, because the greater it is, the greater will the profit be, and the greater the power, the greater its effects

in peace and war. And this needs no further discussion. As for the distribution of gains, this also depends on the future, because while this commerce is being established in Europe and India, and the whole machinery provided, it will be necessary to spend the greater part of it. Wherefore it would seem that at least for the first time the shareholders should not be paid the profits, till at least ten years are past, the first Share and the entrance capital being always kept intact, and giving every year a balance [sheet] of receipts and expenses so as ~~to see what the gain is.~~ <sup>P 550</sup> to see what the gain is. In the first years it will happen as in the case of the Captains of Mozambique, when they had in their hands the commerce of the district, though it was a much smaller affair than the company we are concerned with. Because in the first two years little came back into their hands out of what had passed through them, and all the reaping was in the third year, and that in the case of a trade that was already going on and established. Wherefore there is no reason to wonder when one sees that we fix a longer time, since we are here concerned with a greater organisation and a greater traffic, which has for the most part still to be settled. Though we do not fix [a period], experienced men can decide what is best, and when the first balance [sheet] is passed, [they can decide] whether others should be made in shorter periods, and whether a still longer time must elapse before beginning to satisfy the shareholders, for as all these things depend on contingencies of experience and on the wishes of the persons interested, the wisest course must be decided on according to that.

They ask also : What will be the part of His Majesty in this Company ? And now we are not speaking of the distribution of rewards, which was already discussed, but of the capital in money, and especially of custom duties and other profits which might accrue to the Crown by this new commerce, and of the royal prerogative of the conquest.. And the first thing to observe is, that acknowledging myself a liege, I do not pretend to set bounds to the Royal pleasure, but that urged by zeal for the commonweal, I point out what seems to me to be most convenient for the welfare of the Crown and the restoration of India. And as for money, the Ministers of His Majesty can best decide, though I am sure that the capital of the King will have greater profit if it is put into this concern. About custom dues, especially in India, there is greater difficulty, and the same is seen in the case of the revenues of the lands we possess. Because either we must undo what we call the State, or it must be as before, and neither the one nor the other seems to be of greater profit to the Company, because

if it remains bound to [incur] all these expenses and payments which the King used to make to Viceroys or Governors and other Ministers, the present capital will either not be enough, because the expenses will be greater than the receipts, as the Ministers who examined the matter told me, or if enough, they will be able to pay out of their capital [everything] save the cost of the Soldiery and fleets, but they will not be able to gain any profit, but will rather take this charge upon themselves without profit. But if the government of the State remains as before, it does not seem that the Company will be able to avoid paying custom duties, and I do not believe that the Companies of Holland and England fail to pay similar tribute, | because in the case of the latter the Government of ~~the~~ <sup>P 881</sup> the Crown was not charged, nor in the former [the Government] of the United Provinces. But as the trade will be very much larger than was hitherto the case with individual merchants, when the profits of commerce increase, this tribute can be very light, since the principal object is on the one hand to help to keep up the State, and on the other to promote the gains and power of the Company. And this difficulty must be adjusted according to the principles which are here only insinuated.

As for the conquest of new prajas and new lands, especially of Ceylon, we have already said that this is the principal object, <sup>P 881</sup> of this Company. For that purpose it must be given | the timber from the North, which was granted to the captains of Damao and of Bacay, to which they can add whatever else there is on the coasts of the one and the other India. All of which can be better effected, if the government of the State remains intact, and if the King through his Ministers gives help for the buildings, provisions, and crew, of his fortalices which will be administered by Captains and not by Contractors, the commerce being entirely on the account of the Company, except if His Majesty wishes to send every year some reinforcements of troops to his garrison and to maintain the monopoly of tobacco and the independence of the privileged houses, and some spicery for the Royal House ; trifling matters which will be settled in Lisbon better than from this distance. And in this way, as the State will remain and the King will have lesser obligations, it will be easier for him to succour it. But just as the Company may not excuse itself from any war which may be made against the lands and prajas of the State, in the preservation of which it is also interested, the King also must in the same way help the Company, in any way in which the State is able, to increase its power in any enterprise, because when the one and the other arm are united, it will be achieved more easily and with greater

security. And as some vessels of war and rowing vessels are always necessary to convoy the Flotilla [of trading ships], and as open ships can with a little skill be turned into closed galliots, it is convenient that the King should not only keep up the necessary galliots for that purpose, but also a sufficient number of these vessels of war in the docks for reinforcing and for other purposes that present themselves.

I must remark, however, that when our rowing vessels used triangular or Lateen sails, they gave chase to the lightest Malavar *parbs*, which did not take place afterwards when they used only square sails, [a practice] reproved by the veteran Captains and those well versed in the former warfare which we waged in India. And even now those who know how to manipulate the rigging of their rowing barks never let themselves | be overtaken by any Hollander ship, because when *P 521* becalmed, they row and get to windward, and when they go right before the wind, no ship can catch them, and for lack of this experience many were lost. I speak of galliots in which the men can take cover in war, fight with their feet firmly placed on deck, and protected from Sun and rain, and able to carry a complement of guns, which was quite the contrary in truncated rowing vessels ; and I do not speak of Galleys, both because a frigate is more effective with the same crew, and because they are not used in the Oceanic sea, nor do the oarsmen of India row them well.

Finally, they say, that we cannot deny that the Hollanders are soldiers, that they have good Officers for war both on land and sea, that they are very clever in navigation and in handling *P 522* artillery, and that as their power in India | is so great, and they are determined in a last emergency to put their whole force on the sea, it will be so difficult to oppose them with a force sufficient to vanquish and defeat them altogether. And as often as war broke out with them and we went to seek them out in their home, even though it may be only in Ceylon, we found all their forces pitted against us, as if they were in need of all to combat the Portuguese. I do not know which to blame here, whether it is our presumption or our neglect, because if any Portuguese is asked whether he thinks they are more valiant than the Portuguese, he will certainly say, No, and that he is ready to cross swords with two or three of the best of that nation put together. If he is asked whether they are better skilled than we in the management of ships and artillery and other fire-arms, he will unhesitatingly say, No. But it must be admitted that discipline and exercise, dexterity and knowledge, of both the one and the other [kind of] warfare, give them the advantage in both the one and the other, and

to such an extent that we saw here an English document in which it was said with great surprise, that it is a notable fact that the French now vied with the Hollander's with equal dexterity in the battle of Sicilia ; because these two nations pretend to be the best at that business, though it is well-known that there are nowhere better soldiers than in France. Now we come to the conclusion that everything depends on discipline, practice, and dexterity. From which I infer, that this defect in us springs only from our negligence. Because if the soldiers had been exercised during the voyage to India and in India, to use musketry and handle the spear and sword and other exercises of war, they would not have shown themselves so awkward in battle. And if the naval men had been properly exercised in their task and in the management of ships of war, when there was a battle with the Hollander's who seem to guide them by reins ; if they knew also the manner of setting fire to any enemy ship without danger to themselves, and how they must board them ; and if the gunners had been men practiced to that art, in which there is not a little to learn in order to be as clever as the English gunners of the Flagship St. George, who carried off the flag of the Prince Robert at the first shot, and the top mast at the second in the bar of Lisbon, and if everyone had made it a point to know everything, the soldiers how to manage a ship, how to pilot, and how to handle guns, and the mariner and the gunner the other functions, so that in case of need they could help anywhere, as Cornelius Magalish boasted when he said that he had 150 captains, 150 soldiers, 150 mariners, and 150 gunners, because the 150 men whom he had, knew how to do everything, the Author of the 'Hollander Republic' would not have insulted us by falsely relating that a Mogul King had said that a single Hollander was worth seven Portuguese. But when I see that the soldiers are not exercised in the ships during the voyage nor in military service in India, and that there is not in the whole of India a fencing school, that the pilots have no knowledge at all of mathematics, that the mariners and gunners are often lackeys taken from the servants' hall of the mighty ones ; what can we expect from such as these in time of war ?

Artillery was less used at the time when we came to India, and [yet] the Portuguese were most dexterous in handling it, as may be seen from our histories. But now when it is greatly improved, and when we are most in need of the arts, the negligence and carelessness is greater. And as we have not men ready for everything, we have need of a larger number of men for any naval battle, and the greater part of them

remain exposed ; and while admitting our equality in the use of musquet and arquebus on land, we have more recourse to the sword and spear than other nations, without any further dexterity in them than what persons who took pride in the subject had acquired ; and though the soldiers of former times prided themselves in having offensive and defensive arms of their own, few there are now who have offensive arms, and of the other there is no question now. And this negligence came to such a pass, that the Ministers who were concerned excused themselves for not giving them on the ground that they had none, and that there was no practice for lack of powder. As this is so patent, we have only our dispositions to blame, since it is certain that the Portuguese nation has abundant capacity to get the better of any other of the strongest nations in war on land or sea. Nor do we in these matters represent the difficulties greater than they are, since P 522 we see that in a few years the King of France was able to restore to his Kingdom the credit of naval dexterity, of which that brave nation had lost sight. The inhabitants of Goa maintained in former times 600 horses merely from pride, and they accompanied the Viceroy on the feast of St. John and St. James, and at other times, to excise themselves on the field of S. Thome, which was of great help to them in time of war, because of the great fear which the Natives have of cavalry, and for the health and preservation of their strength, as there is in India no other form of exercise, without which men are soon incapacitated for war.

I am less inclined to admit the excuse of those who say that this is due to the make of our ships being different from that of foreigners. Because if they find that our ships of war are heavier, that [the Hollanders] haul their ships better to windward and provide their ships better with guns, one has only to imitate them and all these excuses will cease. For as regards guns, nobody says that we cannot mount on board a ship as many as they. And if we examine the reason why they are generally better at veering the bowline, it will clearly appear that this is due to the shape of the ship and partly to the amount of rigging. Their ships are of the same breadth, from the mizen to cat-head, and from this results many advantages, because being broader at the bow and stern, they keep up better and are not overwhelmed by strong winds : and as the main mast slopes sternwards they catch the wind better, which also renders them freer to furl the foresails, and above all, they move better with a side wind, and this structure set up for this purpose can prevail over the larger keels which we formerly built, which is one of the greatest disadvantages P 524

of a large *bazel*, because few are the harbours where it can be moored, and if it strikes [a rock], it is damaged beyond repair. And though experience has shown that wooden wedges, well fastened, preserve the timber better than nailwork, and make the ship lighter and cost less, I fail to understand why we object to that structure, and do not use iron only when it is absolutely necessary. They make their rigging thinner, because it is better twisted, better wrought, and consists of more strands than ours, which though thicker is much weaker, more bulky, and the wind makes a greater impression on it. And they take great care not to let it rot through the heat of the hold, tarring it often, and the masts every 15 days, being usually of one single piece of wood, because when saturated with tar they are more durable and less corruptible, which we did not do with ours though they are made of divers pieces of wood, and when penetrated by the heat of the sun and the damp of rain, they soon rot and at the first storm the ship remains mastless. It might seem unnecessary to speak of these things, but so great are the losses and the consequences resulting from these disorders, that they must not be considered trifling things but matters of very great moment. And if zeal for the common welfare on the one hand and on the other a knowledge of these things had remedied them, we should not have had to acknowledge any inequality in this war.

It is an inviolable rule amongst them not to load a ship more than she can hold, always leaving the waterline exposed, and even on the rudder they have numbers to guide them in this matter. But the ambition of individuals was so great that in this bar, when the Viceroy D. Philipe Mascarenhas ordered Joaõ da Costa Valente to be warned to take heed that the Galleon S. Joaõ was already overloaded, seeing that this did not move him, he ordered some packets of rough Diamonds belonging to him to be removed. These admonitions from one who understood the matter, did not suffice to make him heed the danger, and when he was a little way off the bar, she went to the bottom of the sea either because water entered through the hawse-holes or through the port holes of the stern, or from both; and not a few similar cases are recounted in India. And though the ships should ever be prompt and ready for sailing and for war, when they leave the harbour and even on the voyage, they are so encumbered that the guns can neither move on their carriages nor are ready on deck. And let him who does not see how easily this is remedied go on board a foreign ship and he will realize it, for they are completely ready for action, because of the cleanliness

they observe, as if they were in their homes, washing them every day, and if they happen to be scorched by the sun, they cool them with water, lest the caulking dissolve by the heat <sup>P 885</sup> of the Sun. | These are matters which require little talk but great zeal and some trouble. And when they come on board our transport ships and see how greatly they are encumbered and how little cleanliness there is, quite contrary to the customs they observe, they are not only surprised, but even greatly shocked that among civilised people no heed is paid to the destruction that results both to lives and ships.

---

## CHAPTER 26.

### LAST OBSERVATIONS REGARDING THIS MATTER

In order to enable one to judge fully [the subject cf] the foregoing discourse, we shall conclude this work with an account, such as we were able to obtain, of the might of Holland in India, and especially in Ceylon, and with a record of what that Island, Jafanapatao and Manâr | yielded us as revenue. <sup>P 823</sup> Because as that nation has little or no dealings in our ports, and because of the caution with which it deals with us, concealing everything that concerns their government and their dispositions, and because after the loss of Malâca, the Portuguese never traversed that part of the Archipelago, we cannot give a detailed account of the might on sea and land which they maintain throughout the extent of India. Two things, however, are quite certain in this matter. The first, that from Cananor to the Persian Gulf, and throughout the whole of Arabia and Africa as far as the Cape of Good Hope, they have no praça whatever, but only factories in Moca and on the Coast of India, and that they have recently been excluded from Persia. The other certain point is, that they do not always maintain in India anything more than the usual garrisons, and that when they desire to undertake some new war, they bring fresh troops from Holland, because they do not care to maintain unnecessary troops, but only to reinforce with the usual reinforcement, the garrisons and the crew of the merchant ships which even in war time are not very numerous, and much less in peace, because they know how to manage with few men skilled in all the necessary duties. But as this company has a very large capital, and as it is not impossible for it to undertake various invasions, as was seen when they at the same time blockaded the bar of Goa to impede reinforcements,

and made war on us in Malâca and in Ceylon, and almost at the same time they lost a great squadron in Maltôo and placed another in defence of Tayavô in the Island of Formosa which the Chincheo conquered—nor does any enterprise of importance fail to cost them great expense and preparation—as Francisco Caron admitted after taking Nigumbo, when he said to many of our Religious: ‘That if D. Antonio Masarenhas had kept the order of his Brother there would have been consumed there | a squadron which was prepared during 7 years’—from which it appears, however, that for any fresh enterprise it is necessary to keep a silence similar to that which King D. Joaõ I. kept, when he marched upon Ceuta; because neither is there in Holland any lack of intelligence of what is being made ready in Portugal, nor is there in Europe any lack of reasons for getting a fleet ready under a similar pretence. For this reason I will here give only such information as I was able to gather regarding their ordinary garrisons, according to the information of a Hollander pilot who serves the State with fidelity and without hope of returning to his people, remarking that all the praças and factories have officers engaged in the government and management of them. And beginning with the Archipelago; in the Island of Machiem and of Bachaõ [there are] the fortalices of Ternante with 40 pieces and 80 soldiers: the fortalice of Amboyno, 50 pieces, 100 soldiers. Banda with a fortalice, 50 [pieces], 100 [soldiers]. In the Island of Burro, a stockade, 7, 20; | in ~~P 5520~~ the Island of Pilouraõ, abandoned by the English, 2, 10; in Bima a stockade, 8, 30; in the Island of Manseca, the fortalice of Rotardaõ, 50, 300. Emgea of Macaçar, the palace of the King, with some stockades and some pieces and soldiers. The same in the coast of Serraõ. In larger Java, Jacatrâ, 400 pieces, 4,500 soldiers, besides free people. But though this is their capital in India, all the Portuguese who returned thence in these last years, say that there are not more than 1,500 soldiers, and the prisoners of Gâle already reckoned them at 1,500. In the same bay there is Betavia, half a league to the North, with 40 pieces, 150 soldiers. On the Eastern side on the river Anjol, a praça with 24 pieces and 80 soldiers. Nortuic, half a league behind Jacatrâ, 20, 50. Half a league to the West, the praça Regisqui, 24, 40. On the Western side, on the river Anque, a praça of the same name, 30, 80. To the Southwest a praça [called] the star of the Ncrth, 24, 60. Half a league behind it, the praça Feyfue, 40, 100. These praças are always well garrisoned, so that thence they can reinforce the others. On an island three leagues from Betavia, 300 men besides caulkers are at work, and it has 32 pieces. Bantaõ

with stockades and redoubts, 150 pieces, 800 soldiers. On the river of Cayva, a stockade, 20-50. On the river Andramayo, a stockade, 20-50. On the Mountain of Tegul, a stockade, 20-50. On the river Samaren, a stockade, 24-60. In the island Cual they make galliots and other small vessels, 20 carpenters; and in the stockade there are 16-40. In the fortalice of Iapara, 80-400. In the stockade of Rambaõ, where 12 carpenters are building small vessels, 20-80. In the Bay of Gracu, a stockade with 16-50. Upon the river of Sorrebaya, a stockade on the Mountain, 30-100. In the City of Cartacur of Neugrat, twenty leagues inland, where the King lives, a guard of 100 soldiers. It must have been during  
*P 557* the peace, because they | are almost always at war. In Malaca 150 pieces, 500 men. Years ago our travellers gave them a lesser number. In the stockade of Bangaçal, 24 pieces. On the river of Pera, a ship with 30 pieces, and 100 men. In the island Puladeden, a stockade, 16-40. On the coast of Siam, the factory of Ligor from which comes tin. A little further a factory with a few men. In Siam, a factory with some pieces and 60 men. In Tunkin, a factory with its officials. On the river Oquequ of China, a factory, 3-15. But for many years they were not allowed any commerce and they only trade in the neighbouring Islands. Now they say it is open to all, but they were not allowed a praça. In Japan, a factory with 15 men, in which | they get little profit and much contempt. In *r 554* Samatra, upon the strait of Malaca, on the river Palembem, a fortalice with 20 men and some pieces. In the river of Jambe, a factory with 20 men and some pieces. On the outer side Mina Siliða with some people and labourers, which must be [a mine] of gold. The fortalice Pedam, 40-100. A little further to the South, in the Island Perlincineo, a stockade 15-40. In Arabia at Moca a factory with 5 men. In Bagorá another, with 3. In Persia and in Comoraõ, a factory with 5 pieces, 25 men. In Aspaõ, a factory with a factor and two clerks. But after they wanted to take Queyxume, the Persian did not listen to their ambassadors, nor is he likely to receive them into his territories. In the lands of the Mogul they have the factory of Surrat, with 7 small pieces and 40 men. In Beganañar, a factory with 3 or 4 men. The same in Andabata. In Vinguriã, nine leagues to the North of Goa, a factory with 6 pieces and 10 men, and because we did not want to break with Dialxa, we never expelled them from it. In Bargalor, a factory with 4 men. In Cananor, a fortalice with 24 pieces and about 30 men. The Samori drove them from a factory of Panâne. In Oranganor, a factory with 10 pieces and some 20 men. In Cockim, a fortalice with 60 pieces and 200 soldiers. Others

say [there are] less. In Porcā, a factory with 2 or 3 officers. In Calicoulaō, a fortalice with 5 or 6 men. In Coulaō, a fortalice with 20 pieces and 60 soldiers [but usually there are less]. In Manapār, a factory with 2 or 3 officers. In Tutucurim a fortalice, about 30 pieces 100 soldiers. In the Coast of Choromandel, Negapataō with a fortalice and stockades, 20 pieces, 500 soldiers. Everybody thinks the number is too much. In Porto Novo, a factory with 6 small pieces and about 20 men. Six leagues further, a factory in Cirlur with 7 pieces and 20 men. In Tegnāpataō, a factory, 16 pieces, 50 men. In Soscrapataō, another large factory with two bastions, 16 pieces, 50 men. The fortalice of Paliacate and Muçulapataō, <sup>Poss</sup> two houses with native merchants. In Muçulapataō, a | factory with 6 pieces and about 50 men. In the same place, a fortalice which they built in time of the war which the Mogul began to make on the King of Golconda, with 16 pieces and 50 soldiers. And as they have made peace, it is not yet known whether it still lasts. On the river of Naycapur, a factory with 6 pieces, where there is a smithy with more than 50 smiths for the provision of the ships. Three leagues inland, in Palicol, another factory where they make cordage | and <sup>F 554</sup> other tackle and there will be 16 persons. In the City of Dacoraō, six leagues inland, another factory with 50 small pieces and their officers. In the City of Bimbabalapataō, another factory with 2 pieces and 7 men. Then in Bengala in the port of Baçalor, a factory with 3 men. Another in Pipli, with 3 others. Another in Vgulim with 4 pieces and about 40 men. Further inland in Cacamebezou, another with large trade and about 3 men. In Dācā the capital of Divaō, another factory of great commerce and about 10 men. In the port of Uguli there come every year about 40 sail of lesser size on account of the entrance, whence they take many provisions, cloths and quilts, which they make in their factories.

## CHAPTER 27.

## THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED

Before we speak of what the Hollanders possess in Ceylon, we shall give an account of the revenues which those lands, including the Island of Manār, yielded to the Crown of Portugal, so that one may better understand the profit which the Hollanders draw from it. As at the time we were in Ceylon,

warfare was almost continual, our possession of the four chief Dissâvas varied considerably, and very short was our hold on some of the highlands and on the lands of the opposite coast, both of Bate-calou and Triquilemalê; and lands which are plundered and ruined could not, even in time of peace, be of great profit, as the poor Natives had no cattle and other necessaries for cultivation. Added to this were the violences and injustices [already] related. The dues of these lands always served as an acknowledgment of dominion rather than as a [source of] utility to the Crown, as the Ministers of revenue did not dare to lay a greater burden on the *foreyros*. And though His Majesty passed various provisions for the government of those lands, and sent as *Vedor da fazer da Antaô Vaz Freyre*, who in the year 1613 was still in Columbo, carrying on this distribution, and though other *Vedores* of the Royal fazenda had the same commission, as is shown by the documents which are still preserved in the *casa dos contos* of Goa, I will state here only the revenues which were then distributed by the Viceroy, D. Phelipe Mascarenhas, who was ~~Pess~~ nominated Viceroy when he was | in Ceylon, and began to govern from there, at a time when the Island was already in the state which this History shows, and when what it yielded in the time of General Constantino de Sá de Noronha was already known. This I will do briefly because they are described at great length in the *tombo* which the Viceroy made of what is properly called | Ceylon, as well as of ~~Pess~~ Jafanapataô and Manâr.

The dues of Ceylon amounted to 11,264 xerafins. The petty rents of Columbo, 35. The income from the passes of Calaturê, Paniturê and Angaratota, 43 xerafins. The fishing rents of Velbari, Macône, Paygal and Angabada, 108. The revenues of tithes of palm groves and gardens, 100. The rents of the village Cutapati, 10. Of the port of Putalaô and Chilao, 41. Of the port of Caymel and Nigumbo, 267. The fishing rents of Madampê, 13. From the tithes of fish from Columbo to Mutual, 301, of the port of Aliciaô, 54. From what was recovered as customs from the port of Gâle, 70. The same from the port of Beligaô, 237, the same from Maturê, 594. From the dues and customs of Pencuarê, 50. From the Mabâda and from the Chaleas, 216. From the residents of the Agra, 208. From the Natives of Beligaô, 90. From the Custom House of Columbo, 7,608. From Decús and Marâlas and dues, 413. From the boutiques and thatched huts of S. Lourenço, 17. From 926 bares of cinnamon at the rate of 121 xerafins, which the *foreyros* paid over and above the quit rents, and five bahars as discount for Decús and other dues of the villages

Baravaca and Velepani, and 800 bahars of the Chaleas of Mabâda at the rate of 120 xerafins a bahar, 11,120 xerafins. From 23 candis three paraz and six-measures of rice at the rate of 20 xerafins a candil which was paid by the Arache of the village of Cutapiti and by the inhabitants of Agra, 400. From the thirteen amanôes of paddy at the rate of two xerafins an amanô which was paid by the inhabitants of Agra, 26. From 596 amanôes of areca at the rate of eight, which the *foreyros* paid, and one which the inhabitants of Agra paid, and 361 which the Natives of Beligâma paid, and 26 and a half which the Natives of Manananite and Gampa paid, at the rate of two xerafins an amanô, 3,865. From the eight measures of butter, three to the xerafin, which the *foreyros* paid, 24. From 33 elephants and *aleas* at an average of 1,500 xerafins, 34,500. From the seven measures of oil from the inhabitants of Agra, three measures a larin, 13. From the 3,588 lumps of iron, four to the larin, of which the *foreyros* paid 3,160, and the Chaleas of the Mabâda, 428, 299. From the thirteen bahars of cinnamon, a bahar at 220 xerafins, from the embezzlements, 2,860. From the village Galmangor of the Chaleas of Madampê, 2 larins. The whole amount, omitting the details of larins and fanoés, comes to ..... 175,073. 1. 01.

*Piso* Gemming was also rented to a Vidâna who paid 700 assorted topazes, a thousand saphires, eighteen cat's-eyes, fifty eight rubies, 8,000 stones | of all sorts, in which were included three packets of seed pearls from the Fishery. There were sold | *F 5227* 4,312 coconuts from the rents of the King's palm grove called Patangori, 150 bunches of Indian figs and 28,000 leaves of betel of Buligâma and 16 and a half lumps of steel from the custom house revenues.

#### REVENUES OF JAFANAPATAÔ

From the quit rents of Jafanapataô, 1,380 pardaos. From the quit rents of the Vani, 302. From the rents, 8,156. From the Province of Beligamo, 9,637. From the Province of Temerache, 3,491. From the Province of Badamarache, 2,953. From the Province of Pachelapali, 2,421. These rents of the Kingdom and of the Vanî amount in all to 28,341. 4. 12.

From this must be deducted 2,171 pardaos, one chacaraô and eight and a half maz<sup>1</sup> which the *foreyros* of Cardiva, Tenadiva, and those who had villages in that Kingdom used

<sup>1</sup> Sin. *mâ*, the Tamil *mâ*, or 1-20th. A Jaffna-coin of account, the twentieth of the chacaraô.

to enjoy. And there remained 26,170 pardaos, three chacarōes, and four maz 26,170 .3.04. The pensioners used also to pay 37 aleas, which when sold at an average at 250 pardaos, the least price in those days, made 9,250 pardaos, which when added to the above total make 35,420 pardaos, three chacarōes, and four maz ..... 35,420 . 3. 04.

#### REVENUES OF THE ISLAND OF MANĀR AND LANDS OF MANTOTA

The rent from tobacco, 1,535 pardaos, 1,535 at ten fanoēs a pardoao. From the custom house, 383 Pardaos. From the tobacco of Mantota, in the large island of Ceylon, 300. From the passage of that channel, 191. From the rent of the Tarega, 300. From the tithes of Mantōta, 60. From the rent of *urracas* [arrack], 50. To the dues on the cattle that went to Columbo, 13. From the quit rents of the island, 487. From the quit rents of Mantōta, 289. From 20 bahars of *xaya* rented out, 100. From the parreas of the Fishery of seed pearls, 6,000. From the fines of Moors and Pagans, 1,277. From the rent of the purse, 273. From the rent of the bazaar, 70. From the rent of the *Chapa*, 40. From the rent of the gleaning, 20. From the tithes of the island, 10. Which, with details omitted, make ..... 11,599 . 3. 00

In the lands of Mantōta, annually they hunted 30 aleas, which being sold at the price mentioned, made 7,500 pardaos, which when added to the preceding make, 19,099 pardaos and three fanoēs ..... 19,099 . 3. 00.

These were the revenues of Ceylon, Jafanapataō, and Manār, to which the lands of Mantōta were subject, though these and the lands of the Vani, and the other lowlands on the North side were greatly depopulated as a result of the preceding wars and the tyrannies of the Pagan Kings, the violences and lack of interest of the Portuguese ; and the same was to be seen in the other lands of Ceylon, as we have pointed out. | *P 550*  
*P 551* It is quite manifest that these rents are very little for so large and so fertile lands, from which are derived not only the profits of cultivation usual in other lands but also the profits of drugs and | spices of such great value, as we have declared, enough to make a Kingdom very rich, if there had been peace, population and cultivation and good government, besides the other emoluments we have left recorded.

. What the Hollanders get at present is as uncertain as the little we know of their government. What is certain is only this, that they are complete Lords of the island of Manār and that of

Mantôta annexed to that government, and of what belonged to the Kingdom of Jafanapataõ, and that their industry is such, they say, that even by means of slaves brought from the mainland, they increase the cultivation of that Kingdom ; and that they have made a monopoly of *xaya* which yields them much money. It is also affirmed as certain that they keep up all our praças and in better state than that in which we erected them. Because after having given up Batecalou and Triquilimalê, according to the convention they made with the King of Candea, because they failed to hand over Columbo and the person of Gaspar Figueyra de Seipa, as they had promised him, they were ever at war : and to avenge themselves, they retook the praças of Batecalou and Triquilimalê, and the King detained two other Ambassadors, as he had already done to Commodore Coster after the capture of Gâle.

It is however generally reported that in the other ports of the island they have built at least stockades and have made a monopoly of salt, and it will be so with the rest, as is their wont. But we do not know that they refuse salt altogether to those of Candea, or that they have power in that part to prevent them [from taking salt] from the salt pans of Paneva. About what they hold in the interior of the four chief Provinces of Maturê, Sofragaõ, Four and Seven Corlas there is notable uncertainty in what they say ; and we know from experience that they do not bring to this India any fine cinnamon of Ceylon ; and it does not seem likely that if they were Lords of it, they would reject the profit [they would get] in this India. However the same Hollander pilot and others of their nation say as follows :—

They have in Manâr a fortalice with 20 pieces and about 80 soldiers. In Calpitim, a stockade, 10 pieces, 30 soldiers. In Nigumbo, a fortalice, 20-80. In Columbo, a fortalice, 140 pieces and about 500 soldiers. Others give it less. In Malvana, a stockade, 20-80. Two leagues further, on the same river, the stockade of Gurbeble, 10-30. Three leagues further inland, on the mountain Popê, a stockade, 6-12. In Ceytavaca, a fortalice 18-80. In Ruanelâ, the last fortalice 20-400. | *Fisses* Another six leagues to the North of Malvana, a stockade at the foot of the mountain Dantôta. The stockade of Arandurê, 16-50. In Paneturê, a stockade, 8-20. In Calaturê, a large stockade, 20-50. On the river of Alicaõ, another stockade, 10 and about 30 soldiers. In Belitôte, another stockade, 5-20, *Poss* In Ilangot, six leagues | further, another stockade, 5-20. In Birbirim, a stockade, 6-15. In Guindurê, another, 6-15. In Gâle, a fortalice 80 pieces, 300 soldiers besides free people ; [here] also our travellers give it less. In Biligaõ, a stockade,

5-15. In Maturé, a large stockade, 24-40. And here they say cinnamon is collected. Two leagues further, the stockade of Dondra, 6-15. In Sofragaõ, a large stockade, 20-80. Near the sea, the stockade of Nivela with about 20 lascarins. The stockade, Sinicaletetendel, 16-60. Batecalou with 40 pieces 150 soldiers besides free people. This is the place of exile for criminals, where they saw much timber. In the bay of Velosbay, some lascarins on watch. In Triquilimalé, after the war with the French, a large praça with 100 pieces and about 350 soldiers. In the Bahia dos Arcos, on top of the Hill, a fortalice with 32 pieces 30 soldiers ; and on the one and the other side of the entrance, two breast works each with 16 pieces, and even thus they could ill prevent an entrance, even though they had 60 men, on account of the great distance. On the side of Velosbay in the south, two stockades, Cuchar and Arsalari, to recover the taxes, and in each 16 pieces and 40 soldiers. In the Ponta das Pedras, a fortalice with 12 pieces and about 40 soldiers. The fortalice of Jafanapataõ 40-50. The fortalice of Caes, 16-40. They say that there go to Europe every year 14 or 15 ships, (we spoke above at great length according to the current reports of the Portuguese) with great wealth, and that with great and small they will have in India 180 tall ships. And as in the ships which are altogether for trade, they do not carry more than 50 men, and these mixed with men of India, one can form an opinion of the number of people they have more or less according to the various turns we have given to this information ; of the great distance and distribution of these garrisons, not only throughout India but also in Ceylon ; of the slowness with which they will be able to get an army together in this island, from the garrisons without fresh help ; and the infantry they can withdraw from them, leaving them in some security against any maritime power whatsoever, if they are attacked unawares. Finally, <sup>p 557</sup> in the bay of Jacatrá, under the shadow of an island beyond range of the fortalice, they always have about 20 to 25 sail of tall ships, ready for any emergency of trade or war, as well because it is necessary to go to reinforce them, as to cause fear and to make it understood that they are ready to hasten in case of any invasion, though it is not possible to equip so many ships with the men of those garrisons, ever exposed to the proximity of two enemies such as the Mataraõ and the King of Bantaõ, who was recently dispossessed of his praça, which is within the same bay and is a little more than three leagues from Jacatrá, as the Aldea Galega from Lisbon. And it does not seem to me proper to disclose here the manner in which the Governor Nuno Alvarez Botelho undertook to take Batavia and Jacatrá.

P 993 | And I conclude this work by saying that according to information, the Hollander has carried out in Ceylon all that the Portuguese had planned, because we talk and they act. And they have not added to the prazas after they lost Tayuaõ and other garrisons in the island Formosa, except what they took from us ; and they will have to-day a few more men in fleets and garrisons than the estimate of Amarao Rodriguez in the time of the Viceroy Pedro da Silva. And if this information about Ceylon is certain, they do not at present contemplate the conquest of the highlands, nor do they cease to draw very large profits from the lowlands they hold. And as they have such an esteem of this new Kingdom, they will fortify the ports somehow or other, without however being able to avoid the possibility of a landing in some of them or in the extensive shores, as they now and then did. Nor do they allow any Catholic priest to go to the rescue of that forsaken Christianity, which good Christians greatly deplore, when they have occasion to come on board any of our vessels, and this must be what will animate Portugal most of all to recover that island.

---

*P 804      SECOND PROTESTATION OF THE AUTHOR*

In conformity with the Apostolic Decree of the Most Holy Pope, Urban VIII., issued in the year 1625, and his declaration made in the year 1631, and its confirmation in the year 1634, after completing this work of the 'Conquest, temporal and spiritual, of Ceylon', I declare that though I speak therein of virtues, miracles and martyrdoms, and of Men of Holy life, approving their spirit as that of men of great virtue, it is not my intention to assert them with any greater authority *p 804* than that of History and human testimony, and the fallible judgment of an individual person, though the documents I follow when compared with each other, show that [there is] moral certitude. And I do not pretend to assign them any cult or veneration whatever, or reputation, or fame for Sanctity or Miracles or martyrdoms, based on the authority of the Catholic Roman Church, which in this matter has not yet interposed her irrefragable decision, to which I submit my judgment in all things related in this work. And I desire all to understand that it is my intention to observe in its entirety and inviolate, the aforesaid Decree in its proper meaning as has been declared and confirmed.

---

*ADVERTISEMENT*

This Copy was made with all accuracy, and exactly as the Original, which, as stated in the beginning, exists in the Public Library of this Court.

Rio, 19 October, 1844.

AGOSTINHO MARQUES PERDIGAO MALHEIRO.

# INDEX

## A.

Abeanam, Abeanaõ (Abhaya), King of C., 6, 18  
 Abenga, 150  
 Aboy, 555  
 Abraham, 160, 167  
 Abranches, D. Alvaro de, 511  
 Abrantes, Thome de, Capt., 273  
 Abreu, Alexandre de, 481  
 Abreu, Antonio de, 944; sent with a message, 946  
 Abreu, Bernado de, Capt., 495  
 Abreu, S. J., Father Boaventura de. arrives in Jafanap. and dies, 694  
 Abreu, Catherina de, accompanies Dona Catherina to Candeia, 482  
 Abreu, Christovaõ de, Capt., wrecked, 436  
 Abreu, Inofrõ de, Capt., 233  
 Abreu, Joao de, nicknamed 'the Devil', captures standard of Raju, 339; at Cota, 348  
 Abreu, Pedro de, 792.  
 Abreu, Pedro de, Modeliar (Ilangaon, 590), at Uruvere, 512; wounded, 521, 522  
 Abreu, Simao de, Syndic, Jafanap., 670, 672  
 Abreu, Vitorio de, Capt., attacks stockade of Buralacota, 564; scales Balana, 578; at Manicravare, 585; relieves Seytavaca, 592  
 Abreu de Freitas, Antonio de, Capt., 918  
 Abreu Ferrao, Joao de, Capt. of Canasture, 913-14; in last siege of Col., 960, 966, 969, 970, 971, 974, 975, 976, 978; wounded, 980  
 Abreu Godinho, Manoel de, Admiral, in last siege of Col., 944, 979; killed, 980  
 Abreu da Trota, Luis de, Factor, at Ruanela, 585, 586  
 Abulense, commentator of Scripture, 166  
 Abunhados (adscript slaves), 739  
 Acab Rajeru II., king of C., 109  
 Acargaõ (Aracagaõ), Apuami; revolt of 1594; at Seytavaca, 494; Gurubibile, 494; Fetan, 495; Raygaõ, 504, pursued by D. Corera, captured and killed, 508

Acayna (Hakahinna), 44  
 'Accomodessan', 33  
 Acelania, king of C., 11  
 Achassen, Modeliar, arrest of, 319  
 Achem, 457  
 Achuta, Acuta, king of Bianaga, 383, 384  
 Acomivana (Akrimana), Port. army at, 860, 873  
 Acouraça (Akuressa); Port. at, 862, 869; Holl. at, 870; battle, 871, 873, 874  
 Acumena (Hakmana), 874; Port. at 875  
 Acuta, see Achuta  
 Adacim, meaning of, 324  
 Adalao, 110  
 Adam's Peak, 28, 37-42, 59, 149; Pilgrimages to, 459; Court of King, 28; footprint, 120; Maduna of Uva at, 624; Mota Galvaõ at, 862  
 Adapanduna Corla, Andapanduna (Hafidapandunna korale), 43; lands of, 537  
 Adegaletota, see Agaletota  
 Adelantados, 109  
 Aden, 1116  
 Adigar, 33, 54, 98; (Jafana, 54); of village, 97; Chief Adigar (Candeia) 605; of Dis. of Mature, 747, 784  
 Adil-Shah, 246  
 Adirippu-palliya (Wolvendaal), 432  
 Adivira of Panagamaõ, baptism of, 659  
 Adi-Vixnu, 151  
 Adi-Vrna, 150  
 Adobes, 84  
 adukku, 1018  
 aduttu (arutos), 1069, 1158  
 Aemperemal (Thome Fernandez), 670  
 Affonso, Andre, 977  
 Affonso, Antonio, Modeliar, 820  
 Affonso, Dom, Prince of Ceylon, baptized at Goa, 269, 275, 276  
 Affonso Henriquez, king of Portugal (1140-1185), 24  
 Affonso, Pedro, Capt., 250  
 Affonso, Pedro, Modeliar, 437; attacks Raju, 439; at Candeia, 482; intercepted letter of king, 484; fell in action, 574; his son killed at Candeia, 574

Afonso da Gama, Joao, Capt., 584,  
     592  
 Afonso de Aguiar, Pedro, 185  
 Afonso de Castro, D. Martim, 1101  
 Afonso Carneiro, Martim, Capt., 450  
 Afonso Coutinho, Luis, Capt., 808 ;  
     Malvana, 809  
 Afonso de Souza, Martim, Expedition  
     (1537), 213-216 ; expeditn.  
     (1538), 216-219 ; Columbo, 214 ;  
     Beadala, 217 ; receives loan from  
     king, 219 ; Gov. of India (1542-  
     1545), 235, 244, 245, 256, 262, 275 ;  
     expedtn. to Jafanap., 101, 250-254 ;  
     sent reinforc. (1544), 257 ; and  
     Xavier, 247-253 ; and Xaga Raja,  
     251-253 ; saying of, 741  
 Affurtao, port of, 31  
 Africa, description of, 1106-1115 ;  
     spices of, 1111  
 Agadalapa, Aqua di Lupo, Agoa de  
     Lubo (Wolvendaal), 452  
 Agaletota, Galetota, Belitota, Galitota  
     (Etgaletota), strong place of, 543,  
     548 ; fortified, 538, 539, 542 ;  
     disadvantages of, 545 ; reduced in  
     size, 545 ; losses of Raju at, 545 ;  
     Sinhalees at, 550 ; captured, 551 ;  
     dismantled, 559  
     river of (Maha Oya), 538, 559  
*Aga Bruma*, 111  
 Agru, 159, 160  
 Ages of the world, 113  
 Aggeddi, 8  
 Agra, 84, 118  
 Agra (*āgrā*), 4, 36, 43 ; dues from,  
     1192, 1193 ; villages of, 1069, 1070  
 Agragama (Akaragama), 36  
 Aguiar, Francisco de, 725  
 Aguiar, Jorge de, Factor of Col., 280  
 Aguiar, Lourenço de, Capt., 602  
 Aguiar, Luis de, Capt., 352  
 Aguiar, Sebastião de, Capt., 479 ;  
     killed, 489  
 Aguiar Coutinho, Lourenço de,  
     Capt., 578, 584  
 Aguila, 69  
 Aguilar, Jorge de, 726  
 Aguilha, 69, 1014  
*Āham Brahama*, 111  
 Ahangama, see Anjama  
 Aireo, 110  
 Aita Bandar, Capt. of 'Grand  
     Stockade', 425  
 Ajax, 50  
     'Ajax', 302  
 Ajuda MS., 32, 33, 34, 35, 37, 45,  
     60, 64, 67, 105, 258

Ákara, Akaragama (see Agra), Agra-  
     gama, Ecerajama  
 Akrimana, see Acomivana  
 Akureasa, see Accourça  
 Alaca Modeliar, 319  
 Alagiyawanna Mukavchi, 757  
 Alagueçera (Alakeswara), 24  
 Alagueçera (Alakeswara), 24  
 Alagueçera (Alakeswara), 24  
 Alaguem, Modeliar of Jafanap., 465  
 Alakeswara, see Alagueçera  
 Alapila (*elapilla*), 116  
 Alapiti (Attapitiya), see Atapiti  
 Alapiti, church of St. Joseph at,  
     695.  
 Álaua, Alava, Lahua (Alauwa) ; on  
     frontier of Four Kories, 47 ;  
     stockade erected at, 535 ; Capts.  
     of, 555, 556 ; dismantled, 559 ;  
     Azevedo at, 536 ; S. Pinhao at,  
     557 ; ambush at, 594 ; Port. army  
     at, 810, 816, 817, 861, 874, 911 ;  
     Mascarenhas at, 861, 869, 876 ;  
     Guerreiro at, 912, 914, 925  
     river of (Maha Oya), 794  
 Alavata (Halawata, Chilaw), see  
     Chilao  
 Albarada, 405  
 Albuquerque, Affonso de, first Gov.  
     of India (1509-1515), succeeded  
     Almeida, 183, 232 ; captured Goa  
     (1510), 144, 185, 197, 210, 305  
 Albuquerque, Diogo de, Capt., 792  
 Albuquerque, Fernão de (1578),  
     Capt. of Col., 430-431 ; Gov. of  
     India, 690, 731, 1054  
 Albuquerque, Francisco de, Capt.  
     980.  
 Albuquerque, Jorge de, son of Fernão  
     de, Gov. of India, 732 ; Capt.  
     of Col., 732 ; is made Capt.-Gen.  
     of Ceylon (1620-23), 732 ; arrests  
     NayDapu, 733 ; is himself arrested,  
     733 ; harshness of, 734 ; complains  
     against the Vedor da faz, 741  
 Albuquerque, Lourenço de, Capt.,  
     792  
 Albuquerque, Mathias de, Conde de  
     Alegrete, 9 ; arrives in Col. 437 ;  
     in action, 438 ; Viceroy (1591-  
     1597), 101 ; withdraws revenues  
     from Franciscans, 332 ; sends  
     reinforcement, 446  
 Alcacer-Quibir, 880  
 Alcaide-Mor (Chief Magistrate) of  
     Columbo, 198, 206, 253, 267, 268,  
     385, 308, 313, 420, 437 ; see also  
     Antonio de Brito, Francisco de  
     Miranda, Nuno Freyre de An-  
     drade, Antonio Dias de Lomba

- Alea (*Akyr*), 52, 73, 74, 75, 440, 504, 505, 506, 507, 569, 573, 899, 1016, 1024, 1193, 1194
- Alegrete, Condo de, see Albuquerque, Mathias de
- Aleixo, Dom, Modeliar, conspirator, 756; deserts at Badulla, 774; at Malvana, 808; in flight, death, 809; wife of, captured, 809
- Alelusa (Haloluwa), 70, 487
- Alexander the Great, 151, 173
- Alexander Severus, 242
- Ali Abraham, 210
- Alia*, see *Alpa*
- Alicaõ (Alutgama), 2, 24, 830, 860, 862; port of, 31, 717, 1157; port dues, 318; ravaged by Port., 425, 429, 430; Modeliar Samaracon at, 603; Moors at, 865; church of St. Anthony, 717; Antunes at, 915, 918, 922; Capt. of, 717, 1037; fish tithes, 1192; Hollanders at, 915; masters of, 924, 931, 938; Hollander stockade, 1195; river of, boundary between Port. and Holl. territories, 895; bridge, 895
- Alicur Corle (Alutkuru Korale), 46, 422; revolt in, 25; subjugated by Javira Bandar, 471; Courupu Modeliar at, 472; Gaspar Correa at, 531; native place of Cangara, 591; men of, 531.
- Alliance against Port., 262
- Alligators (crocodiles) in Cota lake, 29; in rivers, 42, 77, 1005
- Almasia, 430, 455, 503, 549, 553, 964, 991
- Almeyda, Antonio de, 724
- Almeyda, Augustinho de, Ouvidor of Cochim, 854
- Almeyda, Diogo de, Capt., 183, 214, 217; brought reinforcement, 301
- Almeyda, Dom Francisco de, First Viceroy of India (1505-1509), 181, 232, 1131; report on Ceylon, 182, 306, 383; death of, 185, 799; son of, see Don Lourenço de; nephew of, see Don Jorge de
- Almeyda, Dom Francisco, Capt., 352
- Almeyda, Goncalo de, 467
- Almeyda, Dom Jorge, nephew of Viceroy, 799; Capt.-Gen. of C. first term (1631-1633), 102, 755, 785-797; wrecked, 785; in Maldivas, 786; Cochim, 786; Ceylon, 786; complaints against, 796; wounded in a fracas, 797; planned Mapana bastion, 797; deposed, 797; reinstated, 799; recalled, 799; second term (1635-1636), 799
- Almeyda, Dom Lourenço de, son of Viceroy; discovers Ceylon, 26, 176-183; date of, 26, 232; treaty with Cota, 195; gave coat-of-arms to Columbo, 309; erected first factory and chapel in Ceylon, 181; death of, 184
- Almeyda, Luis de, Capt., 578, 584
- Almeyda, Vasco de, Capt., 88
- Almeyda Catral, Pero de, Capt., 495, 508, 511
- Almeyda de Carvalho, Antonio, Capt., 824
- Almeyda de Vasconcelhos, Alvaro de, Capt., 566, 584
- Almorarife, 54
- Aloes, 69, 1114
- Alonso de Aguilhar, Joaõ, Capt., 914
- Alpoem, Pero de, 184, 402
- Alpoen, Francisco de, Capt., 188
- Alphonso, Dom, Vanniah of Trinquimal, 245
- Alpitivela (Alpitiwela ?), 932
- Altonor, Aludnorath (Alutnuwara), 563; pagode of, garrisoned, 574, 575, 583
- Aludnorath, see above
- Alugaõ (Atulugama), pagode of, attacked, 427; Domingos Correa at, 501; Navarosna at, 510; lands of, reduced, 515
- Aut Corla (Alutkuri Korale), see Alicur
- Autugama, see Alicaõ
- Autukuru Korale, see Alicur
- Autunuwara, see Altonor
- Alvares, Antonio, resident of Jaffnap., 662, 667, 670; house of, 630; Syndic, 683
- Alvarez, Christovaõ, 470
- Alvarez, Domingos, Capt., 440
- Alvarez, Father Gonçalo, cleric of Col., 782
- Alvarez, Rodrigo, Capt., 438, 440
- Alvarez, Silvester, 434
- Alvarez de Atouguia, Nuno, Capt., 440
- Alvarez de Azevedo, Luis, Capt., 872; killed, 898
- Alvarez Breao, Joaõ, Capt., 792, 793; brought reinforce. to Jajap., 855; at Nigumbo, 859; Caleture, 861; Alicaõ, 862; Alaua, 874; in command of a detachment, 860;

- besieged Gale, 881 ; Captain-Major, 885, 889 ; Capt. of Columbo, 892 ; death, 892  
 Alvarez Cabral, Pedro, 182  
 Alvarez Freyre, Pedro, 346  
 Alvarez Negroyra, Fernão de, Capt., 397 ; captured mother of Madune, 398  
 Alvarez Pereira, Dom Nuno, son of Conde do Feyra, 102, 620 ; Capt.-Gen. of C. (1616-1618), 45, 67, 620-621, 736 ; in command of a fleet, 615 ; made peace with Candea, 621, 790 ; left Ceylon for Sofala, 621 ; introduced Capt. of General's Guard, 1073  
 Alvarez da Silva, Henrique, Capt., 405 ; Ruamela, 496, 497 ; wounded 505  
 Alvarez Teixeira, Nuno, Ouvidor of Manähr, 467  
 Alvarez do Siquoyra, Rodrigo, brother of Thome de Souza Arconches, at Calaturo, 511  
 Alvaro de Purificação, Friar, 725  
 Ana, 848  
 Amador Rangel, Friar, killed, 655  
 Amalâla Suripudi (Sumanala Sri-pada), 39  
 Amanoës, amanoës (amunams), 63, 69, 744, 754, 793, &c.  
 Amara Dunga (Amaratunga ?) Ara-cho, Jafanap., 465  
 Amaral de Menezes, Antonio, Capt., 859 ; Mature, 862, 864, 867 ; Vacuela, 863, 899 ; Gale, 899 ; Madampo (1639) wounded, 823 ; Capt.-Major of Jafanap., 934, 947, 964, 968 ; Capt.-Gen., Manähr (1656-8), 993, 995 ; death, 995  
 Anaral, Joseph, 792  
 Antasia, 306  
 Ambalawa, hill of (Embalawa), 810  
 Ambassador of Cota at Lisbon, 234-5  
     of Bonoca Bau to Gdá, 211, 268  
     of Darma Pala to Goa, 410  
     of Madune to Goa, 281  
     of Portuguese to Cota, 178  
     of Portuguese to Candea, 789, 790, 795, 895  
     of Candea to Goa, 790, 795, 797, 798  
 Ambaz, 517  
 Amber, 35, 1113  
 Ambolam, 29, 907, 1090 : pass of Cota, 29, 338, 342, 403, 410, 415 ; of Japanale, 585  
 Amiceyra, Pero de, 724  
 Amiduru, 180  
 Amir, 184  
 Amok, Amoucos (amok), 452, 504, 634  
 Amora, 7  
 Anuduru, 180  
 Amuk, 452  
 Amunaga Sina, Amunazina (Damunu-gashinna), 546, 556  
 Amunams, see Amanoës  
 Amurates, Ottoman, 243  
 Anacoti, statuary of Jafanap., 667, 669, 670, 671  
 Anadi Ávata, 150  
 Ana-íra, 1092  
 Anaulandana (Anavilundan), church of the Society of Jesus, 719, 1155  
 Anaximenes, 109  
 Ançiapatu (Harasiyapattuwa), Dis-sava of, 58, 61-62  
 Anda, 1015 ; fields, 1017  
 Andagalitota, 548 ; see Agaletota  
 Andagemunu, king of C., 13  
 Andapanduna (Hañdapandunna), see Adapanduna  
 Andaxarcaraõ, 113  
 Andayaña Amaracon, Modeliar, Jafanap., 484 ; killed by mutineers, 467  
 Andor, 418, 504, 569, 723, 725, 758, 787  
 Andrade Bringal, Manoel I', Capt. of Col., 584  
 Andre, Affonso, killed, 410  
 Andro, Dom. Modeliar : interpreter of Sa, 754, 756 ; secretary, 762 ; conspired, 756 ; drowned, 755  
 Andre de S. Joseph, Friar, Jafanap., 661  
 Andre de Loureiro, Friar, Caes, 628  
 Andre de Souza, Friar, Candea, 705  
 Andre the Englishman, Friar, killed, Jafanap., 656  
 Andre Manoel, 980  
 Andre de S. Maria, Bishop of Cochim, 333, 661, 1084  
 Andre de Monoel, Francisco de, 601  
 Andugal (Handugala), capital of Seven-Corlas, Tribule at, 324  
 Andugaõ (Dandugama), church of St. Paschal, 719  
 Anes de Freitas, Gomez, 566  
 Angabada (Engabadda), 1018, 1192  
 Angaratota, see Anguratota  
 Angara, 105, 106  
 Angaea, 668  
 Angediva, Braganza at, 352 Furtado at, 447

- Angelicus, Thomas, 166  
 Angelins, 77  
 Angelo de Sal-ador, Friar, 664, 665  
 Angola, 1107  
 Angula, 809  
 Angurat̄ta, Dissava of Mature at. 821 ; Port. garrison of, 896 ; Hollander stockade, 908 ; siege of, 908 ; pass of, 908 ; cinnamon, 908 ; revenue, 1192  
 Anjame (Ahangama), Church of Our Lady of Refuge, 716  
 Anjos, Fria- Mancel dos, 161  
 Ankeliya, 1052  
 Anne, St., church of, Calane, 714  
 Anneus Proclamus, 14  
 Antana Dio Pandar, Queen of Javira of Candeia, 704  
 Antanassin, daughter of Dona Catharina and Don Joao (Wimaladharma), Queen of Senerat, 788  
 Antsō, Dom, son of Modeliar Dom Cosme, 762  
 Antas, 72  
 Antiquary and Literary Register, Ceylon, 39, 49, 68, 181, 244, 245, 829, 363, 453, 757  
 Anthony, Saint, banner of, 343 ; eve of, 404 ; protection of, 789 ; image of, 867 ; church of, Bohubaranda, 715, Alicaō, 717  
 Antonio, Friar, 679  
 Antonio Affonso, Modeliar, see Affonso Antonio  
 Antonio de S. Bernardino, Friar, Rector of S. Joāo, Caes, 628, 630, 631, 679  
 Antonio de Coimbra, Friar, 541  
 Antonio de Madre de Deos, Friar, guardian of Cananore, 447  
 Antonio de Madre de Deos, 'Silvestre', 586 ; killed, 587  
 Antonio de N. Senhora, Rector of Candeia, 692  
 Antonio Peyxoto, Friar, Rector of Pelitotá, 713  
 Antonio de Santiago, Friar of Candea, 607  
 Antonio de S. Maria, Friar, Bishop of Cochim, 577  
 Antonio da S. Maria, Friar, 653 ; Rector of Jafanap., 680, 685 ; informant of Queyroz, 640, 671  
 Antonio de S. Phelipe, Friar, Jafanap, 641  
 Antonius Marcus, 236  
 Antonius Pius, 236  
 Antunes, Alyxo, 250  
 Antunes, Father Francisco, cleric, 256  
 Antunes, Francisco, Capt. at Gale, 814 ; Dissava of Gale Corla, 830, 831 ; Dia. of Mature, 834, 839, 870, 908, 909, 911, 939 ; at Canasture, 912 ; Calature, 916, 917, 940 ; recovers territory, 922 ; at Pitigali, 923 ; at Morro, 939 ; death and burial, 941  
 Antunes, Lourenço, 201  
 Antunes, Miguel, Capt. of Valeevale, 575 ; eyes scooped out at Candeia, 592  
 Antunes, Thome, Capt., 877, 878  
 Anula Raja, King of C., 13  
 Anurajapuro, ancient capital, 12-15, 46 ; abandoned, reasons, 16, 46 ; situation, 46 ; ruins of, 12 ; Friar Negraō at, 12 ; lands of, 1159 ; pilgrimages, 1155  
 Apas (*Appa*), 96  
 Apitigaō Corla (Hapitigam Korale), 43, 204, 287, 288, 602  
*Appa*, see Apas  
 Appolonius, 162, 172, 236  
 Appuhamy, see Apuami  
 Apuami, 114, 144, 174, 478, 494, 508  
 Apulerte, port of, 31  
 Apulome, port of, 67, 68  
 Apulome, bay of, 31  
 Aputulo, king of Cota, 27  
 Arabia Felix, 167, 1116  
 Arab name for Ceylon, 3  
 Arabs, 16, 298  
 Aracagaō, see Acargaō  
 Arachana (Archiney), 156  
 Arache (Arachchy), 48, 60, 98, 104, 427, 510, 641 ; ill-treatment of, 1010 ; treachery of, 1012  
 Arcagaō Apuami, see Acargaō  
 Araia, King of C., 27  
 Arandepola, hill of, 926  
 Arandure (Arrandara), 603 ; Port. at, 829 ; Sinhalese at, 925 ; Figueyra at, 910, 911, 912, 913, 926 ; Hollander stockade, 930, 1195  
 Arasa Kasari, see Hariquo Jari Pandar  
 Arattanai, 52  
 Aratus, 241  
 Araujo, Christovaō, Capt., 249  
 Araujo, Diogo de, 222  
 Araujo, Gaspar da, clerk of Factory, Columbo, 198  
 Araujo Pereyra, Gaspar de, casado of Columbo, elected triumvir, Columbo, 906, 909 ; at Calature, 918 ; Capt.-Major of Field 922,

- 925, 945; resigned, 923; in last siege of Columbo, 943, 958, 969; Captain of Columbo during seige, 979, 980; age, 979
- Arcadius**, 14
- Archipelago**, islands of, 4
- Araciapatu** (*Harasiyapattuwa*), Dis-sava of, 58, 61-62
- Areca**, 65, 69, 71, 77; duty on, 729; price of, 1017, 1026, 1027, 1030, 1034, 1054; monopoly of, 1095-6; arrows made of, 99; where found, 35
- Aretane**, 52
- Arez**, Silvestre de, Capt. of Jafanap. 458, 459, 460
- Aria**, 49
- Arianus**, 25
- Ariavansa**, 49, 195
- Ariaxaca Varati** (*Arya-chakra-varti*), which see
- Aripo**, 31; church of, 664
- Aripo (*aripu*)**, 672
- Aristothenes**, 25
- Aristotle**, 59, 109
- Arli**, 933, 1001
- Aroba**, 1028
- Arpa**, Hollander Capt., 818
- Arquebus**, 95, 99, 805
- Arracaõ** (*Arrakan*), 114, 120, 141
- Arrack**, 998; revenue from, 1194
- Arrandara**, see Arandure
- Arrays**, Francisco, Adjutant, 980
- Arrian**, 3
- Arrows**, Sinhalese, 99
- Arsalari**, Hollander stockade at, 1196
- Artiga**, Christovaõ de, 442
- Arucus**, 1040, 1049
- Arugus**, 1018
- Atus**, 48
- Arutos** (*aduttu*), 1069
- Arya-chakra-varthi**, 49
- Asela Raja**, King of Q., 13
- Aselatika**, king of Rajapure, 26
- Asia**, descript. of, 1115-1122
- Aspao**, 84
- Aspilberg** (*Spilbergen*), Jorge, 745
- 'Assault of the Venetians', 509
- Assegay**, 567, 952
- Ascelania**, King of C., 12
- Ascuocadaõ**, 1017
- Assyrians**, 109
- Astana Bander**, son of Don Joao and Dona Catherine, 604; killed by Senerat, 609
- Astrology** of the Chingalas, 109, 114
- Astrologv.** masters of, 1085
- Atacalaõ Corla** (*Atakalan Corla*), 36
- Atucoria** (*Atukorala*), 33, 1015, 1016, 1027, 1068
- Ataide**, D. Alvaro dc, Capt., 891; brought reinforcement, 862; at Calature, 875; Capt.-Major of the Field, 892-913
- Ataide**, D. Luis de, Viceroy (1578-1581), 423, 381, 429
- Ataide**, Manoel de, casado of Manar, 458
- Ataide**, Manoel de, Cap. of foist, 554, 560; at Balana, 578
- Ataide**, Tristao de, son of Capt. of Manar, 450, 454
- Atalantis**, 3
- Atalispaua** (*Hatalispahuwa*), stockade of, 559, 564; Capt., 564; garrison, 564; survivors, 567
- Atanagala** (*Attanagala*), 472; pass, 531, 587; pagode, 814; stockade, 532, 586; Lopez d' Souza at, 481; Port. at, 496, 515, 578, 603
- Atapata** (*Atapattuwa*) 419; of king of Candea, 427, 497, 654, 655; of king of Jafanap., 452; of Madune, 419; or Raju, 439
- Atapata Modeliar**, 427, 497
- Atapiti**, Atapati, Alapiti (*Attapitiya*), on frontiers of Candea, 892; Port. army at, 561, 803, 892; Port. fort at, 561, 571, 580, 590; Capt. of, 591; capitulated, 591; Azevedo at, 562, 583; Almeyda at, 798; king of Candea at, 798; Mascarenhas at, 810; peace made at, 798; Soarez at, 578; Melo at, 803
- river of (Maha Oya), 798
- Ateri** (*Attadiya*), 421
- Atouguia**, conde de, 431
- Attadiya**, see Ateri
- Attanagala**, see Atanagala
- Attanagoda Appuhamy**, 44
- Attapitiya**, see Atapiti
- Atukorala**, see Atacorala
- Atulugam Korale**, see Atulugaõ
- Atulugaõ Corla** (*Atulugam Korale*), 36, 46, 496, 932
- Augustine**, Hermits of St., in Col., 257, 343, 577, 782, 971, 1093; church of, at Ramacura (Rambukkana), 718; Mepana, 720; parish of, 720; at Candea, 803, 1069
- Augustus**, 226
- Auua** (*Auwa*), 105
- Austes**, 946
- Aval**, 96
- Avano**, 114
- Avela**, 96

- Avelar, Fernão de, 440  
 Avelar, Francisco de, 883  
 Aveyras, conde de, 314  
 Azorca, 302  
*Ayah* (Ayo), 183, 929  
 Ayala, Diogo de, 217, 250  
 Anagaya, 567, 952  
 Azambuja, Diogo de, 422  
 Azambuja, Joaõ de, 224  
 Azevedo, Augustinho de, 341  
 Azevedo, Antonio de, 257  
 Azevedo, Constantino de, 395  
 Azevedo, Frncisco de, 198  
 Azevedo, Gaspar de, Capt., 542,  
     547, 592, 600; valour of, 543, 581;  
     at Mutapali, 556; Galbodagama,  
     575; Talampiti, 576; Balane, 578;  
     in retreat, 584; Nigumbo, 592;  
     Manicravare, 593; killed, 593;  
 Azevedo, D. Jeronimo de, well read  
     man, 499; Capt.-Major of Malavar,  
     474, four times, 494; arrives in  
     Ceylon, 442; Captain-General of  
     Ceylon (1594-1611), 33, 45, 46,  
     101, 495-617, 792; built Mal-  
     vana, 45, Pendangore, 536,  
     Manicravare, 537; rebuilt Seyta-  
     aca, 496; destroys temple of  
     Triquilmale, 65; retreats from  
     Seytavaca, 503-507; famous  
     retreat from Balana, 580-588;  
     brought Jesuits, 577; acclaimed  
     king of Portugal in Ceylon, 529;  
     holds Assembly of Malvana, 1008,  
     1010; policy of, 517; epigram of,  
     947; cruelties of, 495, occasion  
     for, 792, excuses for, 493, Apologia  
     for, 617; complaints against, 610;  
     victories of, 612; made peace with  
     Candeia, 615; last exploits in  
     Ceylon, 616; attempts on Candeia,  
     550, 565, 577-580, 612-615, 806,  
     899; at Nagaõ, 495; Regavato,  
     495, 511; Gurubebbe, 495, 502;  
     Seytavaca, 496, 504, 517, 550;  
     Columbo, 496, 500, 513, 554, 558;  
     Manicravare, 496, 498, 537, 538,  
     546, 554, 603; Orna, 506;  
     Urugamel, 508; Malvana, 511,  
     532, 541, 576; Calature, 511, 513;  
     Seven-Corlas, 539; Mutapali, 546,  
     551; Amunuga Sina, 546; Divala,  
     562; Atapiti, 562; Mature, 603,  
     607; Balane, 613, 614; Viceroy of  
     India (1611-1617), 620, 622, 461;  
     taken prisoner to Lisbon, 616;  
     death and funeral, 616; Life of,
- 618; and Manoel de Azevedo,  
     half brother, 509, 521, 545, 607  
 Azevedo, D. Jeronimo, son-in-law  
     of Seixas Cabreyra, 782; ambas-  
     sador to Candeia, 895  
 Azevedo, D. Josõ de, 249  
 Azevedo, Luis de, 572  
 Azevedo, Maria de, 640  
 Azevedo, D. Manoel de, half brother  
     of the Capt.-Gen., 509, 521, 522,  
     545, 558; Capt.-Major of Field,  
     546, 547, 558, 585-601, 1061;  
     deposed, 607; at Ruanela, 593;  
     end of, 607-8  
 Azevre, 1115
- B.
- Babarenda, see Bohubaranda  
 Babel, 160  
 Babilo, Antonio de, Capt., 910  
 Babylonian clocks, 106  
 Bac, 107, 108  
 Bacqueis (Wackwella), 863, 864  
 Bactri, 169  
 Bada, 105, 106  
     of Boemedechanda, 725  
     of Morro, 723  
 Badawedilla, 33; see Paravenia  
 Badaga, conversion of a, 484  
 Badaga, see Javira Bandar (Manam-  
     peruma Mohottala)  
 Badagas (Vadagar), 50, 53, 70, 281,  
     360, 394, 485; in Jafanapatam,  
     265, 295, 446, 454, 629, 634; in  
     service of Raju, 443; in Candeia,  
     485, 536, 552, 595; cavalry, 202  
 Badges of castes, 97  
 Badule (Badulla), principality of, 32;  
     metropolis of Candeia, 58; metro-  
     polis of Uva, 63, 765; sacked  
     and burnt, 771; Sa at, 771-774;  
     Portuguese prisoners at, 789  
 Badmarache, 1193  
 Bahar, 34, 729  
 Bahia dos Arcos, 31, 68, 727, 734  
 Bainha Cardoso, Joaõ, Capt. Dissava  
     of Mature, 712, 938, 943  
 Bak, see Bac  
 Balacia, King of C., 13  
 Balagate, 170, 297, 1117  
 Belala (Vellala), 50, 1000, 1089; see  
     also Belala  
 Balané, 59, 482, 563, 569, 767, 926;  
     key to Candeia, 61, 430, 578; on  
     frontier of Candeia, 569; betrayed  
     to Raju by Wirasundara, 705;  
     battle, 435, 705; Portuguese  
     fortalice at, 527; Capt. 613, 614,

- 619, chaplain, 698; Kandyans at, 564; Kandyans fortalice, 570, taken by Port., 579, abandoned, 581, again garrisoned, 614, attacked by king of Candea, 580, 619; claimed by Senerat, 620; Tribune at, 292; Madune at, 430; D. Joao at, 571; Lopes de Souza at, 487; Azevedo at, 577, 613, 614, 1084; Azevedo's celebrated retreat from, 580-588; Melo at, 804; Pass of, Portuguese masters of, 566; Elephants way, 578
- Balanga, 673
- Balaõ, 554
- Baleacem, see Galeacem
- Bale tota, see Belitota
- Bali, 156
- Baligamo (Valikamam), 51; see also Beligamo
- Balloon, 554
- Balthazar, D., Modeliar, conspirator, 756; in Seven-Corlas, 810; Madampe, 824; Galelus, 859; joined Hollanders, 858; killed, 860
- Bambara, 155
- Bamunugama (Pamunugama), Portuguese at, 538
- Bana Tarrala (Banaca Rala), 929; see Bandigarala
- Banaca (interpreter) of Sa, 756
- Banca Modeliar, Raju's Governor of Mature, 477
- Banca of General, 1089, 1096, 1030, 1040, 1074
- Banagala (Attanagala), 586
- Banarepane, village of, 631
- Banda, 43
- Bandanese, in service of Hollanders, 819, 831, 833, 834, 842, 845, 908, 917, 923, 935, 993
- Bandaria, 20
- Bandicoot, 596
- Bandigarrala, 587, 771, 920, 1078, 1089
- Banduge, Subudara (Samudra), daughter of Boneca Bau, 220-223; married Tribune, 222; intrigues of, 222; son of, 223, 234; death of, 323
- Baneane, 82, 83, 84, 109, 168, 1039
- Bangaçal, 365
- Banha Cardoso, Joao, see Bainha Cardosa, Joso
- Baniane, see Baneane
- Bankshall, 365
- Bantavala, 26
- Bar, 124
- Barachim, 61
- Baracho, Antonio, 437
- Baravaca, village of, revenues of, 1193
- Barbarim, Saymon, 10
- Barber, badge of, 97
- Barbiri, Berverim, Berberi, see Beruwala
- Barboza, Antonio, Dissava of Sofragaõ, 792
- Barboza Dinis, 268
- Barboza Francisco, Capt. of Sofragaõ, 326
- Barboza Francisco, 725
- Barboza Duarte, 161
- Barboza Gil, 188
- Barboza Manoel, Capt., 843, 848
- Barboza d'Andrade, Francisco, Captain-Major of Field, 778
- Barboza Draque, Antonio, Capt., Manar, 480, 485, 487, 489
- Barboza Pinheyro, Antonio, 820; captured by Hollanders, 821; in last siege of Col., 944: informant of Queyroz, xviii.
- Barbuda, Tristaõ, 196
- Barcaça, 189
- Barcalos, Antonio de, 293
- Barclay, 165
- Bardez, 253, 392
- Baroche (Broach), 275, 344
- Barreto, Antonio (Sinhalese), birth, 591; rebel, 607, 623; valour of, 583, 627, rebellion of (1603-1620), 591-627; becomes Prince of Uva, 36, 591; attacks Candea, 710; captured Curuite, 591; attacks Seytavaca, 592; escapes capture, 602, 625; disquiets the sea coast, 620; at Daruva, 731; killed, 615, 626-27, 731
- Barreto, Antonio, Capt., 216
- Barreto, D. Constantino, Modeliar, 529, 603, 604, 610, 611, 627; br.-in-law of Samaracon, 1061; Dissava of Mature, 610, 730; Dissava of Sofragaõ, 624; pursues Madune, 626; at Batecalau, 729
- Barreto Francisco, conquistador, 117
- Barreto, Francisco, Governor of India (1555-1558), 318, 320, 338
- Barreto, Francisco (Sinhalese), see Eraras Bandar
- Barreto, Pedro, valour of, 583
- Barreto, Thome, 188
- Barreto, Antonio Moniz, see Moniz
- Barreto Pereyra, Antonio, Capt.-Major of fleet, 918

- Barreto Pereyra, Joseph, 449, 450  
 Barreto da Silva, Pedro, 792  
 Barreto de Souza, Pedro, 450, 454  
 Barreyras, 2  
 Barriga, Francisco de, Capt., 489  
 Barriga, Lopo, 149  
 Barriga, Lopo, Captain-Major, 897–  
     898; mutiny against, 897; drag-  
     ged to Columbo, 898; placed under  
     guard, 907  
 Barriga Simoes, Joāo, Capt., 436,  
     437  
 Barriga, Francisco, 408  
 Barros, Alvaro de, 549  
 Barros, Francisco de, Capt., 559  
 Barros, Francisco de, Capt., 214  
 Barros, Francisco de, soldier, eleito  
     (triumvir), 908, 908, 909  
 Barros, Joāo de, *Decadas* of, 171,  
     1097, 1102, 1105, 1115, 1117, 1138,  
     1140  
 Barros, Thome, fate of, 443  
 Barrozo de Almeyda, Jorge, Capt., 217  
 Bartolameu de S. Sebastião, friar.  
     Guardian of Manár, 706  
 Bartoli, S. J., Father Daniel, 351,  
     352, 392, 708  
 Basilio, Friar, Nigumbo, 878  
 Basilisk, 431, 436  
 Basnayaka, 756  
 Basses, the, 1  
 Basto, S.J., Brother Pedro do, Life  
     of, written by Father Queyroz,  
     see under *Vida*; revelations about  
     Ceylon, 747, 779, 851, 855, 1002,  
     1003; predictions, 857, 860, 885,  
     986; death of, 893  
 Batalha, 227, 342, 584  
 Batalha, Antonio, 792  
 Batavala, 255  
 Batavians, see Hollanders  
 Bate, 63, 487  
 Batecalou (Batticaloa), 255, 484;  
     port of, 31, 737; depth of, 751;  
     inhabitants, 18; Veddas of, 16,  
     17; mountains of, 18; kinglet of,  
     32; vanniate of, 32; Vanee of,  
     528, 594; principality of, 58, 64;  
     lagoon, 64; scoured by Portuguese,  
     611; held by rebels, 624; King  
     of Candea upon, 655, 785, 802;  
     settles Moors at, 745; fortifies,  
     751; King of Portugal orders to  
     fortify, 745, 751; fort, erection of,  
     751; situation, 791; subject to  
     Capt.-Major of Jafana, 758,  
     besieged by Hollanders, 810, 813,  
     surrender, 813, Captain of, 813,  
     841; Fort of Hollanders, 819, 817,  
     1196, dismantled, 846, given over  
     to king of Candea, 1195; seized  
     again, 849, 886, 1195. Capt. of,  
     841; Sa at, 757; Raja Sinha  
     league about, 800; Vijayapala  
     at, 788; place of exile, 1196  
 Battocota (Vadukodai), Jesuit church  
     at, 719  
 Batel, 434, 549, 785, 786, 1029  
 Batiania, King of C., 13  
 Batta, 63  
 Batugeira (Batugedera), Madune  
     fled to, 303; attacked by Port.,  
     518, 531; Port. Garrison of, 539,  
     550, Captain, 539, mutiny, 539,  
     siege of, 540; Senerat at, 911, 913;  
     Kandyan Dissava at, 932  
 Baty Raja, King of C., 13  
 Bau (Bahu), meaning of, 6  
 Baul, 893  
 Bautista, Joāo, Capt., 352  
 Baxel, baxeys, 77, 176, 727, 933,  
     987, 989, 991, 1165, 1176  
 Bazaar—of Bengal, 97; of Candea,  
     60; of Gale, 831; of Mature, 865;  
     of Nigumbo, 879  
 Bazaruco, 66, 665, 850, 1028, 1029,  
     1033, 1051, 1054  
 Beadalal (Vedalai), 215, 217; battle  
     of, 217–8  
 ' Beardlet' (Marajū Bandar, son of,  
     Madune), 424  
 Beatilha, 19  
 Bedas (Veddas), 16–18, 19, 44, 482;  
     encounter with Port., 780  
 Bedamarache (Vadamaramachy), 51  
 Bedeadala, 217  
 Beecq, Willem van de, Holl. Capt.-  
     Maj., 882  
 Belalas (Vellala), 50, 53, 54, 384,  
     1087, 1151, see also *Balala*  
 Belchior de Lisboa, Friar, 327, 365  
 Beliga (Hollander)  
 Belichecali, 155  
 Beligal-Corla, 9, 43, 45, 267; at-  
     tacked by Madune, 285; Puzzela  
     Modeliar at, 544; people of, 531  
 Beligamo (Valikāman), Province of,  
     51, 53; Revenue of, 1193; Jesuit  
     church of 695  
 Beligaō (Weligama), 2; port of, 31,  
     115; burnt, 426; Church of St.  
     Michael, 716; Moors of, 426; Port.  
     Capt. of, 716; Hollanders at, 870,  
     873; Holl. stockade, 1195

- Balipatta*, 948  
*Belitota* (Welitota), 2; port dues of, 318, 1030, 1120, 1151; see also *Bilitota*  
*Belitota* (Galitota) *Etgaletota*, see *Agaletota*  
*Bell*, H. C. P., see *Kegalla Report*  
*Belli*, 156  
*Belo*, Bautista, 641  
*Belo*, Vicente, 330  
*Benares*, 151, 156  
*Benares*, see *Caxe*.  
*Bengala*, 5, 95  
*Bengalese* (*Bengalas*), 6, 298  
*Benedict*, St., church of, *Ecerajama*, 718  
*Bento*, Francisco, Capt., 877  
*Beritoz*, 103  
*Beralapanatota* (*Beralapanatara*), 869  
*Bervavas*, *Berba'as* (*Berawaya*), 19, 20, 109  
*Berberi*, *Berberim*, *Barberi*, *Berverim*, *Birbiri* (*Beruwala*), port of, 231; attacked by Port., 425, 429, 430, Moors of, 743; Hollanders off, 938; Holl. stockade, 1195; wreck off, 559  
*Berço*, 200, 276, 347  
*Berberes*, Beriberi, 1042, 1096, 1130; at *Talampeti*, 595; at *Manicravare*, 817; on board ship, 849  
*Bernado*, Friar, Nigumbo, 589  
*Bernado da Cruz*, Friar, *Candeia*, 710  
*Bernado*, Joāo, 774  
*Bernard*, St., banner of, 243  
*Bernardes*, Luis, 668  
*Bernardino*, Dom, Prince of *Jafanapat*, 693; becomes a Franciscan, 693-4; bequeaths *Jafanap*. to King of Port., 693  
*Berosus*, 109  
*Beruwala*, *Beruerim*, *Barberi*, *Birbiri*, see *Berberi*  
*Bervayas*, see *Berbayas*  
*Besteyro*, 632, 663, 684, 687, 854, 1157  
*Betal* (*Wattala*), ravaged by *Raju*, 396; key to *Alicur* and *Hina Corias*, 422; pass of, 938, fortified by *Raju*, 422, 1046; stockade, razed, 422, 424, 429; *Curupu Modeliar* at, 426; bank of, *Raju* at 430; *Mascarenhas* at, 874; *Sinhalese* forces at, 856; church of *St. James*, 714  
*Betalu*, 42  
*Betancor*, Friar Pedro de (*Kannadi Padri*), 57, 663; at *Caes*, 57; *Mantota*, 663, *Manfr*, 664, *Jafanap*, 676, 677, 684; *Commissary*, 670; built churches, 664; and King of *Jaf.*, 462, 690; arrival in *Jafanap*, 663; death of, 678  
*Betancor*, Pedro de (*Modeliar Branco*), baptism of, 465, 467, 687; baptism of wife and family of, 687  
*Betel*, 99, scarcity of in Col., 998; villages, 1088  
*Betle*, see *Betel*  
*Bezoar stones*, 56  
*Bhandazarika*, 587, 929  
*Bhang*, 360, 842  
*Bhuvaneka Bahu*, see *Boneca Bau*  
*Bicarna Cinga*, *Singa*, *Modeliar*, 501 (*Wickremesinhe*, Commander-in-chief), meaning of, 424, 429, 434, 554; privileges of, 1016; post given to natives, 520; *Diogo da Silva*, 437, 439, 442, 448, 451, 452, 471; *Domingos Correa*, 475, 494, 497, 499, 500; *Simaō Finhao*, 520, 532, 539, 540, 558, 567, 568, 570, 571, 574, 578, 579, 582; *Fernão de Melo*, 442; of *Seytavaca*, 424, 429, 434, 471; of *Candeia*, *Manoel Dias*, 522, 574; of *Seven-Corlas*, *Manoel Gomes*, 554; *Congra Arache*, 591  
*Bichaō* (*Vechchan*), 1013  
*Bicudos*, 78  
*Bidigaō* (*Dedigama*) stockade, 532  
*Biker*, J., *Tratados e concertos*, 524, 621, 788, 790  
*Biligal Corla*, see *Biligal korale*  
*Biligaō*, see *Biligaō*, 2; Holl. stockade, 1195  
*Bilitota*, see *Belitota*  
*Binara*, 107  
*Bintenna*, see *Vitena*, *Vintena*  
*Birbirim*, see *Berberim*  
*Birma* (*Burma*), 76  
*Bisminayke* (*Visvanayaka*), 395  
*Bismaga*, *Bismaga*, empire of, 92, 482, 1118; kingdom of, 253; might of, 297; revenues of, 382; account of, 382-385  
*Bisnu* (*Vishnu*), 239  
*Blacksmith*, badge of, 97  
*Bo-tree*, 336, 398, 565  
*Bocalagāō* (*Bokalagama*), battle at, 497; attacked by Port., 532; ambush at, 594  
*Bocarro Antonio*, *Decada XIII.*, 393  
 *Bodikam*, see *Bo-tree*

- Boemede, 725, 726  
 Boemedechanda, 725  
 Bohubaranda (Babarenda) church  
     of St. Anthony, 715  
 Bokalagama, see Bocalagama  
 Bolagro pass of (Bolgoda Ferry), 718  
 Bolategama, (Bulatgama) submitted  
     to Port., 910; provisions of, 497;  
     attacked by Figueyra, 925;  
     Vidâo of, 46, 729; lands of, 1039,  
     1069, 1088, 1096, 1156  
 Bolawalana, see Bonavalana  
 Bolgoda, see Bolagre  
 Bom Jesu, church of, Candea, 719  
 Bom Jesu, church of, Due, 717  
 Bom Retiro of kings of Cota, 30  
 Bombo Devaõ, 154  
 Bombu Rala, Capt., at Cota, 254;  
     pursued Tribune, 255; sent to Uva.  
     255; rebelled, 255  
 Bonavalana (Bolawalana), church of  
     O. L. of Refugo, 718  
 Bonaventura, church of St., Halpc.  
     718  
 Boneca Bau (Bhuvaneka Bahu), son  
     of Aselatica, Cota, 26  
 Boneca Bau, son of Darma Javira, 25  
 Boneca Bau, King of Candea, Gam-  
     pola, 24  
 Boneca Bau, who peopled Jafana-  
     patain, 27  
 Boneca Bau of Cota, 27  
 Boneca Bau of Cota, nephew of  
     King Sacala, 28  
 Boneca Bau Vatimi, 16  
 Boneca Bau VII. 203, 1521;  
     accession, 204; age of, 220, 232,  
     285, 292; daughter of, 220-224;  
     son-in-law of, 220-224, 254, 264;  
     no legitimate son, 223; natural  
     children of, 250, 328; grandson of,  
     233, 236, 259, 285, 286; nephew  
     of, 261; sister of, 333; receives  
     embassy from Calecut, 207; expels  
     Moors, 210; Madune seeks to  
     poison, 211; seeks help from Port.,  
     211, 216, 224, 233, 266, 285; grati-  
     tude to Port., 214, 219, 294; loans  
     to Port., 219; pays Port. troops,  
     230, 269; complaints against Port.,  
     272, 286, 287, 289, 290; sends  
     embassy to Lisbon, 233-236;  
     alliance against, 262; embassies  
     to Kings of Ceylon, 263; subjects  
     going over to Candea, 263; gifted  
     Raygama to Madune, 263;  
     pilgrimage to Triquelimale, 271;  
     deceits of, 279, 280, 281;
- reinstates Javira in Candea, 292;  
     indispositions of, 292; retires to  
     Calane, 292; murder of, 293, 294,  
     299, 316; grief for, 295-6;  
     treasures of, 302; donation to  
     King of Port., 320; character,  
     220, 229, 264, 285, 286, 296;  
     and Nuno Froyre, 207, 209, 226;  
     and Miguel Ferreira, 226, 228, 230;  
     and Martim Affonso de Souza,  
     212-214, 216, 218, 219, 236; and  
     Madune, 227, 229, 230, 264, 275-6,  
     288; and Franciscans, 236, 238,  
     258, 620; and Christianity, 261,  
     269; and St. Francis Xavier, 266,  
     269; and Antonio Moniz Barreto,  
     269-272, 275-277, 282; and Jorge  
     de Castro, 277; and Dom Afonso  
     de Noronha, 288-291; and King  
     of Portugal, 234-5, 295; and Malia  
     Astana of Cander, 704  
 Boneca Modeliar, ambassador of  
     Raju, 403; captured, 404  
 Bonitas, 78  
 Bonze, 115, 118, 122, 124, 126, 140  
 Boralugoda, see Wolvendaal  
 Boral, Pedro, Hollander ambassador,  
     868, 869, 873  
 Borge, Diogo, Capt., 488  
 Botado de Almeida, Damiao, 798,  
     1638; Capt.-Major of Field, 802,  
     804; shot at Ganur, 805  
 Botado de Seyxas, Joso, 883; Dis-  
     sava of Four Corlas, 898, 906-7;  
     feast of, 909; at V'daba, 910  
 Botale, lands of, 532; pagode of,  
     534  
 Botelho, Damiao, Capt., 792  
 Botelho, Belchior, Modeliar, takes  
     oath of allegiance to King of  
     Port., 529  
 Botelho, Manoel, 311  
 Botelho, Gregorio, soldier, 347  
 Botelho, Philipe, Sinhalese Cath.  
     priest, 705  
 Botelho, Simao, 301  
 Botelho da Costa, Antonio, Capt.,  
     632-3  
 Botelho Gazeo, Antonio, soldier, 821  
 Botelho da Silva, Belchior, Capt.,  
     515, 578, 584; Catange, 552  
 Boto, Diogo, 991  
 Botonga, Kingdom of, 1106  
 Botro, King of India, 151  
 Boyi, 1023  
 Brachmanes, ambassador to Lisbon,  
     234  
 Braga, Friar Francisco de, 316

- Braganza, Dom Constantino de, son of VI. Duke of Braganza, Viceroy (1538-1561), 328, 344, 375, 446; character of, 355; conquest of Damao, 351; Viceroy, 338; expedition to Jafanap., 52, 101, 351-382, 1146; captured son of Xaga Raja, 49; landing place, 53, 451; captured tooth of Buddha, 60, 364; accepts terms of Xaga Raja, 371; at Nelur, 373; at Cochim, 352; Angediva, 352; Manar, 352, 393, 381-398
- Braganza, VII. Duke of, became King Joao IV., 182, 861
- Bragmane, at Cota, 239, 260
- Bragmanes. Island of, 58; Vedas of, 79; teachings of, 80, 110-111; courtesies of, 81-82; manner of eating, 85; food of, 86; dress of, 83; buildings of, 84; customs of, 87, 157; ancestry of, 160, 162; conversions of, 659
- Brahamin astronomy, 112
- Brahma, 239
- Brama, 154, 159
- Brama Dou, 160
- Bramane, 48, 111, 118, 119, 154, 158, 160
- Branco Modeliar. *see* Betancor, Dom Pedro de, modeliar
- Brandaõ, Antonio, 508
- Brandaõ Paschoal, 553
- Braspatim, 105, 106
- Brauma, 80
- Braz, Manoel, Capt. of Caffirs, 833, 842
- Braz Juzarte, Sebastiao, 442
- Brazil, 38
- Brechis, 61, 1002
- Brenau, 120
- Briareus, 8
- Bridges, over Calane, 431; at Malvana, 1005; Calature, 895, 915; Matagore, 442; Caymel, 324
- Bridges of one beam (*edunda*), 916
- Brief of Pope Gregory XIII., 329, 332
- Bringel, Belchior, 436, 437
- Brito, Antonio de, Alcaide-Mor, 198
- Brito, Francisco de, 484, 485, 488
- Brito, Francisco de, Capt., 519, 535, 536
- Brito, S.J., Father Joao de, 88
- Brito, Lopo de, Capt., 188; Capt. of Columbo, 198-206
- Brito, Manoel de, Capt. of Chale, 230
- Brito, Sebastiao de, 594
- Brito, Manoel de, Aracho, 500
- Brito de Almeyda, Francisco de, 729, 857; Dissava of Four Corlas, 730, 734, 770, 782; Capt.-Major of Field, 784; elected governor, 807
- Brito de Castro, Francisco, 476
- Brito de Castro, Simao, Capt., 406; Capt. of Columbo, 443, 444, 454, 468, 469, 705, 707
- Brito de Melo, Francisco, Capt. 479
- Brito Correa, Fernaõ de, Jafanap., 680
- Brito Pinheyro, Manoel, Capt., 792
- Broach, *see* Baroche
- Brou, S.J., Father, 247
- Bruma, 58, 80, 111, 167
- Budha, 106, 107
- Budha Sacra, pass of, 562, 563, 570
- Buddha, tooth of, 60; taken by Tribule, 364, to Jafanap., 325, 364; taken by Port., 60, 364
- Buddha, relic of, in a little gold box, 314
- Buddum, 79; life of, 118-120, 122-141, 240
- Buddum Saranaõ Guchaõ, 120
- Budovance, 220, 335, 337
- Budiamo (Bodihamy), *see* Bo-tree
- Buffaloes, island of, 58
- Buggalow, 176, 1018
- Buladgama (Bulatgama), *see* Bolatgama
- Bulhaõ, 330
- Buligam, hotel village, 1193
- Bullarium *P'aronatus Portugalliac Regum*, 330
- Buneen Bau, *see* Boneca Bau
- Boneca Modeliar, *see* Boneca Modeliar
- Bunya, 82
- Bura, 3
- Burulacota, stockade of, 563
- Butua, kingdom of, 1107
- C.
- Cabarajoya (Kabaragoya), 596
- Cabaya, 67, 82, 98, 180, 234, 472
- Cabedo, Luys de, Capt., 550
- Cabedo, Manoel de, Capt., 560
- Cabildas, 298
- Cabo da Rama, 455
- Cabook, 964, 1015, 1027
- Cahral, Jorge, Governor of India (1549-1550), 286
- Cabral, Luis, 513
- Cabral da Faria, Luis, Dissava of Sofragao, 611, 612, 624, 727, 1061; fell at Velavaya, 778

- Cabral Pestanha, Pedro, 792  
 Cabreyra da Ponte, Manoel, 944; Sgt.-Major, 930  
 Cabrinha, 627  
 Cacha, 34, 1026, 1034  
 Corhao, 3, 968, 1151  
 Cachim Neyra, king of Jaffanap., 49  
 Cade Trimola Devaõ, 154  
 Cadabatu (Kadawata) corla, 36, 37  
 Cadavetti, 100  
 Caes (Kayts) 'quay' (see also under Cardiva, and quay of Elephants), church of S. Joao, 468, 679, 688; point of, 681, 682; channel, 681; fort of, 55; surrender of, 997, Capt. of, 681; Rector of, 628, 630, 631, 679, 688; Hollander stockade at, 1196  
 Caes, 'dogs', kind of gun, 578, 596  
 Caetarro, 394  
 Caffirs, 11, 23, 74, 117, 298, 1110; in service of Raju, 442, 928; in service of Port., 786, 792, 797, 798, 803, 808, 828, 833, 846, 850, 855, 928, 952; cannibals, 793  
 Caix, island of, 25  
 Caixiligna (cinnamon), 25  
 Cajetan, 166  
 Calacanditico, King of C., 13  
 Calachurro, a kind of sword, 393, 416, 1031; how wielded, 637, 638  
 Calala, 1088, 1150  
 Calamba, 1114  
 Calampele (Kanampelle), 592  
 Calamune, headland of, 57  
 Calane (Kelaniya), 29-31, 73, 292; inscription, 177; Calanepure, 30; pleasure resort of kings, 30; palace of king, 714; Deladasde, 330; submersion of, 30-31; attacked by Raju, 396, 431; deserted, 410; ruins of, 424; village gifted to Franciscans, 330, 1058; church of S. Salvador, 330; church of St. Anne, 714; church of St. Bartholomeu, 714; Boneca Bau at, 292-3; Dharmie Pala at, 348; pagode destroyed, 425, rebuilt, 1057; Merinho of, 724; Port. at, 792, 808; pass of, 886  
 Calane, river of, 30, 41-2, 45, 46, 47, 73, 344, 421, 434  
 Calango (kilangu), 52  
 Calapiti, island of, see Cardiva  
 Calapiti (Talampitiya), see Talapitim  
 Calapitim, Calpitim, Calapiti, Calupeti (Kalpitiya), see Cardiva  
 Calaponeys (Cataponeis), 809  
 Calarma, 1152  
 Calatu Corla, 37  
 Calature, Caleture, Caliture (Kalu-tara)—  
 port of, 2, 31, 502, 875, 895, 922, 931, 1156; dues of, 318; attacked by Port., 425, 429, 430; best areca found in, 35; first paroenia of Chaleas, 1018; fortified by Port., 511, 531; Capt. of, 34; Sebastiao D'Orta, 836, 839, 923; fort of, 41; garrison, 782; Port. at, 814, 918, 924, 934 935-937, 939; siege of, 926, 930; surrender, 940, 942, 949; prisoners of, 976; church of, Wounds of St. Francis, 717; eminence of, 898; cinnamon gardens of, 897; Pulconde Arache at, 430; Azevedo at, 511-513; Domingos Correa at, 513; Prince of Uva at, 795; Candian incursions, 861; Moors at, 865; Raju at, 322; Barreto at, 270, 275; Hollander at, 908, 914, 915; retreat from, 918, 920; stockade at, 1195; river of, 553, bridge over, 895, 915; pass of, revenue, 1192  
 Calature (North), 895; fortified, 938; church of O. L. of Health, 717  
 Caldas, Henrique de, Capt., 483, 489  
 Caldeyra, Antonio, 792  
 Caldeyra, Belchior Luis, Capt., 437  
 Caldeyra, Constantino, 499  
 Caldeyra Dinis, 249  
 Caldeyra Fernaõ, Capt., 564  
 Caldeyra Gomez, Capt., 547, 556  
 Caldeyra Luis, Capt., 576  
 Caldeyra Manoel, Capt., 943, 980  
 Caldeyra Sebastiao, 792, 951  
 Caldoyrao, 165  
 Caleambe, 308  
 Calecuth, 1117  
 Caleture, see Calature  
 Calhameyra (Point Calimere), 630  
 Calheta, port of, 31  
 Caliboy (Kalubowila), 422  
 Calicut (Calicut), 161, 170  
 Calimere Point, see Calhameyra  
 Callis (Kaleliya), 532  
 Calisto, Miguel, soldier, 503  
 Calingo, 5  
 Calirios, 318  
 Caliugao, 113  
 Caluamodre, rivulet of, 923  
 Caludeva, 1159

Calugampola, see Catugampola  
 Calumna, King of C., 13  
 Calupeti (Kollupitiya ?), 433, 435  
 Calvinists, 2  
 Calvo, Friar Joaõ, 278, 316  
 Camalete, 596  
 Camara (gun), 573  
 Carnareada (ambassador of Boneca-Bau), 283  
 Cambaya, 3, 151, 247, 1115  
 Cambolym, 96  
 Camea, 76  
 Camel (gun), 345  
 Camelete (gun), 596  
 Camelete, pass of Cota, 403  
 Camerino, S.J., Father Paul de, 235  
 Camholt, Lambert, 870, 871  
 Caminha de Azevedo, Antonio, 980  
 Caminha Coutinho, Luis de, Capt., 566, 584  
 Camisa, 956, 829  
 Camoti, see Camholt  
 Camotins, 81, 167  
 Campos, Simão de, casado of Gale, 839, 843  
 Canacapoles, Canacapule (Kanakapulle), 54, 394, 1068, 1083, 1161; Moors at, 743  
 Canada, 586  
 Canal, Nigumbo-Cota, 25, 46  
 Canapele, Canampele (Kanampella). 781, 1000; battle at, 925; Port. at, 587  
 Canara, Kingdom of, 1117  
 Canare Padre (Kannadi Padre), see Friar Betarkor, 663  
 Canarese, in service of Port., 786; language of, 117  
 Canarios, 59  
 Canarim, 723, 792, 798, 803, 824, 828, 834, 840  
 Canarina, language of, 117  
 Canas, 182  
 Canasture, stockade of, 912, 1056; Capt. of, 914; Figueira at, 913, 914  
 Canavezze, 311  
 Candace, 39  
 Candagaõ (Kendangamuwa), 518, 911  
 Candasuami, Kandaswami, 121  
 Candea (city) name, 60; Palanugare (Palnegure), 258, 270, 292, 702, 704 (Senkadagala, 258); description, 60; bazaar of, 60; buildings of, 59, 615; palace, 59-60, 535, 614, 804; burnt, 482, 614, 804; never rebuilt, 1062; highway to, 562; population, 60; Daladas Guey Pagodes, 484, 614, 804; facsimile

of footprint, 38; church, O. L. of the Conception, 258, 701, 704; rebuilt, 705, 708, 719, of the Bom Jesu, 719, 802; Christians of, 701, 704, 708; Rector of, 692; Franciscans, 606, 607, 615, 698, 699, 701, 702, 710, 711; Augustinians, 803, 1059; Dominicans, 905; Jesuits, 895; Changatar of, 510; Moors at, 60, 745; Rodias of, 21; Adigar of, 605, 606; Bicarna Singa of, 522, 574; Grandees of, 445, 802, 929; receives baptism, 705; Modeliars of the Court, 510; tumults in, 610, 799-800; Paravars, 60; proposed abandonment, 815; Port. ambassadors at, 546; Port. prisoners at, 19, 491, 492, 565, 606, 608, 609, 844; Port. forces at, 611, 612, 614, 727, 804; D. Correa at, 509; Lopo de Souza at, 482; Azevedo at, 614; Sa at, 717, 727, 751; Spilbergen at, 746; Coster at, 894; Hollanders at, 854  
 Candea, kings of, vassals of Cota, 32, 195, 254; insignia of, 928; confides treasures to Bedas, 17; succeeds kings of Cota as emperors, 32; King of, Boneca-Bau, 24; King of, see Javira Astana, Maha Raja, Javira Astana, Maha Astana, Carauliadde Bandar, Raju, 544-5, 707; Don Francisco Cejaja, Don Philip Jama Singa, Don Joaõ; New Dynasty, 445, Don Joaõ Vije Sundra Modeliar, Senerat, Raja Singa  
 Candea, kingdom of, 32, 58-60; name of, 66; description, 58-61; ancient limits, 926, 929; size, 615; mountains of, 46; principalities of, 69; divisions of, 69; commerce of, 735, 736, 895, 911; ports of, 65, 737, 1156; revenues of, 69; privilege of subjects, 69; salt, supply of, 66; tributary to Portugal, 729; conquest of, Azevedo's plans, 550, 566-574, 577-588; expeditions to, see under Javira, Don Philip, Dona Catherine; war with, Madune, 423, 430, Raju, 424, 438, 705, Port., 516, 566, 611, 612, 734, 735, 742, 749, 750, 757, 758, 766, 767, 817; peace with, 545, 748; queens, see under Dona Catherine, Sampale Divo Pandar  
 Candes, 59, 517

- Candi, 60  
 Candil, candis, 787, 896  
 Caneca Modeliar, brother-in-law of Wimaladharma, 572  
 Caneia, 30, 76  
 Cangane (Kangani), 1006, 1007, 101f, 1018, 1025  
 Cangra Arache, native of Alicur, 591; leads rising against Port., 580-625 in league with king of Candeia, 582; in Seven Corias, 607; disquiets Port. territory, 620; in Two Corias, 623; captured and beheaded, 625, 729  
 Caninefates, 3  
 Canisture, 1056  
 Canjavaraõ, 236  
 Cab, Lopo, 176  
 Capaces, 1114  
 Capala Modeliar, Moor, 521  
 Cape Cori, 2  
 Captains of Forts; see under name of town  
 Captains-General, 101, 102, 622; see (1594-1611) Don Jeronimo de Azevedo, 495-617  
 (1611-1614) Francisco de Menezes, 619-620  
 (1614-1616) Manoel Mescarenhas Homem, 620  
 (1616-1618) Nuno Alvares Pereira, 620-621  
 (1618-1620) Constantine de Sa de Noronha, 621-732  
 (1620-1623) Fernão de Albuquerque, 732  
 (1623-1630) Constantine de Sa de Noronha, second term, 733-780  
 (1630-1631) Don Philip Mescarenhas  
 (1631-1633) Don Jorge de Almeida, 785-797  
 (1633-1635) Diogo de Melo de Castro, 797-799, 799-807, 1034  
 (1635-1636) Don Jorge de Almeida. second term, 799  
 (1636-1638) Digo de Melo de Castro, second term, 799-807  
 (1638-1640) Don Antonio Mescarenhas, 808-857  
 (1640-1645) Don Philippe Mescarenhas, 857-893  
 (1645-1653) Manuel Mescarenhas Homem, 894-906  
 (1653-1655) Francisco de Melo de Castro, 913-933  
 (1655-1658) Antonio de Souza Coutinho, 933-987
- (1656-1658) Maná and Jafanapatam, Antonio de Amaral de Menese, 993-995  
 Captain-Major of the Field, 47, 101, 104; see Don Joao Henrique, 302  
 Francisco Gomes Leitaõ, 439-515  
 Salvador Pereira da Silva, 515-546  
 Don Manoel de Azevedo, 546  
 Salvador Pereira da Silva, second term, 580-601  
 Don Manoel de Azevedo, second term, 601-607  
 Don Francisco de Menezes, 612  
 Philippe de Oliveira, 526, 623  
 Francisco Barboza, 626  
 Antonio da Mota Galvaõ, 643  
 Constantino de Sa de Miranda, 730-33  
 Gomes de Silva, 734  
 Manuel Mescarenhas Homem, 734  
 Luis Gomes Pinto, 776  
 Francisco Barboza de Andrade, 778  
 Lançarote de Seyxes Cabreyra, 784  
 Francisco de Brito de Almeida, 784  
 Miguel Fernão de Castel Branco, 783, 792-795  
 Don Antonio Mescarenhas, 796  
 Antonio da Mota Galvaõ, 799  
 Damio Botado de Almeyda, 802-805  
 Domingos Ferreira Beligaõ, 808-816  
 Francisco de Mendonça Manoel, 817-835  
 Antonio da Mota Galvaõ, 899, 898-903  
 Joao Alvares Bretaõ, 885-889  
 Fernão de Mendonça Furtado, 890-891  
 Don Alvaro de Ataide, 892-913  
 Don Manoel Pereira, 893  
 Lopo Barriga, 897-898  
 Gaspar Figueyra de Serpe, 899, 908-913  
 Don Alvaro de Ataide, 913  
 Gaspar de Araujo Pereira, 922-923  
 Antonio Mendes de Aranha, 923-934  
 Gaspar Figueyra de Serpe, 957  
 Antonio de Melo de Castro, 957, 979

- Captain-Major of Jafanap, see—  
 Philipe de Oliveyra, Lançarote de  
 Seyxas Cabreyra, Amaral de  
 Menezes, Mendes Aranha  
 Capuchins, 577, 898, 961, 939  
 Capuru, 28  
 Capuru Lama Etani, sister of Boneca  
 Bau, 333  
 Carava (Karava), 98  
 Caravel, 98, 189, 250, 433, 436  
 Caravettes, 100  
 Carcel (Manár), 675  
 Careca, 107  
 Cardamons, 43, 77  
 Cardenvola, Cardual (Kaduwala), 553;  
 stockade of Raju, 444, 473;  
 Senerat at, 783; Raja Singa at,  
 784; captured by Port., 793;  
 English gunner at, 794;  
 engagement at, 796; razed by  
 Port., 808  
 Cardinal, King of Portugal, 257  
 Cardiva (Karativu, Kayts), 53, 56,  
 460, 461, 468, 631, 632, 676, 997;  
 see also Caes; Point of, 1, 681, 682  
 Cardiva (Kalpitiya), 2, 78, 862, 1155;  
 Portuguese at, 428; Cataumau  
 at, 447; battle, 448; Mascaronhas  
 wrecked off, 893; channel of, 681;  
 Jesuit Church at, 719; Hollanders  
 at, 997; stockade, 1195; revenues  
 of, 1193  
 Cardiva, river of, 1055  
 Cardozo, Antonio, Capt., 863, 872,  
 877  
 Cardozo, Fornaj, 747, 1004  
 Cardozo, Gaspar, 442  
 Cardozo, Gaspar, 725  
 Cardozo, Joao Bainha, Capt., 863,  
 938, 943, 944; Dissava of Mature,  
 -712  
 Cardozo, Jorgo, 419  
 Cardozo, Manoel, 428  
 Cardozo do Brito, Pero, Capt., 450  
 Carduel, see Cardenvola  
 Caroa (Kariya, suita), 1039, 1043  
 Careas (Karoynr), 19, 20, 1009; con-  
 version of, 326, 327, 659; kinglet  
 of, 466, 468; Capt.-Major of Naik  
 of Tanjor, 468, 633; of Manir,  
 450; of Jafanapatam, 631, 638,  
 656, 659; village of, 638; Patan-  
 gatim of, 326  
 Careca, 37  
 Caril, 1014  
 'Carmo', 988, 989, 990  
 Carnapatu (Karunaval-pattu), 51  
 Carneyro, Francisco, 236  
 Carneyro de Alcaceva, Sebastião,  
 Capt. of Manár, 458  
 Carneyro Giraõ, Gaspar, 993, 1000,  
 1001  
 Caron, Francisco, 287; at Gale,  
 874, 875; at Nigumbo, 878, 881;  
 at Columbo, 886; dealings with  
 Sinhalese, 887; death, 812  
 Carpenter, badge of, 97  
 Carta:, 1142  
 Carvalho, Afonso, Dissava of Sofra-  
 gaõ, 840  
 Carvalho, Gregorio, Capt., 877  
 Caryalho, Gomoz, 217  
 Carvalho, Jeronimo, Capt., 990  
 Carvalho, Luis de, married sister of  
 Domingos Correa, 500; at Trin-  
 quilemale, 817  
 Carvalho, Luis do, General of Macao,  
 889  
 Carvalho, Manoel, 553  
 Carvalho, Manoel, 344  
 Carvalho, Manoel, Manar, 672  
 Carvalho, Manoel, Capt., 792  
 Carvalho, Matheus do, Capt., 511  
 Carvalho, Pedro, Capt., 839  
 Carvalho, Vicente, Capt., 374  
 Carvalho de Anhaya, Manoel, Capt.,  
 943  
 Carvalho Cuõ, Domingos, 489, 553,  
 Dissava of Mature, 7 times, 611,  
 612, 613, 617, 655, 747, 778;  
 Capt. of Balao, 614; at  
 Jafanap., 656; Capt. of Gale, 720,  
 757; founded Jesuit house in Gale,  
 720; captured at Velavaya, 778;  
 ambassador of Senerat to Goa,  
 790; death, 791; son of, 747, 791  
 Carvalho Cuõ, Fathor Thome, of the  
 order of St. Peter, son of above,  
 informant of Quoyron, 747  
 Carvalho de Souza, Afonso, Capt., 943  
 'Cavado', 34  
 Cash, 1071  
 Cashow, 71  
 Casmir, 77  
 Cassadio, 34  
 Casseres, Luys de, 442  
 Cassia fistula, 62  
 Cassis, 743  
 Casta, 50, 63  
 Castanho, Constantino, 502, 508  
 Castanheda, 176  
 Castanheyra, Conde de, 234  
 Casto, 50, 63  
 Castel Branco, Artur, Capt., 432  
 Castel Branco, Don Jeronimo, Capt.  
 454

- Castel Branco, Don Joāo, Capt., 352,  
     353, 450  
 Castelho, Fernaō de, 406  
 'Castelo', 381  
 Castilho, Pero de, 341  
 Castranxes, 53  
 Castro, Bernardo de, 980  
 Castro, Don Alvaro de, Capt., 791,  
     792, 793, 924  
 Castro, Don Braz de, 783, 791;  
     appointed General of Ceylon, but  
     recalled, 853  
 Castro, Don Joāo de, 256, 261, 277,  
     385  
 Castro, Don Jorge de, 227, 268, 273,  
     275, 277-279  
 Castro, Don Manoel de, 316, 330, 340.  
     341, 342, 343, 348, 349  
 Castro, Don Pedro de, 352, 353  
 Castro, Fernaō de, Capt., 339, 352  
 Castro, Jorge de, 793  
 Castro, Manoel de, Capt., 188  
 Castro, Joāo de, Capt., 629  
 Catamaras (kattumaram), 446, 636  
 Catamarōs, 1092  
 Catambola, Catre-Cambala Corla  
     Cotocambale (Katugampola), 496  
     594; on the frontiers of Seven  
     Corlas, 552; men of, 531; stock-  
     ade of, 555, 559; rebellion, at, 556,  
     558; Manoel Gomez, at, 555  
 Catamuça, Marca, 446, 447, 448, 470  
 Catana, 504, 1012  
 Catanje (Kattange), stockade at, 552;  
     soldiers run away from, 553  
 Cataponis, see Calaponies  
 Catauly, Jafanap, Franciscan church  
     of, 695  
 Cathacuranda (Katukurunda), 722  
 Catharina de Sa de Rebelo, Dona,  
     baptismal name of Queen of  
     Pera Rajera Pandar, 687  
 Catharina, Dona, baptismal name of  
     daughter of Maha Astana, King of  
     Candeia, 705; entrusted to Port.,  
     705; brought up at Manār, 480;  
     taken to Candeia, 480-488;  
     proposed marriage of, 478, 479,  
     483-4; idol of Candeans, 610;  
     queen of, Don Joāo, 489, 604;  
     daughters of, 778, 788; son, 604,  
     610; queen of Senerat, 610; sons.  
     see Raja Singa, Vijayapala.  
 Cumaraśinha  
 Catherine, Dona, Queen of Portugal,  
     327, 351, 383, 386  
 Catholic Faith, persecution of, 812  
 Catholics, 163  
 Catragaō (Kataragama), 121  
 Cat's eye, 121  
 Caturesa, 351  
 Catureyro, 604  
 Cauca, 3  
 Cavalry, in siege of Columbo, 202  
 Cavantissa, King of C., 13  
 Cave, Book of Ceylon, 815  
 Caviz, 117  
 Cavoqueyro, 1015  
 Caxe (Benares), 151, 152, 156  
 Cayado de Gamboa, Joāo de, Capt.,  
     440  
 Caymol (Kammala), 2, 31, 319;  
     attacked by Port., 427, 428, 430;  
     village of, revenues, 1192; church  
     of, 555, 719; Hollanders at, 819;  
     battle of, 823, 852  
 Caymel, river of (Maha-oya), 822,  
     824  
 Cayro, 53, 1038  
 Caysman, 76  
 Ceitavaca, see Seytavaca  
 Cejaja, Don Francisco Modeliar, 705;  
     rose against Raju, 705; acclaimed  
     king, 706, 707; invited Jama  
     Singa, 707; gave up throne, 707  
 Celād, 4, 72  
 Corda, Father, 14  
 Ceres, 240  
 Cetura, 150, 166  
 Ceylon, ambassadors to Rome, 14;  
     advantages of, 749, 1145; ancient  
     books of, 1019; antiquities of, 12;  
     birds of, 75; Bishop of, 1081-3,  
     1095; Chinese in, 4; Christians  
     of, number, 1059; cinnamon, 15;  
     coins and currency, 14; conversion  
     of, 1084; crown passed to King  
     of Portugal, 26; discovery of,  
     101, 175-183; disadvantages of, 32;  
     divisions (in Port. times), 101;  
     elephants of, 73; fertility of, 3, 4;  
     fishes of, 78; flora of, 71; game  
     of, 72; harbours of, 68; herbs  
     of, 72; inhabitants of, earliest,  
     7-11, 1155; invasion from India,  
     15; kings of, list, 11-13, diversity  
     of, 28; heirs of their subjects, 98;  
     kingdoms of, 32; lowlands of, 71;  
     mountains of, 59; names of, 3-4;  
     names of natives of, 5; natives  
     of, character, 5, 13; people, 21;  
     palms of, 77; paradise, 79;  
     people of, 298; position of, 1, 3;  
     1118; Portuguese in, resolved to  
     conquer, 479; lack of troops,

1148, methods for subjugating, 807; should have been made the capital, 807, 1097, 1131-37, 1144-52; punishment by God, 355, 994, 995; become masters, 529; plans for recovery, 1147-1149, 1160-1167; ports of, 31, 1145; princes of, in Portugal, 328; principalities of, 32; Religious orders in, 738; revenues, 1070; revolt of, 807; rivers of, 41, 42; Roman buildings in, 15; size of, 2; spices of, 4; vanquishes of, 32; Vicar-General of, 721; weaving in, 1148  
**Chacaraō**, 1193  
**Chacoroē**, 54, 486  
**Chacraude Bau**, 187, 203  
**Chaino**, Paulo, ambassador of Madune, 281; hanged in Goa, 282  
**Chaino de Castro**, Antonio, 322, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 411, 418; captured Madune's wife, 323  
**Chakrem**, 54, 82, 486  
**Chalayam**, 225, 1018  
**Chalcis**, 236  
**Chaldea**, 166, 167  
**Chaldeans**, 109  
**Chale**, 215, 1018  
**Chaleaz**, 15, 19, 20, 34, 98, 1009, 1016, 1018, 1028, 1029  
**Challanges**, island of, 57  
**Chamba-pera-Mali** (**Champaka-Perumal**, i.e., **Sapumal Kumaraya**), 48  
**Chamberlain of Dharma Pala**, 524  
**Champans** (**Sampans**), 427, 436, 461, 795, 818, 1047  
**Chandaz**, 19, 20, 1019; services of, 1017  
**Chandra**, 105-107  
**Chandrama**, King of C., 13  
**Chandru Rama**, 8  
**Changali Cumara** (**Sankily Kumara**), 453; nephew of Pera Rajara Chegara, 462, 463; twin brother of, 453; relations of, 632; younger brother of, 453; queen of, 632; nieces of, 692, 698; prevents king's baptism, 463, 464; kills uncle the governor, 464, 691, 698; declared a rebel, 466; appointed governor, 466; has the heir to the throne in his power, 465; martyred against, 467; scoops eyes of brother-in-law, 465, 467; flees from palace, 468; at Caes, 468; seeks reinforcement aid from

Tanjor, 468; defeats insurgents, 468; seeks aid from Malavar, 625, 629, 678; tribute to Portuguese, 626; and Phelippe de Oliveira, 626, 629, 630, 631; flees the country, 632; overtaker, 632, 692; imprisoned at Nelur, 632; sent to Goa, 632; baptized Don Phelipe, 690; executed, 691  
**Changali**, see **Xaga Raja Pandar**  
**Changane**, Jesuit church of, 719  
**Changane Rache** (**Cangra Arache**), see **Aargaō**  
**Changatar** (**Sangatcr**, Buddhist monk), 25, 106, 114; see also **Ganez**; of Candea, 571; chief of Candea, 510; chief of Unagala, 569  
**Chanoca**, Bartholameu, 352  
**Chanoca**, Friar Duarte, 449, 451.  
**Candea**, 708; Manār, 448; Jafanap., 452  
**Chapa**, revenue from, 1194  
**Chapanture** (**Semantural**), see **Kabandure**, 1152  
**Charola**, 506  
**Charrua**, 233  
**Chatigaō**, 1118  
**Chatim**, VII., 212  
**Chavacera** (**Chavakachcherry**) church, 695  
**Cheka-rasa-Sekaran** (**Sankilly**), see **Xaga Raja Pandar**, 351  
**Chee**, King of China, 124  
**Chery Perimale**, 161  
**Chica Ray**, king of Bianaga, 384, 385  
**Chicarage**, 1106  
**Chicorros** (gun), 596  
**Chilao**, Alavata (**Chilaw**), 3, 47, 486, 563; origin of name, 4; port of, 10, 31, 1155; dues of, 319, 729; Malavar at, 426, 427; Cataruca at, 470; village of, 420, 428, 430, 443, 820; Portuguese at, 820; proposed stockade, 516, erected, 533, 534, attacked, 535, 546; Prince of Uva at, 560; Manoel Gomez at, 555; church of S. Joāo, 719; encounter at, 795; Diana of Nigumbo at 862; salt, 1149  
**China**, 4, 297, 1119; king of, sets up inscriptions in Ceylon, 35; sends presents, 306  
**Chinese inscriptions** in Ceylon, 35  
**Chinese**, 4, 10, 16; in Ceylon, 298  
**Chingala** (**Sinhalese**), 10, 16, 60, 118, 140, 174; apologia for, 101, 1007, 1097, 1033; arms, 61, 99; astrology, 114, 105-110; captains,

- 808; castes of, 19-21; character, 21-23, 61, 63, 284, 291, 321, 517, 580, 603, 623, 706, 708, 766, 806, 1148; compared with other Asiatics, 1163; chronicles, 5, 304; Christians, 478, 479, 766; compositions, 117; computations of time, 105; conversion of, 238, 316, 327, 699, 700, 701, 752; courtesies, 82; cruelties, 278, 1005; justoms, 86, 96; Dissávas in Port. times, 101, 102; dress of, 22, 83, 98, 409; dynasty of the Sun, 473 766; exploits of a, 587, 637-8; explanation of the year, 110; food, 99; histories, 27; favours Hollanders, 813, 887; justice of, 96; infidelity, 578; language, 33, 116; laws of, 1087; lascarins desert Portuguese, 580, 775; medicine, 110; moral customs of, 23; marriage customs of, 87, 90, 713; maritime forces, 106, 736; medical books, 1045; memorial of, 1000-1020; military tactics, 70, 96, 99-100, 556-9, 803, 1062, 1146; learnt from Portuguese, 96; name, derivation of, 5, 7; New Year, 541; origin of, 5, 6, 7-10, 174; ornaments of, 22; pertinacity of, 280; polity of, 79; and Portuguese, 183, 205, hatred of, 296, 306, causes of, 620; prophecy, 747; pride of, 620; qualities of, 61, 284, 291, 298, 321; rebels, 849; restlessness of, 185; sagacity of, 289; sciences of, 105; scriptures, 118; sufferings of, under Port., 1005, 1007-1020, 1023; superstitions of, 36; teachers, 116; treasons of, 47, 101; treasures of, 47, 101; trials of, 302; valour of, 398; versification, 117; writings of, 304; warfare of, 577
- Chingalā, the, Rajū, 411
- Chingalā kings, rigour of, 1164
- Chimilao, 4
- Chipo, 78, 720
- Chitaveli, church of, 864
- Chiveli, Jesuit church of, 719
- Chocorao, 54, 486
- Choianaga, King of C., 13
- 'Choix de Poésies Orientales', 70
- Cholea Raja, 6
- Chonduculi, church of S. Joāo, 695
- Choraō, 392
- Chorra, 82, 302
- Choramāndel, Coast of, 1, 3
- Chrispa, 156
- Christina, king of Bisnaga, 383
- Christianity, proscribed in Cota, 306
- Christians of India, 162; Brahamins, 159, 170, 173; marriage customs of 90; of the Serra, 385; in Ceylon, number, 701
- Christians, River of, 2
- Christovaō da Madre de Deos, Friar, 333, 477
- Chronicle of the Province of S. Thorne, 671
- Chronicles, Sinhalese, 5, 13, 30
- Chudra, see Sudra
- Chula Bau, King of C., 13
- Chula Elegare, Modeliar, Jafanap., 465
- Chulatica, King of C., 13
- Chunam, 849
- Chunambo, 1136
- Chunguinaynar, stockade of, 452
- Churches, razed by Tribule, 316; after rout of Sa, 712; by Domingos Corea, 507; destroyed, 589; list of, 714-720
- Churches 664, 695; Alapiti, St. Joseph, 695; Alicaō, St. Anthony, 717; Anaulandāna, 719; Andugāo, St. Paschal, 719; Amjame (Ahangama), Our Lady of Refuge, 716; Aripo, 664; Batecota, 719; Beligamo, 695; Beligaō (Weligama), St. Michael, 716; Betal, St. James, 714; Bohoubaranda, St. Anthony, 715; Bonavalana (Bolawalana), Our Lady of Refuge, 718; Caea (Kayt.), St. John the Baptist, 676, 679, 888; Calane, St. Anne, 714, S. Salvador, 330 St. Bartholomew, 714; Calapitim (Kalpitiya), 719; Calature (Kulatara), Wounds of St. Francis, 717, (Kalutara North) Our Lady of Health, 717; Candea (Kandy), Our Lady of the Conception, 258, 701, 704, 719, Bom Jesu, 710; Cardiva, 719; Cataulay, Mother of God, 695; Caymel (Kam-mala), 555, 719; Changana, 719; Chavacera (Chavakachchery), Wounds of St. Francis, 695; Chilao (Chilaw), 719; Chitaveli, Holy Cross, 864; Chiveli (Achchuvely), 719; Chondaculi, St. John, 695
- Cogala (Koggala), St. Joseph, 716, Nativity of Christ, 716; Columbo, St. Anthony, 416, St. Augustine, 720, 943; Matriz, 856, 860, 900, 1058, Mother of God, 576, 959, Our Lady of Guadalupe, 432, Our

## Churches—contd.

Lady of Life, 942; Our Lady of Miracles, 720, 941; Our Lady of Release (Livremento), 715, 903; St. Thomas, 715; St. Sebastian, 720; St. Lawrence, 181, 304, 560; Columbo (gam), The Saviour, 695; Copay, Our Lady of Guadalupe, 695; Cosbodidem (Kosgoda), Our Lady of Victories, 717; Cosure, 713; Cota, St. Francis, 415; Hermitage of Our Lady of Victory, 417; Cotabate, 713; Cothavatha, Our Lady of Pity, 715; Coylabate, 719; Dampe, Our Lady of the Assumption, 714; Diavela, 713; Dicvela, St. Lucy, 715; Dondra, 35, 715; Due, Bom Jesu, 717; Ecerajame (Akaragama), St. Benedict, 718; Gaboya, St. Mary of Jesus, 718; Galle, Conception, 716; Jesuit Church, 814, 848; Galpata, St. John the Baptist, 717; Gampaha, Holy Cross, 718; Halpe, St. Bonaventure, 718; Ilaur, Our Lady of the Conception, 664, 695; Jafanap., Hermitage of Our Lady of Victories, 666; Hermitage of the Cross, 661; Jesuit church, 695, 719; Our Lady of Miracles, 630; Dominican church, 451, 696; Macoune, St. Peter, 717; Madampe, St. Clare, 716; Manar, Mother of God, 396; Matriz, 448, St. John, 664, St. Thomas, 719; Manicravare, Holy Cross, 719; Manipay, Our Lady of Delivery, 695; Mantota, Our Lady of Health, 663, 668; Mapitigaō, Mother of God, 714; Maraita, Maragama, 719; Maravila, 719; Maripo, 719; Mature, Our Lady of Victories, 715; Matiagama, 719; Mutual (Mutwal), St. John the Baptist, 714; Myleti, 719; Metuvelli, St. Peter of Alcantara, 717; Mirizeo (Mirissa), Our Lady of Good Voyage, 716; Modonale, Our Lady, 723; Moroto, 719; Munessaaraō, 719; Nagao, St. Jerome, 714; Naneta, 664; Nelur, 371; Nigumbo, Mother of God, 718; Holy Ghost, 718; Holy Trinity, 718; Palanchena, 555; Panadure, St. Mary Magdalene, 717; Panagamaō, Our Lady of the Conception, 695; Pandatiripu, 719; Paradice, 713; Paradue, St. Joachim, 715;

Peragali, St. James, 664; Point Pedro, 695; Punarim, 664; Putur, 640; Ramanacure (Rambukkana), St. Augustine, 718; Ratgama (Raygama), St. Luis, 716, 723; Salpe (Halpe), St. Bonaventure, 718; Sampaha (Gampaha), Holy Cross, 718; Sofragaō (Sebaragamuwa), the Saviour, 717; Tambama, 719; Tanadiva, St. John, 57, 628, 665; Tanavare (Dondra), 35, 715; Tripule, 719; Urabarem (Uduwāra), Our Lady of St. Luke, 717; Urature, St. John, 663, 664; Vacuela, St. John the Baptist (Wakwella), 716; Vadium (Waduduwa, Hikkaduwa), Our Lady of Guadalupe, 716; Valane, Our Lady of Health, 695; Vani (Wanniya), Our Lady of the Conception, 664; Velacare, Wounds of St. Francis, 718; Velgampiti, 719; Vidagama, Our Lady of Miracles, 718; Vilitota, The Holy Wise Kings, 717

Chuvriao, Churices, 732, 814, 950  
Chylua Nay, Modeliar, Jafanap., 465  
Cilama, 10  
Cinga, Sinha  
Cingale (Sinhale, Cingalias, Chingalas, Chingalias, Chingalaz), 7  
Cingavalca, King of C., 13  
Cinnamon, 25, 35, 926; royalty in Ceylon, 728, 729; price, 1028; names of, 78; trade in, 25; where grown, 32, 34, 67, 926; at Anurajapure, 15; at Rome, 14; Calature, 897; Anguratota, 908; Nigumbo, 913; Columbo, 936  
Cinnamon peelers, badge of, 97  
Cirroher, Father, 112  
Cita Raja, 26  
Clara, Dona, wife of Pera Rajera Pandar, 693, 687  
Clara, Dona, island of, Neruntivu, 56  
Clara, church of St., Madampe, 716  
Claudius, Emperor of the Romans, 14  
Cleobalus, 110  
Clerk of the Registry (Mohottala), 470  
Coarrejul, 586  
Cobodura Gala, 9  
Cobra de Capelo, 112  
Cocabay, king of C., 13  
Cochim, Bishop of, 331; Antonio de S. Maria, 577; Dom Frey Andye de S. Maria, 333, 661, 1084; Dom

Frey Sebastião de S. Pedro, 606, 1054, 1101; Frey Rangel, 1050; Don Jorge Temudo, 273, 352, 364, 366, 377, 395; Ouvidor, 584  
 Coconuts, 4  
 Codrington, H. W., 14, 34, 46, 54, 63, 66, 309, 318, 452, 1033, 1054, 1071, 1092  
 Coelho, Ambrosio, Capt., 480, 489  
 Coelho, Andre, Admiral, 731, 783, 792  
 Coelho, Antonio, Factor of Columbo, 307, 440  
 Coelho, Antonio, Capt., 944  
 Coelho, Gaspar, 426  
 Coelho, João, Capt., 212  
 Coelho, Luis, 244, 245  
 Coelho, Thome, Capt., of Atapiti, 591  
 Coelho de Argulho, Paulo, 792  
 Coelho de Ayala, Domingos, Capt., 944, 957, 960, 977, 980  
 Coelho de Castro, Jorge, Casado of Columbo, 782, 823; Dissava of Seven-Corlas, 926, 927, 932, 943; Dissava of Four-Corlas, 792; Dissava of Sofragão, 795  
 Coelho de Leitaõ, Antônio, 792  
 Coelho de Melo, Antonio, Capt., 479, 489  
 Coelho de Miranda, Pedro, Capt., 824  
 Coelho de Pinto, Thome, 547  
 Cogala (Koggala) lake, 716; church of, St. Joseph, 716, Rector, 721  
 Coimbra, Azevedo at, 513; Ceylon Princes at, 709  
 Coins, Roman, found in Ceylon, 14  
 Coir, 53, 1038  
 Colaco, Gabriel, brought up Dona Catherine, 480, 482  
 Colaico, Cape, 2  
 Coleridge, 244  
 Colleges of Franciscans, 330, 331, 332, 539, 632, 657, 664 708, 714, 1053; of Jesuits, 576, 755, 895, 900, 904  
 Columbo—  
     Albergaria at, 189–196; Alcaide of, 198, 205, 206, 253, 268, 285, 288, 291, 306, 308, 313, 420, 437; see Alcaide-Mor; Alfandega, fortification of, 943; Almeyda at, 177–182; Antonio, bastion of S., 943; arms of, 309; assaults by Hollanders, 952, 953, 976 attacked by Madune, 340, 396, by Rajú, 403, 431–437, 440, 441, by Moors of Calicut, 208, 213, by Mha Astâna, 794, by Portuguese, 197, 199, 203, 205; Augustine, St., Bastion of, 943; Augustinians

## Columbo—contd.

(Hermits of St. Augustine), 257, 343, 577, 782, 971, 1093; church of, 720, 943; Azovedo at, 495, 517, 554, 603; Bankshall, 365; Baptisms at, 693; Barreto at, 27, 275, 277  
 Bastions, 590; see under Alfandega, S. Antonio, S. Augustinho, Breastworks, Conception, Cruz, Estevaõ, Galboca, house of Azevedo, S. Jeronimo, S. João, S. Lourenço, Madre de Deus, Mapana, Matriz, Queens Gate, Redout, S. Sebastião, Torraõ, Xavier; Batteries of Hollanders, 940, 955, 970; Betal, pass, 938; Blockade by Hollanders, 896, 911, 935, 939, 962; Boralugoda, 432; Breastworks: S. Cruz bastion and redoubt, 782, 943, 944, 950, 954, 961, 962, 978, S. Francis Xavier, 936, 94–948, 950, 951; Bridge over Lako, 963; Brook, dammed to form lake, 202; Calapaná, see Lake of, 308; Cannibalism, 783, 968; Capitulation to Hollanders, 982–3; Captaincy of, given as dowry, 430  
 Captains of, 101, 332, 371, 422, 423–4, 584, 738; João de Silveyra, 198–198; Lopo de Brito, 198–204; Fernão Gomez de Lemos, 205; D. Duarte D'Eca, 308–318; Affonso Pereyra de Lacerda (first term), 318–324; Duarte Rodrigueze de Bulhaõ, 324–338; Affonso Pereyra de Lacerda (second term), 338–344; D. Jorge de Menezes Barrocho, 344–351, 396–399; Balthezar Guedes de Souza, 396–419; Pero Dias de Ataide, 419–420; Diogo de Melo Coutinho, 420–422; D. Fernando de Monroy, 422–423; Jorge de Melo de Castro, 423; Diogo de Melo de Coutinho (second term), 423–429; Antonio de Noronha, 423; Sebastião de Rezende, 423, 424; Diogo de Melo de Coutinho (third term), 423, 424–429; Matheus Pereyra de Sanpayo, 429–430; (1578) Fernão de Albuquerque, 430–431; Manoel de Souza Coutinho, 431–439; João Corea de Brito, 439–443; Simão de Brito de Castro, 443–444, 469; Cosme de Lafetar, 445, 449, 469, 708; Pedro Homem Pereyra, 469–503, 529; Thome de Souza.

## Columbo—contd.

Arronches, 503-529, 548; D. Pedra Manoel, 541; (1603) Manoel d'Andrade Bringal, 584; (1620) Jorge de Albuquerque, 732; (1644) Joao Alvares Bretao, 692; Captains of City, (1656); Manoel Marquez Gorjao, 957-969, 977; (1656) Gaspar de Araujo Pereyra, 979-980

Capuchins, 577, 898-909; Convent of, 961; Chamber of, 693, 802, 803, 904, 914, 939, 992, 993, members, 895, 902, 905, 982, elections, 1044, 1047; Chetties of, 431; Chingalax of, 762, 774; Christians, 396

Churches—Augustinian, 943, Franciscan, 416, 693, 959; Jesuit, 576, 959; Madre de Deus, 576; Matriz, 556, 860, 900, 1058; St. Lawrence, 181, 309, 560. In suburbs—O. L. of Guadalupe, 432, O. L. of Life, 942, O. L. of Miracles, 941, 720, O. L. of Release, 903, S. Sebastian, 720, S. Thome, 715, 959, O. L. of Victory, 306

City of, 421, rise, 308, enlarged, 421, extent, 936, site, 45, 936, population, 440, 534, name, 308-9; Colleges, Franciscan, 708, Jesuit, 576, 753, 895, 900, 904; Conception, bastion of, 943, 957, 960, 964, 970, 977; Convents, 308, 971, 331, 524, 692, 905, 961, 977, 982; Cruz, see breastwork of; Custom duties, 729, 1049, 1070, 1071, 1092; Customs House, 943, 1192; Dike, 960, 970, 971; Disorders in, 447, 622, 898, 899, 601, 935 (see also Mutiny in); Dominicans, 267, 343, 577, 782, 971, allowances to, 1053; Convent, 905, 977, 982; Parish, 720, Prior, 1059; Drought in, 958, 963; Eleitos, 908, 909; Elephants in siege, 956, 968; Environs of, 727, 728, 783; Estevoao, Bastion of S. 434, 441, 907, 936, 943, 944, 955, 956, 957, 961, 965, 966, 975, 976; Factor of, 101, 205, 269, 275, 277, 281, 282, 293, 306, 318, 371, 553, 744, 973, 983, 1043; Factors: Jane Mendes Cardoso, 181, Andrade Rodriguez de Beja, 196, Nuno Freyre de Andrade, 205, Jorge de Aguiar, 290, Ambrosio de Melo, 291 Pero de Morim, 306, Antonio Coelho,

## Columbo—contd.

307, Dinis Machado, 307, Francisco Tristao 760; Factory, 179 181, abandoned, 183, 184, razed, 205, 206, 281, 296, burnt, 306, re-erected, 307, Clerks of, 198, 306, 527; Factory of Moors, earliest factory, 101

Famine in, 435, 854 (1655), 935, 961, 962, 969, 985; Father of Christiana, 715; Fernando Dom, Modeliar at, 576; Figueyra at, 934, 939; Fort, first erection, 195, 196, 198, perfected, 204, dismantled, 205, 232, 817, fortified, 277, 302, rebuilt, 308, enlarged, 421, re-fortified, 431, 440, 853, defences, 431, name, 309, circuit, 308, walls, 897, 935, 936, vicissitudes of, 232; Franciscans, 249, 782, 971, allowances, 1053, College, 708, Convent, 331, 524, 692, Church, 305, 416, 693, 959, 1008, 1056, First House, 277, Guardian, 524, 738, 1045, 1048; Galboca, 943, 944, 955; Galle Buck, 942; Gardens, 725, 783; Gintupitiya, 903; Gonçalo, S. Bastion of, 441; Harbour, depth, 31, bay, 936, wrecks, 196, 479, 559, 783

Hollanders—off Colombo, 819, 827, 869, 887, blockade, 896, 911, 935, 939, 962, batteries against, 946, 955, 970, bombardments, 956, fortifications, 964, 965, entry into, 984, 985, stockade, 965, fortress, 1195; hospital, 545, 937, 986, 1041-1042, 1049, 1098; Houses, 308, 783, 936, 944, 950, 955; Hulftedorp, 942; Inhabitants: Chingalax, 762, 774, Chetties, 431, early inhabitants, 306, Moors, 179, 198, 203, 205, 431, Portuguese, 308; Jeronimo, Bastian of S., 943, 944; Jesuits, 720, 782, 969, 971; College, 576, 753, 895, 900, 904; Church, 576, 959; Joao, Bastian of S., 886, 904, 936, 943, 944, 946, 950, 955, 956, 957, 960, 965, 966, 969, 975, 976, 978, 981; Judges, 527, 983;

Lake of, formed by damming a brook, 202, 203, Calapane, 308, size, 308, 433, 434, 740, 782, 944, 948, 950, 954, 960, 963, 975,

Columbo—*contd.*

drained by Raju, 433, 435, 441; wrecks in, 783; bridge over, 963; islands, 433, 435, 436, 437, 438; Lanes, 951; Lourenço, Bastian of S., 560, 943; church of 181, 309, 560, arms of, 309, hill of, 195, 308, 421, 936; point of, 195, 277, 308, 309, 740, 1192; Lunu Pokuna, 876; Madre de Deus, hermitage of, 576, bastion of, 441, 936, 943, 944, 962, 963, 965, 970, 973; Mapana, bastion of, 797, 936, 943, 950, 965, field of, 439, 782; Mascarenhas at, 861; Matriz, 856, 860, 900, 905, 1069, redoubt of, 943, 950, 952; Mutual (Mutwal), 31, 714, 808, 826, 853, 885, 937, 938, 939, 962, 1102; Miguel, bastion of S., 441; Milagiriya, 720, 941; Moat, 956, 957, 958, 960, 961, 963, 965, 970; Moors, factory of, 179, mosque, 203, 205, quarter of, 193; Mutiny in (1650), 897, 898, 904, 905, 913; Nacolegaō, pata of, 130, 425, 713, 783, 853, 925, name of, 308–309; Noronha at, 288; Notary Public of, 524, 525; Ouvidor of, 91, 524, 527, 584, 590, 693, 744, 943, 983; Padram, 197; Parishes, S. Thome, 715, 959, S. Sebastian, 720, 784, 803, 808; Passes of, 783, 807, 808, 821, 826, 854, (see Mutual, Betal, Nacolegaō); Patangatim-Mor, 424, 529; Pedreira, 432; pestilence, 935, 961, 968; plot to deliver city, 784, 784; population, 308, 435, 500; P. families 60,300 in 1582, 440; 2200 in 1656, 699; Port dues, 318, 1192; Port, Regedores of, 199, 272; Port of, 451; Portuguese, arrival of, 177, quit, 296, town, 349; powder mill, 740; processions in, 438, 856, 959; procurator, 982; provisions, 58, 926; Quarry, 432; Queen's Gate, 905, 943, 944, 950, 951, 952, 954, 963, 964, 966, 973–5; Regedores of port, 199, 272; Revenues of port, 318, 1192; Roads to, 420; Sa at, 727, 734, 757; Saint Iago, bastion at Mapana, 943; Santum-pitiya, 903; Sebastião, bastion of 318, 436, 441, 936, 942, 943, 944, 946, 952, 955, 963, 964, 970, 973; Parish of, 720, 784, 803, 808; Hill of, 935; place of, 784

Columbo—*contd.*

Sieges of—(1521) Wijaya Bau, 199–203; (1564) 404–405, 420; (1579–81) Madune, 431–438; (1582) Raju, 440; (1588) 442; (1630) Raja Singa, 70, 782, 783; Last siege (Dutch), 18 Oct. 1655, 946; to May 1656, 935, 942–983  
Sinhalese, see Chingalās; Situation, 45, 936; Souza at, 480; Streets of, 693, 897, 973, 977, 980; Storm at, 1058; Storming by Hollanders, 938; Suburbs, 432; S. Thome, S. Sebastião, Matuel; Tanque Salgado, 876; Thomas, Cross of St., 715; Thome, S., afterwards breastwork of S. Joāo, 559, 1056, bastion, 432, 433, 434; church, 715, Field of, 903; Tithes, fish, 1192; Torraō, see S. Antonio, 943; Town, ancient, attacked, 197, 199, 205, burnt, 193, 203, of Portuguese, 349; Tribune at, 311–12; Vedoria da fazenda, 943, 982, 983; Vereadores of, 527, 983; Vicar General, 782; Vigario da Vara, 744; Walls of, 431, 440, 897, 935, 936, 944, 950, 956; Watch Towers, 442; well of, poisoned, 202; wrecks in, 196, 479, 559, 783  
Columbo, Point of (Kolombuturai), 2, 53, 57, 451  
Colombugam, Franciscan church of the Saviour, 695  
Columbus, 9  
Colupeti, point of Kollupitiya, 435, 433  
Comadreja, 72  
Comar Cinga Adacim (Kumarasinha). son of D. Joāo and Dona Catherine, Prince of Uva, 24, 43, 692, 765, 781, 787, 795  
Comati, 81  
Comba, 107, 108, 116  
Combo, 4032  
Combueenaō, 156  
Comidume, see Condume  
Comedias, 33, 1015  
Comeriada Pandar, father of Tribune, 333  
Comet, 216  
Commander-in-Chief, see Bicarna Singa  
Commission of Inquiry, 1960–1967 recommendations, 1067–1096  
Comorim Cape, 1, 2  
Comoripiti, 1149

- Compada Raja, Modeliar, 465  
 Company, number in a Portuguese, 550, 813, 826, 828, 879  
 Comptroller of Revenue, see Vedor da Fazenda  
 Concaõ, 253  
 Conception, bastion of, Galle, 828, 829, 837, 842  
 Conception, Church of the, Galle, 716 Candea, 719  
 Conceycão, Friar Gaspar de, Minister Provincial, Colombo, 692  
 Conseyro, Joaõ, 268  
 Condume, Candian Dissava, 932, 909  
 Confraternity of Sant Iago, 426  
 Confucius, 166  
 Congardiva, 56  
 Congi Naynar, King of Jafanap., 453  
 Congre Arache, see Cangree  
 Conquest, 495, 498  
 Conquistador, first, in Ceylon, 478  
 Conspirators against Sa, 757, 761, 752  
 Constantine the Great, 40  
 Constantino Barreto Don (Modeliar),  
     see Barreto D. Constantino  
 Conti, Nicholaõ de, 39  
 Copay, 641, fortalice of, 695; church of, 695  
 Copyist, notes of, 4  
*Coqueia's*, 353, 358  
 Coracinga, 28  
 Coratota Corupo Arache, 540, 550  
 Corbure, 2  
 Corgaõ, 586  
 Corili, Cape, 2  
 Corias, 33  
 Cornacas, 75, 492; badge of, 97  
 Cornegal, 576, 575  
 Cornelio, Andriaõ, 819, 834  
 Cornelius, Pope, 306  
 Correa, Andre, 442  
 Correa, Afonso, Capt., 944, 974, 978  
 Correa, Antonio, Capt., 941  
 Correa, Ayres, 409  
 Corres, Cosme, 323  
 Correa, Domingos, Idrila Arache,  
     Idrila Modiane, 'Ill-beheaded', 475, 501; Idirimana Suria Bandar, 509; Modeliar, 474, 475, 496, 497, 498, 504, 505; birth and parentage, 474, 500; character 474; Portuguese relatives, 500; Bicarnasinga, 475, 495, 499; rebellion, 498, 500-515, 567, 1064; crowned, 501; built town, 516; cruelties of, 507; marriage of, 509; capture, 513; trial, 513; repentance, 514-15; execution, 515  
 Correa, Estevaõ, 434  
 Correa, Francisco, 435, 487, 489, 494  
 Correa Gaspar, Modeliar, 531  
     kinsman of Domingo, 515  
 Correa Gaspar, Lenda, 176, 183, 189, 269  
 Correa, Gomez, 476  
 Correa, Jeronimo (Idrila Arache), 501  
     father of Domingos, 474  
 Correa, Luis, 553, 820; nephew of Simaõ Correa, 611  
 Correa, Manoel, Capt. 834, 837  
 Correa, Matheus, 470  
 Correa, Pero, 494  
 Correa, Simaõ, Modeliar, 591, 592, 1012; Navaratna Bandar, 516, 520; brother of Domingos, 508; in Port. service, 508-778; rebellion, 500-532; reconciliation, 532, 535; Dissava of Seven Corias, 601, 602, 707, 810, 811, 812, 813; fell at Velavaya, 778; son of, 778  
 Correa, Simaõ (Portuguese), Capt. of Idandavela, 589  
 Correa, Vicente, 353  
 Correa de Aguiar, Antonio, 479, 489  
 Correa de Brito, Francisco, 426  
 Correa de Brito, Joaõ, Capt. of Columbo, 439-443, 524, 525, 526  
 Correa de Brito, Manoel, 943, 980  
 Correa Castanho, Manoel, 928  
 Correa de Franca, Luis, 612  
 Correa de Silva, Antonio, Capt., 430  
 Correa de Silva, Francisco, 450, 454  
 Correa de Silva, Luis, 524  
 Correa de Silva, Martim, 317, 314  
 Corregedor, 33, 96  
 Correyra Taveyra, Manoel, 792  
 Cortes, Antonio, 909  
 Curupa Arache, see Curupu  
 Cosboddem (Koegoda), church of O. L. of Good Voyage, 717  
 Cosmas, Indocopleustes, 215  
 Cosme, Don Modeliar, 754, 756, 762; conspirator, 762; deserta, 774; at Madampe, 824  
 Costa, 59  
 Costa, Alvaro da, 323  
 Costa, Andre da, 442  
 Costa, Antonio da, Capt., 941  
 Costa, Bernardo da, 513, 576, 584, 586, 824; Capt. of Sctavaca, 592; Dissava of Four Corias, 803  
 Costa, Domingos da, Arache, 529  
 Costa, Estevaõ da, 470  
 Costa, Francisco da, 362, 530, 793, 1001  
 Costa, Gomes da, 590

- Costa, Lourenço da, Capt., 839, 847.  
     848  
 Costa, Luis da, 344  
 Costa, Marcos da, Capt., 863, 872  
 Costa, Maria da, 725  
 Costa, Pero da, 901  
 Costa Ciado, Joaõ da, 944  
 Costa Homem, Gomez da, 584, 592  
 Costa Monteyro, Antonio da, 508;  
     Capt., 515, 547, 613, 980, 1047,  
     1048; Capt. of Balane, 613  
 Costa de Souza, Gregorio, 447, 473,  
     522, 560  
 Costa Ti'baõ, Bernardo de, 792  
 Costa Travaços, Antonio da, 420  
 Costra (Coster, Willem Jacobsz)—  
     Commander 814; Admiral, 819; at  
     Candeia, 826, 895; at Nigumbo,  
     827; at Gale, 834, 842, 847; killed  
     in Candeia, 894  
 Cota (Kotte), city of, 29; abandon-  
     ment, 420, 421; attacked by  
     Madune, 369, 416, 423; by Raju,  
     330, 399, 410, 414; battle of, 339,  
     340, 398, 402, 414-15; Captain of,  
     316, 338, 349, 400; church of St.  
     Francis, 416; duel at, 348; metro-  
     polis of Ceylon, 28; fortified, 27,  
     32; embellishment of, 24; defence  
     of, 396; contagion in, 411; council,  
     191, 207, 338, 342, 411; factions  
     among Port., 348, 350; fortalice  
     of, 213, 406; foundation of, 23-31;  
     Friar Paulo de S. Boaventura, 213;  
     garrisons of, 337; Portuguese guard,  
     302; Hermitage, 417; lake of, 341,  
     339, 402, 410, 411, 415, 416, 417,  
     421; migration from, 421; mutiny  
     at, 193, 410; canal, Cota-Nigumbo,  
     25, 46; Noronha at, 304; principal  
     officers of, 300; passes of, 29, 338,  
     339-40, 403; 410, 416, 417, 419;  
     see also Misquitos'; Pera Cota,  
     Ambolaõ; reception of Port.  
     ambassador, 180; position of, 29,  
     45; procession, 343, 415; ruins of,  
     421; revenues of, 318; sack of,  
     203; siege of, 26, 213, 225, 288,  
     316, 319, 339, 340, 406-414, 431;  
     tumults, 192, 193, 315; Vijaya  
     Bahu Kollaya, 203, 204, 213  
 Cota, king of, 26, 27; Emperor of  
     Ceylon, 295; Ilacon, 27; Heneraz  
     Bandar, 27; Hina, 28; Videamal,  
     27; Vijia Pala, 27; Parakrama  
     Bahu, 177; Vijaya Bahu, 197-203;  
     Bonica Bahu, 204, 207, 210, 277;  
     Darma Pala, 299-357, 396-444,  
     468-529; King of, ambassadors  
     to, Goa 211; to Lisbon, 233-236;  
     banners of, 1020; sepulchre of, 736  
 Cota, Kingdom of, suzerain of vassal  
     states, 32, 47, 101; government of,  
     104; deserted, 338, 411; recovered  
     by Port., 473; Christians (70,000)  
     701, (71,074) 714; churches,  
     714-719; partition of, 204, 411;  
     lands of, 406, 707; tributary to  
     Portugal, 181, 195, 203; rulers,  
     decadence of, 26, 27; Revenues  
     of, 318  
 Cota Falcaõ, Martin, arrived in  
     1600, 554; Capt., 560, 584; at  
     Divala, 561; at Jafanap, 680  
 Cota Maluco, Melique, 384  
 Cotabata, Rector of, 713  
 Cotocambala (Cuticapala), strong  
     place at, 552; fate of, 590; battle  
     of, 927  
 Cotate( Botale), 515  
 Cotambala, 591  
 Cothavatha, church of O. L. of Pity,  
     715  
 Cotiar, held by rebels, 624  
 Cotacambala Corla (Katugampola).  
     599  
 Couilham, Pedro de, 249  
 Coulao (Quilon), 2, 171, 447  
 Couraça, 869, 870  
 Courtesy, modes of, 81  
 Coutinho, Antonio, 781  
 Coutinho, D. Bernardo, 479, 480  
 Coutinho, D. Diogo, 854  
 Coutinho, D. Fernando, 361  
 Coutinho, D. Francisco, Viceroy  
     (1561-1584), Conde de Redondo,  
     406  
 Coutinho, D. Francisco, 801  
 Coutinho D. Gastaõ, 479, 484, 485,  
     488, 489  
 Coutinho, Izabel, 725  
 Coutinho, D. Jeronimo, 450  
 Coutinho, D. Luys, 426, 427, 430, 486,  
     705  
 Coutinho, Dona Thomazia, 849  
 Coutinho, Rodrigues Manoel, 418,  
     432, 437  
 Couto, Antonio de, Capt., 629, 639, 640  
 Couto, Braz de, 352  
 Couto, Diogo de (*Decas*), 37, 199,  
     204, 215, 269, 274, 275, 293, 304,  
     318, 31C, 365, 528, 604  
 Couto, Joana de, 849  
 Coutrim, Fernão de, Capt., 176  
     First Port. Ambassador to Crta,  
     178

- Covados, 75  
 Cow, Isle of, 56, 251, 254, 650; lord of the, 665  
 Coylabata, church of Jesuit, 719  
 Cranganor, 1118  
 Crasto, Pedro de, 442  
 Cris, 754, 917  
 Crocodiles, river of, 719  
 Cromwell, 1168  
 Crooked King of Jafanap., 445 446, 453, 464; Puvi Raja Pandara, 92  
 Cross, River of the, 2, 50, 51, 57  
 Cross of St. Thomas, 244  
 Cross, church of the Holy, 718; Gampa, Manicavare, 719; new city, 715  
 Cruchilo Joseph, 975  
 Cruz, Antonio da, 673  
 Cruz Giraõ, Joaõ da, clerk, Factory of Jafanap., 465, 652, 653  
 Cruzados, 75, 219, 331, 372, 423, 588, 681, 682, 702, 709, 784  
 Cuchar, Hollander stockade, 1196  
 Cuoculo Corla (Kukul Korale), 531  
 Cudava, 31  
 Cudy Ale, 403  
 Cugaõ (Yuga), 113  
 Cuhuana Raja, King of C., 13  
 Cuja, 106, 107  
 Cujapiti, 538  
 Culastri, 145  
 Curnara, 534  
 Cumaras, Jafanese, baptized, 650  
 Cumayde, 781  
 Cumorý, 447; see Comorin  
 Cundaciris, King of C., 13  
 Cunha, Antonio da, Capt., 917  
 Cunha, Bento da, 792, 793  
 Cunha, Domingos da, Capt., 815, 845  
 Cunha, Joaõ Nunes da, 185  
 Cunha, Jorge da, 406  
 Cunha, Manoel da, 234  
 Cunha, Miguel da, 307  
 Cunha, Nuno de, Governo<sup>r</sup> of India, 1529-1538, 216  
 Cunha, Paulo da, 352  
 Cunha, Pero da, 347  
 Cunha, Tristao da, 185, 205  
 Cunha, Vasco, 250  
 Cunha da Silva, Miguel da, 639, 631, 629, 694  
 Cunhale Marca, 210, 230, 440, 447  
 Cunjee, 115, 503  
 Cura Adaz, 220  
 Cura Baya, King of C., 13  
 Cural Hina (Javira Astana, king of Candea), 265  
 Curana, King of C., 13  
 Curatica, King of C., 13  
 Curdo (cinnamon), 75, 76  
 Cureten, 86, 113  
 Curia Muria, 1116  
 Curiz, river of, 41  
 Curo (Kuruwe), 721; villages of, 1069  
 Curraas, 46  
 Curries, 1014  
 Curu, 72, 1069  
 Curugama, 72  
 Curumbis, 1024  
 Curunagal (Kurunegala) Corla, 46  
 Curupu Arache of Coratots, 540; revolt of, 550, 553, 554, 558  
 Curupu Modeliar, 426, 460, 472  
 Curupurale, rebel of Nagaõ, 809  
 Curuuiti (Kuruwita), 43; pagode of, 518; strong place of, 518, 519, 540, 550, 590; siege, 518, 540; battle, 519; Vidana of, 532; surrender of, 501  
 Curuviti Corla, 36, 539  
 Curvinae, 78  
 'Cusalneti Deyo', 778  
 Cutapeti, village of, revenues, 1192, 1193  
 Cutiar (Kotiarum), port of, 31, 41, 65, 68, 727, 737, 1159; lands of, 1153; kinglet of, 32; Vanea of, 528; principality of, 65, 58; Prince of Matale at, 788  
 Cuticapale (Katugampola), 927; see Cotacampola; battle at, 927  
 Cutrim Fernaõ, see Coutrim, 178  
 Cutter, 604  
 Cynthia, 8  
 Cyprian, St., 306  
 Cyprus, 3  
 Cyril, St., 160
- D.
- Dag-Register, 862  
 Dahecambole Corla, see Deygambra  
 Da Kinis, 21  
 Dakkini, 21, 194, 1117  
 Dalada, 60  
 Daladaz-Guey (*Daladas-ge*), 60; cf. 324, 330  
 Dalvin, Francisco, 485  
 Dam Street, 202  
 Dambadini (Dambadeniya), kings of, 195; Bandara, 16; abandonment of, 23  
 Dambarane, fair of, 1135, 1137  
 Dampe, church of O. L. of the Assumption, 714  
 Damunugashinna, see Amunaga Sina

- Denamanica Ratnavali, 25  
 Denda, Danda, Dandavata, 160  
 Dandugama, see Andugaō  
 Danes, at Trincomalee, 727, 730, 737; invitation to, 300  
 D'antas Lobo, Luis, Capt., 546, 547  
     559, 560  
 Dantota, Hollander stockade, 1159  
 Danu, 107, 108  
 Danvers, *The Portuguese in India*, 164, 305, 761, 922  
 Daquini, 611  
 Dar-chini, 76, 611  
 Darma (Parakrama Bahu), reason for name, 25  
 Darmons Pala Astana, D. Joāo, see Dharmapala  
 Darnigala (Deraniyagala) 270, 301,  
     497, 519, 801  
 Darous, 226  
 Darguina, 76  
 Daruva, 731  
 Dates of India, 71  
 Days, Sinhalese names of, 105–6  
 Deça, Bertolameu, 833; Capt., 839,  
     846, 848  
 Deça, Don Duarte, Capt. of Colombo.  
     308–317; rebuilt the fort, 308;  
     arrests Tribune, 309–315; succours Cota, 316; illness and death, 317  
 Deça, Francisco, Capt. of Triquili-male, 817, 823  
 Deça, Ruy, captive in Candea, 490;  
     tortured by D. Joāo, 491  
 Decadas, 450  
 Decaniz, 21, 194  
 Decus (dekum), 103, 1030, 1088, 1192  
 Dedigama, see Bidigaō  
 Dehigampola, see Deygambra  
 Dekan, 179, 297, 1117  
 Dekinis, 1117  
 Dekum, see Decus  
 Deladasde, see daladas-de  
 Deladasde, in Calane, 330  
 Delantota, 944  
 Delft, 56  
 Delgado, Gaspar, vereador, 527  
 Delgado, Miguel, Capt., 877  
 Delhi, see Udeli  
 Deli, Mount, 214, 920, 1117  
 Deltota, 914  
 Demenecorin, King of C., 13  
 Democritus, 109  
 Denevaca, see Dinevaca  
 Deorata, 38, 119  
 Despatch 1074  
 Despenca, 103, 1015  
 Deuamede (Dewamedi) Coria, 46  
 Deudenderen, 111  
 Deundara, see Tanavare  
 Deu-Ruru, 160  
 Deva Raja, 160  
 Devanuere, see Tanavare  
 Devarajurugu, see Tanavare  
 Deveaz, 98, 510  
 Devendra, 110  
 Dewundara (Dondra), see Tanavare  
 Deygambra (Dehigampola), 531  
 Dhanu, 107  
 Dharmapala Astana, 303, 309, 337,  
     339, 472, 478, 502; grandson of Bhuvaneka Bahu, 233, 285, 286,  
     299; son of a daughter of, and Tribune, 263, 299, 334; crowned at Lisbon, 235; heir to the empire, 259, 263; king of Cota, 299–351,  
     396–444, 468–529; cousin of, 304; half brother of, 258; nephew of, 510; secretary of, 524; interpreter of, 524, 526; Queen of, 505; second marriage, 423, 424; becomes a Christian, 314, 322, 324,  
     326, 330, 697; puppet of Ernáz Bandar, 319; Donation of, 330,  
     331, 523, 524–528, 1004, 1006,  
     1053, 1062; sincerity of, 332–3,  
     523; in action, 419; persecuted by Captains of Columbo, 52, 332, 523; Procurators of, 333; plight of, 344,  
     410; ambassador to Goa, 410; attempt to poison, 428–9; stammerer, 428; at Nagaō, 495; at Calane, 348, 350; at Columbo,  
     496; Testament of, 523–528; death, 101–102, 522; guard of, 524; Regent of, 526; Masses for, 529, 1056, 1093; trustee of, 1048; burial, 1056; epitaph, 1008; letters to, 328–9  
 Dhaiuvansa, 87  
 Dhony, 420, 426, 427, 430, 434, 435,  
     450, 553, 628, 629, 630, 634, 694,  
     721, 914, 993  
 Diagal, 239  
 Diagaō, Diagama, 914; battle at  
     444; pass of, 940; Port. at, 915  
 Diangabale, 406  
 Dianteyra, 342  
 Dias, Braz, 323, 420  
 Dias, Braz, Modeliar, 585  
 Dias, Manoel, Bicarnasinga of  
     Candeia, 522, 569, 573  
 Dias, Vicente, 650

- Dias de Aguiar, Ruy, 511  
 Dias, Andrigau, Domingos, 470  
 Dias de Atayde, Pero, Captain of Colombo, 416, 419-420  
 Dias do Bivar, 476, 9  
 Dias Falcaõ, Aleyxo, 381  
 Dias da Lomba, Alfonso, informant of Quocyroz, XVIII., 120, 490  
 Dias da Lomba, Antonio, 323, 347, 348, 350, 397, 399, 403, 404, 407, 420, 422, 423, 434, 437; Alcaide-mor of Colombo ; 437  
 Dias da Lomba, Braz, 434  
 Dias da Lomba, Manoel, 434  
 Dias Pereira, Ruy, Capt., 215, 322, 323, 334, 339  
 Dias Pinheyro, Ruy, 481  
 Dias de S. Payo, Ruy, 440, 450  
 Diavela, Rector of, 713  
 church of St. Lucy, 715  
 Diguiligue, Diyatilaka, 70, 795  
 Dinar, 610  
 Dinavaca (Densavaka), 36; kingdom of, 204, 256, 497, 499, 518, 530, 552, 559, 575, 577; mountains of, 36; frontiers of, 537, 540, 541, 549, 550, 555, 563; king of, 32; princes of, 516, 519, 520, 537; city of, 476; hill of, 476; lands of, 528; sack of, 476  
 Dinera, 108  
 Dinis Antonio, 823  
 Dinis Baltezar, 442  
 Dinis Cosmo, 395  
 Diogo, St., church, island of, Nigumbo, 718  
 Diogo, Friar, 650  
 Diogo, Don, brother of D. Fernando Modeliar, 500, 507, 508, 511; attempts to revolt, 517; sent to Portugal, 517; death, 517  
 Diogo, Don, brother-in-law of Pera Rajera Pandar, 693  
 Diometa, pass of (Dionunrate), 547  
 Dionizio Franco, 417  
 Dioscorides, 72  
 Dispensa, 1015  
 Dispense villages (*gabadagam*), 103, 1015  
 Dissanaca modeliar, 541  
 Dissava, territorial division, 20, 32-33; see under Mature, Sofragão, Four and Seven Corias, Nigumbo, Uva, Gale Corias; proposed new division, 1076, 1155, 1156; head of the division, 96; new office, 1010; arms of, 47; insignia of, 927; iniquities of, 1033-1035, 1091; power of, 97; Portuguese Dissávas, 740; Sinhalese Dissávas, 101, 104, distrusted, 792; Candian, 911, 914, 927; Condume, 932; Perdine, 929  
 Diu (Dio) Rom., coins found at, 14; siege, 234, 262  
 Divala situation, 561; stockade, 560, 562, 585  
 Divanapenca (Devanampiya Tissa), 11  
 Divar, 392  
 Diyatlaka, see Diguiligue  
*In-bl. ahiya*, 273  
 Dodonean, 86  
 Dolapara, woods of, 539  
 Dolandaz-corla (Dolandas Korale), 34  
 Dolosbage, 273; hills of, 932  
 Domingos, Luis, 470  
 Dominicans, 343, 720, 905, 971, 1053, 1059; Columbo, 257, 343, 577, 782, 971, 905, 977, 982; Jeafanap, 651, 694, 451; Galle, 720; Sofragão, 720; Four Corias, 720; Seven Corias, 720; St. Dominic, banner of, 343  
 Doneq. Paulus, Capt., 870  
 Donda, 15, 38  
 Dondra, 35; see Tanavare  
 Doravaca (Dorawaka), 515, 532, 578, 704, 899; hill of, 874  
 Dorotheus, 39  
 D'orta da Guerra, Sebastião, Capt. of Calature, 836, 839, 923  
 Double canoes, 914  
 D'Oyly's Diary, 75, 345  
 'Drago', 381  
 Drugos, 517  
 Duabara cugao, 113  
 Duarte, Fernão, 744  
 Duarte, Antonio, 598, 599  
 Duarte, Jorge, 306  
 Duarte Luia, 225  
 Dubash, 273  
 Due, church of the Bom Jesu, 717  
 Duel in Reju's camp, 416  
 Dulling, Mrs. H. H., 2  
 Dunaga, 1056  
 Dunavato (Unewatuna), 31  
 Duncala (Doneq), 870  
 Duravaca (Doravaca)  
 Duriaz, 98, 510, 570  
 Durug, 517  
 Duruto, 108  
 Durutu, 107  
 Dutch Records, 886, 887  
 Dutuge, King of C., 13.

## E.

Eagle wood, 69, 1114  
 Ecanaca, rebel, 204  
 Ecanaca, general of Madune, 406, 407, 409  
**Ecanaca Modeliar, Adigar of Mature, 784**  
 Ecclesiastics, proposed distribution of, 1081-88  
**Ecarajama (Akaragama), church of St. Benedict, 718**  
 Eclipses, explanation of, 112-3  
 Ecocacinga, king of C., 27, 28  
**Edanda, 916**  
**Eddapalli, see Repelim**  
**Ediriman singa, see Henderman Cinga**  
**Edorapato (Edurapota), 544**  
**Elala Raja, king of C., 13**  
**Elapilla, see Alapila**  
**Elavela (Ellawala), fields of, 518**  
**Elaur, 634**  
**Eleagora Modeliar, 371**  
**Eleagora, king of Cota, 27**  
**Ellen, 553**  
**Elephanta, 73-5; of Valave, 34-5; of war, 100 202; instinct of, 398; sale of, 729**  
**Elephants, Quay of; see Caes**  
**Elephants, way of, 578**  
**Eleuthnat, 949**  
**Elutheiro de S. Iago, Friar, Candea, 711, 798**  
**Embalawa, see Ambalua**  
**Emmanuel, King of Portugal, 180**  
**Emperor, title of, 431**  
**Emphytyusis, 689**  
**Enarath (Herath), Modeliar of Candea, 437, 572**  
**Eharath Bandar (Herat, Senerat, King of Candea, 1605-1635), 604, 623, 654-656, 734-737, 800; brother of Don Joao, 604; Ganez by profession, 606, 736; nominated governor, 606; studied French, 746; overcomes adversaries, 607; seizes crown of Candea, 608-800; disliked by people, 609; murders heir to throne, 609, 610; marries Dona Catharina, 610; attacked Portuguese, 612; flees from Candea, 614; offers terms to Portuguese, 615; becomes tributary to Portugal, 615, 621; violates peace and attacks Balana, 619; offers fresh terms of peace, 620-21, ratified (1617) 621; secret dealings**

with Europeans, 621; fears to violate peace, 623; in league with Changali, 625; attacks Jafana, 635, 654, 655, 656, 737; attacks Batecalou, 655, 785, 1631; corresponds with Madune, 730; seeking occasion for war, 734; commerce of, 737; resentment against Portuguese, 736; receives Moors, 745; receives Spilbergen, 745-6; viles of, 749; treasures of, 750; fortifies Batecalou, 751; offers bribe to Sa, 752, 760; foments rising, 752, 753, 754, 755, 761; offers peace to Portuguese, 758; taken ill, 771, 780; plot to capture Columbo, 784; besieged Manicravare, 787; dismantles Sofraga, 36; and Portuguese ambassador, 790, 795; sues for peace, 795; sent ambassadors to Goa, 790, 795, 797, 798; backs from offer of peace, 798; death of, 799-800; sons of, 635, 654, 781, 787, 737, 945; letter to King of Portugal, 711

**Encacho, 81**  
**Endimius, 109**  
**Engahadas, see Angabada**  
**Engabaõ, 667**  
**English, the, 746, 922**  
**English master-gunner, 794**  
**Englishman, Friar Andre, the, 655**  
**Enkhuyzen, 56**  
**Enquenda Modeliar, 869**  
**Enquisay, 497**  
**Ensign-Major, 828**  
**Ocean Sea, 3**  
**Epimenides, 241**  
**Epistolae Mistae, 244**  
**Eranaz, Tamita Ramale (Tammita Suriya Bandara), 234; Heheraz Bandar, Eranaz Bandar, 305; baptismal name, Francisco Barreto, 320, Guardian of Cota, 303, 314, 315, 316, 318; seized by Noronha, 305; chief Chamberlain, 319; Secretary of Dharma Pala, 321, 327; arrested on instigation of Madune, 319; released, with honour by Viceroy, 320; baptism, 320, 327; in action, 339, 350, 397, 398, 406, 408**  
**Erasosthenes, 3**  
**Ermine, 81**  
**Erunai-tivu (Iramai-tivu), 56**  
**Erymanthus, 121**  
**Escala, 107**  
**Escudos, 789**

- Escusa Gale, 993  
 Esdras, 159  
 Espalha fato, 977, 904  
 Eosphera, 596; Half, 603  
*Epilas*, 116  
 Espinola, Antonio de, 339, 323, 322  
 Esquipano, S.J., Father Antonio,  
     488, 490  
 Estancia, 45, 939, 1096  
 Estevaõ, bastion of Columbo ; see  
     Columbo  
 Estevaõ, Don, Chief Chamberlain of  
     Darma Pala, 524, 526  
 Esteves, N., 640  
 Esteves Pero, 209  
 Estrada, Father Famiano, 572  
 Etgaletota, see Agaletota  
 Ethiopia, 11  
 Eti Corla, 46  
 Eugaõ (yuga), 113  
 Eumanta (*hemanta*), 108  
 European furniture, 85; ways,  
     contempt of, 84; heathendom, 121;  
     languages, compared with Sinhalese,  
     118; nations, jealousy of Portugu-  
     guese, 105  
 Evagaõ (Hewagam) Corla, 36, 553,  
     495, 539, 587; College of Francis-  
     cans at, 539  
 Exastri, 169  
 Exile, place of, 789  
*Eya*, 121  
 Eyes scooped out, 592, 602  
 Eyna Ina Corla (Siyane), 43, 267,  
     285, 422, 495
- F.
- Fabius Maximus, 225  
 Factory, 179; see also Columbo  
     Factory  
 Farjardo, Francisco, Capt., 872  
 Fakirs, 130  
 Falcaõ, 234  
 Falcaõ, Andre, 406  
 Falcaõ, Ayres, Capt., 351, 380  
 Falcaõ, Goncalo, 188, 351, 355, 358,  
     359, 360, 361, 366, 372  
 Falcaõ, Luis, 250, 251  
 Falcaõ, Manoel, Capt. of Balane,  
     619  
 Falcons, 339, 340, 564, 596; demi.  
     596  
 Fanam, 66, 318, 459, 669, 671, 723,  
     1018  
 Fanam of bazaruco, 1054  
 Fanam of cayxas, 1071
- Fanam, silver, 1033  
 Farangi (Feringhee), 67  
 Farazes, 1014, 1023  
 Faria, Ambrosia de, 406  
 Faria, Christovaõ de, 352  
 Faria de Silva, Estacio, 450  
 Faria, Francisco da, 792, 834;  
     Disâya of Sofzagaõ, 833  
 Faria, Francisco de, Private  
     Secretary of Don Joao de Austria  
     (Wimala Darma, King of Candea),  
     572  
 Faria, Lazaro de, 858, 816, 820, 823  
 Faria, Pedro de, Capt., 872, 998  
 Faria e Souza, Manoel de, author of  
     *Asia Portugueza*, 8, 39, 79, 365, 493,  
     495, 540, 616, 660, 703, 750, 780,  
     792, 796, 1005  
 Farmers, services of, 1017  
*Farrash*, 1014  
 Farraz, Antonio, 352  
 Father of Christians, 1056  
 Ferguson, D. W., 176, 180, 215  
 Fernandez, Afonso, 420  
 Fernandez, Andre, Disâva of Sofragaõ,  
     803, 809  
 Fernandez, Friar Antonio, 1000  
 Fernandez, Antonio, 661  
 Fernandez, Assencaõ, 481  
 Fernandez, Baltezar, Capt., 917  
 Fernandez, Belchior, 675  
 Fernandez, Christovaõ, 470  
 Fernandez, Cosme, 438  
 Fernandez, Domingos, pretender, 754,  
     756, 762  
 Fernandez, Domingos, 792  
 Fernandez, Francisco, 419, 439  
 Fernandez, Francisco, 250  
 Fernandez, Gonçalo, 442  
 Fernandez, Jeronimo, 419, 434, 588  
 Fernandez, Joao, 396  
 Fernandez, Joao, cousin of Domingos  
     Corea, 501; Idagore Nayde, 507;  
     rebellion of, 505, 567  
 Fernandez, Father Lazaro, 782  
 Fernandez, Lourenço, Secretary of  
     Darma Pala, 524  
 Fernandez, Madanela, 722  
 Fernandez, Manoel, 977  
 Fernandez, Martim, 543  
 Fernandez, S.J., Father Mathew.  
     666  
 Fernandez, Miguel, Modeliar, 707  
 Fernandez, Nicolas, 823  
 Fernandez, Pero, 438  
 Fernandez, Simao, 419  
 Fernandez, Thome, 670  
 Fernandez de Abreu, Francisco, 792

- Fernandez de Abreu, Jorge, 725, 792, 833, 834; Capt. of Nigumbo, 824, 825; island of, 824, 825, 859, 876, 877, 878
- Fernandez de Ataide, Luis, 554
- Fernandez de Ataide, Nuno, 444, 446; Capt. of Manár, 449, 450
- Fernandez da Cunha, Antonio, keeper of the Castle, Gále, 843
- Fernandez Columbrina, Joaõ, 328, 411
- Fernandez Corea, Joaõ, Capt. of Negapatam, 365, 375, 379, 386, 389, 391, 392
- Fernandez Coutinho, Vasco, 198
- Fernandez Funchal, Ignacio, 974, 975, 976
- Fernandez Gago, Joaõ, 503
- Fernandez Madeyra, Manoel, Capt., 834, 836, 840
- Fernandez Marneleyro, Joaõ, 420
- Fernandez de Melo, Dinis, 188
- Fernandez de Miranda, Manoel, 951, 966
- Fernandez Moricale, Francisco, 217
- Fernandez de Oliveyra, Manoel, 927
- Fernandez Prilhaõ, Diogo, 399, 402, 403, 407, 411, 418
- Fernando, Don, Modeliar (Samaracón 495), 439, 494, 507, 508, 521, 522, 531, 549, 555, 559, 575, 581, 590, 591, 761, 1081, 1076; at Alicur Coria, 469; attacks Oratota, 471; at Reygaõ Coria, 495; entrusted with Gále and Maturé, 496, 500; erected stockade at Gale, 497; reduced Dinavaca, 497; at Doravaca, 498; tempted by Domingos Corea, 501; in the 'assault of the Venetians', 509; at Uruvere, 510, 511, 512; captured Domingos Correa, 512, 513; carried in triumph, 513; at Maturé, 515; arrested brother, 517; liberality of, 575; fidelity, 576, 582, 603; taken ill, 602; arrested and sent to Goa, 603; Captain of Goa, 603; Captain of Ormuz, 603; death, 603; brother of, 508, 517; brother-in-law, 512, 591
- Fernando, Don, Interpreter of Darma Pala, 524, 526
- Ferraõ de Castel Braneo, Miguel, Capt., 783; Capt.-Major of Field, 792-796
- Ferras . Brandaõ Francisco, Capt., wrecked in Col., 559, 560, 580, 584, 584
- Ferreys, Augustinho, Capt., 877
- Ferreys, Belchior, 588
- Ferreys, S.J., Father Bento, 1000
- Ferreys, Diogo, 470
- Ferreys, Duarte, 352
- Ferreys, Francisco, Capt., 212
- Ferreys, Francisco, Capt., 877
- Ferreys, Gaspar, 470
- Ferreys, Manoel, 587, 588
- Ferreys, Marquis de, 234
- Ferreys, Miguel of Aleobaco, at Cota, 209, 226; at San Thome, 224; leads expedition, 224; at Columbo, 225; marches against Siytavaca, 227-230; letter of, 231-3; character of, 233
- Ferreys, Pero, 224
- Ferreys, Thorne, adjutant, 980
- Ferreys, Thome, 593
- Ferreys de Abreu, Bertolameu, Capt. cassado of Gále, 840
- Ferreys Barachõ, Miguel, 442
- Ferreys Beligaõ, Domingos, 632, 859; Capt.-Major of Field, 808, 814, 816, 859
- Ferreys de Brito, Lourenço, Capt. of Gále, 829, 841, 831, 845; taken prisoner, 848; at Batavia, 851; at Acouraça, 870; at Nogumbo, 887; at Columbo, 943, 957, 969; negotiates surrender of Columbo, 982
- Ferreys Fialho, Thome, 944, 949
- Ferreys Gomez, Manoel, 975, 976
- Ferreys Leyte, Thome, 976
- Ferreys da Silva, Capt., 877
- Ferreys da Silva, Antonio, 998
- Ferro das Neves, Phelipe, 845
- Festa Joaõ, Capt. of Batecalou, 841
- Feyo, Antonio, Capt., 705
- Fialho, Joaõ, Capt., 196
- Fialho, Manoel, 683
- Fialho, Marcelo, 924
- Fialho Pereira, Urbano, 920
- Figs of India (plantains), 71
- Figueyra, Bartolameu, father of Gaspar Figueyra, 899
- Figueyra Manoel, 976
- Figueyra Rodrigo, 395
- Figueyra de Serpe, Gaspar, at Boralapanatota, 869; made commander of mutineers, 898; career of, 899, 902-3, 933; garrisoned Columbo, 905; Capt.-Major of Field, 906-913, 957; marches on Nigumbo, 907; besieged Angurata, 908; in Four and Seven Corias, 909; Arandara, 912, 913

- 930; Capt.-Major of Four and Seven Corias, 925; attacks king of Candea, 926-928; white shield of, 927; attacks Tumpane, 929, 932; receives ambassadors of king, 931; receives an elephant from king, 930-1; warfare of, 932-3; in siege of Columbo, 933, 943; at Mutapali, 934, 935; summoned to oppose Hollanders, 937; sent to reinforce Calature, 939; gave battle to Hollanders at Paniture, 940; defeated, retires to Columbo, 941-2; ceases to be Capt.-Major, 957; promised to king by Hollanders, 1195; at Goa, 933; death of, 933
- Figueyredo, Francisco do, 250
- Figueyredo, Jeronimo de, 214, 217
- Figueyredo Salgado, Paulo de, 730
- Firinghee, 67
- Fishery Coast, 1, 993; St. Francis Xavier at, 237, 242; Christians, proposed removal of, 394; Captains of, 248; rents of, 450, 1153, 1194
- Flaz, Joāo, 870
- Flores, Joāo, 189
- Flos Sanctorum*, 688
- Fo, 79, 141
- Foe, 79, 122
- Foists, 1, 425, 426, 430, 433, 435, 437, 441, 442, 447, 473, 495, 503, 511, 546, 554, 566, 589, 783, 791, 792, 817, 855, 862, 913, 933, 993, 994
- Fonceca, Andre de, 399, 402, 403, 411, 420, 422
- Fonceca, Antonio de, Capt., 323, 339, 420
- Fonceca, Antonio da, 670, 791, 809
- Fonceca, Bernardino da, Syndic and Interpreter of the Franciscans at Candea, 702
- Fonceca, Duarte da, 434
- Fonceca, Joāo da, shot Constantine de Sa, 778
- Fonceca, Marcel de, 566
- Fonceca, Miguel da, Serg.-Major, 775, 803
- Fonceca, S.J., Father Sebastião da, Rector, ambassador to Candea, 895
- Fonceca Homem, Antonio da, 980
- Fonceca Moniz, Manoel da, 969, 840
- Fonceca Ozario, Joāo da, Dissava of Mature, 803, 833
- Fonceca Pereyra, Antonio, Capt., 792; Dissava of Four Corias, 833, 839, 844
- Fontes, Francisco de, 310
- Footprint, author of, 38, 120
- Foral, 1026, 1055, 1090
- Forcados, island of, 56, 628, 629, 630
- Forquilhas, mosquetas da, 547
- Forreiros, cruelties of, 1006
- 'Forte', translation of, 36
- Founder, badge of, 97
- Four Corias, 32, 43-46; divisions of, 43, 33; boundaries of, 47; forces of, 33; principality of, 528; con fines of, 532, 533, 519; door to (Manicravare), 751; elephants in, 74; men of, 44, 560, 596, 607, 531, 540, Pachas of, 20; prince of, 541, 557; conquest of, 516; annexed to Seytavaca, 204; seized by Rajú, 469; Portuguese at, 536, 557, 610; stockade of, 535; turbulent country, 531, 560; disturbances in, 560; roads to, 546; Dominicans in, 720
- Four Corias, Dissávas of, 66, 802, 860, 861, 869; Luis Gomes Pinto, 601-612; Francisco de Brito de Almeida, 730, 734, 770, 782; Manoel Peçanha, 778; Jorge Coelho de Castro, 792; Bernardo da Costa, 803; Manoel Vaz, Barreto, 809, 823; Antonio da Fonseca Pereyra, 833, 839, 844; Joāo Botado, de Seixas, 898, 906-909; Joāo de Gouva, 914-926; Diogo de Souza de Castro, 926, 934; Andre de Seixas da Silva, 934, 943
- Fragoso, Francisco, 839
- Fragoso, Joāo, 450
- Fragoso, Manoel, 973
- Francis, banner of St., 343
- Francis, St., Lisbon, Prince of Ceylon at, 328
- Francis, Wounds of St., Church, Calature, 717; Velacare, 718
- Franciscans, arrival, 235, 236; First Missioners in Ceylon, 138, 181-182, 257, 576, 696; in Cota, 213, 350, 402, 403, 415, 419, 420; in Jafanap., 365, 374, 462, 628, 634, 635, 640, 641, 647, 651, 656, 661; in Caes, 57, 628; in Manár, 396, 448, 484, 691; in Gale, 705, 706; in Candea, 506, 607, 613, 615, 697, 698, 708, 710, 713, 802, 1095; Parish'priests, 577, 692, 693, 698, 699, 711; in Columbo, 277, 331, 524, 720, 971; Colleges, 330, 331, 539, 632, 657, 664, 708, 714, 1053; Seminaries, 330, 332, 539, 664; captured, 490, 509, 546, 1059; churches, 35, 306,

306, 701, 714-719; Guardian and Commissary, 670, 708, 710, 721; killed in rebellions, 555, 586, 587, 589, 655; 656, 698, 712, 713; killed, 374, 316, 374, 490, 698, 1059; Minister, Provincial, 692, 1058; and Dharma Pala, 307, 529, 697, 1059; persecutions, 287; services to King, 697, 1058; revenges of, 331, 1053; Syndic of, 683, '054, 1056, Jafanap., 670, 672, Candea, 702; Guardian, 331; Ceylonese, 693  
 Francisco, Antonio, 224, 558  
 Francisco Don, prince of Jafanap., 693  
 Francisco Don, 787  
 Francisco Pero, Modeliar, 448  
 Franco Estevaõ, 434  
 Franco Pero Jorge, 323, 397, 407, 409, 422, 420  
 Francos, 67  
 Francozo, Francisco, 395  
 Franguiz, 67  
 Franks, 67  
 French, 67, 299; at Triquilemalé, 68; war with Hollanders, 1196  
 Frenchman, captured by Figueyra, 907  
 Freyre, Giraldo, 539  
 Freyre de Andrade Gomez, 185, 256, 268  
 Freyre de Andrade, Manoel, 592  
 Freyre de Andrade, Nuno, Capt., arrival, 188; Factor and Alcaide Mor of Columbo, 205; at Cota, 207-8, 212-13, 216, 224, 226, 233; attacks Malavares, 208, 209, 211-12, 267-8; nephew of, 268;  
 Freyre de Souza, Joaõ, 782  
 Freytas, Francisco de, 292  
 Freytas, Gaspar de, 639  
 Freytas, Gomez Ares de, 584  
 Freytas, Nuno de, 419  
 Freytas, Theodosio de, 310  
 Freytas de Camara, Ambrosio de, made tombo of Jafanap., 646, 757; Vedor da Fazenda, 693, 741, 1030; career of, 741-742; opposed plans of Ss., 751; leaves Ceylon, 752; returns as Vedor da Fazenda, 770  
 Freytas de Souza, Simaõ, 782  
 Friars of St. Francis—  
 Alvaro da Purificação, 725; Andre de St. Joseph, 661; Andre de Lourenco, 628; Andre the Englishman, 656; Andre de S. Maria, 333, 661, 1084; Angelo de Salvador, 664, 665; Anthonio, 679;

Friars of St. Francis—contd.  
 Anthonio de S. Bernardino, 628, 630, 631, 679; Anthonio de Coimbra, 541; Anthonio de Madre de Deus, 447, 586, 587; Anthonio de Nossa Senhora, 692; Antonio de S. Iago, 607; Antonio de S. Maria, 557, 640, 653, 671, 680, 685; Antonio de S. Philipr, 641; Bertholameu de S. Sebastiaõ, 706; Basilio, 878; Belchior do Lisboa, 327, 365, 374; Bernardo, 589; Bernardo da Cruz, 710; Bernadino Don (Jaffna Prince), 693-4; Betancor, Pedro de, 57, 462, 663, 664, 676, 678; Braga, Francisco de, 316; Calvo Joaõ, 278, 316; Chanoca, Duarte, 448, 449, 452, 457, 708; Diogo, 650; Dinis Paulo, 672; Drago, Pedro, 706; Elutherio de S. Diago, 711, 798; Francisco de S. Antonio, 628; Francisco das Lapaõs, 588; Francisco de Jesus 647; Francisco de Monclaro, 599; Francisco de Oriente, 449, 451, 705, 708; Fernandez Antonio, 1000; Gaspar de Madalena, 607, 613, 614, 615, 710; Gaspar de Conceicaõ, 692; Gaspar, Dom Frey, 381; Gaspar dos Reis, 506; Gonçalo, 257, 701; Gonçalo da Rosa, 490; Jeronimo de Spirito Santo, 708; Joaõ de S. Maria, 721; Joaõ, 374; Joseph de S. Francisco, 698, 783; Joseph de Nosas Senhora, 710; Barthomaiou de Lisboa, 419; Lucas de S. Francisco, 661; Luis, 383, 490; Luis de Conceicaõ, 713, Luis de S. Diago, 464, 467, 635, 677, 691; Manuel dos Anjos, 161; Manoel de Conceicaõ, 713; Manoel de Elvas, 634, 710; Manoel de S. Josaphat, 613; Mancel Porevra, 490; Mancel dos Santos, 331; Mancel de Trindade, 509, 713; Marcos de S. Catherina, 713; Marcos do S. Guililme, 257; Martim da Guarda, 331, 418, 419; Padraõ, Antonio, 316; Pais, Lourenço de, 676; Paschoal, 257, 701, 704, 705; Paulo de S. Boaventura, 213; Paulo da Trindade, 721, 723; Pedro dos Anjos, 710, 721, 722; Pedro de Belem, 402, 403, 418, 419; Pedro de Christo, 490, 546, 661; Pedro de Madalena, 702; Peyxoto, Antonio, 712, 713; Ran-

gel, Amador, 685; Rodrigo das Chagas, 706; Sebastião da Madre de Deus, 651; Silva, Duarte da, 524; Simão da Lux, 499; Simão de Nazareth, 350, 403, 415, 419, 420; Souza, Andre de, 705; Souza, Pedro de, 358; Turin, João, 713; Vicente, 176–181; Vila de Conde, João, 236, 238, 258, 267, 307, 315, 327, 330, 522, 714  
 Frias, Manoel de, 384  
 Frigates, 988  
 Frisians, 3  
 Friz, Capt., 833  
 Fronteyros, 104  
 Furtado, Afonso, 250  
 Furtado de Mendonça, Andre, 534, 559, 1101; expedition to Jafanap., 49, 52, 101, 446–456; at Columbo, 447, 468; at Manár, 448–50, 454; at Jafanap., 451–454, 677; return to India, 454; career of, 55–6;  
 Governor of India, 610

## G.

Gabaragama, 481  
 Gabdagam, Gabara villages (Gabadagam), 1013, 1015, 1031, 1032, 1035, 1076; see also Dispense villages  
 Gaboyua, church of St. Mary of Jesus, 718  
 Gaetri, 168  
 Gadalameniya, Gaddaladdym, inscription of, 274; pagode of, 273  
 Gaetri, 160, 168  
 Gago, Prince of Jafanap., 452; wife of, 453  
 Cal, 35  
 Gai Kapuruhany, 44  
 Galababe, gravets of, 932  
 Galagedara Pass, 46  
 Galalua, 1156  
 Galas, 7, 1005  
 Galayo de Castelbranco, Tristeão, 450  
 Galbaragama (Galbodagama), 575  
 Galboca, 943  
 Galbodagama, see Galbaragama  
 Gále (Galle), 2, 35; cinnamon in, 881; derivation of name, 35; principality of, 32; port of, 31, 403, 404, 819, 830, 856, regedores of, 272; coast of, 437; Point of, 2, 933; Coria of, 34, 437; streets, 845, 852, town, 841; bazaar, 831; Pittigale, 831; Unavatão, 31, 830, 862; Capt.-Major of Gále Coria, 34

Diasáva of Gále Coria, Antunes 830, 831, Antonio de Souza Cayado 497, Fernão de Mendonça 829, Pero Veloso 829; Portuguese at, 177, 188, 437, 511, 726, 783, 862; stockade, 497, 508; Capt. Antonio de Souza Cayado, 497, 500; Antonis Miranda Azevedo, 500, 508; fortalice, 35, 827, 828, 829, 847, 849, 922; retreat, 846; bastions, 828, 829, 837, 840, 942; walls, 829; moat, 527; fortifications, 627, 740, 830; garrison, 829, 839, 840

Captains, 549, 843; Pero Veloso 489, 490, 590, 720, 829; Antônio de Souza Godinho, 515; Lourenço Pires de Carvalho, 515; Domingos Carvalho Caño, 720, 757; Antonio Moura de Oliveira, 808; Lourenço Ferreira de Brito, 829, 848; João Rodriguez Leytaão, 848

Factor, 744, 840; attack on, 814, 827–849; field battle, 927, 828, 831, 833, 834, 836, 842; siege, 827, 828, 831, 837; fail, 831, 845, 847, 851; fate of survivors, 849–52; Keeper of Castle, 843; Clerks, 840; Canacapole, 744; Vigayro da Vara, 721; Jesuits, 720, 791, 814, 848; Dominicans, 720, 846; Franciscans, 716; Churches, 716; Misericordia, 845; Christians, 716; Customduties, 726, 1192

Hollanders, 632, 814, 818; plans, 814, 827, 874; attack, 827–849; Hollander Captains: João Matheus, 870, 873; Coster, 854; Miguel Santaman, 854, 855; Thyssen, 870–886; Governor: Adriaen Vanderment, 938; Adriaen Rothea, 974; fortifications, 1195; blockade by Portuguese, 861, 862, 865, 867, 868, 874; records, 872

Gale Nuwara, 69  
 Galeacem, 207, 208  
 Galega, 215  
 Galego Simão, 217, 250  
 Galetota (Egaletota), see Agaletota  
 Galgudese, 505  
 Galgue, 35  
 Galjetane, see Ganjetana  
 Galigamuwa, 44  
 Galitota, see Agalatota  
 Galjettes, 100  
 Galkaduwā Bandara, 44  
 Galkissa, 2

- Galle Buck, 942  
 Galleua (Haloluwa), 859  
 Galleon, 435, 552, 559, 918, 1166  
 Galliass, 558  
 Galliots, 351, 427, 433, 442, 448, 517,  
     629, 783, 807, 808, 818, 819, 853,  
     857, 861, 933, 939  
 Galley, 351, 425, 442, 443, 448, 479,  
     495, 511, 782, 785  
 Galmangor, village of Chaliás, revenue from, 1193  
 Galpata, church of St. John the Baptist, 717  
 Galvão, Ambrosio, 419  
 Galvão, Lourenço, 400  
 Gama, Ayres da, 185  
 Gama, D. Chistovão da, 233  
 Gama, D. Estevão da, Governor of India (1540-1542), 227, 234  
 Gama, Francisco da, Capt., 611  
 Gama, D. Francisco da, brings reinforcement, 535  
 Gama, D. Francisco da, Conde de Vidigueyra, 709  
 Gama, Vasco da, Conde de Vidigueyra, 161, 171; Viceroy (1534) 207, 205, 232  
 Gama, Lopo da, 841  
 Gamamandepale, 64  
 Gamatoys, 1010, 1015  
 Gambira Arache, 555  
 Gamboa, Joao de, 924  
 Gampa (Gampaha), 1069, 1093; church of the Holy Cross, 718; revenues of, 1193  
 Gampaha, see above  
 Gampala Gampala,  
 Gampala, Gampala, 443, 704; county of, 24; principality of, 58, 64  
 Gampola, Little, 70  
 Gampola, Boneca Bau, 24  
*Gamevasam* 1010  
 Gancarias, 689, 739  
 Gandola (Gandolaha), 538, 544, 557  
 Gandola Pattiwa, 44  
 Ganetane, see Ganietane  
 Ganex (Ganinanse), 30, 31, 65, 67,  
     81, 114, 117, 118, 119, 120, 140,  
     193, 214, 221, 240, 286, 287, 288,  
     331, 335, 608  
 Ganga, 41, 143  
 Ganges, 41, 143, 118, 1118  
 Ganipena, 797  
 Ganietane, Ganetenna, 445, 561, 563,  
     565, 570, 571, 573, 578, 580, 583,  
     600, 932  
 Ganiture, 276  
 Gantale (Kantale), 68; lands of, 1154  
 Ganur (Gannoruwa), Don Philip acclaimed at, 445; Lopes de Souza at, 487; battle of, 488; river of, (Mahaveli-ganga) 704  
 Capuluvigiva, 9  
 Garanvana, 43  
 Garavoto (Gravot) 46, 100, 316; of Galababa, 932; of Veura, 46  
 Garcia, Joao, 470  
 Garcia de Pinho, Antonio, 792.  
 Garvettes, 100  
 Gaspar de Madanela Friar, see Madanela  
 Gaspar, D. Frey, 381  
 Gaurus, 75  
 Garara, 75  
 Gayaba, King of C., 13  
 Gayges, 104  
 Geiger, 36  
*Gelapralaya*, 144  
 Gem lands, 4  
 Gennning, revenue from, 1193  
 Genalogaõ, 111  
 General Conquistador, 1078  
 Generals of Ceylon (see Captain Generals), residence of, 103; cruelties of, 1005; insolence of, 1007; wrongs of, 1037-1040; complaints against, 1044-1049; neglect of, 1044-5; titles of, 1074  
 Geographical Treasury, 2  
 Geometrical leagues, 2  
 Geometrical paces, 791  
 Geon, 40  
 Gergilim, 127, 130, 650  
 Ghates, 160, 169, 2000  
 Gil Crespo, Manoel, 792, 910, 911,  
     913, 914, 925, 926, 928, 940, 943;  
     Capt.-Major of Alicur Coria, 906;  
     Dissáva of Nigumbo, 938  
 Gindic, 91  
 Gingals, 61, 73, 547  
 Gintotz, see Guindure  
 Gintupitiya, 903  
 Giraldes, Gerardo, 543  
 Giratacachem, 74  
 Girindam, 111  
 Gnagna Prakasar, O.M.I., Father S., 49, 53, 243, 363, 452, 463, 667  
 Goa, Council of, 174; plain of S Thome, 385; disadvantages of position, 1129; Casados, contos, 528, 1192; Torre do Tombo, 528; Colleg. of the Magi, Ceylon princes at, 693, 708  
 Godinho, Antonio, Capt., 823  
 Godinho, Touro Miguel, Capt., 843  
 Goes, Damiao de, 162, 172, 450

- Góes, Gil de, 338, 347, 352, 438  
 Golayo de Castelbranco, Arthur, 437  
 Golayo de Castelbranco, Tristão, 56,  
   454 ; lord of the island (Cais), 628,  
   661  
 Golconda, kingdom, 78 ; kings of,  
   179  
 Gold, methods of digging, 1112  
 Goldsmith, badge of, 97  
 Gomez, Antonio, 877 ; Capt., 883  
 Gomez, Domingos, Capt. of Opani-  
   que, 575, 591  
 Gomez, Estevão, 527  
 Gomez, Gaspar, 438  
 Gomez, Manoel, rebellion of, 554, 557,  
   558, 567, 629, 639  
 Gomez, Simão, 428  
 Gomez, de Abreu, Paulo, 347  
 Gomez Arrabido, Luis, 553  
 Gomez Cordovil, Fernão, 352, 366,  
   386, 389, 391  
 Gomez de Costa, Manoel, 944, 960  
 Gomez Homem, Antonio, 792  
 Gomez de Lemos, Fernão, Capt. of  
   Columbo, 205  
     , Joaõ, 872  
     Diogo, 472  
     Francisco, 323, 350,  
       403, 407, 410, 411,  
       423, 427, 430, 431,  
       496, 507, 508, 509,  
       Major of the Field, 439  
     , Dissava of Four  
     Corias, 603, 607, 610, 612 :  
       Seven-Corias, 612, 776,  
     Francisco, 990, 991  
     , Fernão, 250  
     , 57, 701  
     , Friar, 490  
     , 470, 724  
     , Urdo, Capt., 839, 844,  
     , tovaõ, 438  
     , 411, 418, 420, 423,  
     , 368  
     , 217  
     , 113  
     , 844  
     , 688  
     , 434  
     , 637  
     , 419, 426, 434  
     , 724  
     , 438  
     , 556  
     , Diogo, 402, 403  
     Gonçalvez de Soto, Luis, vereador,  
       527  
     Gonçalvez de Souza, Luis, Capt., 859  
     Gonçalvez Ribeyro, Jorge, 518, 588  
     Gonçalvez Velho, Francisco, 839, 843  
     Goracana (Gorakana), 421, 717, 718  
     Goraka, 717  
     Gotra, 89  
     Gotriz, 89, 145  
     Gouvea, Joaõ de, Dissava of Four-  
       Corias, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914,  
       926  
     Goyava, 71  
     Gracit, Thome, 209  
     'Grand stockade', on the banks of the  
       Calane, 344, 430, 707, 783, 784 ;  
       attacked by Port. 345, 424, 425,  
       427, 443, 444, 793 ; Captain, 425 ;  
       battle, 344 ; Portuguese at, 473,  
       494, 554, 793, 794, 1156  
     Grandola (Gandolaha), see Gandola  
     Grandmother of King of Setylaca,  
       476  
     Grandson of Boneca Bau, 285  
     Grantham, 111  
     Grapes, 71  
     Gravet (Kadawata), 100, 316, 509,  
       541, 542, 595, 932  
     Greece, 25  
     Greek authors, 165  
     Greek, compared with Sinhalese, 118  
     Greek rhetoric, 166  
     Gregory XIII., Pope, brief of, 529  
     Grisma, 108  
     Grisma, 108  
     Guadalupe, Our Lady of, 432  
     Guarda-mores, 94  
     Guci, 124  
     Gudramala (Kudramalai), 2  
     Gudes de Souza, Baltazar, Capt. of  
       Columbo, 396, 399-419  
     Gudes de Souza, Gonçalo, 399, 400,  
       404, 405  
     Guedes, Andre, 559  
     Guelagama, 315  
     Guerra, Duarte da, 440, 442  
     Guerreyro, Antonio, 323, 339, 404,  
       420  
     Guerreyro, Simão, 419  
     Guerreyro Neves, Manoel, Dissava of  
       Seven-Corrias, 906, 907, 910, 911,  
       912, 913, 914, 924, 944, 971, 973  
     Guides, Francisco, 553  
     Guinde, 91  
     Guindure (Gintota) 2, 31, 430, 437,  
       831, 875 ; river of, 42, 437 ;  
       Hollander stockade, 1195  
     Guinea, 77

- Guirindas**, 165  
**Gulabay**, King of C., 13  
**Gundra**, 786  
**Gurgura**, 717  
**Gurjaō Fialhō**, Francisco, 943  
**Guro**, 107  
**Guru**, 106  
**Gurubobile**, stockade of, 475 ; key to Suytavaca, 707 ; Captain, Panica Modeliar, 475 ; attacked by Portuguese, 475 ; Portuguese stockade, 494, 495, 496, 502, 508, 539, 587, 911, 912, 914, 1084, dismantled, 508, fortified, 515, Captain of, 539, burnt, 553, lands of, 909 : Hollander stockade, 1195  
**Gurugal Oya**, 815  
**Guterres de Vasconcelos**, Gaspar, Capt., 399, 402, 403, 411, 418, 419  
**Guzarate**, 48
- H.
- Haarlem**, 56  
**Habaō**, Cape of, 25  
**Habaragama**, 36  
**Habaregama** (*Sabaragamuwa*), see Sofragāō  
**Habed**, king of Deccan, 179  
**Hakahinna**, see Acayna  
**Hakmana**, see Acumena  
**Halawata**, see Chilao  
**Halelua**, see Alelua  
**Hali Abraham**, 213, 215, 218  
**Haloluwa**, see Alelua  
**Hammenahiel**, 996  
**Hands cut off**, 545  
**Handugala**, see Andugal  
**Hannibal**, 225, 194  
**Haparegama** (*Sabaragamuwa*), see Sofragāō  
**Hapitigam Korale**, see Apitigaō Corle  
**Haraciyapattuwa**, see Anciapatu  
**Harandure** (*Arandara*), see Arandure  
**Harique Jari Pandara**, 463 ; uncle of, 464 ; brother of, 464  
**Hatalispauwa**, see Atalispauwa  
**Hawana**, 114  
**Headland of Jala** (*Yala*), 2  
**Heather**, government of, 91  
**Hebaregama**, see Habaregama  
**Hebrewa**, 159, 160, 184, 186, 240  
**Heela**, 107  
**Helagora Rala**, 755  
**Helice**, 3  
**Helikorus**, 165  
**Heliogobalus**, 81
- Hemanta**, 108  
**Henabia**, 95  
**Henda-mana Singa Cumara**, 452 ; tributary king of Jafanap., 454-462 ; Pera Jara Chegara Pandar, 454 ; conspiracy against, 457 ; brother of, 463 ; nephew of, 463 ; loyal proceedings of, 456-467 ; son of, 463 ; death of, 462  
**Heneraz Bandar**, King of Cota, 27  
**Henaraz Bandar**, 305 ; see Ernaz Bandar  
**Henaras Modeliar**, 432  
**Henrique Don**, Cardinal, 327  
**Henriques**, Alonço, 260  
**Henriques**, D. Braz, 198  
**Henriques**, King of Portugal, 28  
**Henriques Don**, Modeliar, 439, 521, 522, 531 ; br-in-law of Don Fernando, 512  
**Henriquez**, D. Joāo, 250 ; Capt.-Major of Ceylon, 302  
**Henriquez**, D. Lope, 559, 560  
**Henriquez**, D. Sancho, 409  
**Henriquez**, Francisco, the Catana, 877  
**Herber**, 786  
**Hermitage of Our Lady of Victory**, 306  
**Herodianus**, 238  
**Hetanura** (*Yatinuwara*), 58  
**Heti Arache**, 555  
**Hiala**, Vanea of, 528  
**Hiarcaō**, 162  
**Hiatanura** (*Yatinuwara*), 62  
**Highway to Candea**, 562  
**Hina Coral** (*Siyane Korale*), 267, 285, 422  
**Hina**, King of Cota, 28  
**Hina Raja Beau**, King of Ceylon, 28  
**Hindustan**, 8 ; Christians of, 162, 164  
**Hingodagal** Neure (*Senkadagala Nuware*), 258  
**Hipparchus** 109  
**Hira-hura**, 18  
**Hiravra**, Vanea of, 788  
**Hiriale Corla**, 46  
**Histories**, Chingalā, 27  
**Hitavaca** (*Sitawaka*), 8  
**Hobson-Jobson**, 273, 817  
**Hollanders**—arrival in the East, 812 ; dealings with King of Candea, 101, 800, 954 ; assistance from King of C., 818, 944 ; assistance to King of C., 821, 927 ; quarrels with King of C., 820, 892 ; invest Triquillimale 735, 817-818, delivers fort to king 1195, forts 1196, seized again 896, 1196 ; invest Baticalou 810, 819, delivers

- to king 1195, seized again 849, 986, 1195, Capt. of 841; invest Nigumbo, 819-21, 822-827; lose Nigumbo 858-860, recovers 876-886, 888, 902; Gāle, attempt on, 814, 827-837; Gāle, siege of 837-849, Captain 854, 855, 870, 873, Governors 938, 974, fortifications 1195, besieged in 861, 862, 865, 867, 869, 874; Calature, 908, 914, 915, 926-26, 936-38, 1195; Columbo, attempts on, 818, 819, 827, 869. Cōl, siege 944-984, capture 984, 985; Manār, siege, 625, 993-996; Jafanap. siege, 996-999
- Truce with Portuguese, 867, 892, 895, 897, 934, 945; defeats, 872; losses, 824; exchange of prisoners, 975; cruelties of, 601, 1006; wiles of, 1166-67; persecution of Catholics, 812, 647, 1169, 1170, 1172, 1197, 821; destruction of churches, 925; league with Moors, 864; Domine of, 814, 819, 827; ambassadors of, 800, 854; charts of, 31, 65, 752; soundings of, 35, 68; God delivered Ceylon to, 365; at Goa, blockade, of 987; attempts on, 1002; treatment of soldiers, 756; hatred of Portuguese, 811, treatment of prisoners, 861; monopoly of salt, 1195; forces in the East, 1188-91; fortifications in Ceylon, 1194-1196
- Homa, 156
- Homem, Francisco, 559, 560
- Homem de Azevedo, Antonio, 566, 584
- Homem da Costa, Joāo, Ouvidor of of Columbo, 584
- Homem Mascarenhas, Manoel, Capt.-General of Ceylon, 102, 620
- Homem Pereyra, Pedro, Capt. of Columbo, 469, 470, 472, 473, 477, 480, 481, 494, 503, 529
- Homem de Silva, Estevāo, son of Manoel Mascarenhas Homem, 907
- Hoorn, 56
- 'Hoppers', 96
- Horana, see Orna
- Holy Wise Kings, church, Vilitota, 717
- Hudua, 108
- Hudos, 16
- Hruit, General, 934, 950, 953, 970, 974
- Hulftedorp, 942
- Hurerata, 68
- Hurunura (Udunuwara), Dissava of, 58; lands of, 62
- Husbarīmen, badge of, 97
- Hysanth, 50
- I.
- Iacaganga, 41
- Ibn Batuta, 4
- Idagore (Iddagoda Nayde), see Joāo Fernandez
- Idalxa (Adil Shah), 246, 297, 383, 384
- Idam, king of Ceylon, 27
- Idandavel, Capt. of, 589; stockade of, 563
- Iddagoda, see Idagore
- Idigalsina, 569
- Idrla Arache, Idrila Bandar, Idrila Modianç (Domingos Correa), see Jeronimo, 50
- Idrimana Suria Bandar, see Domingos Correa
- Idrumana Suria Bandar, see Idrimana
- Idumalepane, stockade of, 531, 532, 533; lands of, 537
- Idurumaraturi, D. Jeronimo, Arache, 771
- Il, 107, 108
- Ilambiture, 1163
- Ilandutari, 1159
- Ilangacon, see Pedro de Abreu Modeliar
- Ilangakon, 204, 473
- Ilangot, Hollander stockade, 1195
- Ilanir, 553
- Ilaur, church of the Conception, 664, 695
- Ilerane, 5
- 'Il-beheaded', nickname of Domingos Correa, 501, 511
- Iluppati, 672
- Iman, 298
- Ina Coria, see Siyane Coria
- Inambane, Kingdom of, 1106
- Inavaca, see Dinavaca
- Indara Bau, King of C., 26
- Indian navigation, treatise on, 3
- Industan, elephants of, 74
- Ines, Don, Jafanap. prince, 693
- Ingale-gal-nure (Senkadagalawara), 258
- Ingurutile, 8, 9
- Inhamas, 36
- Inhaopala Coria, 46
- Inquisition of Goa, Simāo Correa, before, 533

Inscription, Gaddaladym, 274 ; Chinese, 35 ; Triquinimale, pagode, 67  
 Investiture of modeliars, 929  
 Iona (yon), name of Moors, 21  
 Ionco'ava'ddanava, 21  
*Ipetta* (*Ipetta*), 99  
*Iva*, 105  
 Iranaitivu, 56  
*Ivi*, 105  
 Iron falcons, 960  
 Isaac, 166, 167  
*Iisa*, 240  
 Island of the Buffaloes, 56 ; of Jafanap., 55, 645, 677 ; of the Brahamins, 56 ; of the forcados, 56, 628, 629, 630 ; of challenges, 57 ; of Pigeons, 66 ; of Two Sisters, 56 ; of the snakes, 56 ; of the cows, 56, 261, 254, 650, 665 ; (Delft), town of, 665 ; of Don Francisco, 433, 437 ; of Dona Clara, 56 ; of Jorge Fernandez, 876  
 Ismael, 159, 160  
*Iepilla*, 116  
 Israel, kingdom of, 159  
 Itacon, king of Cota, 27  
 Itacon, 204 ; secretary of Boneca Bau, 219, 225, 254, 262  
 Italatica, king of Ceylon, 13  
 Itara Maguey, mother of Madune, 398  
 Itupala Bandar (Jotopala), Prince of Seven Corlas, 516  
 Ijudunura (Uduunuware), 438  
 Ivory, 34  
 Ixa Ara Nayque, king of Bisnaga, 383  
 Isabel, Dona, princess of Jafanap, 693  
 Ikanativu, 56  
 Islamgamcon (Illangakon), 204, 475

J.

Jacome, Antonio, Ouvidor, 524, 527  
 Jacome, Christiano, 569, 572  
 Jacques, Diogo, 980  
 Jacques, Francisco, 792  
 Jacques, Henrique, 369  
 Jadacaa (Yakdessa), 67, 121, 243, 281, 336, 365  
 Jafanapataō, name, 47, 48 ; point of, 5, 6 ; port of, 31 ; trade of, 645 ; population of, 50 ; cloth of, 58 ; kingdom of, 27, 47-58 ; appertained to Cota, 101, 105, 528 ; tributary to Tanjaor, 265, 384, 457 ; tributary to Portugal, 252, 371, 626 ; conquest of, Martim Afonso

de Souza 101, 250-254, 660, Braganza 101, 351-381, 393-396, 446, 660, Furtado 101, 445-456, 660, Oliveyra 101, 628-647 ; Spiritual Conquest, 661-696  
 Kings of, 32, 435 ; devise of, 366 (see First King, Champes Pera Mali 48, Ariaxaca Varati, Xague Raja, Cachim Nayra, Congi Naynar, Puvi Raja Pandara, Pera Rajera, Chegra Pandar, Hendarmansinga (Pera Jara Chegora Pandar), Priapule (Pera Pulai), Blind King 737, Changali) ; Princes of, 358, 360, 361, 364, 371, 632, 634, 635, 638, 654, 659, 687, 692, 693 ; son of Xaga Raja, 49, 357, 359 ; Prince Gago, 452 ; Prince Changali, 453  
 King of Portugal proclaimed, 453, 645 ; Portuguese Province, 645, 660, 757 ; Captains of, 56, 696 ; Antonio da Mota Galvao 864, 855, house of 630 ; Arez 458-460, Sampayo, 996 ; Captain-Majors of, 645, 653, 654, 758, 947 (see Philipe de Oliveyra, Manoel de Merquita Pimentel 653, Lançarote de Seyxas Cabreyra, Amaral de Menezes, General Mendez Aranha 995)  
 Islands of, 55, 645, 677, Dona Clara, 996 ; Tombo of, 7, 58, 646, 757 ; Veddas of, 17 ; Pagode of, 637 ; Revenues of, 1193-94  
 Jafanapataō, town, 666 ; palace, 361, 363, 670, 671, 679 ; streets, 362, 374, 666 ; jail, 649 ; hospital, 649 ; fortalice, description, 996 ; bastions of, 994, 996, 997, 998 ; siege, 993, 996, 997, 998 ; surrender, 998 ; factor, 640 ; clerk, 465, 652, 653, 460 ; Ouvidor, 667, 695 ; Minister of Customs, 695  
 Christianity in—conversion of, 101, 380, 659, 687 ; Christians, 646, 659, 685-691 ; Vigairo da Vara, 653, 660, 684, 695 ; Jesuits, 651, 653, 656, 694, 696 ; Jesuit churches, 695, 719 ; Dominicans, 451, 651, 653, 996, 997 ; Dominican convent, 451, 696 ; Franciscans, 641, 651, 661, 676, 685, 695, 998 ; Franciscan convent, 696 ; Franciscan church 632, 695 ; Franciscan College, 632, 657, 664 ; Churches, 637, 650, 662, 663, 664 ; First Church, 661 ;

- Hermitage of O. L. of Victory, 661, 666 ; Hermitage of the Cross, 661 ; O. L. of Victories, 451, 666, 695 ; afterwards known as O. L. of Miracles, 630, 632, 633, 634, 637, 638, 640, 643, 648, 649, 650, 651, 653, 655, 657, 664, 677, 695, 696 ; Rector of, 630, 635 ; St. John the Baptist, 678 ; Mother Church, 695 ; Misericordia, 531, 554, 648, 653, 680, 695, 997 ; Chapel of the Conception, 650 ; Parish priests, 650, 654 ; Seminary, 664
- Jafanapataō, Moors in, 666 ; Badagas, 679 ; Machoz, 604 ; tooth of Buddha at, 363, 384 ; king of Candea upon, 656 ; famine in, 647 ; storm at, 647 ; hailstorm at, 648 ; Mascarenhas at, 58, 646, 893 ; Sā at, 696, 728, 757 ; Tribune at, 325 ; lands of, 638 ; laws of, 53 casados of, 999
- Jafanapataō, Hollander fortalice, 1196
- Jagarnati, 236
- Jaggery, 20 (Jagra 1088)
- Jaghire, 104
- Jagir, 104
- Jak, 77, 513 ; felling, 1038
- Jakgrove (Talampitiya), 587
- Jala (Yala), headland of, 2
- Ja'a-pra'aya, 144
- Jales, 682, 877, 878
- Jama Singa Bandar, nephew of Carauliade Bandar, King of Candea, 439, 444, 706 ; baptised Don Phillip, 439, 706 ; acclaimed king at Vaycota, 445, 708 ; death of, 445, 708 ; donated his rights to King of Portugal, 706 ; son of, see Don Joāo
- Jambola, 71
- James, St., appears to Portuguese, 208, 426, 427 ; invoked by Portuguese, 340 ; banner of, 343 ; church Betal, 714
- Janarioka, 111
- Janas, Tyger, 872
- Janura (Dondra), 35
- Japan, 114
- Jatiantota (Yatiyantota), 912
- Jatinuara (Yatinuwara), 438
- Jatupala Bandar (Jotapala, Jotupala, Sotupala), Prince of Seven Corias, 360, 575 ; revolts against Raju, 443, 516, 547 ; joins Portuguese, 444 ; is baptised Don Manoel, 444
- Javira Astana, king of Candea, (Cural Hina 265), 203 ; dispossessed his elder brother, 235 ; invades Cota, 203 ; presides at partition of Cota, 204 ; refuses to pay tribute, 254 ; allies with Madune, 262 ; advances on Cota, 264, 265 ; is defeated and slain by Tribune, 265
- Javira Astana, raised by Tribune, 265 ; dispossessed by brother, 270 ; flees to Cota, 283, 292 ; flees to Seytavaca, 704
- Javira Astana (third brother), dispossessed brother, 270 ; offers terms to Barreto, 273 ; tyranny, 291 ; executed at Cota, 292
- Javira Astana (Maha Astana, 704) (Carauliade Bandar, 438) ; asks for missionaries, 702 ; is baptised, 258, 705 ; driven out by Raju, 438-9, 705 ; death of, 430, 705 ; wife of, 705 ; daughter (Dona Catherina), 705
- Javira Astana, half-brother of above, 704
- Javira Bandar of Candea, 28, 203, 204, 254, 258, 262, 264, 270, 273, 276, 277, 283, 291, 285, 292, 314, 318, 702, 704, 705
- Javira Bandar (Manam Peruma Mutear), 470-486 ; career of, 470 ; Bicarna Singa of Seytavaca, 471 ; seeks to marry a princess of Seytavaca, 471 ; treats with Portuguese, 472 ; assumes name Javira Bandar, 472 ; goes over to Portuguese, 473 ; in action, 475, 482 ; pursues Nicapita Adacy, 476 ; at Maturé, 477, 480 ; at Columbo, 480 ; accompanies Pero Lopes de Souza, 481-486 ; secret dealings with king of Candea, 483, 484, 485 ; slain, 485 ; wives of, 473, 477 ; ambition, 475, 477, 483, 484 ; vengeance, 476 ; wealth of, 486 ; kinsmen, 483, 484
- Jedacas (Yakdeesa), see Jadaca
- Jelata Modeliar, 557
- Jerome, Saint, banner of, 343 ; church of (Nagaō), 118, 160, 162, 172, 240, 714
- Jeronimo de Espírito Santo, Commiss.-Gen. of Franciscans, 708
- Jesuit, see Society of Jesus
- Joachim, St., church of Paradaua, 715
- Joana, 98

- Joaõ, Friar, Dominican, 675  
 Joaõ, church of, 676, 679-688 ;  
 Rector cf., 679 ; post of, 682
- Joaõ, Saint, the Baptist, church  
 (Mutual), 714 ; Vacuela, 716 ;  
 Galpata, 717 ; Cais, 458
- Joaõ, S., galleon, 918, 920 ; breast-  
 work of, 432
- Joaõ, Don, cousin of Darma Pala,  
 304-5 ; son of Don Philip, Jama  
 Singa Bandar, 706 ; proclaimed  
 king, 708 ; in College of St. An-  
 thony, Celumbo, 708 ; sub-deacon,  
 709 ; goes to Lisbon, 709 ; priest,  
 Madrid, 709
- Joaõ, Don, of Austria (Wimala-  
 dharma), Vijesundra Modeliar, 439,  
 445, 469 ; son of Virasundra  
 Modeliar, 705 ; baptized Don Joaõ,  
 439, 706 ; personal appearance,  
 606 ; character, 544, 606 ; brother  
 of, 604, 606 ; son of, 604, 609 ;  
 uncle of, 482 ; cousin of, 572 ;  
 Queen of, 489, 606 ; Private  
 Secretary cf., 572
- Usurped throne of Candea, 445, 708 ;  
 began a new dynasty, 445 ; leagued  
 with Jafanap., 457 ; struggles with  
 Reju, 469 ; struggles with Pero  
 Lopes de Souza, 481 ; fled from  
 Candea, 482 ; secret correspondence  
 with Javira Bandar, 483 ; sur-  
 rounds Portuguese, 488 ; captures  
 Dona Catherina, 489 ; triumph of,  
 489 ; kills Christians, 491-492, 522,  
 601 ; seeks to kill Franciscans,  
 697 ; receives Domingos Correa,  
 509-513 ; holds investiture, 510 ;  
 attacks Portuguese territories,  
 512, 521, 533, 534, 535, 547, 551,  
 552 ; retreats, 513, 565, 577, 578 ;  
 receives Simao Correa, 516, 520 ;  
 fortifies kingdom, 517, 541 ;  
 besieges Curuuiti 518, Talampiti  
 542, 595-600 ; attacks Manicravare  
 519, Dinavaca 537, Mutapali  
 552, 556, Balana 580, Seven  
 Corias 538 ; league against Portu-  
 guese, 519 ; discourse to subjects,  
 561-2 ; appeal of subjects, 540 ;  
 captures Talampiti 600, Balana  
 601 ; builds Darnigala, 601 ;  
 death of, 604-606 ; cruelties of,  
 545, 549, 601
- Joaõ, Don (Pereia Pandar), King  
 of Cota, see Dharma Pala
- Joaõ II., King of Portugal, 25
- Joaõ III., King of Portugal, 182,  
 205, 233, 235, 244, 245, 246, 253,  
 294, 327, 351
- Joaõ, Don IV., King of Portugal, 182
- Joaõ de S. Maria, Friar, Guardian  
 and Comm. in Ceylon, 721
- Joaõ Maria, S.J., Father, Jafanap.,  
 694
- Joaõ Turin, Friar, 713
- Joaõ de Villa de Conde, see Vila  
 de Conde
- Joaõ, son of Santu, 319
- Jorge, Antonio, O. Buchia, Capt.  
 824, 825 ; gallant end of, 837
- Jorge, Antonio, Capt., 834
- Jorge, Antonio, Capt., 839, 907
- Jorge, Antonio, Capt., the Mani-  
 car, 877
- Jorge, Don, 529
- Jorge, Gaspar, 438, 442
- Jorge Albanez, Ertevaõ, 323, 339, 420
- Jorge Francisco, Pero, 346
- Jornada do Reino de Huva, 753
- Joseph, St., Church, Cogala, 716 ;  
 miracles, 721-723
- Joseph de S. Francisco, Friar,  
 698, 783
- Joseph de Nossa Senhora, Candea, 710
- Josephus, 167
- Jetapala Bandar (Jotupala Bandar),  
 see Jetupala
- Juda, kingdom of, 159
- Judu, 31
- Juga (yuga), 143
- Jugo Bandar, 220
- Julius, Pope, 180
- Junta, members of, 738
- Junus, 161
- Junuara (Dondra), 161
- Jupiter, 240
- Juxarte, Diogo, 339
- Juxarte, Luis, 438
- Juzarte, Nicolaõ, 216
- Juzarte Ficaõ, Christovaõ, 339, 341,  
 342, 348

## K.

- Kabaragoya, see Cabarajoya
- Kachan, 34
- Kachchan, 3
- Kadavat, 100, 316 ; see Gravet
- Kadavat Korale, 36, 37, 46
- Kaduwela, see Cardevoja
- Kalala, 1088
- Kalansuri Arachchy, 393
- Kelopuwa, 308
- Kelatwakkusso, 99

Kalediya, see Calilia  
 Kalpitiya, see Cardiva  
 Kalubowila, see Caliboy  
 Kalutara, see Calature  
 Kambala, 96  
 Kammala, see Caymel  
 Kanakkappillai, 54 ; see Canacapole  
 Kanampella, see Canapele  
 Kanampella, see Calampele  
 Kandaswami, see Candasuauni  
 Kande-Uda-Rata, 60.  
 Kandupita-pattuwn, 44  
 Kandy, see Candea  
 Kangany, 1016 : see Cangani  
 Kanji, 115  
 Kannadi, 663  
 Kanya, 107  
 Kapus, 1114  
 Karai-tivu, 56  
 Karaka, 37  
 Karativu, see Cardiva  
 Kariya, 1030 ; see Caria  
 Karkataka, 107  
 Karunaval-Pattu, see Carnapatu  
 Kasi Nayinar, 49  
 Kasu, 1071  
 Kataragama, 121 ; see Catreguō  
 Kattange, see Catange  
 Kattumaram, 446 ; see Catamaran  
 Kattupinnel, 809  
 Katugampola, see Catugampola  
 Katukurunda, see Cathacurunda  
 Kavi, 117  
 Kayiru, 53  
 Kayts, see Caes and Cardiva  
 Kegalla Report, 1015, 1018  
 Kelani, see Calane  
 Kendanganuwa, see Candagañ  
 Khand, 517  
 Khasi, 151  
 Kilangu, see Calango  
 Kimbulapitiya 719  
 Kirawella, 44  
 Kleyn-Zutphen, 873  
 Knox, Robert, 258, 1015, 1017, 1025,  
     1030, 1068  
 Kobottara Gale, 9  
 Koggala, see Cogala  
 Kokhanda, 358  
 Kollupitiya, see Calupeti  
 Kolombutturai, 451 ; see Columbo,  
     Point of  
 Kolonnawa, 406  
 Komati, 81  
 Kombu, 116, 1052  
 Konda, 83  
 Konkani, 117

Koonbec, 1024  
 Kopay, fortalice et, 363  
 Korale, 1015  
 Kosgoda, see Cosboddem  
 Kraal, 75  
 Kris, 516  
 Kshetriya, 160  
 Kudramalai, see Gudramala  
 Kukul Corle, Cuculu Corla  
 Kula-stri, 145  
 Kumarasinha, see Comar Cinga  
     Adacim  
 Kumtakonam, 156  
 Kumbla, 107  
 Kurakkan, 62  
 Kurundu, 76  
 Kurunegale, 516 ; see Curunagal  
 Kuruppu, 426  
 Kuruppu Modeliar, see Corupu  
 Kuruppu Rala, 809  
 Kuruwa, 72, 1069 ; see Curo  
 Kuruwe Nayaka, 75  
 Kuruwita, see Curuuiti  
 Kustantinu Halana, 757

## L.

Laçamane, 782  
 Lacava (Lanka), 72  
 Lacerda, Antonio de, 437  
 Lacerda, Luis de, 346  
 Lacerda Manoel de, 188  
 Lacerda, Miguel de, 227  
 Lacerda, Affonso Pereyra de, see  
     Pereyra  
 Lactantius, 240  
 Laeximi, 87  
 Laertius Diogenes, 110  
 Lafetar, Coim de, Capt., 445, 449 ;  
     Acting Capt. of Columbo, 469,  
     708  
 Lafetar, Joao de, Capt., 917  
 Lagartos, 29  
 Lagoon (Baticalou), 64  
 Laguna, Dr. Andreas de, 14  
 Lahua, see Alausa  
 Lama Eteni, mother of Madune, 333  
 Lamaz, 114, 140  
 Lancab (Lanka), 4, 540  
 Lancave (Lanka), 8, 67  
 Lancemaker, badge of, 97  
 Langarea, 673  
 Lanka (Lancab, Lancave, Lacave),  
     4, 8, 67, 72, 540  
 Lanhas, 553  
 Laoe, see Alausa  
 Lapide, Cornelius, 166

- Larin, 22, 64, 65, 66, 69, 96, 191, 423, 503, 509, 517, 569, 781, 1012, 1013, 1017, 1018, 1025, 1026, 1027, 1028, 1034, 1051, 1054
- Lascar, 20; Lascarin, meaning of, 20; badge of, 97; dress of, 83; infidelity of, 579; memorial of, 1009–1020; oppressions, 1030–1032, 1047
- Latin compared with Sinhalese, 118, 160
- Lauha (Allauwa), see Alaua
- Laval, Pyrard de, 197
- Lawrence, St., Patron of Ceylon, 309, 343; banner of, 343; bastion of, 580, 943; Church of, 181, 309, 560; Point of, see Columbo, 277, 308, 309, 724, 740, 1192, mound of Columbo, 195, 308, 421, 936
- Lazaro, leper, 724
- Le, 7
- Le Grand, 705
- Leão, Antonio de, 224
- Leão, Antonio, Sergeant-Major, 944, 951, 957, 970, 979
- Leão, Duarte de, 268
- Leão da Fonseca, Balthazar, 583
- Leão da Fonseca, Salvador, 566, 598
- Leeches, 323
- Lemos, Antonio de, 202, 204
- Lemos, Duarte de, 185
- Lemos, Francisco de 951
- Lemos, Gaspar de, 214, 217
- Lemos, João de, 225
- Lemos, Pero de, 395
- Lenagala, 44
- Lenocera, 105, 106
- Leo X., Pope, 358
- Leonardes, Adriaõ, Frenchman, 323, 339
- Leonidas, 273
- Leucu Cumara, 464
- Levava Coegama, Vanee of, 528
- Levites, 159
- Leytaõ, Ambrosio, 440
- Leytaõ, Balthazar, Vigayro da Vara. Jafanap., 684
- Leytaõ Gomes, Diogo, 442
- Leytaõ Pereira, Simão, 440, 450
- Leytaõ de Mesquita, Franciero, 560, 578
- Leytaõ de Souza, Diogo, 951, 982
- Leyva, S.J., Father Marcel de, 1003
- Leyva, S.J., Father Simão de, 776
- Liannah, 1025
- Ligal Coria (Beligal)
- Lihini Kanda, 2
- Lima, Antonio de, 217
- Lima, Christovaõ de, 249
- Lima, D. Diogo de, 783, 278
- Lima, Fernaõ de, 441, 442
- Lima, D. Francisco de, 224
- Lima, Joaõ de, 419
- Lima, Manoel de, 250
- Lims, D. Paulo de, 353, 384
- Lima, Simão de, 209
- Lima Barreto, Jorge de, 511
- Lingam, 153
- Liranus, 168
- Lisboa, Friar Bartolomeu de, 419
- Lisbon, coronation of Darma Pala, at, 235
- Literary Register, Ceylon*, 365, 862
- Literary Register, Ceylon Antiquary* and; see Antiquary
- Livramento, Our Lady of, church, Columbo, 715
- Lobo, D. Antonio, brings reinforcements (1644), 802
- Lobato, João, 212
- Lobo, Diogo, 559
- Lobo, D. Fernando, 449, 450
- Lobo, Ruy, 217
- Lobo de Carvalho, Lourenço, 511
- Lobo da Silva, Francisco, 944
- Lobo da Silveyra, D. Manoel, Capt., 987
- Lobo de Vasconcelhos, Antonio, Dissolve of Seven Corias, 803
- Lope, 165
- Lopes de Basto, Simão, 959, 960, 966, 969, 970, 971, 974, 975, 976, 978, 980, 984
- Lopes Coutinho, Diogo, 436
- Lopes de Coutinho, Ruy, Capt., 969, 971, 977, 980
- Lopes Leytaõ, João, 352
- Lopes Rebelo, Pero, 377
- Lopes de Siqueira, Diogo, Governor of India, 185, 198, 201, 232, 253, 383
- Lopes de Serra, Diogo, liberated, 545
- Lopes de Souza, Luis, 508, 511, 515
- Lopes de Souza, Pero, Capt., 224, 250; Capt. of Malaca, 474; urges conquest of Candea, 478; Conquistador leads expedition to Candea 479–488, Nigumbo 480, Columbo 480, Seytavaca 481, Tanagala, Manicravare, Gabaragama 481, Balana 482, Candea, 482, 483; and Javira Bandar, 482–5; retreats, Ganur, Balane, 487; wounded, 488; nose cut off, 489; death of, 489; character of, 489; son of, 489, 545; slaves of, 565; picture of Our Lady, 571

- Lories, 16, 76  
 Lourenço, Antonio, 323, 352, 420, 434; Clerk of the Factory, 527  
 Lourenço, Domingos, 597  
 Lourenço, Joaõ, 409  
 Lourenço, Manoel, Capt., 883  
 Lourenço, Manoel, 323, 397, 400, 401, 402, 403, 411, 418, 420  
 Lourenço Forte, Antonio, Capt., 839, 846, 848  
 Lourenço da Silva, Manoel, Capt., 877  
 Lucas de S. Francisco, Friar, 661  
 Lucas, Philipe, Hollander General, 819, 826, 827  
 Lucason, Philip, see above  
 Lucena Tavares, Jeronimo, Capt., 943, 982  
 Lucy, St., church of Dicvela, 718  
 Ludra (Rudra), 239  
 Lugo de Vasconcelhos, Antonio da, 792  
 Luis, D., Infanta of Portugal, 295  
 Luis, Friar, 383, 490  
 Luis, St., Bishop, church of Ray-gama, 716  
 Luis, D., nephew of S. Correa, 611  
 Luis, D., Modeliar  
 Luis, D., Migapule (Don Pedro Betancor), 464, 465, 635, 638, 692, 707  
 Luis, Paulo, 442  
 Luis, Sebastião, 434, 438  
 Luis de Conceyçao, Friar, Nacole-gaõ, 713  
 Luis de S. Diago, Friar, 464, 467, 677, 691; Rector of O. L. of Mira-cies, Jafanap., 635  
 Lunava, lake of, 940  
 Lungara, 678  
 Lunu Pokuna, 876  
 Luys, Simão, 434  
 Lysimachus, 194
- M.
- Ma, 1193  
 Ma Modeliar of Candea, 597  
 Mabada (Mahabadda), 20, 34, 76; revenue, 1192, 1193; villages of, 1088; Vidane of, 1027, 1028  
 Mac Crindle, 2  
 Macante, D. Afonso, 526  
 Macdowal, embassy to Kandy, 815  
 Macedo, Gregorio de, 209  
 Macedo, Henrique de, 249  
 Maceo, Luis de, 969  
 Macedo, Thomas de, 555  
 Macedo de Carvalho, Sebastião de, 436
- Macedo da Silva, Francisco de, Capt. 511, 515, 542, 453, 547, 578, 591, 583; Capt. of Talampitiya, 595, 599, 600, 608  
 Macelos, Miguel de, 433, 435  
 Machado, Calisto, 798  
 Machado, Dinis, 307  
 Machado, Diogo, 547, 556  
 Machado, Francisco, 556  
 Machado, Luis, 273  
 Machado, Manoel, 443  
 Machado, Pero, 546  
 Machado, Rodrigo, 406  
 Machado, D'Eça, Francisco, 918 919  
 Machiras, 1114  
 Machuas, Macuas (Mukkuwan), 18, 19, 44, 64, 256  
 Maclançia, King of C. 13  
 Macuni, Macone, Macum, Macune (Maggonia), 2, 31, 915, 924; port of 425, 430; dues 318; church of St. Peter, 717; hill of, 928, 938; fish rent of, 1192  
 Madadua (Medaduwa), 30, 1016  
 Madakalap-wa, 64  
 Madalena, Gaspar de, Friar, 613; Intermediary for peace, 615, 710; Candea, 607  
 Madampe, 31, 820, 1025, 1156; port of, 430, 820; church of St. Clare, 716; Jesuits in, 719; Hollanders at, 821; river of, 820, 821; revenue of, 1193; fish rent, 1192  
 Madana, 2  
 Medianana Arache, 428  
 Madduvil, 53  
 Madera, Diogo, 352, 376  
 Madeyra, Christovaõ, 224  
 Madeyra Cabral, Antonio, 910, 944, 976  
 Medianites, 167  
 Madinne (Mayadunne), 212, 214, 219, 269, 286, 325, 328, 338, 340; birth place, 425; age, 323, 431, 438; son of Vijaya Bahu, 203; mother of, 333, 398; sons, eldest, 424; youngest, 322, 324, 398, 407, 431  
 King of Seytavaca, 204-438; assumes title of Emperor, 223, 334-5; adds Raygama to his territories, 220; portions of the kingdom of Cota, 423; tributary to Portugal, 318, 321; device of, 288; ambition of, 206, 220, 283, 284; hostility to Portuguese, 101; Atapattawa of, 419, 422; attempts to poison Boneca Bau 211, Darma Pala 428;

- embassy to the Samorin, 207, 210, 213, 215, 218, 224, 403; embassy to the Portuguese, 271, 280-3, 319; and Malacca, 210; delivers heads of Malavares, 230
- Attack Cota, 211, 216, 223, 225, 267, 286, 288, 299; siege of, 339-350, 396-405, 406-420; makes peace, 212, 218; war with Candea, 314, 423, 430; alliance with Candea, 265; siege of Columbo, 404, 431; Portuguese expeditions against M. Ferreyra, 227-230; Barreto, 270-272; Noronha, 301, 303-305; leagues against Portuguese, 262; joins Portuguese, 318, 322; pretends friendship, 429; war with Tribule, 322; joins Tribule, 315, 321; fear of Tribule, 321, 334; attacked by Tribule, 263-264; attacked by Portuguese, 340, 345
- Favours Javira, 704; wiles of, 275, 279, 285, 290, 319, 320; deceives Noronha, 289; expels Portuguese from Sneytavaca, 296, 335; secret dealings with Patangetin-mor of Columbo, 424; Letter to Governor of India 282; to Noronha, 304; at Betel, 424; in grand stockade, 345, 427; in Columbo, 396; reinforcements from Jafanap., 418; renounced government to son, 431; death, 438
- Madune (Mayadunne), Prince of Denavaca, 516, 519; attacks Portuguese at Mature, 520
- Madune, Prince of Uva, contends for hand of Dona Catherina, 616; encamps at Candea, 607; wounded, 602; aims at being absolute lord of the island, 624; in the Two Corias, 624, 626, 729; at Adam's Peak, 624; pursued but escapes, 625; in Seven Corias, 626, 730; crossed over to India, 627, 731; return to Ceylon, 733; at Vintena, 730; in Four Corias, 730; at Triquilemalé, 730; and Danes, 730
- Madure Coria, 46
- Madure Nayque of, 48, 49, 169
- Madureyro Jacinto, 898
- Maduwa, 90
- Maessura, 209
- Maet Saychar, Joan, 892
- Maetsuicher, Joan, 887
- Maha *meru Paruvadam* (Maha meru mountain), 112
- Magadalaõ, 110
- Magale, 841
- Magalhaes, Antonio de, 450, 707
- Magalhaes, Gaspar de, 430, 479, 489
- Magalhaes, Jeronimo de, 352
- Magalhaes de Araujo Antonio de, 944, 951, 978, 980
- Magalhaes de Azevedo, Luis de, Capt. of Alaus, 555
- Magalhaes Coutinho, Manoel de, Capt.-Major of Malavar, 947
- Magalhaes da Silva, Manoel de, 450
- Magara, 107, 108
- Maggona, see Macuni, Macum
- Mari, 5, 8, 170, 172
- Magnus, 240
- Magul Coria, 48
- Maha Adacin, son of Raju, 754
- Maha Adacin, Maha Astana, Maha Astana Adacin (Raju Singa of Candia)
- Maha Murti, 239
- Maha Oya (see Agaletota, river of; Atapiti, river of; Caynel, river of; Alaua, river of)
- Maha Pallegama, 44
- Maha Pana, 2
- Maha Praera Mhabau, 48
- Maha Raja, king of Candea, 12
- Maha Sastre, 105
- Maha Terunnanse, 114
- Maha-*meru-parra/a*, 112
- Mahacen, king of Ceylon, 13
- Mahadiliiris, king of Ceylon, 13
- Mahadue, 30
- Mahaduwa, 30
- Mahaloka, 111
- Mahamed, 403, 404
- Mahamet, 243
- Mahana Raja, King of C., 13
- Mahaout, 75
- Mahap Raja, 13
- Mahata, governor of Manar, 393
- Mahometan sect, 171
- Mahua, 111b
- Majoraes. see Mayoral
- Makara, 107
- 'Mal degolado', 475
- Malfaya, Joao de, 352
- Malagaõ, Jesuit church at, 719
- Malavar, king of, 2; kingdom of, 111
- Malavares, name for Ceylon, 5
- Malavares, 7, 76, 298; marriage customs, 91; language, 116
- Malay slaves, 565
- Malaya, 447, 842, 935; in Hollander service, 819, 831, 845; in service of Raju, 442

- Malcuna Modeliar, 415  
 (afterwards Don Pedro Modeliar, 416)  
 Maldivas, 2, 4, 786  
     king of, 786  
 Malheyro, Ambrosio, 442  
 Malheyro, Gonçalo, 442  
 Maliamne, 160  
 Malisavale, 644  
 Malmunda, 274  
 Maluco, 76  
 Maluana (Malwana), 511, 726 ;  
     situation of, 45 ; disadvantages of,  
     1156 ; residence of General, 103,  
     531, 584, 1094 ; fortification, 473 ;  
     refortified, 511 ; fort, 808 ;  
     dismantled, 813 ; seized by  
     Candians, 814 ; recovered, 814 ; in  
     hands of rebels, 550 ; garrison  
     of, 782 ; elephant stables at, 550 ;  
     Prince of Candeia at, 784, 793 ;  
     Portuguese at, 583, 587, 611, 802,  
     807, 809, 907, 914, 937, 942 ;  
     Pero Lopes de Souza at, 480 ;  
     Azevedo at, 511, 532, 541, 554,  
     576, 590, 591 ; Menezes at, 620 ;  
     Sa at, 624, 751, 759 ; Don Aleixo  
     at, 808 ; Hollander stockade,  
     1195 ; land of, 896  
 Maluate, 108, 109  
 Malumana, King of C., 13  
 Maluanda, pagode of, 401  
 Malwana, assembly of, 1008, 1010,  
     1019 ; see Maluana  
 Malwatta, 108  
 Manole, islands Jf., 3  
 Manam Peruma Mutear, 470 ; see  
     Javira Bandar  
 Manananta, revenue of, 1193  
 Mananna, 1096, 1068  
 Manár, 2, 379, 432 ; port of, 31 ;  
     bazaar, 1194 ; channel, 1, 57, 352,  
     994 ; Gulf of, 57 ; Tulemanar,  
     458, 638 ; Tondamanar, 636 ;  
     island of, 47 ; governor of, 393 ;  
     point of (Madre de Deos), 446 ;  
     point of the bar (S. Joá), 448,  
     664 ; carcel, 675 ; proposed removal  
     of Christians of the Fishery to,  
     394 ; jurisdiction of, 51, 648 ;  
     fortalice, erection, 393, 395 ;  
     stockade of S. Joá, 994 ; sieges  
     of, 418-419, 446, 993-996 ;  
     threatened by Hollanders, 625  
 Captains of, 445, 446, 462, 467,  
     480, 625, 628, 630, 631 ; Joá de  
     Melo de Castro, 49, 342, 453 ;  
     Manoel Rodriguez Coutinho, 420  
     Joá de Melo de Sampayo, 439,  
     443, 445, 706 ; Nuno Fernandes  
     de Ataide, 444, 446, 449, 450 ;  
     Sebastião Carneiro de Alcacova,  
     458 ; Francisco Pereryra Velho, 463  
     Antonio Barboza Draque, 480,  
     485, 487, 489 ; Andre Velozo, 995  
 Martyrs of, 242-244, 252, 395 ;  
 Paravas 446, 448, arrival of 395 ;  
 Careas 448, 450, village of 779 ;  
 Patangatin-Mor of, 56 ; Ouvidor,  
     461, 467 ; Factor, 461, 462 ;  
     Franciscan, 396, 448, 467, 694 ;  
     Commissary 661, Guardian 706 ;  
     Dominicans, 664 ; Jesuits, 390,  
     448, 709, 719 ; Mother church,  
     448 ; Church of S. Joá, 664 ;  
     Hollanders 625, blockade of 994,  
     siege of 993-996 ; Hollander fort,  
     1195 ; Princesses of Jafanap. at,  
     635 ; Dona Catharina at, 480 ;  
     Braganza at, 352, 381, 393, 394 ;  
     Furtado at, 448-450 ; Don Philip  
     at, 706 ; Antonio Amaral de  
     Menezes at, 929 ; revenues of, 1194  
 Mancelos, Miguel de, 437  
 Manchua, 352, 357, 376, 427, 435, 454,  
     512, 632, 826, 853, 856, 890, 944,  
     951, 956, 975, 993, 1149, 1157  
 Mandacalopo (Madakalapuva), 64 ;  
     see also Batecalou  
 Mandamaravita, 810  
 Mandapa, 50  
 Mandoria, 1020  
 Mandua, 90, 97  
 Manduco, 596  
 Manga Brava, 202  
 Mango, wild, 202  
 Mangul Corla, 72  
 Mangul Corla (Magul Korale), hunts  
     in, 1069  
 Mangur Corla, 11  
 Mani Bau, king of Cota, 26  
 Manica Raja Bau, 67  
 Manicravare (Menikkadavara), 15,  
     44, 47, 104, 571, 590, 593, 751 ;  
     village of, 45 ; door to Four and  
     Seven Corlas, 751 ; stockade  
     erected at, 497 ; rebuilt of stone,  
     537 ; fort erected, 537, 547 ; cap-  
     tured by Candians, 600-601 ;  
     recovered, 603 ; fort rebuilt by Sa,  
     751 ; besieged and captured by  
     King of Candeia, 787 ; Portuguese  
     army posted at, 796, 797, 802 ;  
     garrison recalled, 502, 580, 771,

- 807, 813 ; again garrisoned, 810 ; attacked by Candeans, 813 ; abandoned, 813 ; again garrisoned, 816 ; mutiny, 897-8 ; usual residence of Capt.-Major, 585 ; attacked by Candeans, 519, 550 ; battle of, 510 ; Chaplains of, 698 ; roads from, 548 ; Church of the Holy Cross, at 719 ; Captains of—Lucas de Misquita 497-505, Nuno Velho Travacos 593, 599, Manoel Mendes 787 ; Javira Bandara at, 471 ; Pero Lopes de Souza at, 481 ; Azev-do at, 496, 498, 533, 546, 554, 559, 578, 585, 603, 607 ; Domingos Correa at, 500, 501 ; King of Candea at, 510, 519, 600-1 ; Sa at, 623, 727 ; Mascarenhas at, 810 ; country reduced, 515
- Manigaõ, 1156
- Manil Bau, king of Cota, 27
- Manil-mal, 50
- Manilmal, king of Cota, 27
- Manipay, church of O. L. (do Parto) of Release, 695
- Manjeceraõ, destroyed, 426  
pagode destroyed, 655
- Manoel, Don, king of Portugal, 26, 28, 182, 185, 198, 205
- Manoel Don (Jatupala Bandar), 444
- Manoel, Don, brother-in-law of Don Fernando Modeliar, 591
- Manoel, Don, Modeliar, shield bearer of General, 754, 764, 775, 781
- Manoel, D. Antonio, 351, 783
- Manoel, Don Pedro, Capt. of Co-lumbo, 541
- Manoel de Conceicaõ, Friar, Para-dica, 713
- Manoel de Elvas, Friar, 634, Candea 710
- Manoel Pereyra, Friar, 490
- Manoel de Santos, Friar, 331
- Manoel de Trinidad, Friar, 509, 713
- Manuilhas, S.J., Father, Francis, 242, 235
- Manonta, 5, 51, 57, 995 ; kinglet of, 3 ; christians, 6 ; church of O. L. of Health, 679 ; friar, 663 ; revenue, 494
- Manu Raja, 67
- Mapane, mound of, 2, 47, 308, 431, 782, 875, 965, 967 ; dues of, 318 ; attacked by Portuguese, 422, 424, 432 ; lands of, 427 ; field of, 439 ; hermitage of, 720 ; bastion of, planned by Almeida, 797
- Mapitigaõ, pass of, 503, 726 ; hermitage of O. L. of Dolours, 588 ; church of the Mother of God, 714
- Mappaus, 39
- Maragama, Jesuit church, 719
- Maralias, 22, 54, 55, 1020, 1089 ; proceeds of, 729, 1192 ; Christians exempted from, 1041
- Maraleyors, 1020, 1098 ; assizes of, 1041, 1089
- Marastta language, 116, 117, 165
- Marathi, 116
- Marava, 57, 634
- Marave, 117
- Maravia (Maravila), Hollander landing at, 937 ; Jesuit church, 719
- Marca, 446
- Marca Cunhale, 215
- Marca Pachi, 215
- Marcar, 197
- Marcos de S. Catharina, Friar, Diavela, killed, 713
- Marcos de S. Gulhelme, Friar, Augus-tinian, 257
- Marcus Aurelius, 238
- Marcus Minucius, 225
- Marecon Modeliar, 572
- Margaõ, 52, 1000, 1001
- Maria Botelho, Dona, 687
- Maria Dona, Jafana Princeas, 693
- Marien, 161
- Marikkar, 197
- Marins Adriano, 679
- Maripo, 1155 ; Jesuit church, 719
- Maritime forces c. Chingalaz, 106
- Maritu Mandale, 38
- Marquez, Manoel, Capt., 442, 863, 871
- Marquez Gorjaõ, Manoel, Capt. of Co-lumbo, 957, 969, 977
- Marraju Bandar, eldest son of Macûne, 424
- Marrapurata, 62
- Marriage contract, 89
- Marriage, prohibited degrees, 88
- Marriage, Indian, 87,
- Martavaõ, 162
- Martin, Joao, 472
- Martin, Manoel, 823
- Martin da Guarda, Friar, 418 ; killed, 419
- Martins, Simaõ, 792, 331, 403
- Martins de Almada, Balthazar, 675
- Martyrs, made by Tribule, 316, 245, 262, 245, 246, 262, 491-492
- Mary Magdalene, church of St. Panadure, 717

- Mary of Jesus, church of St., Gaboyua, 718
- Mascarenhas, Ambrosio, 395
- Mascarenhas, D. Antonio, 813, 819, 824, 825, 828, 852, 854, 859; arrival in Columbo, 783; Dissava of Seven Corlas, 791, 802; Captain-Major of Field, 796; Capt.-General of Ceylon, 102, 808-807; at Alauua, 861; in Seven Corlas, 862; ill, 874; Nigumbo, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880; death, 881; body of, 887; experiments in wheat growing, 1145
- Mascarenhas, D. Joao, 250
- Mascarenhas, D. Francisco de, 439
- Mascarenhas, D. Luis, 440
- Mascarenhas, Manoel, 584
- Mascarenhas, D. Pedro, Viceroy (1555), 295, 308, 309, 310, 318
- Mascarenhas, Pero, 211
- Mascarenhas, D. Philipe, 868, 876, 886; Capt. of Cochim, 783; arrives in Ceylon, 783; becomes General of Ceylon, 784-785; leaves Ceylon, 785; appointed Captain-General of Ceylon, 102, 857-853; arrival in Columbo, 858; at Nigumbo, 859, 860; recovers Nigumbo, 861; tries to recover Gale, 865; liberality of, 866; defends Nigumbo, 877-884; letter to prisoners of Nigumbo, 888; attempts recovery of Nigumbo, 890-892; appointed Viceroy, 58, 893; wrecked, 893; at Jafanap., 893; withdrew lands from Jesuits, 1055
- Mascarenhas Homem, Manoel, Capt.-Major of Field, 734; arrives in Ceylon from S. Thome, 807; is elected Capt.-General, 807; is relieved by D. Antonio Mascarenhas, 808; appointed General of Jafanapatao, 853; recalled, 854; Captain-General of Ceylon, 894-906; sent ambassadors to Candea, 895; pusillanimity, 895; withdraws all garrisons, 896; accusation of treachery, 897; army rises against general, 898; and marches on Columbo, 899-900; prepares to oppose but is not supported, 901; army demands deposition of, 903; city mutinies against, 904; resigns, 905; is placed under guard, 907; deposition of, 908, 901; released, 913; becomes Governor of India, 967; shamefully leaves Ceylon to its fate, 968; son-in-law of, 897
- Mascarenhas Homem, Manoel (Nay Dapu), 733
- Mascate, 298
- Mason, badge of, 97
- Matagore (Dematagoda), bridge of, 442
- Matale, principality of, 32, 58, 63-4; town of, 64; subjected by Rajah, 438; Portuguese at, 612; vassal of Candea, 594; Prince of (Vijayapala Adacim), 781; eldest son of Senerat and Dona Catherina, 781, 794, 795, 804, 805; overlooked by his father, 787, 800; goes to Batticalou, 18, 788; killed and robbed Vances, 788; and Portuguese prisoners, 788-789; tempted by Portuguese, 800; at Gao, 805, 22; character, 800
- Matale, Princess of (wife of Vijayapala), 787
- Matamugata, 422
- Matapale, see Mutapali, 546
- Matapali, see Mutapali, 541
- Materia prima, 123, 130
- Matheus, Joao, 420
- Matheus, Joao (Thysen), Hollander Capt. of Gale, 870, 872, 873, 875, 882, 886
- Matheus, Simao, 792
- Matiagama, 46, 794, 861
- Matos, Aluaro de, 442
- Matos, Henrique de, 397
- Matos, Simao de, 438
- Matozo, Rodrigo, Capt., 860
- Matual (Mutwal), 29, 41, 396, 434, 442; dues of, 318
- Maturanse (Mahaterunanse), 257, 258, 325; of Arracaõ, 256, 257
- Maturata, Vidana of, 58, 62
- Mature (Matara), 2, 563, 1151; name, Matore, Malatota, Matote, 34; town, 34; bazaar, 865; Mahature, Mhapapatuna, 715; port of, 31; custom dues, 1192; Moors in, 743, 864; Corla, Sergeant-Major of, 849; Dissawany, 33; divisions, 34; boundaries, 47, 860; Sinhalese best spoken in, 33; good workmen of, 1035; appertained to Cota, 528
- Dissavas, Portuguese, 611, 802, 809, 860, 861, 869, 874, 1061; D. Fernando, 495, 500, 575; D. Constantino (Barreto Modeliar),

- 610, 73); Domingos Carvalho Caõ, 611, 612, 613, 617, 655, 747, 778; Don Theodosio, 712; Joao Bainho Cardoso, 712, 938, 943; Antonio da Mota Galvaõ, 792, 795; Joao da Fonseca Osorio, 803-833; Francisco Antunes, 834, 839, 870, 906-912, 939; Andre Velho Pereyra, 895; Andre Velozo, 923
- Dissava of king of Candea 841, Don Theodosio 795; Chingala stockades, 603; kinglet of, 32; prince of, 519; lands of, 603; lascarina of, 33; pagode of (Dondra), 42; churches of O. L. of Victory, 715; Rector of, 712; Adigar of, 747, 784; King of Candea upon, 520; Javira Bandar at, 480; Azevedo at, 607; subject to Hollanders, 912; Hollanders stockade, 1198; Portuguese at, 862
- Matuvil, 53
- Mauza, 1115
- Maza'a, 562
- Mavela, stockade at, 931
- Maveliganga (Mahaveliganga), 41, 58, 61, 69, 481; river of Ganur, 704
- Mavia, 270
- Maya, Andre de, 593
- Maya, Luis de, 564
- Maylati, Jesuit church of, 719
- Maynato, 385, 486
- Maynato, gom, 486
- Mayogama, 9
- Mayoral, 33, 722, 1009, 1016, 1019, 1090, 1091; of corias, 1032, 1093; of villages, 1032, 1091; duties of, 1014
- Max, 1193
- Mazastra, 105
- Meander, 241
- Meca, ship of, 434, 447
- Medamahanuwara, 59
- Medanha, Manoel de, 352
- Medanha, Pero da, brings reinforcements, 554
- Medo Coral, 36
- Medeyros, Gaspar de, 902
- Medica materia, treatise on, 72
- Mettu, 107
- Medindine, 108
- Megasthenes, 162, 172
- Mellapur (Maylapore), 383
- Mollipur (Maylapore), 241
- Moliue As, 184
- Molparu, 51
- Melo, Ambrosio de, Factor of Columbo, 291
- Melo, Antonio de, 489, 479
- Melo, Diogo de, 217
- Melo, Domingos de, 515
- Melo, Duarte de, 436
- Melo, Fernaõ de, 448
- Melo, Fernaõ de (Bicarna Singa), 442
- Melo, Francisco de, 351
- Melo, Joao de, 188; Capt. 188, 196
- Melo, Manoel do, 185
- Melo, Manoel de, 743
- Melo, Ruy de, 383
- Melo de Azevedo, Joao de, Factor of Gale, 840
- Melo de Castro, Antonio de, Capt. (nephew of Capt.-General Francisco de Melo de Castro), 913, 914, 943, 951; elected Capt.-Major of Field, 957, 966, 970, 977, 978, 979, 980
- Melo de Castro, Diogo de, 45, 102, 1009, 1020; Capt. of S. Thome, 797, Capt.-General of Ceylon, 797-799, 799-807, 1034; at Atapati, 758-9; recalled, 799; reinstated, 799; expedition to Candea 800-807; Manioravare 802, Atapati, 803, Candea 804; retreat Balanc, 804; surrounded, 805, 1047, 1054; death, 805; censures on, 801, 945; rebuilt Sofragaõ, 36; petition to, 5, 1009-1021; reply of, 1021-1022
- Melo de Castro, Diogo de, nephew of, 829
- Melo de Castro, Fernaõ de, 449
- Melo de Castro, Francisco de, 102, 918, 920; age, 913, 933, 979; Capt.-General of Ceylon, 913-933; released predecessor, 913; courtsey to king of Candea, 914; retirement, 933; remains to take part in siege, 942, 954, 958, 979; joint Governor of India, 387
- Melo de Castro, Jorge de, The Fist, 342, 419; Capt. of Manâr, 49, 342, 343, 345, 349, 404, 414, 419, 453; made Capt. of Columbo by a faction, 349-350; at Columbo, 404; Capt. of Columbo, 423
- Melo Coutinho, Antonio de, 963
- Melo Coutinho, Diogo de, 312, 319; in Columbo, 309; seized Tribule, 310-11, 405, 407, 409; at Cota, 314, 316, 318, 324, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 348, 349, 396, 399, 403; at Calane, 349; Capt. of

- Manâr, 420; Capt. of Columbo, 420-422, second term, 423-429; death of, 429  
 Melo da Cunha, Diogo de, Capt., 535, 440, 473, 435, 559  
 Melo de Cunha, Fernão de, 440  
 Melo Gouveia, Francisco de, 980  
 Melo Pereyra, Francisco de, 214, 406, 408, 543  
 Melo Pereyra, Manoel de, 511, 515  
 Melo Pereyra, Simão de, 450  
 Melo Sampayo, Constantino de, 450  
 Melo Sampayo, Fernão de, 448, 449  
 Melo de Sampayo, Francisco de, Capt., 877  
 Melo de Sampayo, Joaõ de, Capt. of Manâr, 14, 439, 443, 445  
 Melo de Sampayo, Simão de, 450  
 Melo da Silva, Luis de, Capt., 351, 381; at Jaffna, 355, 359, 360, 361, 363, 356; pursues king, 366-369  
 Melo da Silva, Nuno de, Capt., brings reinforcements, 915, 920  
 Melo de Soares, Simão de, Capt., 399, 403; entrusted with fortalice of Cota, 406, 410, 411, 415  
 Melo Torres, Jorge de, Capt., 578, 584  
 Melo de Veyga, Fernão de, Capt., 443, 445  
 Memmon, 7  
 Mendes, Ambrosio, 442  
 Mendes, Fernão, 409  
 Mendes, Inocencio, Capt., 633  
 Mendes, Pinto Luis, 522  
 Mendes Cardoso, Jane, First Factor of Columbo, 181  
 Mendes de Vasconcelhos, Antonio, Capt., 217  
 Mendes de Vasconçelhos, Duarte, Capt., 212  
 Mendes de Vasconcelhos, Jane, 917  
 Mendes de Vasconcelhos, Metheus de, 449, 450, 708  
 Mendes, Manoel, 787  
 Mendes, Pero, 725  
 Mendes, Vicente, Capt. 840  
 Mendes Aranha, Antonio, Capt., 911; Dissava of Soíragaõ, 906, 907, 912; Anguratota, 908; Gurubebile, 914; Tibuna, 916-918; Capt.-Major of Field, 923, 924, 926, 927, 930, 934; Calaturé, 934, 935; Jafanap., 993; Governor of Jafanap., 995, 996  
 Mendes de Brito, Diogo, 868  
 Mendonça, Alvaro de, 353  
 Mendonça, Diogo de, 250  
 Mendonça, Fernão de, Capt.-Major of Gále Corla, 829  
 Mendonça, Francisco de, fell at Nigumbo, 891  
 Mendonça, Joao de, 217, 250, 268  
 Mendonça, Nuno de, 352, 353  
 Mendonça, Pero de, 352  
 Mendonça Furtado, Diogo de, 678  
 Mendonça Furtado, Fernão de, nephew and son-in-law of Diogo de Melo, 803, escaped captivity, 805; returned to Ceylon, 889; Capt.-Major, 890; fell at Nigumbo, 891  
 Mendonça Furtado de Albuquerque, Luis, Admiral, 987, 990, 1001  
 Mendonça Manoel, Francisco de, 813; Captain-Major of Field, 817; at Nigumbo, 822-826; at Gále, 828-830, 834-835; death of, 835  
 Mendonça, Pero de, 339  
 Meneripiti, nutmeg at, 43  
 Meneses, D. Alexio de, 201, 202, 341  
 Meneses, Antonio, 977  
 Meneses, D. Constantino de, 976  
 Meneses, D. Duarte de, Viceroy (1521-1524), 205, 232, 236, 439  
 Meneses, D. Fernando de, 301, 359, 447  
 Meneses, D. Francisco de, 834, 836, 839  
 Meneses, D. Goncalo de, 450  
 Meneses, D. Henrique de, Governor of India (1525-1526), 201  
 Meneses, Barroche D. Jorge de, Capt., 224, 347, 348, 349, 361, 363, 397, 399, 400; Capt. of Columbo, 344-351, 396-399; Capt. of Cochim, 432  
 Meneses, D. Phelipe de, Capt., 352, 353, 360  
 Meneses Royxo, D. Duarte de, Capt., 188  
 Meneses Royxo, D. Francisco d., Capt., 580, 584, 576, 578, 580, 584, 586, 587, 592, 603, 604; parentage, 619; returned to Ceylon, 604, 607; Triquillimale, 611; Capt.-Major of Field, 612; Acting Captain-General, 619-620, 102; cruelties, 620; death, 620  
 Meracolave, Dissawany of, appertained to Cota, 528  
 Meravil Punari, 51  
 Merce de Deos, Joaõ de, hermit, 630  
 Mergulhaõ, Fernão, 792, 793  
 Merlin, 960  
 Mesa, 107  
 Mesopotamia, 167, 171  
 Mesquita, Joaõ de, 250  
 Mesquita, Lourenço de, 255

- Mosquita, Miguel de, Capt., 877  
 Mesquita, Pero de, 352  
 Mesquita, Pimental, Manoel de, son-in-law of Philipe de Oliveyra, 651; acting Capt.-Major of Jafana, 653  
 Mesurer 1007  
 Metouli, church of St. Peter of Alcântara, 717  
 Mexia Pero, 352, 198  
 Mexia, S.J., Father Pero, 650  
 Meyreles, Ambrosio de, 249  
 Meyrinho, 1000  
 Meza, 107  
 Mharu, 154  
 Michael, St., church of Beligaõ, 716  
*Midiñidini*, 107  
 Miegala, hill of, 913  
 Megapule Arache (D. Luis), 464; treachery of, 635  
 Migne, Patrol Geraec., 39  
*Migon-panti*, 46  
 Migumbo, see Nigumbo  
 Miguel, bastion of St., 441  
 Millabonda, 270  
 Milagiriya, 720, 941  
 Mina, 107  
 Mine, 107  
*Mint*, 108  
 Mir Hozen, 184  
 Miracem, 184  
 Miracle, 451, 720-726  
 Miracles, O. L. of, 667-687  
 Miranda, Afonso de, 355  
 Miranda, Francisco de, Alcayde-Mor, 285, 288, 291  
 Miranda, Valerio de, Dominican Friar, 357  
 Miranda Azevedo, Antonio de, Capt., 188; Capt. of Sea, 196, 198; Capt. of Ceylon, 495, 511; Capt. of Gale, 500, 508  
 Miranda Campelo, Manoel de, Capt., 792  
 Miranda Henriques, Diogo de, 449, 450, 453, 495  
 Miranda Henriques, Francisco de, 495, 496, 586, 584; Capt. of Seytavaca, 502; brings reinforcements, 602  
 Miranda Henriques, Luis de, 907  
 Miriss (Mirzeo), church of O. L. of Good Voyage, 716  
 Mirzeo, 253, 447, 921  
 Misericordia, of Jafanap., 648, 653, 680, 695, 997; of Gale, 846, 846, 848; election of, 1047  
 Misquita, Lucas de, Capt., 495; Capt. of Mancrâvare, 497, 499, 501, 505  
 Misquita, Pero de, 310  
 Misquito, Diogo de, Capt. of Nigumbo, 877, 883  
 Mituna (Mituna), 107  
*Moca'ana*, 497, 807, 871, 929  
 Mocodoes, 1157  
 Modeliar, 54, 60, 98, 98, 104, 199, 434, 483, 510, 772; ill-treatment, 1010; treacheries of, 1012  
 Modeliars—  
   Abreu, Pedro de (Ilangacon), 512, 521, 522, 590  
   Affonso Antonio, 820  
   Affonso Pedro, 437, 439, 482, 484, 574  
   Alaca, 319  
   Alaquem, 465  
   Aleixo, Don, 756, 774, 808, 809  
   Andayna Ameracon, 467  
   Andre, Don, 754, 755, 756, 762  
   Balthezar, Don, 756, 810, 824, 858, 859, 860  
   Banaca, 477  
   Barreto, D. Constantine, 529, 603, 604, 610, 611, 624, 626, 627  
   Boneca, 403, 404  
   Botelho, Belchior, 529  
   Brando, 451, 465, 467, 687  
   Caneca, 572  
   Capala, 521  
   Cejaja, D. Francisco, 705-7  
   Chula Nay, 465  
   Compada Raja, 465  
   Correa, Gasper, 515, 531  
   Correa, Simao, 591, 592  
   Coame, Don, 754, 756, 762, 774, 824  
   Curupu, 426, 469, 472  
   Das Maminhas, 634, 635, 644  
   Dias, Braz, 585  
   Dias, Manoel, 522, 567, 573 •  
   Diogo, Don, 500, 507, 508, 511, 517  
   Dissanacá, 841  
   Ecanaca, 784  
   Eleagora, 371  
   Enarath, 437, 572  
   Enquenda, 869  
   Fernandez, Miguol, 707  
   Fernando Samaracon, Don, 439-603  
   Francisco Pero, 448  
   Heneraz, 432  
   Henrique, Don, 433, 521, 522, 591  
   Jelata, 557  
   Luis, Don, 635, 707  
   Maleuna, 415, 416  
   Manoel, Don, 591

Manoel, Don, 754, 764, 775, 781  
 Marecon, 572  
 Miguel Monteyro, 482, 487  
 Nigumbo, Modeliar of, 971  
 Oriculnar, 371  
 Panepitim, 339, 340, 341  
 Panica, 469, 475, 487, 553, 603,  
     607  
 Panical, 48  
 Pedr<sup>t</sup>, 416  
 Pedro de Botanor (Tanapuli  
     Arache), 687  
 Pereyra Manoel, 437, 439, 448  
 Puvina Chinga, 465  
 Puzela, 543, 544  
 Raja Passa, 815  
 Raja Pata, 790  
 Tanavale, 465  
 Tenacon, 555, 590  
 Vazu Sina, 518  
 Vigo Rala, 731  
 Vijesundora (Vimaladharama), 430,  
     445, 469  
 Vijiakan, 273, 280  
 Virasundra, 705  
 Viziale Vissiale, 371, 418  
 Moderna, 20  
 Mogol, monarchy, 82, 297; court of  
     the, 84; king, 97, 118, 298  
 Mohottala, 102, 470; see Motiar  
 Mohottilla, 470; see Motiar  
 Mohettiyar, 102; see Motiar  
 Moleria (Mulloriyawa), Raju's camp  
     at, 350; battle of, 407-8  
 Monclaro, Francisco de, Friar, 599  
 Monda Canda Poña, capital of the  
     Seven-Corlas, 554, 576; destruction  
     of, 533  
 Mondanal, church of O. L., 723  
 Morglora (Modera), 29  
 Monicaro, 884  
 Moniceraõ, lands of, 1156  
 Monis, Afonso, 434  
 Monis, Baltezar, 470, 723; married  
     sister of Domingos Correa, 500  
 Monis, Bernardo, 889  
 Moniz Barreto, Antonio, 260;  
     expedition to Ceylon, 268-272;  
     ill will to Boneca Bau, 282;  
     Governor of India (1573-76), 424  
 Monroy, D. Fernando, Capt., 488,  
     424; Capt. of Columbo, 422-423  
 Monroy, D. Guterre de, Capt. of Goa,  
     188  
 Monroy, D. Pedro de, Capt., 188  
 Monsoons, 1145  
 Montalvao, 165  
 Montantes, 446

Monte Deli, 214  
 Monteyro, Andre, Capt., 834  
 Monteyro, Gabriel, 268  
 Monteyro, Lourenço, 188  
 Monteyro, Miguel, Modeliar, 482,  
     487  
 Monteyro, Rodrigo, 224  
*Monthly Literary Register*, 365, 462  
 Montha, Sinhalese, 105-108  
 Moors—name of, Decaniz, 194; of  
     Columbo 21, 177, 178, 188, 202,  
     281, 1161, mosque 203, 205, 210,  
     expelled 210; of Aliciaõ, 865; of  
     Boligau, 426; of Berberim, 743; of  
     Baticalou, 745; of Candea, 80; of  
     Calaturé, 865; dress of, 22, 82;  
     customs of, 26 91, 96, 149; opinion  
     about Ceylon, 40; edifices, 84;  
     reasons for success of, 95; arrival  
     in Ceylon, 179, 742, 865;  
     Portuguese hostility to, 187, 190,  
     191; cause mutiny at Cota, 192-3;  
     in Raju's service, 442; villages of,  
     742; expulsion from Ceylon, 742-  
     745; Vidana, 743; Canacapoles,  
     743; Superintendent of Factor,  
     744; Captains, 890; of Malavar  
     97-108, 207-210, 210-212.  
 Badagas 419  
 Morabat Coral (Morawak), 34  
 Moraes, Fornaõ de, 310  
 Moraes, Ruy de, 217  
 Moraes, Simão de, 188  
 Moraes Sarmento, Jacome de, 511  
 Morawak Korale, 34  
 Moreno, Joaõ, Capt., 198  
 Moreyra, Gaspar, 877, 878, 885  
 Morim, Pero de Factor and Alcayde-  
     mor, 306  
 Mormugaõ, 446  
 Moro Afonso, 473, 472, 473, 532, 541,  
     507  
 Moro Afonso, Vidana of Curuiti,  
     532  
 Moro Luis, 483  
 Moroto, Jesuit church in, 719  
 Morro, 819, 875, 876, 896, 914, 940,  
     941; attacked by Portuguese, 421;  
     Bada of, 723; pass of, 939  
 Morro Antonio, 404  
 Mosqozo, Domingos, 438  
 Mosqueta do pe, 99  
 Mosquitos, pass of, Cota, 29, 338, 403,  
     410  
 Nota Galvão, Antonio de, son-in-law  
     of Philipe de Oliveira, 643, 642;  
     Jafanap., 636, 642, 731; Capt.-  
     Major of the Field, 643; Dissava

- of Mature, 792, 793, 795; Capt.-Major of the Field, 791, 858, 860; Capt. of Jafanapatam, 854, 855; Columbo, 856; Sofragão, 869; in battle of Accuraga, 872, 874; Gále, 875; Nigumbo, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 883; death, 883; garden of, 886; body of, 887
- Mota de Oliveyra, Antonio de, Capt., 860, 872, 944
- Motapali, 929
- Mother of God, apparitions of, 614; church, Mapitigaõ, 714; Nigumbo, 718; Menár, 396
- Motiar, 102, 470, 527, 771, 1092; of Generals, 1075; of Dissávas, 1075
- Motina Bottu, 146
- Motoro, 23, 1136
- Mototo (Muttettu), 1013, 1068; villages, 115, 1013
- Mottapoliya, 551; see Mutapali
- Mouilha, Rodrigo de, 250
- Mount Deli, 214
- Mount Lavinia, 2
- Mount of Mapana, 2
- Moura, D. Jorge, 352
- Moura, D. Phelipe de, 578, 584, 592
- Moura Brito, Nicolaõ de, 938, 939, 943, 973, 1096
- Moura, de Christovaõ, Viceroy of Portugal, 709
- Moura de Oliveyra, Antonio. Capt. of Gále, 808
- Mouraõ, 2
- Mouraõ, Antonio, 793
- Mouraõ de Silveyra, Antonio, 792
- Mourato, Christovaõ, Capt., 188
- Mourato, Diogo, 588
- Mouro Belala, 744
- Moutinho, Gaspar, 542, 564
- Moye, Princess, 123
- Moyo, 63
- Mudeliaras, see Modaliaras, 48, 102, 104
- Mukaddan, 1157; see Mocodaõ
- Mulaana, 497, 806, 871, 929
- Mulisevali, 51, 52; kinglet of, 32
- Mulina, 422
- Mulleriyawa, 406, 318; dues of, 318
- Mulliyavalai, 51
- Munessaram, 426
- Municaraõ, pagode of, 427
- Municare, 46
- Municare, island of, Nigumbo, 876
- Munasaraõ, Jesuit church at, 719
- Muratane, hill of, 798
- Muratena, hill of, 730
- Murzelaõ, Francisco, 793
- Muskets on supports, 99, 451, 612, 628, 641
- Mutania, king of Ceylon (Mutasaiva), 11
- Mutapale, 552, 556, 563, 929, 935, 937, 934, 930, 932; fort of, 552, 551; village of, 551
- Mutear, 102, 470; see Motiar
- Mutilations, 278, 587
- Mutiny, 499, 799
- Muttettu, 1013; see Moteto
- Mutual, Mondorâ (Mutwal), 29, 31, 826; church of St. John the Baptist, 714; college for orphans, 714; river of (Kelany), 526, 962; bar of, 853, 826, 885, 914, 937; fish tithes, 1192
- Muturance, 114
- Mylapore, church of St. Thomas, 383, 384
- Myrabolana, 37, 62, 77
- N.
- Nabadum (Newadun) Corla, 36
- Nabob, 97
- Nabucodonosor, 113, 143
- Nachini, 62, 1025
- Nachiriz, 65
- Nacodaz, 1029, 1134
- Nacolegão, 2; pass of, 30, 425, 783, 853, 925; stockade of, 425; chapan of, 713
- Nadesbacarmes, 223
- Nagana Bramene, 370
- Nagad (Nawagamuwa), 495; church of, 714; hill of, 808; rebel of, 809; pagode, 1057
- Nalati, caste of, 674
- Namale, Talear of, 687
- Namanz, 85
- Namba, 73
- Namo, 155
- Nanata, church of, 664
- Nanna, 148
- Napunay Patanaõ, 48
- Naracinga Deva Ray. king of Bis-naga, 382, 1120
- Nargia, 731
- Narako, 239
- Narance, 239
- Naraniyta, 70
- Naranuyta, 70
- Nararoo, 170
- Narath, 435
- Narayana, 152
- Nard, 51

- Maria, king of Benaga, 393  
 Nastiguel, 86  
 Nātika, 86  
 Natam-vara, 35  
 Nauamin, 96  
 Navadi, 43  
 Naval battle, 198  
 Navan, 107, 108  
 Navarasa Bandar (Navaratna Bandar), 510, 516, 520  
 Navares, Alvaro de, 918, 919  
 Navedu Coral, 539  
 Navelim, 1001  
 Nawadun (Nabadum) Korale, 36  
 Nawan, 107  
 Nay Dapu (Manoel Macarenhas Homem), 733  
 Nayanadiva, 56  
 Naydes, 98  
 Nayina-tivu, 56  
 Nayinar, 56  
 Nayna Marca, 427, 428  
 Nayres, 188, 193, 198, 199, 211  
 Naysunuistas, 151  
 Nazarener, 153  
 'Nazareth' galleon, 918, 920  
 Nocio, Jacob, Hollander Admiral, 746, 1101  
 Negamale, 212  
 Negapataõ, 249, 432; Capt. of, 365; church of O. L. of the Rosary, 642; eicitot, 636, 630  
 Negatas, 1086  
 Negraõ, Francisco, Friar—work of, 12, 18, 209, 245, 268, 274, 275, 279, 288, 306, 381, 490, 493, 505, 564, 609, 612; visited ruins of A'pura, 12; memoirs, 490; comments, 505; notes, 612; at Galleut, 209  
 Negreyros, Domingos de, Vicar-General, 782; village of, 795  
 Negroes, 11  
 Nek Cornelius, 580, 1101;  
 Nekatiya, 1086; see Negatas  
 Ne's, 9, 69, 71, 237, 451, 487, 628, 715, 1089, 1152  
 Nele-mari, 9  
 Nellu, 9  
 Nelur (Nallur), City of king of Jafana, 50, 243, 353, 359, 364; Tribulé at, 326; Conquest of Braganza, 355-363; of Furtado, 452; of Oliveyra, 629; battle, 360, 639-40; palace, 363, 453, 464; storehouses, 365; churches, 371; Hermitage, 661; rising against Portuguese, 373; praça, 390; Braganza at, 355-366; pagodes of, 452, 641, 642; Franciscans, 467; Oliveyra at, 638, 640; lake of, 639  
 Neptune, 240  
 Nerundivu, 56  
 Neruntivo, 56  
 Nerutta, 113  
 Neves, Braz de, 944  
 Neves, Christovão das, 339  
 Nibad, 797  
 Nica Pita Adacin (Nikapitiya Bandar), 469, 476; baptized Don Philip, 476; educated Goa, Portugal, 476, 477; death, 477  
 Nichini, 107  
 Nigumbo, 2, 20, 46-47, 818, 908, 1156; burnt, 425; attacked, 427, 430, 589; port of, 31, 319; dues of, 729; lands of, 430, 913; men of, 531, 943; bazaar, 870; canal to Cota, 25, 26; palmgrove, 824, 877; stockade erected, 472; fortalice, 47, 589, 824; Capt. of—Lourenço Teyxeyra de Macedo, 589; Jorge Fernandez de Abreu, 824, 825; Diogo 's Misquita, 877-883; abandoned, 589; relieved, 590; Hollander siege, 819-825, 853; recovered by Portuguese, 858-860; garrisoned, 861; second siege by Hollanders, 876-886; fortified by Hollanders, 886, 888, 902; attempted by Portuguese, 890-892; slow seige, 908; deserters to Portuguese, 937; Hollanders at, 826, 869; Factor, 859; fortalice, 1195  
 churches: O. L. of Nativity, 716; St. Diogo, 718; Holy Ghost, 718; Mother of God, 718; Holy Trinity, 718; Christians, 589; Friars, 589, 878  
 Portuguese at, 279, 480, 813, 821, 907; Disáva of, 868, 860, 862; Manoel Gil Crespo, 938; Modeliar of, 971; battle of 879-881, 878, islands, 47, 718, 876, 883, 888, 890; of Joaõ Fernandez, 824, 826, 859, 877, 878; Monicare, 884  
 Nikapitiya Adahasin, see Nica Pita, 469  
 Nibini, 107  
 Nilas, 1009  
 Nigundi, 108  
 Nivala, Hollander stockade, 1196  
 Niza Maluco, 384  
 Nobre, Matheus, 564

Nogueyra, Joao, Capt., 702

Nore, 76

Noronha, Afonso de, Viceroy (1550-1554), 285; in Ceylon, 288-291, 300-305, 306; behaviour of, 288; ordered to quit Ceylon, 290; letter of, 293; birth, 297; death, 306

Noronha, D. Alvaro de, 230, 409

Noronha, D. Antaõ da, Viceroy (1564-1568), 420

Noronha, D. Antaõ de, 268

Noronha, D. Antonio de, Capt., in Jaffna Expedition, 351-353, 355, 356, 357, 359, 361, 362, 364, 374, 375, 376, 379, 380, 381

Noronha, D. Antonio de, Viceroy (1571-1573), 423; deposed 424

Noronha, D. Antonio de, nephew of above, Capt. of Columbo, 423

Noronha, D. Bernardo de, Capt., 479, 546

Noronha, D. Francisco de, 250, 300

Noronha, D. Francisco de, Capt., 515, 518, 543, 548, 552, 554, 558

Noronha, D. Garcia de, Capt., 185; Viceroy (1538-1540), 224, 233

Noronha, Gil Añes de (Julianæ), Capt., 473, 474, 477; at Seytavaca, 487, 494

Noronha, D. Luis de, 511

Noronha, D. Miguel de, Conde de Linhares, Viceroy (1629-1635), 182, 766

Noronha, D. Payo de, 352

Noronha, D. Pedro de, 395

Noronha, D. Rodrigo de, 418

Noses cut off, 489, 493, 507, 508

Nosmacabe, hill of, 911

Notary Public, Columbo, 529

Nugeyra Freyre, Manoel, 980, 976

Nugeyra, Sebastiaõ, 438

Nugueyra, Coelho, Pero, 1050

Nugueyra, Pero, 512

Nugueyra, Simaõ, 426

Nunes, Agutinho, 352, 425, 430, 431

Nunes, S.J., Father Antonio, 871, 978

Nunes, Antonio, 352

Nunes, Bras, 531

Nunes, Manoel, 943

Nunes de Mançelos, Adriaõ, 437

Nunes, Diogo, clero, 441

Nunez, Livro dos pesos, 486

Nunez Marinho, Francisco, 450

Nunes, Miguel, 311

Nunes, Pero, Doctor, 256

Nunes, Sebastiaõ, 408

Nuri, 76

Nutmeg, 48

## O.

O Thesouro do Rey de Ceilad, 234, 302, 301

Ola, palm leaf, documents, 13, 372, 484, 485, 486, 749, 1019; letters, 228, 234, 282, 376, 538, 642, 771, 789, 1063; acts (of appointment), 49, 54 181, 195, 263, 664, 1094; cadjans, 575, 587, 651, 662, 810

Oliveyra, Antonio de, 450

Leonardo de, 250

Oliveyra, Bres de, 543

Oliveyra, Philipe de, Capt., 'god of the sword', 629, 645; 'Philipou Raja', 652; birth and parentage, 518, 522; Capt. of Pondenagore, 536; Capt.-Major of Field, 623; builds fort of Sofragaõ, 624, 625; despatched to Jafanap., 626; conquest of, 628-632, 635, 637; exploits of, 639; at Nelur, 542; erects fortalide, 657; besieged, 731; kindness of, 646, 650, 1150; zeal of, 54, 651, 658, 685, 694; death, 652; burial, 653; epitaph, 654; Testament of, 658; Order of Christ, 686; son-in-law of, 649, 632

Om, 144

O-maõ, 156

On, 144

Onescritoris, 3

Onor, 447, 921

Opanayaka, 563, 590, 591; capture of, 591

Opening of D. Constantine, 53, 1149, 1150, 1159

Opium, 65

Oratote, 471

Order of Christ, 441, 686

Oriçular Modeliar, 371

Oriente Conquistado, 103, 486

Oriote, Friar Francisco de, 440, 451

Orixa, 1118

Ormuz, English at, 732; kingdom of, 1116, 1129; sacked by Turks, 307

Orna (Horana), 506, 1056

Ortelius, 2

Oruculu Corla, 538

Orupula, kinglet of, 32

Ouiris, 240

Ororio, Bishop, 161

Ottu, 1015, 1018

Our Lady, church of, 718; Mondale, 728; of Good Voyage, Mirzeo, 716; Coeboddem, 717; of Pity, Cothavatha, 715; of Delivery, Columbo, 715; of Refuge, 718

- (Bonavolana); Anjame, 716; of Miracles, Vidagama, 718; Columbo, 941; of St. Luke, Urabarem, 717; of Help, Health, Calature, 717, 938; of Guadalupe, Vadum, 716; of Victories, Matare, 715; Cota, 417; of Assumption, Dampe, 714
- Ourique, 453
- Outocalava, 621
- Ouidor, 67, 91, 369, 744, 1093; *Com Alçada*, 524; assizes of, 1043, 1089; complaints against, 1043
- P.
- Pacadiac, 180
- Pacardiva, 624
- Pachalapali, 51, 655, 999, 1193
- Pachas, 19, 20, 104, 230, 414, 420, 432, 502, 579, 580; Capt. of, 508
- Paochohilaipaly, 51
- Pacheco, Antonio, 194
- Pacheco, Manoel, 681
- Pacheco, Verissimo, 194
- Pachi Marca, 210, 211, 212, 213, 218, 224, 225, 228; head of, delivered to Portuguese, 227, 230
- Padas, 98, 345, 1026
- Padishah, 97
- Padishap, 84
- Padram, 197
- Padrao, Antonio, Friar, killed, 316
- Padroado, 1141-1142
- Padroes, Chinese, 35
- Paes, Lourenço, 980
- Paes de Mendonca, Vicente, 831, 840
- Pagans, military govt. of, 95
- Pagode, 665
- Pagode (coin), 63
- Pagode of Tanavare, see Tanavare
- Pagode; 1, 522
- Pagodes razed, 425, 487, 542; of Nagaõ, 1057; of Nelur, 45; of Sofragao, 42; of Ramdeccoir, 1; of Palugaõ, 19
- Pagnol, 1018
- Paimgama Rala (Payingomuwe), 572
- Pais, Lourenço de, Friar, 676
- Paiwa, João de, 439
- Palai-tivu, 56
- Palale; 53
- Palali, 53
- Palanchena, 8; church of, 555
- Palanques, 488
- Palaraz, 19, 20, 98, 315, 319, 496
- Palatiuso, 56
- Palaceate, Hollanders at, 737
- Palestine, 159
- Palha, Francisco, 641
- Palha, Pero, 341
- Palhares, João, 588
- Paliconda, Arache, 439, 440
- Pallesimonda, 3
- Palmeyra, 52
- Palmagure, Palmegure, Palmugure, Court of Candea, 258, 270, 292, 702
- Palugaõ, 18, 19
- Palugaõ (Palugama), Vanea of, 788
- Palugrama, 528
- Pamparco, 78
- Pamunugama, see Bamunugama
- Panagamaõ, church of, 51, 695; Adivira of, 659
- Panagayos, 52
- Panane, 215, 210, 224, 381, 629
- Panani, 629
- Panankai, 52
- Panankaman, 51
- Panapitim (Pannepititiya) Modeliar, attacks Columbo, 340; killed, 340, 341
- Panature, 2, 31, 74; port of, 318, 422, 941; Jues of, 318; church, St. Mary Magdalene, 717; battle, 785, 818, 940, 941, 949; river of, 896, 939, 1156; Portuguese at, 940; Hollanders at, 938; stockade, 1195; revenue, 1192
- Panava, port of, 737
- Panaval Corla, 36
- Panavira, 1015, 1027
- Panciapatu, dissawany of, 58, 61, 62
- Pandar, Perea Pandar, see Darma Pala, 222
- Pandaripulos, 18
- Pandatiripu, Jesuit church, 719
- Pandita, 110
- Pandita Paracrama Bahu, 25
- Panducabea, King of Ceylon, 11
- Panegamaõ, 659
- Panepiti, Arache, 432, 434
- Paneva, 5, 31, 67; kinglet of, 32; vanniate of, 32; principality of, 58, 65; Vanea of, 528; Portuguese at, 611; lands of, 620, 1153; Greater, 1158; Lesser, 1158; salt-pans, 1154, 1195
- Paneyras, 64
- Pangim, 485
- Pangos (Pongu), 993
- Pangus, 427
- Panica, Modeliar, 469, 475, 487, 553, 603, 607
- Panica Paniqueum, 661

- Panical, 48  
 Panical Modeliar, 48  
 Panichchias, 98, 510  
 Paniolas, 115  
 Panikkan, 48  
 Panikki Modeliar, see Panica  
 Paniuc, 926, 925  
 Panique Dissava, 924  
 Panivida (Karaya), 1015  
*Paniyaram*, 115  
 Pannopitiya, see Panapitium  
 Pansico Pattuwa, 58, 62  
 Pantry, 103  
 Paofluoglo S. Bartholomew, Ffa, 273  
*Papilla*, 118  
 Para Brama, 150  
 Para (isti, 150  
 Para Madmāo, 150  
 Para Panuoto, 150  
 Parabus, 174  
 Paracrama Bau, Paracrames, Para-cuba-Bau, Paracumba-Bau (Parakrama Bahu), 25, 26, 28; 'The Second,' 26; IX., 177, 185, 189, 191, 195, 197; Dharma, 177; Javira, 24-5; Pandita, 25; Ru-queli, 24; Vira, 25  
 Paracxati, 80  
 Paradeniya, Prince of, 44  
 Paradeji, 53  
 Pardezee, 53, 54  
 Paradice, Rector of, 713  
 Paradise, Terrestrial, 40  
 Paradua, church of, St Joachim, 715  
 Paragali, river of, 51  
 Paragare, 688  
 Parama Brama, 80  
 Paramgali, 874  
 Parancure Corla, 43  
 Parangi (Feringhee), 67  
 Parangue, 216, 1134  
 Paraváz, Christians, 394; in Candea, 60; inflictions on, 446, 728, 729  
 Paravonia, 33, 60, 69, 1013-14, -16, -18, -24, -28, -35 -47, -52, -88  
 Paravia, King of C., 13  
 Paraz, 485  
 Pardao, 54, 63, 75, 300, 450, 459, 462, 548, 571, 596, 664, 741, 780, 786, 998, 1038, 1036, 1057, 1073; gold, 325  
 Pardo Luis, Capt., 263, 267, 268, 292, 310  
 Paroo (Pariah), 86, 144, 145  
 Parishes, 523  
 Parnasour, 574, 595, 911, 932  
 Paros, 189, 198, 207, 403, 404, 428, 433, 628, 629, 930, 964, 1134  
 Parquea, 8  
 Parras, 1095  
 Paschal, St., church, Andugaō, 719  
 Paschal, Friar, Commissary, 257; in Candea, 705  
 Passalum Corla (Passidium), 34, 204, 315, 915, 922, 924  
 Patabenda, 326, 1030  
 Pataca, 14, 371, 475, 632, 657, 679, 681, 692, 702, 703, 719, 752, 760, 998, 1088, 1134; gold, 272  
 Patacoens, 34  
 Patamar, 414, 1045  
 Patanad, 2, 53, 57, 353, 354, 365, 451, 657, 674, 694  
 Patanas, 118  
 Patanes, 173, 174  
 Patane de Ueli, 179  
 Patangatim, 326, 1010; of Jaiana, 659; -mor of Columbo, 424, 529; of Caymel, 820; of Manár, 156  
 Patangori, King's Palmgrove, 1193  
 Patao, 54  
 Pataya, 896, 1035  
 Pate Marca, see Pachi Marca, 197  
 Pathan, 179  
 Patao-mor, 352, 512  
 Patrupana, 476  
*Pattam*, 54  
 Pattana, 118  
*Pattankotti*, 326  
*Pattayama*, 896  
*Pattiwa*, 51  
 Patus, 51, 1092  
 Paul, St., 241; college of, 244  
 Paul III., Pope, 14  
 Paulo de S. Boaventura, Friar, 213  
 Paulo Diniz, Friar, 672  
 Paulo Godinho, S.J., Father Pero, 651  
 Paulo da Trindade, Friar, 721, 723  
 Pauluzz. Christiaen, 886  
 Paygal, fish rent, 1192  
 Payingomuve Rala, see Paingama  
 Payva, Joāo de, Capt., 450, 444  
 Payva, Joāo de, Vicar General, 721, 106  
 Peace, between Portuguese and Madunes, 318; Azevedo and Wimala Dharma, 545, 710; and Senarat, 615, 790, 713; Almeyda and Senarat, 798-799  
 Peak of Adam, 27, 37, 119, 120  
 Pearl Fishery, dues of, 189, 729  
 Pecanha, Belchior, 426  
 Pecanha, Mancel, Dissava of Four Corias, 778  
 Pecci, S.J., Father Bernardino, 656

- Pedangore, stockade, 536, 542; Capt. of, 536  
 Pedreyra, 432  
 Pedrinho, Don, 810  
 Pedro, Friar, 493, 683  
 Pedro, D., 628  
 Pedro, Don, 434  
 Pedro, Don Modeliar, 416  
 Pedro dos Anjos, Friar, Candea, 710; Cogala, 721, 722  
 Pedro de Belem, Friar, 402, 403, 418; killed Cota, 419  
 Pedro de Christo, Friar, 661; captured, 490; liberated, 546  
 Pedro Drago, Friar, 706  
 Pedrossa, S.J., Father Antonio, 848  
 Pedrossa, Antonio, 725  
 Pedrossa, Leonardo, 792  
 Pegi, 7, 120, 141, 162, 297  
 Pekin, 122  
*Peldora*, 1017  
 Peleagore (*Peliyagoda*), 396, 422  
 Pelecy Pandara, 452, 464  
 Pelenda, 315; Tribule at, 316, 321, 322, 323; stockade, 323; battle, 322-3  
 Pelitote, port of, 430; Rector of, 713  
 Pelolo, 124  
 Pelonava, 406  
 Pencuare, custom dues of, 1192  
 Penouti Arache, Patangatin-mor of Columbo, 424  
 Penedo [Rock], see Medamahunuwa, 59  
 Penteado Lobo, Custodio, 426  
 Peom, 1030  
 Pepper, 76  
 Pera Jara Chegara Pandar, throne name of Hendarmana Cinga  
 Pera Pule Arache, 662; king of Jafanap., 49; Pandar, 459  
 Pera Rajera Chegara (Pera Jara Chegara)  
 Pera Rajera Chegara Pandar, 452  
 Pera Rajera Pandar, 49, 661; queens of, 686, 691, 692; brother-in-law of, 687; son of, 691, 692; sister of, 693  
 Pera Sacra, 583  
*Perahera*, 32, 929  
*Perali* (*Perlis*), 44; see Perlis  
 Peramissora, 258  
 Perangalim church of S. Iago, 664  
 Percival, 815  
 Pera Cota, Pass of, 29, 339, 403, 404, 410, 416, 417, 419  
 Pera Migapule Arache, 464; son of, 464.  
 Pereia Pandar, see D. Joao Dharha Pala, 26  
 Pereas, 32  
 Pereira (*Perahera*), 929  
 Peres de Andrade, Fernao, 339  
 Poreymal, Sarama, 171  
 Pereyra, Antonio, Capt., 840, 998  
 Pereyra, Antonio, Vice Admiral, 989  
 Pereyra, Fernao, 347  
 Pereyra, Francisco, 214, 217, 448  
 Pereyra, Francisco, 978, 980  
 Pereyra, Gaspar, the Long, 341  
 Pereyra, Gaspar, 923  
 Pereyra, D. Joao, 250  
 Pereyra, Joao, Capt. of Atalispauwa, 564, 572; Joao Pereyra, Capt., 875, 978  
 Pereyra, D. Leonel, 351, 369  
 Pereyra, Manoel Modeliar, 437, 439, 448  
 Pereyra, Pero, 639  
 Pereyra, Pero, 588  
 Pereyra, Sebastiao, Capt., 977, 976  
 Pereyra, Simao, 479, 488, 489  
 Pereyra, S.J., Father Thomas, 118, 122, 140  
 Pereyra, Thome, 585  
 Pereyra, Verissimo, Flag Capt., 987  
 Pereyra, Costa, Real, Joao, 966  
 Pereyra de Aronches, Manoel, 450  
 Pereyra D'eca, Francisco, 490  
 Pereyra Homem, Francisco, 632  
 Pereyra de Lacerda, Afonso, Capt., Capt. of Colombo (first term), 318-324; (second term), 327, 338-344; remained in Colombo, 348, 350, 351, 352; in expedition of Braganza, 353  
 Pereyra de Lacorda, Nuno, 399, 402, 403, 404, 410, 411, 412, 414, 417, 418, 419  
 Pereyra de Lago, Manoel, 450  
 Pereyra Lobo, Francisco, Capt., 519, 531  
 Pereyra Mazoto, Manoel, 975, 976  
 Pereyra de Menezes, Joseph, Capt., 987  
 Pereyra dos Reis Gaspar, Capt., 818, 987, 988, 990  
 Pereyra da Sa, Francisco, 470  
 Pereyra de Sam Payo, Nicholaos, 978  
 Pereyra de Sampayo, Matheus, Capt. of Colombo, 429-430  
 Pereyra de Souza, Ruy, 443, 445, 450  
 Pereyra de Silva, Afonso, 440  
 Pereyra de Silva, Francisco, 558  
 Pereyra de Silva, Gaspar, 592, 593  
 Pereyra de Silva, Jeronimo, 592

- Pereyra de Silva, Salvador, Capt., 504, 508, 531, 535, 536, 538, 547, 550, 571, 587, 599; arrival in Ceylon, 495; valour of, 502, 516, 529, 532, 551, 578, 581, 584; Capt.-Major of Field, 515-546; Second term, 560-601, 1061; at Seytavaca, 517; builds Manicavare, 537; Capt.-Major of Fleet, 559
- Pereyra de Souza, Francisco, 535
- Pereyra de Vale, Simão, 546
- Pereyra Velho, Francisco, Capt., 449, 450, 633; Capt. of Manár, 463
- Pires de Andrade, Fernão, 341
- Pirioches, 214
- Peridini (Peradeniya) Dissava, 929
- Perimale Queri, 170, 171
- Periya Pule, see Pera Pule Areche and Piriaule
- Peristurê, 5
- Perlím, 376, 531, 621, 699, 713, 714, 744, 1010, 1050
- Periliz (Peraliya), 44
- Peroro, 124
- Persian language, 117; name for Ceylon, 3
- Persians, 298
- Peru, 38 59,
- Perumal, 19
- Perumal Betal, 42, 120
- Perunkaly, 51
- Pescadas, 78
- Petan, stockade of, 496
- Pete Marca, see Pachi Marca, 198
- Peter, St., Martyr, 343
- Peter of Alcantra, church of St., Meteuli, 717
- Peter, church of, St., Macuni, 717
- Pettah, 29
- Peyá, 106
- Peyxoto, Antonio, Friar, Mature, 712, 713
- Peyxoto, Domingos, 943
- Peyxoto, Ruy, 227
- Peyxoto, Simão, 347
- Peyxoto da Silva, Duarte, Capt., 495, 497, 499, 502, 504
- Peyxoto da Silva, Pero, 352, 508
- Pessos, João, 360
- Petigaldemim, 816; see Pitigaldoni.
- Plato, 109
- Philip IV., King of Portugal, 182
- Philip, Don, see Jama Sinha
- Philip, Don, see Changali
- Philip, Don, Prince of Jafana, 693
- Philip, Don, grandson of Raju, 708; Sub-deacon, 709; at Lisbon, 709; death, 709
- Pichelinges, 851
- Pieris, Dr. P. E. (*Portuguese Era*), 183, 204, 219, 481
- Pigeons, island of, 730
- Pilandro, 809
- Pilendo, lands of, 532
- Pilitota, Rector of, 347, 515, 713
- Pimental, Francisco, 311; Capt. of Attanagala, 532
- Pimental, Jorge, 430
- Pimental, Lourenço, 352, 370
- Pimental, Mesquita, 649
- Pina, Francisco de, 407
- Pina, João de, 442
- Pina, Manoel de, 438
- Pinga, 1014, 1015, 1024, 1025, 1091, 1159
- Pinhaõ, Simão, in Jafana Expedition of Furtado, 450; saves the life of Hendarman Cinga, 452-3, 454, 460; married Princess of Seytavaca, 476, 520; Bicarna Singa, 520, 521, 531, 533, 535, 537, 541, 547, 550, 554, 558, 560, 568, 574, 578, 579, 582, 584, 586, 603; personal appearance, 567; ill, 450, 557; overtures of the king of Candea, 567-574; out of favour with Azevedo, 592; arrested, 601-602; reinstated, 610; Dissava of Sofragaõ, 610; nephews of, 572; death, 611, 1061
- Pinheyro, Alvaro, 572
- Pinheyro, Andre, 268
- Pinheyro, Francisco, 209
- Pinheyro, Sebastião, 347
- Pinheyro, Valentim, Ensign-Major, 828; Capt., 834, 839, 844
- Pinheyro, Vicente, 188
- Pinho, Antonio de, 578, 580, 583, 584; banished to Ceylon, 611
- Pinnaces, 35, 783, 786, 827, 873, 888, 987, 988, 990, 993; built in Ceylon, 77; of Hollanders, 814, 819, 826, 830, 889
- Pino, Urbano de, 480
- Pinto, Giraldo, 559
- Pinto, Henrique, 479, 488, 489
- Pinto, S.J., Father Luis, Gale, 848, 850
- Pinto, Luis, Capt. of Batugedra, 539, 547, 1080
- Pinto, Manoel, Capt. of Baticaloa, 813
- Pinto da Costa, Antonio, 566
- Pinto da Fonseca, Andre, 996
- Pinto da Fonseca, Antonio, 783, 798
- Pinto de Moraes, Francisco, 347
- Pinto Pereyra, Manoel, 440
- Pinto Pimenta, Sebastião, Capt., 792

- Pinatu, 52  
 Pires, Afonso, 419  
 Pires, Belchior, 442  
 Pires, D. Diogo, 183  
 Pires, Domingos, 944; Capt., 980  
 Pires, Gaspar, 339  
 Pires, Gregorio, 662  
 Pires, Lourenço, 511  
 Pires, Paulo, 675  
 Pires, Sebastião, 323, 420  
 Pires, Thome, 440, 420  
 Pires de Carvalho, Lourenço, Capt. of Gále, 515  
 Pires de Faria, Capt. of Gurubebile, 539  
 Pires de Sampayo, Vasco, 214, 217  
 Piriapule, 452  
 Pirigale, 831  
 Pitigal, 472, 531; Korla, 355, 203, 602, 46  
 Pitigal, county of, 293  
 Pitigaldeni, 44, 816, 914, 911, 912, 924  
 Pitigali, 922, 924  
 Pitigaõ, 580  
 Pitiguela, 603  
 Planets, Sinhalese names of, 107.  
 Plantains, 71  
 Plato, 109, 120  
 Platonists, 152  
 Pliny, 2, 5, 14, 59  
 Poény (Kuwensi), 6  
 Point Pedro, 55; see Pontadas pedras  
 Polgahawela, 481  
 Polo Marco, 39  
 Polonane, 422  
 Polyandry, 91  
 Pomelos, 71  
 Pomparati, river of, 1155  
 Ponani, 210  
 Ponta das pedras (Point Pedro), 2, 31, 55, 632, 641, 642; church of, 695; Hollander stockade, 1195  
 Pope Gregory XIII., Paul III., 14  
 Pope, Hollander stockade, 1195  
 Port dues, 318-19  
 Portugal, Kings of, lord of maritime parts of Ceylon, 33, 70; reforms customs, 90; ignorance of India, 96; heirs to Cota, 101, 102, 103, 104; heirs to Candea, 104; rights of, 530; proclaimed king of Cota, 529; king of Jafanap., 453, 545; restoration, 861, 867  
 Portugaldivo, 56  
 Portuguese—mistakes of, 70; officers preferred by lascarins, 1011-1013; enjoyed good health in Ceylon, 78; fallen among Vedas, 17, 789; settled down in Candea, 70, 986; country-born, customs of, 88; conquest of Ceylon, 101; cruelties of, 1005; violences of, 1087; troops, numbers, 104; defend Cota, 225; killed for the faith, 316; excesses of, 338; prisoners in Candea, 492, 522; destruction caused by, 551; sent reinforcements to Candea, 705  
 Port Co. consists of 30 men, 550, 813, 826, 838, 879; gallantry, 838; soldiêrs, cost of, 1042; treatment of, 1162; arms of, 1146; numbers, 104  
 Scheme for East India Co., 1137, 1169, 1173-1188  
 Portuguese Era, 183, 204, 219, 481  
 Porus, 151  
 Poson, 107  
 Pouon, 107  
 Poya, 121  
 Prabhu, 174  
 Prachalapali, 51  
 Prado, Philip de, 668  
 Preture, 5  
 Preto, Antonio, 407  
 Priapus, 120, 42, 120, 152  
 Prince Stammerer, 452  
 Proctors, 526  
 Proenca, Pero de, 209  
 Proytsela-Rala, 202; ambassador to Lisbon, 234; ambassador, 268  
 Ptolemy, 2, 109, 162, 172  
 Pude Pataõ, 215  
 Pudipatana, 215  
 Pugey (*puja*), 156  
 Puja, 156  
 Pulatagama, see Bulatgama, 36  
 Pulseconde Arache, renegade Portuguese, 430  
 Punas, 77  
 Punatim, church of, 664, 631  
 Punato, 52  
 Punicale, 395  
 Punkuduttivu, 56  
 Purana, 117, 159, 167, 168; Christian, 161  
 Purging Cassia, 77  
 Pusgama, 70  
 Puspuce, 28  
 Putabenas, 1030  
 Putalaõ, see Patanaõ, 451  
 Putulaõ (Puttalam), 536, 934; port of, 31, 319; principality of, 32; kinglet of, 32; stockade, 536;

fort, 011 ; river of, 225 ; Vanea, of, 729 ; custom dues of, 729, 1192 ; salt, 1149  
 Putur, 640 ; church of, 695  
 Puiuina Chinga, Modeliar, 465  
 Puvi Raja Pandara, 'Crooked King', 395, 439, 445-446, 452, 453, 484  
 Puzela Mudeliar, 543, 544  
 Pyrenees, 59  
 Pythagoras, 109, 120, 123  
 Pythagoreans, 22, 163

## Q.

Qhetris, 160, 168  
 Quadros, Antonio de, 511  
 Quani, 107  
 Quartilho, 586, 592  
 Quay (Kayta), see Caes  
 Quay of elephants (Caes), 2, 55, 353, 628, 630, 661, 990, 997  
 Queen, 494 ; of Darma Pala, 504 ; of Wimala Darna, 671  
 Queixome, 25  
 Quelinava, 30  
 Quelinide, 30  
 Quelpanga, 932  
 Querevele bandar, Dom Jeronimo, (Kirielle Bandar), 44  
 Queras (Gavara), 76  
 Queri Peri male, 170  
 Queyroz, Andre, 442

Queyroz, S.J., Father Fernao de, 183, 204 ; arrival in India, 545, 801, 1099 ; drew up schema for Port. East India Co., 1137, 1169, 1173-1188 ; works of *Vida*, 394, 747, 779, 791, 851, 857, 885, 891, 893, 986, 1002-4, 1133 ; *Missionario*, 141 ; other works, 80, 91, 150, 158, 179, 609, 701, 1004, 1037 ; Latin, work, 79 ; sources of, Negrao, 12, 13, 209, 245, 268, 274, 275, 279, 288, 308, 381, 490, 493, 505, 584, 609, 612 ; Bento da Silva, 91, 105, 274, 275, 277, 279, 490, 514, 538, 604, 612 ; Franciscoans, 737 ; Afonso Dias da Lomba, xviii., 120, 490 ; documents, 28, 39, 47, 183, 300, 357, 423, 424, 485, 502, 609, 621, 729, 780, 786 ; notes, 611, 621 ; memoirs, 289, 737. Informants of, 820 ; Antonio Barboza Piuheyro, xvii. ; eyewitnesses, 823, 890 ; Friar Paulo da Trindade, 731, 723 :

Antonio Velozo, 720 ; Friar Antonio de S. Maria, 628, 640, 671, 678 ; Antonio de Molo do Castro, 980 ; Thome Carvalho Caô, 747 ; date of writing, 1063, 1117  
 Queyroz, Perro de, 873  
 Quia de Lupo, 432  
 Quilapane, 724  
 Quillimane, king of, 1108  
 Quiteve, 1108  
 Quinas, 181  
 Quindigore, 543  
 Quintal, Luis do, 792, 793  
 Quintal de Paiva, Luis do, Ouvidor, 943  
 Quintals, 34, 705  
 Quiri Raja, 13  
 Quiribanda Coral, 43  
 Quirilevela, Prince of, 44  
 Quirivelapiti, stockade of, 541  
 Quirivole, 44  
 Quiza, 76

## R.

Rachol, 1000, 1001  
 Radgama (Ratgama), church of St. Luis, 723  
*Rahu*, 107  
 Raja Singa Bau, king of Cota, 28  
 Raja Passa Modeliar, 815  
 Raja Putros, 151  
 Raja Rajan Dasen Raja Sekaran, see Peria Pillai, 452  
 Raja Singa Pandar, 23 ; Raja Sirga Adaciz, 324 ; king of Sitavaca, 45, 524 ; youngest son of Maduna, 322 ; illegitimate, 415, 431 ; destined heir, 323, 334 ; killed his brothers, 431 ; wives of, 460, 474 ; Atapata of, 427, 430 ; presages of future, 334 ; at Calaturo with Portuguese, 322-325 ; General, 339, 396, 407 ; besieges Cota, 339-350, 396-420 ; Columbo, 404-5, 408-420 ; retreat, 416 ; succeeds father, 431, 438 ; lands of 589 ; siege of Columbo, 431-437, 439-442, 454 ; conquest of Candea, 424, 438-445, 544-5, 707 ; Four Corias, 469 ; Seven Corias, 444 ; illness of, 406 ; wounded, 415 ; attempts on life of, 444 ; treasures of, 404 ; villages of gabara (gabadagama), 1076 ; death of, 469, 707 ; son of, 754, 755 ; son of, pretender, 753 ; pairing of, 452

- Raja Singa, 800; king of Candeia (Mha Astana Adacim), 781, 784, 792, 800, 862, 875, 898; youngest son of Senarat and Dona Catherine, 781, 800; dealings with Danes, 800; with Hollanders, 800, 801, 802, 813, 827, 944; king, 800; styles himself Emperor, 929, 945; refuses to pay tribute to Portugal, 801; complaints against P. General, 801; sends a Franciscan ambassador to Columbo, 802; sends an Augustinian, 803; flees to the Rock, 804; surrounds and slays Portuguese army, 805; attacks Manicaravare, 813; builds a city at Ruanela, 815; rebuilds, 861; joined by Hollanders, 819, 817, 927; falls out with Hollanders, 826, 894; plans on Gále, 827; kills Portuguese, 844; remains neutral, 892; kills Coster, 894; peace with Port., 894; letter from Port., 925, 948; to Port., 949; descends on Port. territories, 926; standard of, 910; Caffira in service of, 928; Dissávas of, 927, 929, 950; and Figueyra, 929, 930, 931, 949; and survivors of Columbo, 985, 986; determines to drive out Port., 934; sends help to Hollanders, 944, 950; breaks with Hollanders, 986; character of, 944
- Raja Singa Bandar, Prince of Dinavaca, 516
- Rajapata (Rajapaxsa) Modeliar, ambassador to Goa, 790
- Rajapuré (Anurajapura), 5, 8, 26, 27, 32; abandonment of, 27; ruins of, 12, 13, 28; emperor of, 29
- Rajazulkiya, 432
- Rajuruvo, Calentica, 30
- Rajputa, 151
- Raju, see Raja Singa of Sitawaka
- Raksha:a, 158
- Rakshassa, 158
- Rakwana, 8
- Rala, 98
- Rale, men of Tanjor at, 636
- Rama, 19, 161, 384
- Ramacure (Rambukkana), church of St. Augustine, 718
- Ramal, 419
- Ramansur Arache, summaries Sinhalese medical books, 1085
- Kamdecoir, 1; Ramencoir, 8; Ramen, 9; Ramanadcoil, 57; Ramaneedor, 152; shallows of (Adam's
- Bridge), 57; pagode of, 1, 8, 9, 49, 461, 995
- Rameria, 9
- Rameswaram, 158
- Ramexura (Rameswarain), 156
- Rana, 821, 828, 834, 840, 845
- Ranavira Arache, 557
- Randinivela, 926
- Rangel, Bautista, 426, 430, 431
- Rangel, Pero, 310
- Rangel, Simão, 217
- Ransom, river of, 2
- Repoze, Antonio, 188
- Rasbuto (Rajputs), 173
- Rasiya, 107
- Rasposo, Domingos, 339
- Rasquinho, Afongo, 335
- Rata Bäu, ambassador to Seytavaca, 283, 284
- Ratnavali, Danamanica, 25
- Rattan, 432, 503, 578, 999
- Ratule (Badulla), 765
- Raus, 107
- Ravana, 7-10, 50, 120
- Ravi, 107
- Raxedalaõ, 110
- Raxader, 158
- Raygama (Ratgama), church of St. Luis, 716
- Raygama Bandara, Maha, 101, 203, 204, 263; kingdom of, 19, 101, 224, 423, 504, 587
- Raygama, port of, 31
- Raygan Corla, 34, 204, 318, 495, 511, 914, 922
- Rebellion of Ceylon, see Sa y Menezes
- Rebellions, 567; causes of, 1012, 1164, 1165
- Rebelo, Antonio, lord of isle of cows, 665, 818
- Rebelo, Drago, 560, 580;
- Rebelo, Jacinto, Dissáva of Sofragaõ, 778
- Rebelo, Jeronino, 344
- Rebelo, Joao, 198, 422
- Rebelo, Manoel, 249
- Rebelo, Paulo, Cap., 859
- Rebelo, S.J., Father Pero, 694
- Rebelo, Sebastião, 840
- Rebelo, Simão, 519
- Rebelo, Thome, 511
- Rebelo, Vasco, 212
- Rebelo d'Almeida, Baltesar, 511, 515
- Rebelo de Valdares, Diogo, 581
- Rebeyro, Domingos, 655
- Recabites, 153
- Reias, 107

- Red barriers, 447  
 Red olayspita, 2  
 Reformado, 798  
 Regam Bandar, death of, 219-20  
 Regavato, 495, 612; stockade of  
     509, 511, fate of 588, 589, Capt.  
     of 588  
 Regedor, 230  
 Regedores of port of Columbo, 272;  
     of Gale, 272  
 Rego, Goncalo do, 572  
 Reinforcements, (1586) 511, (1598)  
     533, (1579) 551, (1600) 554, 552,  
     546, (1569) 551, 548, (1602) 566,  
     (1603) 578, (1604) 602, (1609) 611,  
     (1611) 612, (1631) 791, (1638) 813,  
     (1641), 853, (1644) 890, 892, 889,  
     (1653) 913, (1654), 920, 604, 856,  
     867, 915  
 Reis, 34, 304  
 Reis, Friar Garhen dos, 506  
 Relacaõ, 688  
 Relic of Buddha, 314  
 Religion of Machuas, 19  
 Religious, wrongs inflicted on, 1047;  
     machinations against, 1050-1059;  
     distribution in Ceylon, 1083;  
     of the Society of Jesus, Candea.  
     482; the Order of St. Francis, 482,  
     326, 330  
 Renegades: Don Joao of Austria,  
     517, 521, 571; Raja Pama Modeliar,  
     335, 815; Domingos Correa,  
     506, 512; Simao Correa, 520  
 Rentaraõ, 55  
 Repellim, 214  
 Resgate, river of, 2  
 Retadeni, plains of, 558  
 Retaliations, 555  
 Retreat of Barreto, 277, 270; of  
     Azevedo, 588, 580, 927; from  
     Seytavaca, 503  
 Revira, 863  
 Revolt of the island, 582  
 Reygam Corla, 204, 318, 495, 914, 922  
     Bandar, 204, 263; pagode of, 427  
 Reynol das armas, 470  
 Reynol, 470, 475, 857, 859  
 Reynoso, Diogo, 217  
 Resende, Sebastiao de, 352; Capt. of  
     Columbo, 423, 424  
 Rhetoric, Indian, 165  
 Ribeiro, Simeao, 522  
 Ribeyro, Alvaro, 495  
 Ribeyro, Antonio, 331, 470; Notary  
     Public, 524, 525  
 Ribeyro, Francisco, 673  
 Ribeyro, Joao, Capt., 393, 817  
 Ribeyro, Luis, 470  
 Ribeyro, Tristaõ, 944  
 Rijo de Faria, Joao, 495, 506  
 Rio da Crus, 450  
 Ritaz, 76  
 River of Ransom, 2; of Calane, 45,  
     308; of Christians, 2; of the Cross,  
     2, 50, 51, 57, 450; of the Devil, 41;  
     of Candea, 63; of Calature, 553,  
     895, 915; of Sofragao, 41, 498;  
     of Caymel, 822, 824; of Atapiti,  
     798  
 Rivers of Ceylon, 41-2  
 Rivira, Walraven de, 863  
 Roads, opened, 561  
 Roche, Francisco, da 511  
 Roche, Ignacio de, 250  
 Roche, Paulo de, 556  
 Rock, 59, 62, 616, 790, 1062  
 Rocosabumi, 8  
 Rodaveruna, lands of, 532  
 Rodrigo, king of Spain, 190  
 Rodriguez, Andre, 519, 199  
 Rodriguez, Antonio, 434, 839  
 Rodriguez, Armaro, Vedordafazenda,  
     54, 779, 1054, 1176, 1197  
 Rodriguez, Cipiao, 725  
 Rodriguez, Cypriano, 434  
 Rodriguez, Francisco, 450  
 Rodriguez, Gaspar, Modeliar, 454  
 Rodriguez, Joao, 249, 344, 442  
 Rodriguez, Manoel, 438, 682, 843  
 Rodriguez, Manoel, Capt., 840  
 Rodriguez, Men, 225  
 Rodriguez, Nicolo, 446  
 Rodriguez, Pero, 323, 440  
 Rodriguez, Sebastiao, 438  
 Rodriguez, Sebastiao, 876, 975, 978  
 Rodriguez, Thome, Patangatim,  
     212, 529  
 Rodriguez de Andrade, Antonio,  
     Capt., 834, 839, 848  
 Rodriguez de Beja, Andre de, Factor  
     of Columbo, 198  
 Rodriguez Boralho, Alvaro, Capt.,  
     924, 944, 963, 979, 996; Vice  
     Admiral, 993  
 Rodriguez Botelho, Pero, 613  
 Rodriguez de Bulhaõ, Duarte, Capt.  
     of Columbo, 324, 325, 337, 338  
 Rodriguez Caldeyra, Belchior, 432  
 Rodriguez Camelo, Joao, 473, 476,  
     477  
 Rodriguez, Carvalinho, Joao, 863  
 Rodriguez de Castanheda, Nicolo,  
     449, 450, 479, 489  
 Rodrigo das Chagas, Friar, Manar,  
     708

- Rodriguez Correa, Joāo, 339  
 Rodriguez Coutinho, Manoel, 394, 395;  
     Capt. of Fishery Coast, 394  
 Rodriguez d'Eca, Joāo, 511, 513  
 Rodriguez Franco, Manoel, Capt.,  
     944, 951, 958, 960, 984  
 Rodriguez Homem, Joāo, 543, 547,  
     588; Capt. of Regavato, 588  
 Rodriguez Leytaō, Joāo, Capt. of  
     Gāle, 848  
 Rodriguez de Miranda, Marcos, 215  
 Rodriguez de Oliveyra, Pero, 476  
 Rodriguez Palhaes, Francisco, 553  
 Rodriguez Palhota, Andre, 559  
 Rodriguez de Sa, Fernāo, 448, 449,  
     511  
 Rodriguez de Sa y Menezes, Joāo, 38,  
     65, 621, 736, 746, 747, 748, 764,  
     770, 783  
 Rodriguez de Souza, Gonçalo, 495  
 Rodriguez de Tavora, Garcia, 352  
 Rodriguez Teyxeyra, Manoel, 681  
 Rodriguez Trovāo, Domingos, 553  
 Rodriguez Viegas, Joāo, Capt., 987  
 Rogeyras, 345  
 Rolim D., Francisco, 436  
 Rolim de Moura, Francisco, eleito,  
     906, 909, 943, 958  
 Rolim de Moura, Simāo, 443  
 Romans, 16, 109  
 Rome, ambassadors from Ceylon, 14;  
     cinnamon at, 14  
 Romeyra, 76  
 Ronda, Thome da, 470  
 Roothans, Adrian, Admiral, 974, 988  
 Roqueyras, 446, 578, 596  
 Roriz, 19, 21  
 Ross, Joāo da, 946, 949, 952  
 Rossapane, 103  
 Rosario, breastwork of Gāle, 840  
 Rota' attan), 503  
 Roti, 96  
 Rozapani, rock of, 503  
 Rua, Diogo da, 470  
 Ruanelo, 46, 469, 592, 707, 816, 861,  
     912, 925, 1064, 1156; pass of, 496,  
     592; stockade, 497, 502, 515, 519,  
     532, 585, 586, 593; frontiers of,  
     517; factor of, 585, 586; city  
     built, 814, 815; rebuilt, 861;  
     Hollander fortalice, 1195  
 Rudra, 239  
 Rudrasha, 157  
 Rumal, 22, 82  
 Rumecan, 268  
 Kumes, in service of Raju, 184,  
     282, 442  
 Rumi, 184
- Runa (Ruhuna), 32, 531, 532; fort-  
     of king of Candea, 520; stockade  
     of, 492  
 Ruqueli Paracrama Bau, 24; Poluata,  
     23, 24  
 Rutraxāo, 157  
 Rutren, 80  
 Rutren, 53  
 Ruris, 96  
 Ryot, 739
- S.
- Sa, Antonio de, 250  
 Sa, D. Constantine de (prince of  
     Jafana), 693  
 Sa, Francisco de, 185, 212, 214, 217  
 Sa, Garicai de, 277, 281, 282, 285  
 Sa, Henrique de, 352, 566  
 Sa, Joāo de, 438  
 Sa, Ruy de, 479  
 Sa, Sebastiāo de, 351, 353  
 Sa de Miranda, Constantine, Capt.-  
     Major, 730  
 Sa de Noronha, Constantine de, 33,  
     101; birth, &c., 622; son of,  
 see Rodriguez de Sa y Menezes,  
 Joāo; likely to be Viceroy, 768;  
 Capt.-General (first term), 102,  
     621-732; built fort of Sofragāo,  
     36; rebuilt Malvana, 45; investi-  
     gated into antiquities of Ceylon,  
     12, 46; pursues Madjūne, 623-25,  
     626-27, 729; conquest of  
     Jafanap., 625-6, 629, 637, 642,  
     696, 728, 731; erects stockades  
     in Two Corlas, 627; fortifies Gāle,  
     627; excursion to Candea, 655,  
     727; erects towns, 715, 718, 728;  
     march to Triquillimale, 727;  
     monopoly of cinnamon, 729;  
     returns to Goa, 732; relieves  
     Ormus, 733  
 Capt.-General (second term), 733-  
     780; erects fort of Triquillimale,  
     734; strengthens Columbo, 740;  
     reforms of, 740; military, 1073;  
     fortifies Gāle, 740, 829; conspiracy  
     against 502, 752-756; 761-766,  
     1053; at Manoravare, 623, 624,  
     727; Malvana, 624, 625, 727, 737,  
     759; Sofragāo, 624, 625; Columbo,  
     625, 727, 734, 757; Jafanapataō,  
     696, 757; Triquillimale, 727, 730,  
     734; Mature, 757; destroyed pagoda  
     of Triquillimale, 66, 67; killed two  
     Vaneas 18; conquest of Candea,

- 748, 806; incursion to Candea,  
750, 757, 758; illness, 759;  
testament of, 739, 758, 759, 760;  
recovery, 761; expedition to Uva,  
770-778; fell at Velavaya, 778, 1061  
head-of, 778; character of, 779-  
80; venerated by soldiers, 773;  
enemies of, 740, 752; charges  
against, 742; liberality of, 761,  
752; kindness to natives, 738;  
integrity of, 752; Bandigarala of,  
771; shield-bearer of, 762; secre-  
tary, 762
- Sa Rebelo, Catherina de, 670  
Sa Tinoco, Bento de, 613  
*Sabara*, 36  
Sacala, King of Cota, 28  
Sacala Bau, King of Cota, 27  
'Sacramento', flag ship, 987  
Sacred Scriptures, 159, 167, 170  
Safragaõ, see Sofragaõ  
Sagittarius, 108  
Sagoates, 103  
Sakalakala Walla, 107  
Sakya, 79  
Salamanca, Mathias de, 323  
Salapam, 4.  
Salapuri Arache, 208  
Salawat, 4  
Salcete, 253, 392  
Saldanha, watering place of, 184  
Saldanha, Antonio de, Capt., 987  
Saldanha, Ayres de, Viceroy, 57, 351,  
360, 406  
Salgado, Gaspar, Vereador, 527  
Salgado, Manoel, 939, 980, 990  
Salica, 4  
Salis, 5  
Salpe, 425; church of St. Bonavan-  
ture, 718  
Salpiti Coral, 23, 34, 318, 914, 915, 922  
Salt, 66, 1149; proposed to make  
monopoly, 1071, 1148, 1158, 1163;  
made monopoly by Holl., 1195  
Salvado, Joao, 310  
Salvador, church, Calane, 330,  
Sabaragamuwa, 717  
*Samanala*, Sri-pda, 39; see Amalala  
Saripadi  
*Samanta-Kaliya*, 39  
Samaracon, D. Fernando, Modeliy,  
see Don Fernando  
Samaria, kings of, 159  
Samatra, island of, 4  
Samatras, 1130  
Samatural, see Xabandure
- Sambagi, 345  
Samdhya, 160  
Samorim, king of Calicut, 153; sent  
aid to Vigia-Bau, 197; assists  
Madine, 207, 210-11, 212, 213-216,  
218, 224, 227, 228, 230; power of  
231, 297
- Sampale Dio Pandar (Gampola),  
queen of Javira, 704  
Sampale Pandar (Gampola), 705  
Sampans, 427; see Champanas  
Sampayo, Ambrosio de, 498  
Sampayo, Antonio de, 503  
Sampayo, Francisco de, 508, 515, 553  
S. Paio, Jeronimo de, 323, 564  
S. Payo, Joao de, 250  
Samurda Devi, 220  
San Thome, see Thome  
Sanches, Antonio, Factor, Jefanap.  
640  
Sandale, 423  
Sandeaz, 160  
Sandu, 105  
Sandu, king of Ceylon, 13  
Saneaz, 114  
Sangaboy, king of Ceylon, 13  
Sangatica, King of C., 13  
Sangucial, 456, 993, 1157  
Saniasis, 81, 83, 114  
Sankily, see Changali, 243, 351  
'Sant-Iago', battle cry of the Port-  
uguese, 235, 322, 359, 419, 452, 481,  
872  
Saint Iago, bastion of Galle, 828, 829,  
831, 837, 841, 842, 845  
Santaman Miguel, Acting Hollander  
Capt. of Galle, 854, 855, 866; fled  
to Columbo, 854; at Nigumbo,  
858, 882; Sergeant-Major, 877  
Santoca, 27  
Santoca-ganga, 41  
Santos Ribeiro, Fernao dos, Capt.,  
863, 872  
Santu, 319  
Santumpitiya, 903  
Sanyaasin, 81  
Sapan, 64, 69, 77, 1015  
Saparamadu Appuhamy, 798  
Sapateiras, 78  
Sapumal Kumaraya, 46  
Sara, 159  
Sarada, 108  
Saraspati, 160, 167  
Sareyya, N., 632  
Sareyya de Albuquerque, Manoel, 943  
Sardinha, Vicente, 359  
Saripadi, Amalala, 39

Sarmento de Cavalho, Domingos,  
   Capt., 918, 923, 924, 939, 940, 941  
 Sarmento de Cavalho, Ignacio, 870  
 Sarmento de Cavalho, Joseph, 917  
 Sarzedas, Conde de, 278  
 Sasasela, king of Ceylon, 13  
 Satarayva, 383  
 Sattialogaõ, 111  
 Satyeloka, 111  
 Sauastos, 180  
 Saugat, 103  
 Saviour, the church of, Sofragaõ, 717  
 Saymon, Barbarim, 10  
 Sayros, 78  
 Sayton 239  
 Scrilanca, 4  
 Scripture, 166  
 Seaports, 211 ; of Cota, 204  
 Sebastiaõ, bastion of, see Columbo  
 Sebastiaõ, D. King, 327, 380  
 Sebastiaõ de S. Pedro Friar, Bishop  
   of Cochim, 696, 1054, 1161  
 Seco Moniz, Antonio, 721  
 Sede Dissa Bau, king of Ceylon, 23.  
   24, 28  
 Sedenia Bau, 16  
 Seditissa Bau, king of Ceylon ; see  
   Sede Dissa  
 Seed pearls, 78  
 Sejara, 195  
 Segomombarcaõ, 39  
 Segura, 105, 106  
 Segurado, Antonio, 792  
 Sellam, 4  
 Sem, 160, 167  
 Seminaries of Franciscans, 330  
 Senerat, see Enarath  
 Senkadagala, 258, 270, 292, 702  
 Sepulveda, Joã de, Mergt.-Major.  
   828, 838  
 Sequeyra Malavar, Francisco, 217,  
   218  
 Sequeyra, Gaspar de, 566  
 Sequeyra, Joã de, Capt., 1883  
 Sequeyra Cortez, Joã, Capt., 877  
 Serame, 189, 190  
 Serandid, 3  
 Sergeant-Major, introduced by Sa.  
   1073—Miguel de Fonseca, 775,  
   808 ; Lazaro de Faria, 816, 868 ;  
   Joã de Sepulveda, 828, 888 ;  
   Miguel Santaman, 877 ; Manoel  
   Cabreyra da Ponte, 930 ; Antonio  
   Lead, 944, 951, 957, 970, 979 ;  
   Bento de Souza D'ejca, 993  
 Serqueyra, Sebastiaõ, 554  
 Serra, Christians of the, 385  
 Serra, Miguel de, 828

Serra de Moraes, Rodrigo da, 395  
 Serraõ de Cunha, Joã, 522, 536, 543  
 Servos, adscriptos, 739  
 Setas, 61  
 Seth, 40  
 Seven-Corlas—Dissawany of, 32,  
   46-7 ; forces of, 33 ; principality,  
   32 ; kingdom of, 527 ; Pachas of,  
   20 ; revolt of, 25 ; men of, 595,  
   607, 540, 552 ; vassal state of Cota,  
   443  
 Port. Dissavas : Simeõ Correa,  
   601-613 ; Luis Gomez Pinto,  
   612, 776, 778 ; Luis Teyxcyra de  
   Macedo, 655, 730, 774 ; D.  
   Antonio Mascarenhas, 791, 802 ;  
   Antonio Lobo de Vasconcelho,  
   803 ; Francisco da Silva, 834,  
   839, 846, 860, 861, 869, 898 ;  
   Manoel Guerreiro Neves, 906,  
   914 ; Jorge Coelho de Castro, 926,  
   927, 932, 943  
 Candian Dissava, 926 ; Bicarna  
 Singa, 554, 591 ; capital of,  
 Andugal, 324, 534, 554 ; Monda  
 Onda Pele, 533 ; lascarins of,  
 loyal to Port., 774  
 chiefs of, 559 ; frontiers of, 535,  
   552, 558 ; roads, 546  
 Conquest of, 516, 539 ; prince of,  
   533, 534, 538, 555, 564 ; Vide  
 Bandar, 481, 500 ; Jatupala 443,  
 Itupala (516), Sotopala (547)  
 Bandar ; Jesuit in, 719 ; Dominicans,  
   720 ; Tribune at, 324, 325 ;  
 Raju, 325, 444 ; Samarakoon,  
   575 ; Madune, 626, 730  
 Seyceyra, 108  
 Seytavaca (Sitavaka), Saytavaca  
   (Hitavaca), 8 ; kingdom of, 101 ;  
   appertained to Cota, 527 ; includes  
   Dinavaca and Four Corlas, 204 ;  
   king, see Madune, Raja Singa ;  
   Nicapitiya, 476 ; refugees from  
   Cota, 338 ; Portuguese refugee,  
   222, 279, 296  
 Expedition : of Miguel Ferreyra,  
   227-230 ; of Barreto, 270-271 ;  
   of Noronha, 301-303 ; of Javira  
   Bandar, 475 ; reduced by Port.  
   uguese, 475-478  
 City besieged by Tribune, 263, 263 ;  
   threatened by M. Ferreyra, 228 ;  
   burnt, 263 ; rebuilt, 264, 496 ;  
   sacked, 301, 475 ; revolt against  
   Madune, 318 ; ruins of, 481, 527 ;  
   palace, 494

- Capt. of, Francisco de Miranda, Henriquez, 502 ; Bernardo de Costa, 592 ; fortress built 517, attacked 553, besieged 586, 592 ; princess, married Simão Pinhão, 520 ; Bicarne Singa, 422, 429, 434, 471 ; Rama at, 8, 9 ; Raju at, 323 ; Lopes de Souza at, 481 ; Pedro Homem Pereyra at, 494 ; Acargaõ at, 494 ; Azevedo at, 496, 550 ; Darma Pala at, 496, 502 ; Salvador Pereyra at, 517
- Seyxas, Diogo da, 419
- Seyxas Luis de, 634
- Seyxas, Manoel de, 978
- Seyxas Cabreira, Francisco de, Capt., 792, 793, 867, 971, 973, 992
- Seyxas Cabreira, Lançaporte de, 781, 782, 665, 566, 57 ; Vedor da fazenda, 692, 741, 770 ; Capt. of Columbo, 770 ; Capt.-Major, 784 ; Capt.-Major of Jafana, 654 ; erects bastion at Tanadiva, 57
- Seyxas Pinto, Baltezar de, Capt., 566, 583
- Seyxas de Silva, André, Capt., 912, 923, ; Dissáva of Sofragaõ, 1011 ; Dissáva of Four Corlas, 934, 943, 980
- Seyxas Valente, Manoel de, 980
- Scyxinhias, 75
- Shaddock, 71
- Shallop, 819, 830
- Shippi, 78
- Shipwreck, 480
- Siam, 5, 6, 7, 141, 1115
- Sibazos, 117
- Sicily, 3
- Sid, 9
- Sidi, Ruy Dias de Bivar, 9
- Siesta, 464, 557, 636
- Sísto, 180
- Silarna, 4
- Silva, Antonio da, 352, 508, 552, 943
- Silva, Bento da, Ouvidor, 91 ; work of, 105, 274, 275, 276, 277, 279, 514, 604 ; soldier, 91, 538 ; vernion of Barreto's expedition, 274-279
- Silva, Diogo da, Bicarnasinga, 434, 437, 439, 442, 448, 451, 452, 471
- Silva, Diogo da, Cleric, 782
- Silva; Domingos da, Capt., 830, 844, 848
- Silva, Durate da, Friar, 524
- Silva, Francisco da, Capt., 833
- Silva, Francisco da, clerk of Factory, 479, 482, 483, 494, 495, 496, 527
- Silva, Francisco de, Dissáva of Seven Corlas, 834, 839, 846, 860, 861, 869, 898
- Silva, Gaspar de, 188, 792
- Silva, Gomez da, Capt.-Major of Field, 734
- Silva, Jeronimo da, 856, 859, 890, 891
- Silva, Joaõ da, 196, 426
- Silva, Manoel da, 476
- Silva, Nicolaõ de, 489, 479, 508
- Silva, D. Paulo de, 364
- Silva, Pere da, 332, 543, 708 ; Viceroy, 1098
- Silva, Vicente da, Sinhalense, 784, 976, 833 ; Capt., 814, 833, 976
- Silva Arcalao, Francisco da, 445, 449, 450, 480
- Silva Castelhano, Francisco da, 433, 435, 439, 442, 444, 447, 454, 471, 472, 489
- Silva Henriques, Afonso de, 436, 437
- Silva da Fonseca, Antônio, 522
- Silva de Menesez, Antonio, 792  
'Silvestre', 586
- Silveyra, Ambrosio, 273
- Silveyra, Antonio da, 234
- Silveyra, Joaõ da, Captain of Columbo, 196-198
- Silveyra, Manoel de, 352
- Silveyra, 'Roque', de, 198
- Silveyra, D. Simão da, 435, 437
- Silveyra Leão, Drago da, Capt., 840
- Silveyra Telo, Joaõ da, Viceroy, 857
- Simão, Don, 756
- Simão de Lux, Friar, killed, 496
- Simão de Nazareth, Friar, 350, 403, 415, 419, 420
- Simões, Ignacio, 672
- Simões Leytaõ, Francisco, 747
- Simões Pereyra. Amaro, 883
- Simonda, 4
- Sina, 106, 107
- Sindos, 117
- Sindu, 117
- Singa, 107
- Sinha, 107
- Sinhalese, see Chingalù
- Sincaletetendel. Holl. stockade, 1196
- Sinta (Site), 8
- Sintavaca (Sitawaka), 8
- Sipada, 117
- Siqueyra, Ambrosio de, 188
- Siqueyra, Gonçalo de, 185
- Siqueyra, Joaõ de, Capt., 833, 834
- Siqueyra de Faria, Luis de, 519
- Sirimaga, King of C. 13
- Sisira, 108

- Sisters, island of the Two, 56  
 Siva, 144  
 Siyane Corle, see Eyne Corla  
 Skeen, 37  
 Smallpox, 15, 575, 595, 625, 646, 705  
 Snakes, Island of the, 56  
 Soarez, Bartholameu, 188  
 Soares, Fernaõ, 183, 588  
 Soares, Manoel, 495, 783  
 Soares, Ruy, 183, 184  
 Soares de Albergaria, Lopo, Governor,  
     198, 318; expedition of, 183, 185–  
     196; erected fort in Columbo, 232,  
     308  
 Soares Mascarenhas, Manoel, Capt.,  
     917  
 Soares da Melo, Estevaõ, Capt., 908  
 Soares d' Melo, Ruy, 450  
 Soares de Misquita, Domingos, Capt.,  
     840  
 Sobrinho, Luis, 480, 490  
 Sobrinho, Vincent, 480, 490  
 Society of Jesus, churches of, 719  
     Sinhalese prince entrusted to, 304;  
     Province of Malavar, 576; in  
     Columbo, 578, 720, 971, 1052; in  
     Jafanap, 649, 650, 694–695; in  
     Manar, 689; in Seven Corlas, 719;  
     in Calapeti, 719; in Gâle, 720; at  
     Velavaya, 759, 776; services of,  
     1059; lauds given to, 1055;  
     captives, 878, 889; record of, 720  
 Sodgoaõ, Raju encamped at, 398;  
 Madune, 399, 401  
 Sodre, Afonso, 341  
 Sodre, Joaõ, 347  
 Sodre, Simaõ, 438  
 Soeyro, Andrs, 588  
 Sofragaõ—Habaregama, 43; Hebara-  
     gama, 42, 717; Heparegama, 36—  
     (Sabaragamuwa), 9, 925; Sabara,  
     36; Sabaragamuwa, 36; Inavaca,  
     528; village of, 550; town of, 36;  
     Dissawany, named from the place  
     of garrison, 32, 36–7, 528; force of,  
     33; divisions of, 36; boundaries,  
     47; stockade of, 36, 41, 43, 531,  
     1064; dismantled, 36; fort, 43,  
     624, 625; Captains: Phelipe d'  
     Oliveyra, 624–626; Francisco  
     Barbosa, 625; chaplain, 718;  
     garrison, 771, 896; aband'med,  
     797  
 Port. Dissâvas of, 42, 802, 860, 861,  
     869; Simaõ Pinhal, 610, 611;  
     Luis Cebral Faria, 611, 612, 1061;  
 D. Constantine Barreto, Modeliar,  
     624; Paulo de Figureido Sal-  
     gado, 730; Jacinto Rebelo, 778;  
     Antonio Barboza, 792; Jorge  
     Coelho de Castro, 795; Andre  
     Fernandez, 803, 809; Francisco  
     de Faria, 833; Affonso Carvalho,  
     840; Diogo de Souza, 911; An-  
     tonio Mendez, Aranha, 906–912;  
     Andre de Seyxas, 911  
 Candean Dissâva, 932; Church of  
     S. Salvador, 717; Dominicans in,  
     720; Hollander stockade, 1196;  
     pagode of, 539, 537; river of, 41,  
     498  
 Soldiers attempt to escape, 498, 553  
 Somas, 1122  
 Sonegadas, 55  
 Soothsayers, prediction to Raju, 426  
 Sophronius, 39  
 Soria Mahadassin, 788  
 Soro, 85  
 Sotapala Bandar, 547; see Jatupala  
 Sotomayor, D. Antonio de, Capt.,  
     287, 792, 793, 918  
 Souza, D. Alvaro de, 479, 485, 487  
 Souza, Andre de, 244, 351, 447  
 Souza, Antonio de, 217  
 Souza, Belchior de, 250  
 Souza, Bernardim de, 250  
 Souza, Catherina de, 721  
 Souza, Christovaõ de, 188, 310  
 Souza, Diogo de, 554  
 Souza, Diogo de, 782  
 Souza, Estevaõ de, 840  
 Souza, Fernaõ de, 214, 376  
 Souza, Fernaõ de, 956  
 Souza, D. Francisco de, 449, 450  
     560, 681  
 Souza, Garcia de, 183  
 Souza, Gregorio de, 554  
 Souza, Henrique de, 224  
 Souza, Ignacio de, 877  
 Souza, Jeronimo de, 188  
 Souza, D. Joaõ de, 188, 448  
 Souza, D. Jorge de, 380, 381  
 Souza, D. Leonel de, 316, 351, 353  
 Souza, Luis de, 479  
 Souza, Manoel de, 214, 438  
 Souza, Manoel de, 883, 917, 944, 980  
 Souza, Martim de, 489  
 Souza, D. Martinho de, 250  
 Souza, Miguel de, 442  
 Souza, Payo de, ambassador to  
     Cota, 176–179  
 Souza, Pedro de, Capt., 476  
 Souza, Pedro de, 860, 871, 913, 914

- Souza, Pedro de, Friar, 358  
 Souza, Santos de, 662, 670, 674  
 Souza, Sebastião de, 185  
 Souza, Tristão de, 352, 353  
 Souza de Alarcão, Ruy de, 495  
 Souza de Aronches, Thome de, 440 ;  
     burnt Dondra, 441, 442 ; Capt. of  
     Columbo, 503, 511, 513, 529, 548  
 Souza de Azevedo, Fernão de, 352  
 Souza de Carvalho, Diogo de, 978  
 Souza de Castelbranco, Afonso,  
     366, 368  
 Souza de Castelbranco, Diogo de, 824  
 Souza de Castelbranco, Fernão, 351  
     355, 360, 373, 380  
 Souza de Castro, Diogo de, 949, 970,  
     977, 978 ; Dissava of Four-Corias,  
     926, 934 ; Dissava of Sofragão, 911  
 Souza Cayado, Antônio de, 497, 500,  
 Souza Chichorro, Gonçalo de, 801  
 Souza Coutinho, Antônio de, 782 ;  
     Capt.-General of Ceylon, 102, 933–  
     937 ; wrecked off East coast, 934 ;  
     Jafanap., 934 ; Calature, 936 ;  
     valour of, 957 ; letter to Raja  
     Singa, 967 ; letter to Hollander,  
     974 ; Governor of Goa, 987  
 Souza Coutinho, Christovão, son of  
     above, 948  
 Souza Coutinho, Diogo de, 592  
 Souza Coutinho, Manoel de, 437,  
     439, 442, 524, 525, 526 ; Capt. of  
     Columbo, 431–439 ; Governor of  
     India, 431–439  
 Souza Coutinho, Thome de, 432, 437  
 Souza da Cunha, Diogo de, 592, 904  
 Souza d'Eça, Bento da, Sergeant-  
     Major, 993  
 Souza Falca, Francisco de, 476  
 Souza Falcao, Manoel de, 782, 850,  
     863, 864, 871  
 Souza Godinho, Antônio de, 510,  
     511, 513 ; Capt. of Gále, 515  
 Souza de Lima, João de, 185  
 Souza de Mendonça, João de, 450  
 Souza Pereyra, D. Jorge, 352  
 Souza Pereyra, Manoel de, 992  
 Souza Rates, João de, 214, 217  
 Souza de Sepulveda, Manoel de,  
     217, 251  
 Souza Tavares, Francisco de, 234, 352  
 Souza de Tavora, Fernão de, 217, 250  
 Souza de Tavora, Simão de, 973  
 Souza de Vasconcelos, Diogo de, 792  
 Souza Viterbo, 301  
 Soveral, Duarte de, 351  
 Sparrow hawk, 455  
 Spilbergen, Joris von, 745  
 Spolia Zeylanica, 35, 56  
 Sri, 527, 569  
 Sri pada, 39  
 St. Iago Garcia, Manoel de, 980  
 Stammerer, Peleleye Pandar, 464  
 Stephen, S.J., Father Thomas, 161,  
     169  
 Stockade of Raju, 345  
 Strabo, 162, 172  
 Sucani, 121, 180  
 Subabala, King of C., 13  
 Sudras, 81, 160, 161, 168, 169, 170  
 Suez, 1115  
 Suladao, 110  
 Sultan Bedur, 295  
 Sumbah, 102  
 Sunda, 212  
 Sura, 20, 77, 822, 1025, 1023, 1088  
 Surati Raja, King of C., 12  
 Suriavança, 6, 7, 788  
     king of Ceylon must be of, 472–3  
 Sutres, 169  
 Svarga, 110  
 Swarga, 239  
 Sword-smith, 753, 754  
 Silva, Antonio da, 268  
 Silva, Fernão da, 250  
 Silva, Genes de, 249  
 Silva, João da, 256 ; Alcaide Mor,  
     253  
 Sylveyra, Diogo de, 254  
 Syndic of Franciscans, Candea, 702 ;  
     Jafanap., 670, 672, 676 ; Columbo,  
     332, 683  
 Syria, 25, 67

## T.

- Tabologau, 111  
 Tabaguí, 662  
 Tailor, badge of, 97  
 Ta'ada/ad, 110  
 Talaimanar, bay of, 458, 638  
 Talaiyari, 54  
 Talapetes, 78  
 Talapitim, Talampeti, Calapiti (Ta-  
     lampiti) ; Portuguese at, 444 ;  
     prince of Four Corias at, 541 ;  
     king of Candea at, 542 ; frontier  
     of, 575 ; stockade at, 576, 579,  
     581, 590, 593 ; besieged, 583, 595–  
     600 ; surrender, 600 ; Cap.. of,  
     Francisco Macedo, 595, 599, 600,  
     608 ; chaplain of, 599 ; Candians  
     at, 730 ; reduced, 910 ; Arache of,  
     813 ; Figueyra at, 911, 926, 933

- Talapoin, 140  
 Tale, 54  
 Ta'car, 54, 642, 665, 687, 688  
 Ta'siyari, 54  
 Tai, 88, 89, 90  
 Taijamanár, 458, 638  
 Talpoys, 140  
 Talugaō (Atalugama), men of, 531  
 Tamana, city of, 6, 11, 204  
 Tamara:, 180  
 Tamancavare, 66  
 Tamarache, 53  
 Tamarind, 71  
 Tatnbacarave, 1159  
 Tambalagama, 68  
 Tambana, Jesuit church, 719  
 Tambarana, 160, 168  
 Tamber, 59  
 Tambugala, lands of, 532  
 Tamburan, 160  
 Tamil, 58, 116, 117; where spoken, 46  
 Tamita Ramala (Tammita Rala),  
     see Ernas Bandar  
 Tammena adavia, 5  
 Tammita Rala, see Ernaz Bandar  
 Tamuce, 180  
 Tamul, see Tamil  
 Tamunaceti, 180  
 Tamune, 180  
 Tamunde, 180  
 Tana, 67, 68  
 Tanacerim, 5, 7, 18  
 Tanadiva, 55, 56, 628, 640; rev-  
     enue of, 1193; Church of, 57,  
     628, 629, 665; bastion of, 57;  
     Franciscans at, 661  
 Tanadivayina, 55  
 Tanagal (Attanagala), see Atanagala  
 Tanagala(Attanagala), see Atanagala  
 Tanagama, kinglet of, 32  
 Tanamavaraddi, 51  
 Tanapua, 674  
 Tanapuli Arache (Modeliar Don  
     Pedro de Betancor), 687  
 Tararife, 59  
 Taravale, Modeliar, 465  
 Taravare (Dondra), 34, 35, 323,  
     324, 718; inscription, 177;  
     pagoda of, 2, 35, 441, 443, 1057;  
     church, 35, 718; Hollander  
     stockade, 1196  
 Taranz, Bernardo, 470  
 Tancar (Tancar), 1, 57  
 Taniul, 98  
 Tandarim, 98  
 Tundariz, 98, 510, 1092  
 Tanga, 318, 1194  
 Tangale, 35  
 Tanjaor, wedding of Princes of  
     Candeia, 737; Nayque of, 283, 266,  
     731, 642, 1058; Jafanap. tributary  
     to, 629, 635, 643, 644-45, 656  
 Tanks, Magul Corla, 1155  
 Tanque Salgado, 876  
 Tapadua, tank, 15  
 Taparioka, 111  
 Tapasa, 83  
 Taprobane, Tapobrana, 3, 14, 234,  
     343, 387  
 Tareculi, 914  
 Tattuabi, 155  
 Tavazis, 83  
 Taveyra, Diogo, 426  
 Taveyra, Jeronimo, 560, 578, 584, 592;  
     ambassador to Candeia, 789, 790,  
     795  
 Taveyra, Luis, 883  
 Taveyra da Cunha, Luis, 943  
 Tavora, Roque de, 347  
 Taypa, 29, 204, 232, 1024  
 Tayro, 1035  
 Teles, S.J., Father Antonio, 999,  
     1000  
 Teles, Christoval, 853  
 Teles de Menezes, Antonio, Governor  
     of India, 838, 854, 987  
 Telingo, 5, 7  
 Telingue, 396, 422  
 Temarache, 51, revenue of, 1193  
 Temudo, Domingos, 778  
 Temudo, D. Jorge de, Bishop of  
     Cochin, 273, 352, 364, 366, 377,  
     395  
 Tenarezim, 3  
 Tenasary, 233  
 Tenecon (Tennakon) Modeliar, 555,  
     590  
 Tennamara-vadi, 51  
 Tenreyro, Francisco, Capt., 792  
 Tenreyro, Gaspar, 450  
 Tenreyro, Joāo, 553  
 Terçado, 393, 1035  
 Ternasseri, 3  
 Ternates, 822  
 Tertullian, 241  
 Terunance, 114  
 Teyxeyra de Macedo, Antonio, 792  
 Teyxeyra de Macedo, Luis, Capt.,  
     624, 638, 793, 1060; Jafanap, 537,  
     730; Dissava of Seven-Corlas, 655,  
     730, 774  
 Teyxeyra de Macedo, Baltazar, 792  
 Teyxeyra de Macedo, Lourenço, 68;  
     Capt. of Nigumbo, 589  
 Teyxeyra de Menezes, Joāo, 522  
 Teyxeyra de Meyreles, Joāo, 586

- Teyxeira de Sepulveda, Antonio, 792, 820, 821  
 Thales, 109  
*Thānādūr*, 98  
 Themudo, see Temudo  
 Theodosic, 53, 222  
 Theodosio, D., Dissāva of Mature, treachery of, 712; married half-breed, 713; conspiracy of, 754, 756, 1077, 1078; causes of, 1033; quarrels with princes of Candeas, 795; reconciliation with Portuguese, 796; return to Port., 795; second revolt, 796; sent to Goa, 796  
 Theodosio, D., ambassador of Darma Pala to Goa, 410  
*Thesouro de Rei de Ceylao* 234, 301, 302  
 Thomas, St., Christians of, 566, 588, 688, 853; Cross of, 715; Province of, Chronicle, 671; bastion of, 432, 433, 434; plain of, 38, 170, 172, 241, 437  
 Thome Apum, Prince of Uva, 519, 520  
 Thome, San, proposed migration from, 369, 369, 385  
 Thread, brahamanical, 36  
 Three-Corlas, 36  
 Thysen Jan, 870, 882  
 Tiberius Caesar, 14  
 Tibuna (Tebuwana), 908, 916  
 Tigre, 882  
 Timbay Pale, 10  
 Tirimula, 383  
 Tirino, 167  
*Tirreda Cugao*, 113  
 Tiruvaluven, 144  
 Tiruvanagala Kapuruhamy, 44  
 Tivarum, 239  
 To, 180  
 Toacados, 393, 1035  
 Tobacco, revenue from, 1194  
 Tombo, Portuguese tombo, 44, 54, 369, 1013, 1017, 1019, 1023, 1053, 1065, 1067; Jafanap., 54; in Goa, 1047  
 Tondamanar, 636  
 Tooth of Buddha, 333, 364  
 Topazes, 273, 442, 633, 637, 507, 671, 803, 840, 853, 855, 863, 829, 834, 942, 944, 963, 969, 997, 1154  
 Topi, 273  
 Toponavela, 912  
 Torres, Manoel de, 408  
 Tortures, methods of, 93  
 Toscano, Phelipe, 479, 490  
 Tostagaú, 716  
 Tostaõ, 69, 104, 786, 1026, 1028  
 Tota, 815  
 Totagmuwe Sri Rahula, 109  
 Totagua, 109  
 Trafuliz, 52  
 Tranate, Malavar name for Ceylon, 5  
 Transmigration, 240  
*Tratados e Concertos*, J. Biker, 524, 621, 788, 790  
 Travacos, Pero, 352  
 Trehenden, 992  
 Tremel, pagode of, 236 250, 258.  
 Tribune (Trivia, 220; Videa, 220)  
 Bandar—birth and parentage, 220; 333; personal appearance, 333; first wife, 222-223; son, 222, 223; second wife, 323; kills rival, 221, rebelled, 223; defends Cota, 225, 268; attacks Seytavaca, 263-4; captured by Madûne, escapes, 264; defeats Madûne, 288-90; attacked Candeas, 254, 262, 265, 292; agent of Darana Pala, 299-303; escapes from Cota, 303; harasses Noronha, 304; usurps son's throne, 306; reappointed guardian, 307; energy of, 307; arrest of, 309-12; imprisonment, 312-314; escape, 315, 317; besieged Cota, 316; Felenda, 316, 321; attacked by Portuguese and Raja Singa, 321-323; fled to Tanavare, 323, 324; to Seven-Corlas, 324-5; to Jafanap., 325; death, 326, 333  
 Hinders Christianity, 287; character, 220, 333-4; fortitude of, 312-314; persecutions of, 257, 316; hated by people, 221, 303; feared by Madûne, 321, 334, 339; treasures of, 371, 372; tyranny of, 309; took away Buddha's tooth, 234; had a relic of Buddha with him, 314  
 Tricouiu, 65  
 Tricovil, 31  
 Trigaushio, Father Nicolaõ, 10  
 Trigo, Bertolameu, 224  
 Trinamo, 155  
 Trinity, Holy, church of, Nigumbo, 718  
 Trinqueyros, Manoel, 556  
 Tríquillimale (Trincomalee), 2, 5, 8, 47, 253, 423, 439; position, 1153; mart for Candeans goods, 1156; Bay of, 31, 66; city of, 67; inscription of, 67; principality of, 66; Prince of, 32, 68, 309; Vanea

- of, 245, 368, 528, 736; lands of, 620, 1046; sepulchre of kings of Cota, 296, 736  
 Fort, 67, 698, 734, 736, 817; Capt.-of, 817, 823; subject to Capt.-Major of Jafana, 758; captured by Hollanders, 817; dismantled, 848; seized by Hollanders, 986, 1195  
 Veddas of, 16, 17; Vijayo at, 6; Bonca Bau at, 271; Danes at, 727; Portuguese at, 611; Sa at, 727, 757; Hollanders at, 817, 986, 1195; Fort, 1196; Ostenberg, 1196; Pagode of, 66, 236, 736; river of, 41  
 Tripiti, 236  
 Tripuli, Jesuit church, 719  
 Tristaō, Francisco, Factor of Colombo, 760  
 Tfistaō, Lourenço, 224  
 Truce, Port.-Holland, 867, 892, 893, 894, 895, 897, 934, 945  
 Tsimfan, 123, 124  
 Tucaman, Province of, 38  
 Tula, 108, 107  
 Tulana Raja, King of C., 13  
 Tulunar, 48  
 Tumpane, frontier of, 926, 929, 930, Tu 932; Raju at, 438  
 Tuncoule, 66  
 Tupaz, usurper, 26  
     peti 'Turpottiya, 19, 70, 1018, 1029, 1088  
 Tuppahi, 273  
 Turke, 21  
 Turunans, see Terunnans, 114, 237, 246  
 Tutucorim, 38, 993  
 Tutugore, pass, 908, 907  
 Two-Corals, 623, 624, 729; Prince of, 552; Port. at, 611; Madune at, 625; fort, 627  
 Typas, 302, 1027  
 Tyre, bishop of, 39  
 Tyranny of Indian kings, 91-92
- U.  
 Udeli (Delhi), 84, 118, 1120; Pathua, 84, 179, 1120  
 Udunuwara, 438; Disava of, 58; lands of, 62  
 Uduwara, see Uruvare  
 Uidali Coral (Weudawila), 470  
 Ulia (Uliyan), 54  
 Umba, 180  
 Umedi, people of, 575  
 Unagala, 569  
 Unavato (Unawatuna), 31, 830, 862  
 Unawatuna, 31  
 Undua, 107  
 Unduwap, 107  
 Ungiaz, 98, 510  
 Uraberam, church of O. L. of St. Luke, 717  
 Uracinga, governor of Manār, 393  
 Urila, lands of, 1154, 1159  
 Uramata Candagaō, 518  
 Urature, 661, 663, 674; Hermitage of O. L., 662; Franciscans, 661; church of S. Joāo, 663, 664  
 Urago, Varago, 52  
 Urca, 783, 785  
 Urioulnar Apusamy, 415, 416  
 Urraco (arrack), 998, 1194  
 Urugamela, 508  
 Urugampola (Udugampola), 858  
 Urugare, Patu of, 51  
 Urucinga, 368, 372, 377  
 Urulinga, see Urucinga  
 Urune Rengali, city, 516  
 Urupula Corla, 46, 543; people of, 575  
 Uruvare (Uduwara), 510, 511; stockade, 511, 512; battle, 512  
 Ustica, 107, 108  
 Utiar, 8, 57, 720, 855, 992  
 Ure Rate, 63  
 Uva, Principality of, 32, 58, 62, 63, 69; Kinglet of, 32; King of, 521, 547, 548, 549, 551, 584, 585; Portuguese, 577, 607, 611; Disava of, 927; risings in, 255; animals of; expedition to, 770, 778  
 Prince of, 482, 500, 515, 538, 539, 541, 542, 550, 594; Curnarasinga, 43, 24, 692, 765, 781, 787, 795; Antonio Barreto, 36, 591, 611; Thome Appu, 519, 520; Madune, 604, 607, 781, 784

- V.  
 Vacha Raja, King of C., 12  
 Vacu Arache, 371  
 Vacuela (Wakwella) church, St. John the Baptist, 716; Portuguese at, 863; battle, 863-4, 871, 899  
 Vadagar, 50; see Badagas  
 Vadamaradchy, see Badamarache  
 Vaddi, 55  
 Vadii, 3  
 Vaderua, 594

- Vadukodai, *see* Batocola  
 Vadum (Wadduwa), church of O. L. of Guadalupe, 716  
 Vaguias, 21, 555, 575, 1160  
 Vaguru-Tucuru-Pandaraõ, 244  
 Vaisya, 160  
 Val Corla, 46  
 Valadadi, 51  
 Valadares, Joao de, 209  
 Valadares, Afonso da, 395  
 Valadares, Francisco de 400  
 Valadares Antonio, de, 310  
 Valadares, Antonio de, Capt., 1941  
 Valad-re, Francisco, 833  
 Valadares, Manoel de, 188  
 Valadares Sotomayor, Joao de, 450  
 Valadares Soutomayor, Gaspar de, 566, 578, 584  
 Valagan, King of C., 13  
 Valala Coria, 34  
 Valane, church of O. L. of Health, 695  
 Valave, 47, 899; lands of, 34; river of, 41, 1154; patu of, 51; kinglet of, 32; salt pans of, 5, 1149  
 Valauiti, 34 204  
 Valavaya, 787  
 Valaz Nambaz, 73  
 Valderama, Apolinario de, 352  
 Valevrale, stockade of, 575; Capt. of, 575  
 Valente de Campos, Antonio, 823, 977  
 Valentyn, 826  
 Valevale, 590  
 Valikamam, *see* Beligamo  
 Valle Pietro della, 189  
 Valver, 241  
 Van Goens, Rychlof, 993, 922  
 Vanahi, King of C., 13  
 Vanangamori, 82  
 Vanderiam, Joao, 871, 870, 915, 950, 999, 993, 952  
 Vadermet, Adrien, Governor of Gale, 938  
 Vanea, 18, 32, 64, 82, 245, 528, 594, 659, 731; of Triquillimale, 245, 368, 736, 737; Pulugaõ, 788; Lovava Congama, 528; Panagamõ, 57; Vilacem, 528; Putalaõ, 729; Baticalou, 594, 1151, 1153; Hiraura, 788; Hiwala, 528  
 Vangeti, king of Bisnaga, 384  
 Vani, church of, 47, 50, 51, 664, 996, revenue, 1193  
 Vanis of Panagamo, 51  
 Vanihados, 528  
 Vanigasuri Arache, 430  
 Vaniya, 82  
 Vanniates, 32  
 Vanu Raja Bau, 283  
 Vanut Bau, king of Cota, 27  
 Vap, 107, 108  
 Vara, 3, 55, 251, 495, 553, 566, 946, 947, 958, 968  
 Varago, 62  
 Varagore, battle at, 428  
 Varagu (Varago), 52, 62  
 Varanda, 648  
 Varama, 51  
 Varela, Miguel, Dominican, 694  
 Varicha, 598  
 Varichchi, 598  
 Varna Gulata, kinglet of Careas, 466, 468, 633; *see* Careas  
 Varupu Modeliar, 426  
 Veruecaen, 108  
 Vassala, 73  
 Vasconcelho, D. Diogo de, 944, 976  
 Vasconcelhos, Andre de, 263  
 Vaquez, Joao, 344  
 Vasquez de Abreu, Gil, 257  
 Vasquez da Gunha, Gil, 877  
 Vasunta, 108  
 Vasuquia, King of Ceylon, 13  
 Vatimi Boneca Bau, King of C., 16  
 Vatuca, King of C., 13  
 Vayasus, 161, 160  
 Vayavalaõ, 53  
 Vayavilam, 53  
 Vaycota (Wahakotte), 443, 444, 708  
 Vaz, Afonso da, 559  
 Vaz, Antonio, 557, 669  
 Vaz Miguel, 246, 442  
 Vaz, Father Miguel, 247, 249, 261  
 Vaz, Thome, 56  
 Vaz de Amaral, Pero, 216  
 Vaz de Araujo, Joao, 473, 782; married Sinhalese lady, 500  
 Vaz Barreto, Mapoel, Dissava of Podr Corias, 809, 823  
 Vaz Caldeira, Roque, 662, 667, 669, 673  
 Vaz Cardeiro, Roque, 460, 461, 463  
 Vaz de Castelbranco, Nuno, 194  
 Vaz Coutinho, Afonso, 613  
 Vaz da Cunha, Gil, 418  
 Vaz Fereyra, Nuno, 176  
 Vaz Freyre, Antaõ, vedor de fazenda, 741, 1040, 1073, 1192  
 Vaz Gago Afonso, Capt., 833, 839  
 Vaz de Matos Miguõ, Vig. de Vara, Gale, 721  
 Vaz Ribeyro, Joao, 566  
 Vaz de Sampayo, Lopo, Governor 189, 211

- Vaz Teyxeyra, Goncalo, Capt., Caes, 681  
 Vazar, 60; see Bazar  
 Vazujo, 455  
 Vebora, 930, 926, 910  
 Vechan, 1013  
 Vecchan, 1013; see Bichaõ  
 Vedaba, 910  
 Vedalai, see Beadala  
 Veddos, 117, 118, 120  
 Vede Viaga, 109  
 Vedi tikkalu, 155  
 Vedor de Fazenda, 54, 74, 216, 332, 738, 740, 759, 1027, 1072, 1073; wrongs of, 1040–1042, 1044, 1045; Ambrosio de Freitas, 646, 693, 751, 757, 770; Lançarote de Soixas Cabreira, 692, 741, 770; Amaro Rojiguezat, 779, 1054, 1176, 1197; Antaõ Vaz Freyre, 741, 1040, 1073, 1192  
 Vedos, 79, 80, 240  
 Vega Carpio, Lopa de, 78, 382  
 Velaciçay, 62  
 Velala, see Belatas, Balala  
 Velavaya, 755, 775, 784  
 Velayden, 156  
 Velbari, fish rent of, 1192  
 Velez, S.J., Father Mancel, 971, 978, 979, 980  
 Velgampiti, Jesuit church, 719  
 Velho Antonio, 547  
 Velho Francisco, 212  
 Velho, Joaõ, 311, 438  
 Velho Pereyra, Andre, Dissâva of Mature, 895  
 Velho Pereyra, Nuno, 183  
 Velho Travacos, Nuno, 515, 531, 543, 547, 581, 585, 592, 594, 608; Capt. Manicravare, 593, 599; killed for the faith, 609  
 Veli Corla, 46  
 Velicare church, 718 \*  
 Velipara, 948  
 Velos bay, Holl. stockade, 1196  
 Velosbague, 273  
 Veloso, Antonio, Friar Dominican, Ceylonese, 720  
 Veloso, Belchoir, 724  
 Veloso, Gaspar, 589  
 Veloso, Lourenço, 845, 848, 839, 834  
 Veloso, Pero, Capt. of Gále, 489, 490, 590, 720, 829  
 Veloso, Andre, Capt. of Mandr, 995; Dissâva of Mature, 873, 923  
 Velur, 169  
 Vemysa-Vira-Turna, 35  
 Venetians, 84, 302, 509, 1029, 1134  
 Venetians of the figure, 14  
 Ventura, 669  
 Veragore, 442, 396  
 Verah, 157  
 Verandah, 587, 648  
 Verastodta, battle of, 440  
 Veratica, King of C., 13  
 Verature, King of C., 13  
 Veravillu, 56  
 Vereadores, 1047  
 Vergil, 153  
 Veriato, 342  
 Verna, 1000.  
 Vesac, 107, 108  
 Veten, see Vintena  
 Vettila, 99  
 Veura Garaveto (Weuda Kadawata) 46  
 Vey Raja, King of C., 12  
 Veyga Ferreyra, Manoel de, 942, 944, 979  
 Veyga, Manoel de, 212  
 Veyga, Simaõ de, 470  
 Vesi Singa Modeliar, 518  
 Vias 381, 905, 906  
 Vicar General, 721, 782  
 Vicente, Friar, 176–181  
 Vicente, S., Conde de, 185  
 Vida do Veneravel Irmão Pedro do Basto, 394, 747, 779, 791, 851, 857, 885, 891, 893, 986, 1002, 1003, 1004, 1133; see also under Basto  
 Vidagama, O. L. of Miracles, 108, 718, 918  
 Vidagama Gane, 109  
 Vidal Domingos, 924  
 Vidal Riscado, Antonio, 805  
 Vidalõ, 110  
 Vidana, 17, 33, 48, 58, 74, 75, 96, 97, 98, 1006, 1007, 1017, 1022, 1023, 1025, 1027, 1089; of Bolategama, 279, 46; Moors, 743; Vilacem, 58, 62; Maturata, 62; Vintena, 58, 62; Couruite, 532; of Corlas, 1015, 1019, 1027, 1086, 1087; of Mabada, 1028, 1029, 1069; of villages, 1015–20, 1026–28; New office, 1010; Under—Vidana, 1029, 1088  
 Vidanias, 1067  
 Videamal, king of Cota, 27  
 Videviaga, 108  
 Vide Bandar, 244; see Tribune  
 Vide Bandar, Prince of Seven-Corlas, 481, 509  
 Vidia-malmanda, 67  
 Vidigueyra, Conde de, 709, 161  
 Viseyra, Ambrosio, 307

- Vieyra, S.J., Damiao, 951, 960, 966, 969, 970, 971, 974, 975, 976  
 Vieyra, Francisco, Vicar, 524, 525  
 Vieyra, Goncalo, 438  
 Vieyra, Jeronimo, Capt., 877, 878  
 Vieyra, Manoel, 212  
 Vieyra, Simao, 253  
 Vieyra de Abreu, Metheus, 998  
 Vigayro da Vara, 1051, 1083; Colombo, 744; Gale, 721; Jafanap., 684  
 Vige Rala Modeliar, 731  
 Vige Sundra Modeliar, 439, 445, 469; see Don Joao  
 Vigi Bau, king of Cota, 28  
 Vigia Bau VII., 177  
 Vigia Bau Code (Vijaya Bahu Kollaya), 203, 204, 213  
 Vigia Bau, 197, 198, 195, 199, 204, 203, 1010; murder of, 203; siege of, 200  
 Vigia Pala Adacin, see Matale, Prince of  
 Vigia Pala, king of Cota, 27  
 Vija-Raja (Vijayo), arrival of, 5-7, 10, 26, 13  
 Vigiakan, 755  
 Vigiakan Modeliar, 273, 280  
 Vijayanagara, 92; see Bisnaga  
 Vijayapala, Prince of Matale, 781, 804, 862, 863; character, 863; death, 863  
 Vila Coral, 932  
 Vila de Conde, Joao, Friar, 236, 238, 258, 267, 307, 315, 327, 330, 522; conversions of, 714; discussion, controversy, 240  
 Vilacara, church of Wounds of St. Francis, 718  
 Vila Real, Marquis de, 234  
 Vilacem, 18; Portuguese at, 611; rebels, 624; rights to, 709; D. Fernando Modeliar at, 756; Port. prisoners sent to, 788, 789; Veddas of, 16, 17, 62; Vanee of, 528; Vidana of, 58  
 Vilhalobos, Andre de, 352, 375  
 Viligama Corla, 34  
 Vilitota, church of the Magii, 717  
 Villages, dues of, 729; of the General, 104; distribution of 1074-1081, 1093; of pagodes, 1086; of the king, 1092  
 Vimioso, Conde de, 234  
 Vinagre, Manoel, Cleric, 782  
 Vindimia, Antonio, 887  
 Vintem, 690  
 Vintena (Bintenna), 63; Portuguese at, 611; Madune of Uva at, 730; kinglet of, 32; Vidana of, 63, 58; exile of Candians, 63  
 Vira Paracrama Bau, 25  
 Vira Plo Arache, 209.  
 Vira Raja, King of Ceylon, 13  
 Viracao, 988, 990  
 Viraden, 58  
 Virasundra Modeliar, 705  
 Virgin, apparitions of, 636, 656, 794, 1003; miracles, 649  
 Viria Bau, king of Cota, 26  
 Visinave, 557; village of king, 1042  
 Vissava, 32  
 Vismale Modeliar, 371, 418  
 Visvanayake, see Bisminayque  
 Vitazaõ, 55  
 Vitenu, 63  
 Vivala (Diwala), see Divala.  
 Vivas, 513  
 Vixante, 236  
 Vixnu, 5, 58, 80, 87, 112, 120, 141, 151, 167  
 Vixnude Vira Jurica, 35  
 Vizapala (Vijayapala), 804  
 Viziale Modeliar, 371, 418  
 Vizuil, 56  
 Vulcan, 240  
 Vulgate, 10

## W

- Wackwells, see Vacuelo  
 Wahakotte, see Vaycota  
 Wap, see Vap, 107  
 Wasanta, 108  
 Washermen, village of, 2  
 Wassnakale, 108  
 Wattala, see Betal  
 Wax, 34  
 Welckma, 1092  
 Weligama, see Beligao  
 Welitota, see Belitota  
 Wellawatta, 941  
 Weragoda 426  
 Wesak, 107  
 Wenda Kadawata, 46  
 Woudawili, 470  
 Wheat, experiment, 1145  
 White cloth, honour of, 1011, 1087  
 Wickreme Singa, Com.-in-chief, 501  
 see Bicarna Singa  
 Winter, 3, 5, 71, 784, 963  
 Wolvendhal, 432  
 Wrecks, 436  
 Wrischika, 107  
 Wrishaba, 107

## X.

Xabaō, 781  
 Xabandure (Samanture), 18, 788,  
 1152  
 Xaco, 79  
 Kadixivaō, 230  
 Xaga Raja (Kaça Raja Itajara Pan-  
 dara), 49, 53, 244, 246, 251-253,  
 267, 351, 359, 363, 365, 368, 369,  
 372, 376, 379, 395, 419; son of, 49,  
 363; Queen of, 363; cruelties of,  
 366, 367, 368; punishment of,  
 366-369; secretary of, 371  
 Xamanaturali, see Xabandure  
 Xara, 108  
 Xarifes, 298  
 Xarves Zibaru, 239  
 Xavier, St. Francis, 170, 235-237,  
 242, 246, 268, 271, 394, 1004; Life  
 of, 72; and Boneca Bau, 266; and  
 the Fishery, 242; body of, 307;  
 banner of, 343  
 Xavier Francis, cleric, 242; baptizes  
 people of Manār, 243  
 Xavier, S.J., Father Jeronimo, 332  
 Xaya Raja, see Xaga Raja  
 Xaya (choya), 19, 35, 51, 56, 57, 65,  
 76, 1195; revenue from, 1194  
 Xekia (Sakya), 123, 124, 128, 141  
 Xendy, 83, 491  
 Xemēmco, Pedro, 352  
 Xerzéfin, 22, 66, 69, 104, 253, 428,  
 475, 476, 612, 729, 742, 752, 754,  
 80, 761, 786, 966, 1017, 1033,  
 1036, 1046, 1053, 1054, 1055, 1056  
 Xervagaō, 239  
 Xexen, 112  
 Xeydarakam Challa tirum, 156  
 Xilavaraō, 236  
 Xindos, 20

Xita Nandi, 151  
 Xiven, 144, 155, 156, 157  
 Ximiro, 1001  
 Xoareao, 110  
 Xuera, 106, 107  
 Xutrez, 81, 82, 168

## Y.

Yakdessa, 67, see Jedaca, Jadaca  
 Yala (Jala), 2; Vanea of, 528  
 Yalppenan, 47  
 Yatiantots, see Jatiantota  
 Yatinuwara, 58, 62, 438  
 Year, Sinhalese divisions of, 105  
 Yodun, 31  
 Yogi, 28, 37, 113, 119, 121, 130, 140,  
 256, 335, 336, 338, 352, 365, 451,  
 458, 459, 485, 662; expulsion from  
 Jafanap, 460, 461; prophecy of a,  
 746, 1004  
 Yona, 21  
 Yugas, 113, 143

## Z.

Zambezi, 117  
 Zambezi river, 1107  
 Zamboas, 71  
 Zaraguncho, 61  
 Zaylon, 3  
 Zealand, 3  
 Zealanders, 851  
 Zerafin, see Xerefin  
 Zezere, 41  
 Zingapur, 1115  
 Zodiac, Sinhalese names for signs of,  
 107  
 Zumbayas, 102





